



RIGHT

norable sir Henrie Sidneie knight,

lord deputie generall of Ireland, lord president of Wales, knight of the most noble order of the garter, and one of hir maiesties privie councell within hir

realme of England.



Aking in hand (right honorable) to gather the particular histories of diverse countries and nations, to ioine with a cosmographie, which one Reginald Wolfelate printer to the queenes maiestie meant to publish in our English toong:when I came to consider of the histories of Ireland, I found my self so vnprouided of helps, to set downe anie particular discourse therof, that I was in despaire to enterprise to write anie thing at all concerning that realme, otherwise than incidentlie as fell to purpose to touch the same in the historie of England. At length

yetas maister Wolfes vse was, to impart to me all such helps as he might at anie hand procure for my furtherance, in the collections of the other histories, wherewith I speciallie dealt; his hap was to light also vpon a copie of two bookes of the Irish histories, compiled by one Edmund Campion, fellow sometime of S. Iohn Baptists college in Oxford, verie well penned certeinlie, but so breese, as it were to be wished, that occasion had served him to have vsed more leasure, and thereby to have delivered to vs a larger discourse of the same histories: for as he himselfe confesseth, he had not past ten weekes space to gather his matter: a verie short time doubtlesse for such a peece of worke. But how breefe so euer I found him, at the persuasion of maister Wolfe, vpon the hauing of that copie, Iresolued to make shift to frame a speciall historie of Ireland, in like maner as I had doone of other regions, following Campions order, and fetting downe his owne words, except in places where I had matter to inlarge that (out of other authors) which he had written in breefe. And this I have thought good to fignifie, the rather for that I esteeme it good dealing in no wise to defraud him of his due deserued praise.

But now after I had continued the historic, and inlarged it out of Giraldus Cambrensis, Flatsburie, Henrie of Marleburgh, and other, till the yeare 1509, in which that famous prince Henrie the eight began his reigne; some of those that were to bestow the charges of the impression, procured a learned gentleman maister Richard Stanihurst, to continue it from thense forward as he saw occasion, being surnished with matter to inlarge the worke, whereof for those latter times I found my selfe vtterlie void, more than that which Campion had deliuered. What I have

doone

The Epistle.

done heerein, your honors discretion shall easilie conceiue. For the imperfection fith it is the first that hath beene set foorth in print, I craue most humblie pardon of your good lordship, beseeching you rather to respect my good will than the perfeetnesse of the worke, which (the wants considered) for the orderlie furnishing thereof, is not to be looked for in the skilfull, much leffe in me the meanest of all and least able to performe it. Hauing presented the right honourable the earle of Leicester with the historie of Scotland, to whom (as I haue heard) Campion made dedication of his booke, I could not remember me to whome I might more conuenientlie offer this my trauell in this historie of Ireland, than to your lordship, being hir maiesties lieutenant in that realme. And therefore in most humble wise I exhibit the booke to your honour, befeeching the same to beare with my boldattempt therein, and to receive it in good part from him that wished to have more amplie satisfied your good lordships expectation, if abilitie might have answered good will. Thus I befeech the Lord to guide your heart in his holie waies, & to furnish you with politike prudence and skilfull knowledge to gouerne in your estate and office, so as your doings may redound to his glorie, the suertie of hir ma-

iesties dominion there, your owne aduancement in honour, and consequentlie to the sure support and peaceable quietnesse

> of the true and loiall subjects of that realme.

Your honours most humble to command, DE ERICO I MENTINO DE LA PIENTA MARIE RAPHAEL HOLINSHED.

Land L. bersion to reposite orbito selection my felffour resolved a halps, robusion ne arreparticular differente dictor fetto i wasin e , veite anic ching at മയിട്ടി നാളിരുന്നു bdrainuor er alt. degreek A. benetien ar beimight er anie

-dones, wheresila ic essendio i i de

Sant Combinger by Onfor I, verican the samed correlation land of breefe, as it were mbewifes isher obection bed feeden i har shade efedenored eature, and thereby Acores argo Com Coffbothmehillories: for as hehimfelle greeff elglicite thor a little worth octo gather his matter: a veric thort timed a highly for he is a piece of a speed, But how breefe to ever Houndla m, at

shartegions, following Campions or Last and ferting downs be owner were storeceptin places where I had matter to inlarge that (our of erica studious) which he

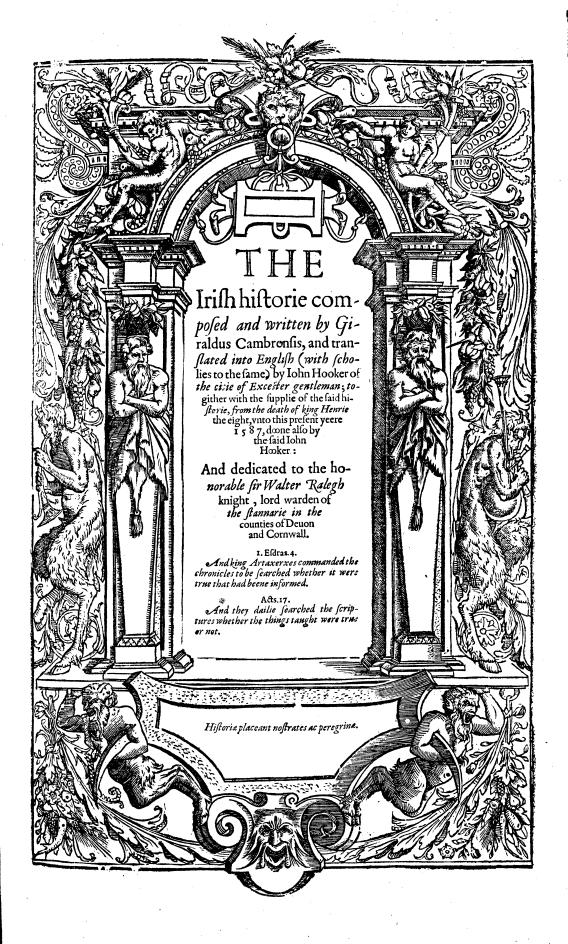
had written in breefe. And this I have thought good to I groffer, the received for the el effeemengood dealing in no wife to defraud him of his due deferued ord in Sunner, after I had continued the billioric, and interged it can of Giralden Cami

bellow the charges of the controllion, produced a leaderd of artisance to when the shat! Staniburth, to co time sit from the afe for a less he were taken a longitur-

which we compiled by one but want Campusto I Her ton sime of S. tohn

the person ion of incipled Wolfe, when the boning of that copie, trefeland to Policial ato frame affectall hiltoric or trebud in the moner as I back do at of or

young Heathurie, Henric of Markeburg hand o'noighil the pears 1909, in 1902 that himous prince. Henrie the eight be such is reigner some of the that were are el sich matter to inlangothe war, appleasoftor de ste latter times i acc to the more than the which Campion of the second of the se





The authors out of whom this historie of freland hath beene gathered.

Giraldus Cambrensis.
Flatsburie.
Henricus Marleburgensis.
Saxo Grammaticus.
Albertus Crantz.
Rogerus Houeden.

Guilielm.Paruus Nouoburgensis.
Polychronicon, siue Ranulsus
Higeden.
Iohannes Bale.
Edmund Campion.
Records and rolles diuers.



The contents of the chapters following in the description of Ireland.

- The names of Ireland, with the compasse of the same, also what shires or counties it conteineth, the diussion or partition of the land, and of the language of the people. Chap. 1.
- 2 Of the nature of the foile and other incidents. Chap.2.
- 3 The names of the ciuities, boroughs, and hauen towns in Ireland. Chap. 3.
- 4 Of the strange and woonderfull places in Ireland. Chap. 4.

- 5 Of the lords spiritual of Ireland, their names and dignities. Chap.5.
- 6 The lords temporall, as well English as Irish, which inhabit the countrie of Ireland. Chap.6.
- 7 The names or furnames of the learned men and authors of Ireland, and what bookes they wrote. Chap.7.
- 8 The disposition and maners of the meere Irish, commonlie called the wild Irish. Chap.8.

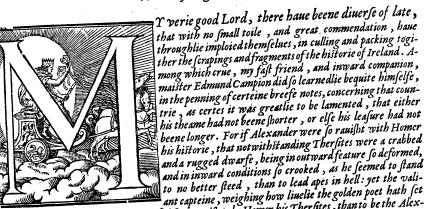
A.3.





TO THE RIGHT HOnorable sir Henrie Sidneie knight,

of Wales, knight of the most noble order of the garter, and one of hir maiesties privile councell within hir realme of England.



forth the ouglie dandeprat in his colours, did sooner wish to be Homer his Thersites, than to be the Alexander of that doltish rithmour, which undertooke with his woodden verses to blasse his famous and marander of that doltish rithmour, which undertooke with his woodden verses to blasse his samous and marander of that doltish rithmour, which undertooke with his woodden verses of diverse good and couragitial exploits: how much more ought Ireland (being in sundrie ages seized of diverse good and couragitial exploits) for to long and thirst after so rare a clarke, as maister Campion, who was so very the ous Alexanders) for to long and thirst after so rare a clarke, as the countrie might have beene well assume inconscience, so deepe in independent, so ripe in eloquence, as the countrie might have beene well assume that the little distribution to the little handled and brauelie polished.

red to have had their historie trulie reported, pithilie handled, and brauelie polished.

Howbeit, although the glose of his fine abbridgement, being matcht with other mens dooings, bare a surpsing kind of excellencie: yet it was so hudled up in hast, as in respect of a Campion his absolute perfection, it seemed rather to be a woorke roughlie hewed, than smoothlie planed. Vpon which ground perfection, it seemed rather to be a woorke roughlie hewed, than smoothlie planed. Vpon which ground perfection, it seemed rather to be a woorke roughlie hewed, than smoothlie planed. Vpon which ground perfection, it seemed rather to be a woorke roughlie hewed, than smoothlie planed. Vpon which ground perfection, it seemed rather to be a woorke roughlie hewed, than say that greene bones, should have the gentleman being will that a still intract of time the ioints thereof were knit, and growen strong return to will be made to the work of the wand to twith standing he was so cross that the neither will make to complete wand to roughly sundrie hands, and being there with all in certain places some places somewhat tickle toon wis evand through sundrie to say and longer of schoole, and drowned weightier matters in silence, than the author (won better view and longer of schoole, and drowned weightier matters in silence, than the author (won better view and longer search) would have permitted. Thus much being by the sager sort pondered, and the perfection of the historie earnestlie desired: I, as one of the most that could doo least, was sullie resoluted to inrich historie earnestlie desired: I, as one of the most that could doo least, was sullie resoluted to inrich historie earnestlie desired: I, as one of the most that could doo least, was sullie resoluted to inrich historie earnestlie desired: I, as one of the most that could doo least, was sullie resoluted to inrich historie earnestlie desired: I, as one of the most that weighing on the other side of the wild historie solutes, I was fullie resoluted to inrich historie earnestlie

The Epistle.

his dish . Howbest the little paine I tooke therein was not so secret lie mewed within my closet , but it slipt out at one chinke or other, and romed so farre abroad, as it was whispered in their eares, who before were in the historie busied. The gentlemen conceiuing a greater opinion of me, than I was well able to whold. dealt verie effectuallie withme, that as well at their instance, as for the affection I bare my native counacau verse effectuation with the said to the building and perfecting of so commendable aworke. Having breathed for a few daies on this motion, albeit I knew that my worke n as plumed with downe, and at that time was not sufficientlie feathered to flie: yet I was by them weied not to beare my selfe coy, by gi-uing my entier friends in so reasonable arequest a squemish repulse. Wherefore, my singular good lord, here is laid downe to your lord hip his view a briefe discourse, with a lagged historie of a ragged wealepublike. Yet as naked as at the first blush it seemeth, if it shall stand with your honor his pleasure (whom I take to be an expert lapidarie) at vacant houres to insearch it you shall find therein stones of such estimation, as are worth to be coucht in rich and pretious collars. And in especially our lordship, aboue all others, in that you have the charge of that countrie, maie here be schooled, by a right line to levell your governement. For in perusing this historie, you shall find vice punished, vertue rewarded, rebellion suppressed, loialtie exalted, hautigesse disliked, courtesse beloued, briberie detested, iustice imbraced, polling officers to their perpetuall shame reprodued, and upright gouernours to their eternall same extolled. And trulie to my thinking, such magistrats as meane to have a vigilant eie to their charge, cannot bestow their time better, than when they sequester themselves from the affaires of the wealepublike, to recreat and quicken their spirits by reading the chronicles that decipher the government of a wealepublike. For as it is no small commendation for one to be are the dooings of manie, so it breedeth great admiration, generallie to have all those qualities in one man harboured, for which particularlie diverse are eternised. And who so will be addicted to the reading of histories, shall readilie find dinerse enents worthie to be remembred, and sundrie sound examples dailie to be followed. Vpon which ground the learned have, not without cause, adjudged an historie to be the marrow of reason, the creame of experience, the sap of wisdome, the pith of judgement, the librarie of knowledge, the kernell of policie, the unfoldresse of treacherie, the kalendar of time, the lanterne of truth, the life of memorie, the doctresse of behauiour, the register of antiquitie, the trumpet of chiualrie. And that our Irish historie being diligentlie heeded, yeeldeth all the se commodities, I trust the indifferent reader, upon the untwining thereof, will not denie. But if anie man his stomach shall be found so tenderlie niced, or so deintilie spiced, as that he maie not, for sooth, digest the grosse drasse of so base a countrie, I doubt not, but your lordship, who is thoroughlie acquainted with the woorthinesse of the Iland, will be soone persuaded to leave such quaint and sicourous repastours, to feed on their costlie and delicate woodcocks, & willinglie to accept the louing present of your heartie welwiller. The gift is small, the giver his good will is great, I stand in good hope, that the greatnesse of the other. Wherefore that I maie the

sooner unbroid the pelfish trash that is wrapt within this treatise, I shall crave your lordship to lend me either your eares in hearing, or your eies in reading the tenor of the discourse following.

RICHARD STANIHVEST.



 \cdot is the I \sim \cdot

a kista kan Booti

1. 1.61. 61. ber .- April

and the

An Comment of the second of t

Le disting softenistes Campion without soften apply

a kalendari da kalendari da kalendari Marindari da kalendari da kalend Marindari da kalendari da kalend

graneer. In cleating to wish prieme of funding release, the lith prelime of surfaces of the little fresh to a surface of the last of the little for the last of th de inchescollon for to thing on a spole from bis bourge. The we'll was be gring

a rome of the southe about Trous place thoughout by force apparence frames of the control of the south forms but not be a south for a south forms but not be a south for a south forms but not be a south for a so

the first hour becare for other his it is been for other, and

The constant of the constant of the line of the land of the second of the constant of the cons



TREATISE

teining a plaine and perfect description of Ire-

land, with an Introduction to the better vnderstan-

ding of the histories apperteining to that Iland:
compiled by Richard Stanihurst.

The names of Ireland, with the com-

passe of the same, also what shires or counties it conteineth, the division or partition of the land, and of the language of the people.

The first chapter.



He moze 1 part aswel of Tolmo graphers, as Chrono graphers, no with on accorbe af firme, that the nation of Ireland 20 the otters most wear sterne Fle

known) is halfe as big as Britannia. Thich I take to be true, if the wood Britannia lo farre displace the fignification on,that it compate England, Wales, and Scotland. To which opinion Giraldus Cambrenfis relieth, fateng, that Britannia conteineth in length eight hundet miles , and two handed in breadth . Freland 3 he taketh to be in lenigth from the mounteins called woogduit 1. Lourach (the author of Polychronicon termeth them Brendane his hilles) to faint Columbe his Iland eight dates tournete, rating of long Irith miles for. tie miles to the date and in breadth from Dublin to faint Patrike his billes and the fea of Connaght foure daies tomete, according to the formet cate So as by Cambrenfis his furnite, the was a curious infearcher therof, Treland is their humbred a twentie miles long of Jelfh miles, and one handled and the 4 fcore miles broad. And accounting three hundred and twentie Jriff miles to amount to foure hundzed Ongliff miles, tibich map well be teckoned according to their indgements that have travelled in the Briff territogies; Jectano will be found halfe as big as Brifamia: which Girald Cambrentis aboutleth, fateng, that Irelandisas big as Wales and Scotland. Ireland bath on the east, England, within one dates failing; on the footheast it hall France; this paine on the fouth, dittant three dates failing; on the well the maine ocean sca.

Couching the name Ibernia, billeriographers

are not pet agreed from ichenle it is deducted. Some whenle it imite it hibernia coaruptlie, and supole that the procedety. Arrangers finding it in an od end of the world, foilite and motifie, take it at the first for a verie cold couns trie, and thereof named it Dibernia, as to faie, the Winterland . But this error being bpon thort erped rience reformed, it could not be that the name Chould have lived long, especiallie the first impositors furul, uing the triall, and able to alter the first nomination. Dhers bring a gheffe, that it hould be named of Ir, Ireland. lamale. But because I read nothing of them in anie probable bifforte, I purpole not to bullo opon that

Post crediblic it is holden, that the Pispaniards (the founders of the Frish) for denotion towards (the founders of the Fring) to detail to the come of Pherische Hispanics Auball, and the rather, for that themschues had dively river. led belide the famous riner Iberus, named the land 3beria (for fo Leland and manie forren chioniclers Leland.in write it) or Ibernia, anding the letter (n) for diffe, cyg.cant. rence fake . And from Ibernia proceedeth Iberland, 03 Juerland, from Juerland, by contraction Frefand: forfomuch as in corruption of common talke we find that (u) with his vocale is easilie lost and suppel Teo; to we fate ere for ener, nere for never, thole for Chouell, oze for oner, ene for euen, bile for binell. At the lame time it was allo named Scotta, in reus, Scotts the faire time it was all named Stotia, in teap Scotach, trence of Scotach the wife of Gathelius, ancient cap Gathelius, teine of those Iberians that Aftee from Bilpaine into Ireland : The late Scotath was old grandame to Hiberus and Hermon after the Scotish chronis cles, who in ante wife will have their countrimen dertued front the Brith, and not from the Battonis. The name Scotta is of late yeares to bluallie taken Iohan.maior. for that part of Buttaine that compateth Scotland, that dinerfe uncient griff authors are bolben to be borne in Scotland, wheras in Berie bed their natine folle is Tretand . As the famous tholeman Io- Iohannes dohaines Duny Svotus, other wille names Doctor fibti- sene un Irez lis, for his lubtill quidbities in lablaticall contro. land. verfies , was an Jeith man borne , and pet is taken

foz a Scot. Some hold opinion that he was borne in Walls. mon , a market towne fine miles diffant from Welleford. Diters awouch, and that more trulie, that he was bome in Downe, an olo ancient cinitie in the north of Ireland, and thereof they ghelle him to be named Diefenlis , and by contraction Duns, why fchole thich tearme is to trivial and common in all thinks, men are calthat whole furpalleth others either in cavilling loght Arie, 02 fablill thillolophie, is forth with nichename on Dune, wiereroe as Scotland is named Scotlami-

The name

Chelength,

and breatth of

Grald, Cam-

Scotia minor,

Wandeili.

Wanno.

The rines 2Sanne.

Wagganbun.

Inuerna,

Solmi.

tes in cap.35.

Scotter alor, nor, to Treiand is tearmed Scotta major, as the head from thense the name of Scotia minor toke his of. fpring. The Irith also were named of the foresaid Bathelus, or Bandeilus, Sandeili. Intheir Trift rithmes, they tearme Freland berie often Banno. I cannot diume what reason should lead their makers therto, buleffe it be the river in the countie of Weifes ford, named the Wanne, there the Britons bpon the conquest first arrived . The place otherwise is called Bagganbun, according to the old ancient rithme: 10 tance of Deth; but did inlarge it, and decreed it himbags

At the creeke of Bagganbun, Ireland was loft and wun.

For the remembrance of which river to notoriousie famoled, it carieth great likelihod, that the name thould be to the whole realme generallie afcribed. Sundzie Latine authors write Treland Inuerna, 0, thers Iverna, diverse Ijerna. Claudius nameth it Iberna. The divertitie of which names grew, for that in their time the true and certeine name was not knowne, so that they were contented to take it as 20 so much lind as conteineth an hundred townships, they found it, which matter is handled by Hermo-

Hermol, Barb.

Lucred.

r.Lagenia. 3 Connatia. 3.Hultonia. 7. Media. well Math e calt Meth.

Gebriades.

Ebe fhired and counties of Freiand.

An.mun. 2533. Cambrenf. lib. 1 dift. 3: rub.5.& 6.

laus Barbarus. There are some of the ruder fort so quaint in scue, Plin casig.
The name Fring and Freiand men , but in no wife Frihmen.
be name I be named Ireland men , but in no wife Frihmen. land corrough But certes, in my fantalie luch curious diffinders may be verie aptlie resembled to the swlish butcher, that offred to have fold his mutton for fift ene grots, and pet would not take a crowne. Tho fo will grate bpon such nice diversities, in respect that he is asha- 30 subdued by the English, diverse of the conquerous med of his countrie; trulie (in mine opinion) his countrie maie be afhamed of him. Treland is dinf. ded into foure regions, Leinster, caft: Connaght, well: Allfer, north: Pounffer, fouth: and into a fift plot, befalked from eneric fourth part, and petincas ring on each part, called thereof Dedia, Deth, compiling as well ealt Worth, as well Worth, Lein-Acr butteth opon England, Aller opon the Scotish Illands: which face with Hebitades scattered bethomne both the realms, wher in at this date the Frife 4 Scot, successor of the elder Scithian, Piat, or Red. thanke dwelleth. Eth of thefe fine, where they are framable to civilitie, canswer the write of the princes courts, be fundeed into thires or counties in this may ner. In Leinster lieth the counties of Dublin, faib bare, Wickfeford og Bueifford, Catherlach, Bilken nie, the counties of Leife & Ophalie, called the kings and quienes counties : thefe two latelte fo named by parlement, in the reignes of Philip and Parie, has uing thire townes accordant, Philips towner and s Warie bourgh. Connaght hath the countie Clare; Allter the counties of Louth, Donne, Antrim, one mottie of the towne of Droghedagh (fo) the rest is in Doth) and Carregfergus. In Mounster lie the court ties of Waterford , Limerike, Corke, the countie palantine of Tiperarie, Berte, the croffe of Tipe rarie . Pounter was of old time buided into caff Pounfter, Damond, well Pounfter, Desmond, fouth Douniter, Tonmound. De occasion why Freland was parted into thele fine principall regions grew 60 red from barbarous faungeneile, as their onelie mor of this. There arrived in Ireland five bacthren, that were valiant martiall gentlemen; to wit, Bandius, Wenandius, Sagandus, other wife named Gangan dus, Kutheragus og Rutheranus, t Slanius. Miefe flue perceiuing that the countrie was not fusicient. lie peopled, were agreed (no it were) to can lots, and to thare the whole realme betweene themselves. The foure elder brethren fenering the countrie into foure parts, and being loth to ble their youngelf brother like an outcast of teplonne, condescended that each of them foure thould of their owne postion allot to Slanius a paring or parcell of their inheritance. Which being as heartilie received of Slanius, as it was bountifullie granted by them, he fetled himfelfe

therein, and of that partition it twice the appellation of Debia, Deth. The foure parts met at a criteine Beith fione at Deth, nere the castell of Kilaire, as au in wunter, different meare to feuer the foure regions.

But although Slanius in the beginning had the least parcell, pet in thost space he stod so well to his tacklings, and incroched to far byon his neighbors. that he obtained the thole monarchie of Areland. At Mathe that he bote not lupzed in oblivion his where pomore, thous be a countrie appendant to the monard, his diet or table. And albeit the confines thereof were by Slanius fretched, yet it conteineth not fo muchland as anie of the other foure parts comprehenocth; but rather by indifferent furuete, the balle deale, thereof allo it is not builkelie named Deth. 150, thereas in the time of Slanius, each of the foure parts' compaleth two and thirtie cantreds, Soft conteineth but firteene cantreds. A cantred is named Control This Stanius is intomed at an hill in Beth, with of him is named Stane. There bath beine in anch Stane, ent time one Galfride Beneuile, lord of the libertie of Deth. This noble man became a frier preather, Cathon and occesed in the years of our 1020 i 3 14, the timen. tith of Daober, and was intomed in the abbeie of the Blacke friers at Trim.

There is also another division of Ireland, into the Them English pale, and Frisheie: For then Ireland was inhyak, planted themselues nere to Dublin, and the confines thereto adioining, and to as it were inclosing and impaling themselnes within certaine lists and territozies, they feased awaie the Irish; insomuch as that countrie became mere Englith, and there of it was termed the English pale: which in ancient time Aretched from Dundalke to Catherlagh o: Bilkennie. But now what for the flacknesse of mar thours, and incrocking of the Irith entinie, the scope o of the English pale is greatlie impaired, siscram perned and coucht into an od comer of the countrie named fingall, with a parcell of the king his land, Deth, the countries of Uildare and Louth, with parts are applied chieflie with good hulbandzie, and taken for the richest and civilest soiles in Ireland. But fingall especiallie from time to time hath bin fingular so addicted to all the points of hulbandrie, as that celebra they are nickenamed by their neighbours, for their hulbandilla continual daudgerie, Collonnes, of the Latine word colonnes Coloni, wherebuto the clipt English wood clowns of fingel fæmeth to be answerable.

The word Fingali counternatieth in English Fingell, it the race or lept of the English or estrangers, for that formand they were folie feized of that part of the Fland, grie ping with their talants fo armelie that warme nell, that from the conquest to this daic the Irith enlints could never rouse them from thense. The inhabit tants of the English pale have brene in olotime so much addicted to their civilitie, and lo farre lequelle ther tong was English, And tralie, Clong as the Chamilland Annals South impaled divillers did funder themselves as well in anciental land as in language from the Brith: rudenelle was daie by date in the countrie suplanted, civilitiem graffed, god laives eftablifhed, lojaltie obserued, 15' belien supperfed, and in fine the come of a young England was like to Chot in Aveland. But wen their posteritie became not altogither so warie in keeping, as their ancellors were valiant in conque ring, the Irith language was fre bennized in the English pale : this canker twhe fuch deperote as the hodie that before was thole and found, was by little and little festered, and in maner thelie putri fied. And not onlie this parcell of Ireland grew to

that civilitie, but also wilder and the greater part of Pountier, as by the sequele of the Arth historie thall plainlie appere. But of all other places, Weil. ford with the territorie baied and perclosed within the river called the Pill, was to quite eftranged from Triffie, as if a traneller of the Triff (which was rare in those dates) had pitcht his fot within the Pill and Spoken Brith, the Weilfordians would command him forthwith to turne the other end of his tong and freake Englith, ozels bring his trouch, man with him . But in our daies they have so as quainted themselves with the Irish, as they have made a mingle mangle or gallimaufreie of both the languages, and haue in luch medlete or checkerwife focrabbedlie fumbled them both togither, as commonlie the inhabitants of the meaner fort speake

neither god Englich noz god Frich.

The fairing of a noble man touching the English of melfoid.

Did English

and fingall.

Bater,

siili. She poil.

There was of late dates one of the pieres of En. gland lent to Weilford as commillioner, to decide the controuerlies of that countrie; and hearing in affable wife the rude complaints of the countrie clowns, he conceived here & there fometime a word, other thiles a fentence. The noble man being berie glad, that byom his first comming to Freland, he but derstoo to manie words, told one of his familiar friends, that he flod in verie great hope to become Shortlie a well fpoken man in the Brith , suppoling that the blunt people had pratled Irily, all the while they langled English. Powbeit to this daie, the diegs of the old ancient Chancer Englith are kept as well there as in Fingall, as they terme a fpider, an attercop, a wifp, a wad, a lumpe of bread, a pochet, o; a pucket, a fillibucke, a compous, a faggot, a bleafe, or a blaze, for the thort burning of it (as I tudge)a pylician,a leach,a gap, a thard, a bale court or quadrangle, a balwen, or rather (as I do fumole)a barton, the houthold or folks, meanie, tharpe, keene, effrange, bucouth, eafie, eth or efe, a dunghill, a mie Ben . As for the word bater, that in Englich purpos teth a lane, bearing to an high waie, I take it for a mere Friff wood that crept bnwares into the Englift, through the vailie intercourse of the English and Frith inhabitants . And whereas commonlie in all countries the women speake most neatlie and pertile, which Tullicin his third boke De oratore, spead king in the person of Crassus feemed to have obser, ued: pet notwithstanding in Ireland it falleth out Che ponun contrarie. For the women haue in their Englith tiation of the toing an harth & brode kind of pronuntiation, with Inhwomen. vitering their words to prentiblie and faintlie, as though they were halfe ticke, and readie to call for a pollet. And most commonlie in woods of two fyllables they give the last the accent: as they fate, markeat, balkeat, golfoupe, pulloat, Kobart, Die clafe, ac : thich doubtles doth difbeautiffe their En. gliff about measure. And if they could be weaned from that corrupt cuffome, there is none that could

dillike of their Englich. Bere percale fome inamith carper will take me at rebound, and inuffinglie inibme for debaling the 60 Brith language: but trulie, tho loeuer thall be found lo ourrthwartlie bent, he takes the matter farre as wie. For as my skill is verie simple therein, so I would be loth to disuelle my rathnes, in gluing light veroid in anie thing to me unknowen : but onelie my thost discourse tendeth to this drift, that it is not

erpedient that the Frish twng should be so bniver, fallie gagled in the English pale: because that by profe and experience we lie, that the pale was never in more floriffing estate than then it was tholie Engliff, and neuer in worde plight than fince it

bath infranchised the Brith . But some will sale, that I thew my felse herein as friuolous as some losing gamuers feme superlitious, when they place them.

felues drie,they gogle with their eles hither and this ther , and if they can prie out anie one that giveth them the gaze, they fand lumping and lowning, fretting and fuming, for that they imagine that all their entil lucke proceeded of him : and yet if the famoer by depart, the lofer may be found as die thauen as he was before. And even fo it fareth with pou , because you se all things run to ruine in the Engliff pale , by reason of great enormities in the countrie, either openlie pradiled, or couertlic win. ked at ; you glanse your ete on that which frandeth nert you, the beating Jacke for Bill, you impute the fault to that which perhaps would little further the weale publike if it were eriled. Powtrulic you thot berie nere the marke. But if I may craue pour patience till time you fæme that my bolt, 3 hope you will not ocnie, but that as neere the pricke as you are, and as verie an hagler as Tam, yet the feantling thall be mine . First therefore take this with you, that a conquest draweth, or at the least wife ought to daw to it the things, to wit, law, sparell, & conquet and language . For there the countrie is subducd, things. there the inhabitants ought to be ruled by the fame law that the conqueroz is governed, to we are the same fathion of attire wher with the victor is vester, and speake the same language that the banquither parleth. And if anie of these three lacke, boubtlesse the conquest limpeth. Pow thereas Freiand hath bin by lawfull conquest brought bnoer the subiection of England, not onelie in king Henrie the fecond his reigne, but also as well before as after (as by the difcourse of the Irith bistorie thall eusbentlie be decithered) and the conquet hath beine to absolute and perfect, that all Leinfter, Deth, Alfer , the moze part of Tonnagh and Mounter, all the civities and burroughs in Freland have beine tholie Englithed, and with English conquerors inhabited, is it decent (thinke you) that their owne ancient native tong hall be fhrowded in oblinion, and luffer the enimies language, as it were a tettar or ringworme, to har. bos it felfe within the lawes of English conquerosse

And now that I have fallen bnwares into this biscourse, it will not be favre amisse to stand some, what roundlie opon this point . It is knowen, and by the hifforie you may in part perceive, how brave. lie Allter willom flogithed . The Englith families were there implanted, the Irith either biterlie ers pelled or wholie subdued, the laws bulie executed, the revenue great, and onelie Englift fpoken. But what brought it to this present ruine and decate? 3 boubt not but you gelle before 3 tell you. They were innironed and compaffed with euill neighbours. Peighbourhood bred acquaintance, acquaintance walted in the Frith twng, the Brith hoked with it attire, attire haled rubenelle rubenelle ingendereb ignozance, ignozance brought contempt of lawes, the contempt of laives beed rebellion, rebellion ras ked thereto warres, and to consequentlie the biter decate and desolation of that worthis countrie. If thefe chinks, when first they began to chap, had beene diligentlie by the diwellers flomed ; bir maieffie at this date, to hir great charges, thould not have beine occasioned to dam up with manie thousand pounds, yea and with the worthie carcales of valiant foul, diozs, the gaps of that rebellious northerne coun-

Powput the case that the Irish tong were as lacred as the Bebrue, as learned as the Greke, as fluent as the Latine, as amarous as the Italian, as courteous as the Spanith, as courtlike as the French; pet trulie (3 kno. not which maie it falleth out) I fee not but it may be verie well fpared in the Englith pale. And if reason will not lead you to

implicth the

Cic.lib.2, de

Duette Sohie

learne Eng=

Winke if, trulie experience mult force you to grant

In old time, when the Romans were first acquainted with the Greeke tong, as it is commonlie the nature of man to be delighted with newfangle wares: fo he was accounted no gallant among the Romans, that could not pratte and that Breke. Marcus Cicero father to Tullie, being at that time Stept in yeares, perceiving his countrimen to be. come changelings, in being biliwife and pelmad, and I to fucke with the Greke the conditions of the Grecians, as to be in woods talkatine, in behaviour light, in conditions quaint, in manners hautie, in promiles unifedfall, in otherall, in bargains was nering (which were reckoned for Diekill properties in those vaies) the old gentleman not so much respecting the neatnesse of the language, as the naughtie fruit it brought with it; faid, that his countrimen the Komans resembled the bondsaues of Stria; for the more perfect they were in the Greeke, 20 the worle they were in their manners and life. If this gentleman had bene now living, and had fene what alteration hath happened in Freiand, through the intercourse of languages, he would (I dare saie) breake patience, and would bemand whie the English pale is more given to learne the Frish, than the Trithman is willing to learne English: we must imbrace their language, and they detest ours. Dne demanded merilie whie Dneile that last was would not frame himselse to speake English: That (quoth 30 other) I stand in doubt (I tell you) thether the a the other) in a rage, thinkeft thou that it fanoeth with Dreile his honor to writh his mouth in clatte. ring English ? and yet forloth we must gag our faires in gibbuilhing Triff ? But Fowell to long in so apparant a matter. As all the cluities a towns in Freland, with Kingall, the king his land, Weth, the countie of Itildare, Louth, Welfford, fpeake to this date English (whereby the simplicitie of some is to be derived, that judge the inhabitants of the Englith pale, bpon their firft repaire into England, to 40 learne their Englith in thee or foure baies, as though they had bought at Chester a grotes worth of English, and so packt by the rest to be carried af. fer them to London) even to in all other places their native language is Irith.

Cambalib.r. dift.3.rub.8. Chefounder language.

Bastolenus.

Epiphan.cont. har.lib.r. I,tom.I.

I find it folemnlie advouched, aswell in some of the Friff pamplets as in Girald. Camb. that Gathelus og Gaidelus, tafter him Simon Brecke, deutsed the Irith language out of all other twings then extant in the woold. And thereof (faith Cambrentis)it is called 50 Baidelach, parilie of Gaidelus the first founder, and partite for that it is compounded of all languages. But confidering the course of interchanging and blending of speeches togither, not by invention of art, but by ble of talke, I am rather led to belieue (fixing Ireland was inhabited within one yeare af fer the division of tongs) that Bastolenus a branch of Jachet, who fir feized opon Ireland, brought thither the fame kind of speech, some of the 72 that to this familie befell at the desolation of Babell. An 60 dent, ne nomen quidem et vitto imposierunt . Vi enim to Whom lucceded the Scithians, Grecians, Egyp, tians, Spaniards, Danes, of all which the tong mult neds haue borowed part, but especialite reteining the Acps of Spanith then fpoken in Granado, as from their mightieff anceffogs. Since then to Henrie Kitzempzelle the conqueroz no such innasson happened them, as thereby they might be defuen to infeatheir native language, ontouched in manner for the space of senentæne hundred yeares after the arrivall of Iberius. It femeth to borrow of the Spanish the common thate, Commestato, that is, How do your or how fareth it with your It fetcheth fundzie words from the Latine, as arget of Argennum, monie; falle of sal, falt; camoulle of Caballus, a

plough horse, or (according but offer old Cuglin terme) a caball or caple; birreat of the old modera ten Latine wood Birretum, a bonnet . The tong is tharpe and fententions, & offereth great occasion to quicke apophthegins and proper alluftons . Cherc. fore their common tellers and rimers, whom they terme Bards, are faid to delight passinglie these Bus that conceine the grace and propertie of the tong. But the true Frish indeed differeth so much from The old that they commonlie speake, that searce one in the necitive hundled can either read, write, or understand it, Inh Therefore it is preferued among certains of their poets and antiquaries. And in verie deed the land guage carrieth such difficultie with it, what for the Theolife Arangenelle of the phale, and the curious leatnes of the pronuntiation, that a verie few of the countrie can atteine to the perfection thereof, and much leffe a forrener or franger.

A gentleman of mine acquaintance reported. that he did fie a woman in Kome, which was pole felled with a babling fpirit, that could have thatted ante language fauing the Frift; and that it was fo difficult, as the verie divell was gravelled there, with. A gentleman that flood by answered, that he toke the speech to be so sacred and holie, that no damned frend had the power to speake it; no more than they are able to fair (as the report goeth) the verle of faint John the enangelist, Et verlum care fattumeft. Pate by Bod his mercie man (quoth the wie i. postles in their copious mart of languages at Jeru falem could have spoken Irish , if they were appoint fed: whereat the companie heartilic laughed. As fluent as the Frish twng is, yet it lacketh diverte words, and borroweth them verbatim of the Eng. lish. As there is no valgar Frish wood (valese there be some od ferme that lurketh in anic obscure Themat throwds or other of their florehouse) for a cose, a the frish gowne, a dublet, anhat, a dainking cup : but one lie they vie the same words with a little inflexion. They ble also the contracted English phase, God morrow, that is to faie, God gine you a god mor ning.

I have apposed sundate times the expertessmen that could be had in the countrie, and all they could fo Infl neuer And out an equivalent Irith wood for knaue, wood in The Ozectans (according to Tullie his tudgement) knam. were in the same predicament as touching the terme Ineptus: his woods are thofe . Ego mehercule ex Liba, de un omnibus Latins verbis, husus verbi vim vel maximam Inques Semper putani. Quemenim nos ineptum vocamus, u mihi videtur ab hoc nomen habere ductum, quod non sit aptm. idque in sermonu nostri consuetudine perlate patet . Nam qui aut tempus, quo quid postulet, non videt, aut plure loquitur, aut se ostentat, aut corum, quibuscum est, vol dignitatis vel commodi rationem non habet, aut denique in aliquo genere aut inconcinnus aut multus est, is ineptim esse dicitur. Hoc vitio cumulata est eruditissima illa Gracorum natio . Itaque qui vim huiusmali Graci non vide quaras omnia, quomodo Graci ineptum appellent, nonreperies .

Certes 3 have beine of opinion (faith Tullie) that amonged the whole crue of Latine terms the word Inepens hath beine of greatest importance or weight. Fozhe, ichom we name Ineptus, scemeihto me to have the etymologie or offpring of his name here hence derived, that he is not apt; which freich eth far and wide in the bluall custome of our dailie speech or communication. For he that doub not perceive what is litting or decent for eucrie leas fon , or gableth more than he hath commission to do, or that in bragging, bolting, or peacochwife fet,

teth himselse south to the gaze, by making more of

the broth, then the field is worth; or he that regar, octi not the vocation and affaires of them, with uhone he intermedleth : or in fine, who so is tale without grace, or over tedious in anie matter, he is tearmed Ineptus; which is almuch in English, in my phantalie, as faucie, or malapert. The famous & leat ned Græke nation is generallie dusked with this fault . And for that the Grecians could not spie the enormitie thereof, they have not fornuch as france a terme thereto. Foz if you should ranfacke the whole ro Græte language, you thall not find a wood to coun, teruaile Ineptus. Thus far Tullic. Bet Budæus would not feme to acknowledge this barrennelle, but that the Grake word απαιρόναλος is equipollent to Inepiss : but that I referre to the judgement of the lears ned, being verie willing to find out some other Budaus, that could fathion an Frith wood for knaue, thereof this discourse of Ineptus grew. As the whole realme of Ireland is funded into foure principall rie much in the Triff twng, everie countrie having his dialect of peculiar maner in speaking the land guage : therefore commonlie in Ireland they at cribe a propertie to each of the foure countries in this fort. Aller hath the right Irilh phase, but not the true pronunciation; Bunter hath the true pronunciation , but not the phase ; Leinster is deuold of the right theafe, and true pronunctation; Connaght bath both the right theale and true pronuncias tion. There is a cholerike or difficult interiection 30 bled in the Irith language called Boagh, which is as much in English as twith . The Irish both in ancient time and to this date commonlie ble it, and therefore the English conquerors called them Irish poghes, as pogh Porrice. Which tawnting terme is atthis daie berie wongfullie ascribed to them of the English pale. The English interlection, Fough, which is bled in lothing a ranke of Arong layour, semeth to be sib to the other.

> Of the nature of the soile, and other incidents.

The fecond chapter.

Defoile is low and watering, including diverse little glands, invironce with lakes t marrith . Digheft hils hauc fanding poles in their tops . Inhabitants especiallic new 50 come, are subject to distillations, rheumes and sures.

For remedie whereof, they ble an ordinarie drinke of Aquavira, being to qualified in the making, that it drieth more, and also inflameth leffe than other hot confections dw. Dire Theoricus wrote a proper treatife of Aqua vita, therein he praiseth it buto Theoric. Epile. the ninth degree . We distinguisheth thee losts there of , simplex, Composita, and Persectisima. He Declareth the simples and ingrediences thereto belonging. He 60 witheth it to be taken as well before meat as after . It drieth up the breaking out of hands, and killeth the fielh wormes, if you wall your hands there with. It scowneth all scurfe a scalor from the head, being therewith dailie watht before meales . Being moderatlie taken (faith he) it floweth age , it firength neth youth, it helpeth digetion, it entteth flegme, it abandoneth melancholie, it relitheth the heart, it lighteneth the mind, it quickeneth the spirits, it cureth the hydropfie, it healeth the firangurie, it pounceth the itone, it expelleth gravell, it puffeth awaic all ventolitie, it kiepeth and preserveth the beed from whirting, the eies from dazeling, the two from lisping, the mouth from mattling, the

teeth from chattering, and the theote from rathing: it kepeth the weafan from fifting, the fromach from wambling, and the heart from fwelling, the belie from wirtching, the guts from rumbling, the bands from thinering , the finewes from thanking, the beines from crumpling, the bones from aking, 4 400 marrow from loaking . Viftadius also ascribeth vist, incolo thereto a lingular praife, and would have it to burne plufol vel de being kindled, which he taketh to be a token to know lecter nat. the gwoneffe thereof . And trulie it is a fouereigne cap. 11. liquoz, if it be opperlie taken.

The aire is verie holesome, not generallie so cleare and fubtill as that of England . The weather is more temperat, being not fo warme in fummer, nozcolo in winter, as it is in England and Flanders. The countrie is Gozed with bos, contrarie to the opinion of some waiters, who both in this and o ther errors, touching this countrie, may casilic be erculed, as those that wrote by hearefaic. Do vines parts, as before is faid, fo each parcell differeth bes 20 yards, yet grapes growthere as in England. They Do lacke the Robucke, as Polychronicon wifeth. Poly. lib. 1. Thep also lacke the bird called the pie . Holubeit in cap. 32. the English pale to this day, they ble to tearine a flie the English pale to this day, they vie to teating a on will epte. confener, a will epte. Giraldus Cambrenfis in his Camb. pare, e. time complaineth, that Ireland had erceffe of wood, & dift. 3. verie little champaine ground; but now the English pale is to naked : turffe is their most fewell and Pobenes feacole. Po venemous cræping beaft is brought mous worms forth, ornourished, or can line in Freland, being in Jecland. brought or fent. And therefore the fpider of Ireland is well knowne not to be benemous, onelie because afrog was found lieng in the incoowes of Water. Camb. pate. ford somewhat before the conquest, they construed it i. ditt. i. to impost their overthrow.

Bede writeth, that ferpents conucled into Fre. Bed.lib.r. land did presentlie die, being touched with the finel cap, 4, of the land, that what some came from From Training of the land, that what loeuer came from Ireland was then of louereigne bertue against poilon . De erem plifieth in certaine men, ffung of adders, who dranke 40 in water the scrapings of bokes that had beene of Brelam, and were cured. Benerallie it is obserued, the further west, the lesse annotance of pestilent cres tures. The want whereof is to Ireland so peculiar, that whereas it late long in question, to whether realme, Baitaine og Freland, the Ile of Pan Chould Che centroa realme, Buttaine of Aretano, the New Legist Ayout werfic of the americane: the faid controversie was decided, that New Legist for fomuch as benemous beafts were knowen to becives. bied therein, it could not be a naturall part of Ares land . And contrartivite, the Dechades are adjudged Dechades to be apendant to Ireland, because those Ilanes, sependant to reither bied not softer anie benemous worme, as Hetter Boet. Hector Boetius auoucheth . Giraldus Cambrenfis in Scot reg. writeth that he heard certeine merchants affirme, deferppages. that then they had buladen their thips in Ireland Sect. 50. they found by hap some toads bnder their balast. lib.t.dist.t. And they had no foner caft them on the Chose, than rub.29. they would puffe and swell brimeasurablie, thortie after turning op their bellies, they would burff in funder. And not onelie the earth and dust of Fres land, but also the verie thongs of Irish leather have the verie same force and vertue. I have seine it, faith Cambrensis, experimented, that a toad being Camibid rub; incompassed with a thong of Frish leather, and cras 30.31. ping thitherwacd , indeusting to have fkipt ouer it , Frift leather Suddenlie reculed bache, as though it had beine rapt expelleth bes in the head: wherebyon it began to speall to sie or nemous ther fide . But at length perceiving that the thong iscomes, did embaie it of all parts, it began to thirle, and as it were to dig the earth, where finding an hole, it Sunke awate in the prefence of fundric perfons.

It happened also in my time, faith Giraldus Cam- Cambrin cobrenfis, that in the north of England a knot of pong. dem loco. kers toke a nap in the fields: as one of them late fnorting with his mouth gaping, as though he would В. т.

Camb.tepo.

Bude, lib.2. de Aife, & Part ciue.

Baucines.

Inchboagh.

fongh.

Aquavice.

inta Bononi-

The commo: dities of A.

haue caught flies, it hamened that a fnake or adder Aipt into his mouth, and glived dolune into his bel lie, where harboring it felfe, it began to roame up and downe and to feed on the young man his entrals. The patient being fore diffraged and about meafure tormented with the biting pangs of this gree die gheft , inceffantlie praied to God, that if it fod with his gratious will, either wholie to bereauchim of his life, or elle of his unspeakeable mercie to ease from gnawing the patient his carcalle, but when he had taken his repalt, and his meat was no foner digelted, than it would give a freth onfet in bozing his guts. Diverfe remedies were lought, and meditins, pilgrimages to faints, but all conto not preuatle. Being at length fcoled by the grave adule of some sage and expert father, that willed him to make his specie repaire to Ireland, would trad no that Iland, and taken of the vittels of Ireland, but forthwith he kilo the Inake, audided it downer ward, and so being luftie and livelie he returned into England. Thus far Giraldus Cambrensis.

There be some that mone question, whether the

want of venemous wormes be to be imputed to the

mbether be= nemous expelled Fre-

Polychr. lib.1,

сар.32.

wormen were propertie of the foile, or to be afcribed to the praiers of faint Patrike, the connerted that Iland . The greater part father it on faint Patrike, especiallie faint Patrike. Such as write his life aswell apart, as in the legend 30 incident to the nature of the soile, of 3riff faints. Giraldus Cambrenfis dilaffirmeth flatlie that opinion, and taketh it to be a fecret og hidden propertie naturallie bnited to the foile, from idiom Polychronicon doth not swarue. For my part as I am inedded to neither of both the opinions, fo I would have beine ealilie perfuaded, being neither bot noz colo in the matter, to rest as a lakewarme neuter, in omitting the one and the other bulkand. were it not that one maifter Alan Cope, og fome o: ther that masketh bider his visours, more san- 4 ocrousie than pithilie had butied himselfe therein. Wherefore, fith I may with better warrant defend my natine countrie, than he or his betters may reprome it, especiallie where his flanderous reports are underpropt with film flam furmiles: I purpose under maifter Cope his correction to cope and buckle with him herein : and before he beare the ball to the goale, to trip him if I may in the way. And because (gentle reader) I mind to make the an indifferent ompier in this controversie, for the better on 5 derstanding of the matter, I will late downe mate fer Cope his words, in such wife as they are imprinted in his boke. First therefore thou must buberstand, that his boke is made in dialog wife, a kind of writing as it is bled, to commended of the learned . In these dialogs Irenaus an English man and Critobulus a Germane plate the parts. Irenaus entreth into the stage, and in this wife be-

Alan.Copus dialog.3. acd, 28.

ginneth.

Maltam appellant) Paulum viperam à manu pendentem in ignem excussisse. In ea insula scorpiones, qui alibi sunt lætales, Pauli, vt creditur, munere sunt innoxy.

Critobulus. Fortasse hoc habet à natura.

Irenæus. Falleris: naminsulani, vt Lucas refert, clamabant, delatum eò parricidam, cui commare pepercisset, irati dy serpentes, qui eum tollerent, immissent: nec quicquammagis qu'am presentem eius mortem expectabant . A qua cum îlle tantim abesset, vt nihil omnino damni out doloris inde sentiret, in admirationem acti, dixerunt, eum longe supra hominem esse, & deum sub humana specie.

Critobulus. Sicest, ve dicis.

Irenaus. Catera itaque audi. E specusad quem diuertisfe dicitur, colliguntur lapides in tota fermè Europa Salutares

Adhac, quos nasci octavo calendas Februaris contingis (qui dies conuersionis eius memoria dicatus est) quacunque cos orbu pars in lucem proferat, non horrent nec formidant angues, imo, quod magio est, folufaliua horum morfilm medentur. Id quod homo doctifismus & diligentifismus Thomas Fazellus muper Thoma prodidit, vsuipso rerum, & certis, nifallor, exemples ab to Faralle

Critobulus. Ista quidem digna funt observatione : eziam recordor, me legisse ac sapius audisse, precibus beati l'atrahim of his paine. The wome would never cealle 10 cy Hibernie apostoli, ei regioni simile beneficium indultum,ne ea insula aliquid latale pariat . Dici fortasse inde à nonnullu folet, nihil effe in Hibernia venenati prater ipfos homines, quod propter feros & agrestes corum mores dichim à plerifine

Irenæus. Eam regionem nihil pestiferum aut venenatum alere, tum ex multorum fermonibus, tum ex Beda intelligo: Bedliba. adeo vt terra illius regionus exportata, pestifera ac venenata Ang hine, aded ut terra iumo regiono apraide st, non Partitio sed animalia extinguat. Verism id quiequid est, non Partitio sed Sentenin de landa anta Datrition Sentenin time, but busked himselse ouer sea, and arrived in
Ireland. He did no somer distince of the water of 20
natura regions tribus, propteres quod longeante Patricum fining S.
natura regions tribus, propteres quod longeante Patricum fining S.
natura regions tribus, propteres quod longeante Patricum fining S.
natura regions tribus, propteres quod longeante Patricum fining S. difficile alibi reperiri.

3 will begin (faith Irenaus) with faint Baule. >> Pour know that in Wellta (which at this daie is called Palta faint Paule flung into the fire a viper that " Aucke or div cleave to his hand. In that Iland (cor pions which are elsewhere deadlie or benemous, are become through the gift of faint Paule (as it is fup ,) posed) harmelesse.

Tuft (quoth Critobulus) that may be percale >>

Paie then (replieth Irenæus)pon are in a wong " bor. For the Planders (as faint Luke mentioneth) thowted, that a parentquelloz was brought thither, and because he was not swallowed in the gulses of >> the fea, the gods being in their fullian fumes, fent ferpents to flate him. And they loked for nothing " foner than to fee him even at a twinkling to perith. But when they perceived him to be so favre distant? from death, as that he fuffeined no harme, ne felt as ,, nie paine, the people therewith amazed, faid he far furpalled mans effate, 4 that he was a god inucled ,, in man his Chape.

Pon haue reason (answereth Critobulus) you >>

have hit the naile on the head.

Peabut I praie you clip not my tale (faith Ire-" næus) but take me with you. Stones are culled in the ,, caue 02 den wherein saint Paule is said to have bai. fed or folorned, which flones in maner in all Europe, are sourceigne medicines to cure the bitings and flinges of scorpions and serpents. Furthermore, " they that are borne the five and twentith of Janua ric (which date is named the convertion of S. Paule) ? in that part foener of the world they are borne, they ,, feare not or grudge not at Inakes: yea, that which is more to be admired, the flingings of polloned worms >> are healed by the verie spittle of this Januarie biod. Which thing hath beine of late published by a well " leffered man Thomas Fazellus, to have benecuri oullie noted of him, as well by profe and experience, " Incipiam'a fancto Paulo: nosti in Melita (quam hodie 60 as by sure and substantiall examples, if I take not, the matter amille.

Then commeth in Critobulus, thome maisser, Cope maketh (I will not fate the vice or hickcorner) but the plesant concespted gentleman of this enter, " lude, and fetcheth a long leape (for I am fure he could not (umpe lo farre) from Palta to Ireland, and fra: " meth his tale in this fort. By the faith of my boote ,, fir, here is stuffe two, the noting. And now I call to mind, that I have read and often heard, that the >? like benefit hath beene imparted to Ireland, through the praires of faint Patrike the apostle of the faid 3, 27 land, that is to faie, that Ireland beworth no benemous worme. And therebpon percase some areas;)? cultomed to faie, that there is no polloned or vene, mous cm 13 hing in Freland, but onelie the people, which is taken to have beene fait of most men for their

ce houtily and fauage maners.

veik 10.

1 [ofu c,10

3 Reg.17

Ecclef. 48

verle 10, 1 Act 10

1 Act. 27

Cothis (faith Irenxus) Fam done to binder frand of by the report of diverte, and also by Bede, that no pois foned or benemous thing is bred in that realine: in fomuch that the verieearth of that countrie being ce brought into other realmes, billeth all venemous and polloned worms. But let the matter fall out which waie it will; I ascribe that propertie not to 10 saint Patribe, but to the nature of the soile, because thathben knowen long before faint Patrike was bome, that Ireland was indued with that propertie, with is elfewhere easie to be found. Hitherto Pate

In this discourse (gentle reader) thou seef that Maister Cope handleth two principall points, the propertie of Palta, and the nature of Freland in des Arolong benemous worms, the one he afcribeth la the bleffed apostle faint Paule, the other he will not 2 in anie wife impute to faint Patrike . Couching the first, as I have no occasion to intermedale there; in, so I purpose not for the quarell I have to the person, to disprove his opinion to farre as it frandeth with truth . Therefore that God that of his bountifull gooneffe gaue the grace to Poles, to turne Aa. rons rod into a scrpent, to turne the river into bloud, and to worke diverte other effects that are mentioned in the Ceripture; to " Jolue, to ffaie the fun; to b Clias to raile the dead dilo ; to c Peter to 2 make the lame go; to heale d Eneas; to reniue Las bitha; yea with his verie f chadow to cure the ficke; and the Goo that gave to that Paule, of whome mats Ad 3 verla. Cer Cope speaketh, bis gratious gift to make the s Angertist lamego; toh quicken and raife the beceafed, and targer 49 for his fake to falue his fellow pattengers: it is not take events. to be denied, but that God would impart his godnes to anie region, even the foner that any of his bleffed fernants would har bozough there . And as 3 doubt not but Simon the tanners house was nothing the veileto & II. worle for lodging to hapie a gheft as Peter : to 3 Ady verl43 am fore Walta was farre the better for harbozing lo Adas verleg. bleffed a traueller oz paffenger as Paule. Which S. Luke letteth not to tell, declaring that all they with were ficke in the Jland, flocked to Paule, and were cured; and also that the patient that was father to Publius, in whose house they were thee dates verte courteousite interteined, was by S. Paule healed. Which cure as well of that patient, as of the relidue of the Flanders, old not onlie extend to their bodies, 50 but theelie & especiallie to their foules, according to Augunalizo the opinion of the learned dinines. For as our land or Jelus Thill was never thought to cure anic ones bodie, but he would also heale his soule : so it must be thought of his apostles, in whose steps both in life and miracles they traced. And therfore the learned hold opinion, that S. Paule being in Balta erpelled from diverse of their soules the old serpent that deceived our progenitors Adam and Gue; for which God is to be magnified and glozified. Thus much I thought god here to infert, as a claufe not wholie fwaruing from that we treat of , and also that I would be found pict and readie, as facre as my simple skill fretch. eth, to understand anie opinion that tendeth to the

honozand glozie of God. Howbeit forlomuch as M. Cope hath fo firitlis dealt with Ireland, as with a countrie nothing apperteining to this mattter, I truff he will parbon me, to be formethat bolo with him, touching the his Storie of Palta, that as his negligence shall be in the one diffhiowed, so his amorrous judgement mate be in the other reverled. First therfore where he topic teth, that the inhabitants of Walts Clamabant, that is, cried, og flowted, it was not fo. The Greeke tert run-

neth, ελεγον προς αλλήλης, Dicebant ad invicem, that is Ad. 28. verf. to faie, They muttered one to an other. And faint Luke paraphealeth his meaning after. For then they perceived that the viper did not annote Paule, then faith faint Lutte, Convertentes fe, dicebant eum effe deum; They turning the one towards the other, white (pered of muttered that Paule was a god. Dow put Saint Bante the case they eried, as B. Cope saith, is it like that heard not the inhabitents of Baule mass to buffe in making of a fire coffee his Daule was to buffe in making of a fire, orthat his Malta. cares did wander fo farre off, as that he could not heare them : And if he heard them, thinke you that be would have beene wiff, in hearing Goo lo farre blafthemed, as that he would fuffer himfelfe to be de-Red . Potrulie. He would have taken on, as he and Act. 14. verk 12 Barnabas did at Liffris, there the inhabitants 12,13,14. named them gods, Barnabas to be Jupiter, and Paule, for that he was well fpoken, to be Mercurie: For then the apostles heard of their idolatrie, rene ting their clothes, they rutht into the throng, crieng and speaking, that they were mostall men, ec. In which place S. Luke putteth an expresse difference as it were of fet purpole, betweene both the words, Clanantes or dicentes. D. Cope addeth further , Delatum ed parricidam, and pet the Breeke hath πάντως Φοveus, Omnino interfector, 02 as the bulgar text is, vique homicida eft homo hic. So that they toke him to be but a manquelloz, pet D. Cope maketh him a parricide, which is worke. For although enerie particide be a manquelloz, pet E converfo, eueric manquelloz is not a

o parricide. D. Cope procedeth further , Irati dy, ferpentes, qui " eum tollerent, immissent : The gods being angrie fent : ferpents to dispatch Paule. And pet forfoth, all these » ferpents were but one viper, as is plainelie crpacit in the tert, buleffe P. Cope would teach faint Luke to tell his tale after the finest fathion, least the apofile Chould have beene thought to have fitoned. As a parfon his the parlon that preached to his parithoners of the gor fermon. fpell, therein mention is made of them that Chaift fed in the defert, or wildernelle. D(quoth the parlon) that a Chill was that, that with fine barlie loanes, and flue fiftes fed fine hundred persons. The clerke hearing his mafter to grate onerlong on that point, for he did often iterate that centence, thole by to the pulpit, and plucking the parlon by his gowne, this fpered in his eare that Chiff fed fine thousand . Hold the contented thou folish fellow (quoth the parson) if I should tell mine hearers of lo great a number, I thould but discredit the gospeller, and they would not belæue me. So it fareth with D. Cope. Belike he miliruffed, that if he had faio, that one viper could have flaine Paule, the reader would have suspected the untruth of the matter : bicause it carrieth great likelihod with it, that one man could withfrand one viper: and therefore to faue faint Luke his credit, he increaseth the number by putting the plurall for the Angular . Whereas therefore it Ambeth with D. 19. Cope his Cope his pleature, to florith in his rhetoricall figure roctorike. named , Peritatis Superlatio , in terming muttering, Mowting , a manquelloz, a parricide, one biper, ferpents : he mult be borne withall, if in the heat of his figure he flep a little awaie in the remnant of his bilcourse. For thus he faith.

And therespon it is reported percale by some men, that there is nothing benemous or polloned in Treland, but the men and women. Which is taken to have beene spoken by most men for their brutish and lauage maners, Pere (god reader) thou mult under fram that Sp. Cope putteth the text downe and the glofe. The tert is, There is nothing in Ireland benemous but the inhabitants. The glole is, This is faid to have been fpoken for their brutish and fauage conditions. Bow well harpt by faint Lankfield. Here is a glote, I indertake you, sutable to the tert. Wut

B. 2.

let vs fe, how cunninglie D. Cope bæquiteth him. felfe. first he obserueth not Decorum perfona, feconde lie he followeth not Decorum dialogi, thirolie he thew off herein little divinitie. Touching the first point, tho knoweth not, that thefe tapes and gibes are onelie fit for ruffians, vices, fwalhbucklers a tolpots. Anotrulie they beefet a divine as well, as for an alle to twang quipada on a harpe or gitterne, or for an ape to friske trenchmoze in a paire of bulking and a doublet. The heathen milliked in an opator fquiri 10 litte, what should be thought then of a dinine, whome faint Paule would have to be fober, modelf, grave, 1. Tim 3. bert, and wife. Anlesse D. Cope leaning to the letter of faint Paule his words would beare be in hand, that faint Paule would have modellie to reft onelie in bilhops. The are commanded in the old and new ter flament, to love our neighbors as our felues. Which doth implie, that we ought not to flander our neigh

And thall a vivine then speake bucharitablie, not 20 onelic of one, but of an whole realme, and not onelie speake but also write, yea and that in the language that is bniverfallie spoken, thoroughout the greater part of the world, boon no fure ground, but onelie bpon hearefaie, weieng not what the prophet writeth, Perdes omnes qui loquuntur mendacin, Ahou Chalt Delfroie all them that speake untruths. And were it that ante fuch film flam flirts were swthed by anic person of credit; yet (as me fæmeth) it would fland more with the granitie of a dinine, that such childish quips, and 30 scornefull tawnts thould somer by his meanes charitablie be whifee, than thorough his procurement car, pinglie published. I will stand no longer on this point, but onelie craue D. Cope to refort to the fift of Batthew, and there perule Chill his verdict tow thing amorrous tongs. To come to the fecond part, in which he observeth not Decorum dialogi, thou thalf binderfrand (god reader) that Critabulus , 02 Crito, bulus, whome D. Cope maketh his bagpipe to belch out his rancour, is a Bermane borne, as D. Cope 40 faith, tho femeth to be Critabulus his goofather. Powlet anie one, that is acquainted with the maners of Germans, judge, if it be decent, that one of them thould scotte and scorne the conditions and fathions of other countries. I will not speake by heare faie, as 99. Cope doth, but by cielight . I could neuer espie nor probablie haue I heard it reported, no not of the mere lauage Irith, luch quaffing, luch fwilling, such bolling, such gulling, such brutish drunkennelle, such surfetting, such vomitting, as 3 The German haue fæne some Bermans dw . In god foth it is his frienothip. knowne, and for my part I have fæne it being bepond the feas, that in their carowing and cup friend. thip, they threaten fuch kindnelle on their companions, that least their felowes should mistrust them with double dealing, they will not flicke to thew them the bottome of their flomachs, a to the end they

> Thus when they have call their gorges, they clap 60 on their thumb hats, and run like bedlem barre toes into the firets with their naked flatchets . and there they keepe such a Ainking Aurre with hacking: of Cones, with hewing of blocks, with thwitting of focks, with friking of falles, with thumping at dozes, that it would make a horfe breake his halter, to fee fo dunken a pageant. In fine, this qualitie is to naturallie ingraffed in the greater part of them, that a famous divine did not flicke of late to faie of penlie in his lecture, that drunkennelle in that countrie man, was cither Peccatumoriginale 03 Accidens inseparabile. I write not this (I take God to record) to the reproch or flander of that countrie (being loth to commit the felfe fame fault that I reprehend in anis

Chould take the better view thereof, they will place

it now and then in their neighbors bosome.

other) but onelie my meaning is to fettle before the reader his eies the absurditie of D. Cope, in fra ming poze Critabolus to flout Ireland, confidering that if he call his ete homeward, he thall find as filthie puddle in his owne countrie, as in other realms. And therefore this quip late as bulemelie in his mouth, as for an whore to repreheno bitcherie, or for an blurer to condemne amonie . For as there is nothing lette to be tollerated, than for ante one to have an other to account for his life, that can pela no account of his owne : to there is nothing that ought to mozzell by ante one from rebuking other nations, than to lee the mildeineanor of his olune native countrie. I would with B. Critabolus or D. Cope, if it hall please him to make by the mu fer, with indifferencie to weie the effate of Ireland. and fo without parcialitie to frame his inogement.

Ireland, and especiallie the ruder part is not for Inimis red with such learned men as Germanie is. If they it mainly had found preachers, and fincere litters, that by the formed imbalming of their carian foules with the fweet and facred flowers of holie wait, would instructhem in the feare of God, in obcieng their prince, in obfer. uing the lawes, in boderproping in ech man his bo cation the weale publike; I doubt not, but within two or thee ages D. Critabolus his heires fhould heare to good a report run of the reformation of Ire land, as it would be reckoned as civill as the best part of Bermanie. Let the foile be as fertile and bette as anie would with, yet if the hulband man will not manure it, sometime plow and eare it, sometime harrow it, sometime till it, sometime marle it, some time velue it, sometime big it, and sow it with god and found come, it will bring forth weds, bindcome, cochle, darnell, brambles, briers, and fundrie wild Mots. So it fareth with the rude inhabitants of Ireland, they lacke univertities, they want instructions, they are destitute of teachers, they are without pres thers, they are denote of all fuch necessaries as apperteine to the training op of youth: and not with standing all these wants, if anie would be so from wardlie fet, as to require them, to ble fuch civilitie, as other regions, that are sufficientlie surnished with the like helps, he might be accounted as burea. fonable, as he that would force a cræple that lacketh both his legs to run, or one to pipe or while a gali ard that wanteth his opper lip.

But fuch is the corrupt nature of bs worldings, and me thinketh fuch baine humozs are not biterlie dried by in our lage and mortified dinines. We are most commonlie given rather to tawnt that with is amille, than to praise that which is god; and rather we follow the spider in soking the poison, than in imitating the bee by fucking the bonie. Pow that it appeareth, that it was not litting for the author being a divine, to write fo bucharitablie, nor for D. Crita, bolus being a Bermane to carpe other countries fo fnapfiblie: let bs fæ that tholesome divinitie bath beene here ottered, and how well the line wes of P. Critabolus his argument thall be found to hang to gither, when the anatomie therof by peccemeale thall be crantined . I call to mind (quoth D. Critabolus) that I have tead and often heard, that the like benefit hath beine granted to Ireland through the praires of 5. Patrike. P. Critabolus read & heard that by the praires of S. Patrike, Ireland hath no benemous worme : Ergo fome hold opinion, that the poison res fleth onlie in the people. Truly this argument hang. eth togither by verte frange gimbols. And Joace lay, D. Cope never learned this kind of reasoning in the famous college of Pagdalene in Drfond, what lov euer D. Critabulus did in Bermanie . But let bs put the logike apart, fran the fingular point of olub nitie. I would gladic lerne in that part of fcripturs

Cic.lib.2.de orat.

2.₹3.

10 fal. r. ber. 7. Sapient.1. Vide August in cundem Pfal.

Matth.s. ber[,23.

or in that ancient father D. Critabulus read or heard (for most of his learning hath beine, as it Cometh, purchaled by heare-laie) that ante holie prelat, that came of meere charitie to conuerta countrie from night to light, from rudenelle to know leage, from infivelitie to chafffianitie, from bice to pertue, from the dicell to God (which doth implie an especiall zeale in faluing their foules) would purge the foile of all ememous wormes, & leave the foules with the contagion of vice and finne. Wherby infueth that the place is better than the inhabitants, and fo consequentlie the satisfier of the Pachabees must be place, but he elected the place in respect of the peo-Lucs, bur 32. ple. Dur laufour Jelus Chalft disposseding the patis ent of the legion of divels, permitted them to enter into an heard of hogs. Critabulus would have Chills faints do the contrarie, to disposselle the 2 hogs, and to leave the men pollelled with divels. For fo he reporteth faint Patrike to haue owne, by rid ding the land of all poisoned wormes, a leauting the rancour to lurke in the people. Trulie if the matter flood fo farre out of foint, I boubt not, but the Hans ders might have come as lawfullie to him, as the Laceber 37. Gergesons came ingratefullie to Chaste, requiring him to depart their countrie. For fuch a fcoffing prelat , his rome had beene better than his companie, than the converting of their Jiano.

Hitherto thou had heard (gentle reader) how gallantlie Critabulus hath placed his part : now thall I delire the to view how lagelie Ireneus claspeth by all the whole controversie. He saith it is the nature of the foile, not to breed anie benemous worme, and that was incident thereto before faint Patrike was boine. How prome you that fir Ableafeth you to fkew your ele towards the margent, and there Chall you find the flue and thirtith chapter of Solinus folemn 40 lie quoted. Couching this matter, there is nothing in Solinus but this: Illic anguis nullus, auis rara, In Ites land is no fnake, and feldoine a bird, & yet birds are as commonlie there as in anie other countrie. But I would gladic bederstand how this authoritie of Solinus furthereth M. Ireneus his opinion. Ire, land beed no fnake before faint Patrike was borne: Ergo it ingendzed no toad, no adder, no frog, noz anie other virulent worme. As if a man would reason thus: Before faint Patrike his time there was no 50 horstemill in Ireland : Ergo before his time there was no milhorde. Certes he that would wind bp bisconclusion so fondlie, might be thought to have as much wit as a rolled horse. This authoritie of So. linus is fo far from upholding Freneus his affertion, as that it plainelie fæmeth quite to overthrow it, s as it were in his owne turne, it giveth him a fall.

For the cause whie faint Patrike was moued to expell all the venemous wormes out of Ireland, might probablie haue bene coniedured, to haue pro. 60 caded of this; that he perceining the land to bied no lnakes, therof was occasioned, for the furthering of thustian faith, to expell other kind of wormes that lurked there before his comming, as toades, adders, blindworms, frogs, &c. Here perchase M. Cope may blench me, in replieng that Anguis may be construed generallie for all kind of bermine, and so Imight be taken tardie in building my discourse bpon a misconffruction.

In god loth to omit what strange and absorb signification Anguir should beare, by notifieng a poils ned spider and such like, and in mine opinion further from the purpose, than the father that distuading his fonne from plaieng on fundate, fortified his realon

with the old faid faw, Non est bonum ludere cum fanctis, It is not good quoth he, to place on fundaces or holic 'daies. Is it (thinke you) fellonie of treason, to being the credit of Solinus in queltion, for millaking Anguis aswell as Auis? Ho; as he was groffie deceiued in the one, in writing that birds were rare in Free land; so might be have Graied as likelie in the other, by diffurdening Ireland of all benemous wormes, bicause the Iland wanted in his time but one or two that have more nico to be wieded, wholie infected to kinds, as a fnake and a toad. Where a man buildeth bpon everie twatling and peatling rumoe, and his Rumoe catefe is not his tudge, he may be fure, that fuch flieng cheth lethers. tales will catch manie feathers before they come at him that is as far distant from their nests, as Solinus was from Ireland when he wrote his panith. let. The profe thereof as it is dailie tried, so not mas nie yeares past hath beene verie pretilie verefied. There was a gentleman of mine acquaintance that met his entinie in the fields, there they both opon a trifling quarell fought to frænolie, as they had more neo to have beene grapled togither with cables, than parted by indifferent flicklers . Howbeit, bicaufe the gentleman was never before fletht, and vet not thing at all that daie, for each of their blowes did commonlie light on the modow where they fought; a friend of his reported well of him to an other, fair eng, that he was like in time to proue a proper man of his hands, for the well handling of his weapon in his late combat. Wherevoon louis after, the other fith his above would tend rather to the peruerting, 30 doubling the gentleman his praife, gave notice to an other, that such a gentleman (naming him) fought valtantlie such a daie in such a place. Immediatlie byon this in a thire or two off, it was notice that the partiepraised, fought with two at once in such a place, naming the medow. At length it was bruted. that he fought foure feuerall dates; and I am well at fured that was the first fraie that ever he made, and I thinke it will be the last, buleste he be forced maugre his heart to the contrarie.

Pot long after it happened, that a gentleman and I travelled abroad the countrie of fet purpole to difpost our felues, and fo to returne afresh to our boks, where entering in communication with a blunt countrie lob(pet such an one as toke his halfepenie to be goo filuer) that knew the forefair champion. My companion and I made wife, as though we were not acquainted with him, or ever heard of the combat: Pow in god faith gentleman (quoth he) A frendite you would do berie well to enter in acquaintance commenda: with him; for over this, that he is a gentlemana, tion, bundantlie endued with fingular good qualities, he is become of late to valiant a cutter, as he maketh blading his dailie breakefast. By faint Parie, quoth my companion, that is verie cold rolle, and if his breakefalts be no better than a pece of colo pron , I little weigh how feldome I take a repast in his companie at anie lucho poinarie. Paie, my meaning is (quoth the other) that he vieth to fight frely and falls ing everte morning, in fo much that of late, 3 dare bide by it, he fought eight daies in one weke. At which words I for my part caulo not refraine from laughing, feing how bemurelie the fellow kept his countenance, and how that he spake Bonafide. Where, bpon I thaped him an antwer and fato, that I never heard of anie that fought eight daics in one weke, but onelie in olo time , then flue quarters made bp

The fellow perceining that he overthot himfelfe, replied: Sir, you take me berie Most, as long and as perie a lowbie as you imagine to make me: my meaning is , that he fought eight feuerall times in one weke. Bight times (quoth my companion) then belike he fought once aboue commons. For poutolo vs right now, that he made his fraie his morning

Dbiedion.

Jufmer .

breakefalf, and thereas there are but scauen baies in the weke, the fought (as you report) eight times, and you know that eight maketh one abeue feauen, and feauen maketh fir and one bider eight; either you muft confelle that he fought out his breakfall, dinner, bener og fupper; og elle you muft grant that there be eight dates in one weke, or at the leaft two breakefalts in one date: and that I am fure you will confesse to be as great an absurditie as the other. Paie (quoth the clowne) and you intrap me with fuch 1 lophiffrie, you thall dine, fup and breake your fall a. lone for me, and there with all departed. Therby may be gathered, that if he had bin fothed up, this tong leteo run at libertie vincontrolo, like a bowle that runneth in a fmoth allie without anternb, he would have brought himselfe to that baic, as he would not flicke to fair that his frænd had fought eight dales in one houre. Therefore as this pudding his pricke grew at length by report to an huge post, so the want of one venemous worme in Ireland, being bruted ut 20 forcen realmes, might have bene fo thwitted and mangled in the cartage before it came to Solinus his cares, as he might have beine informed, that the countrie was benote of all venemous warmes,

thereas inded there larked but one kind.

Like as God of his inffice punisheth a countrie that is hardhearted, with outward wormes: so of his merciethey are removed from a realme that is pliant to follow his lawes and precepts. As when Pharao ivould not litten to God his threats denoune 30 ced himby the preachers of God, Poles and Aaron, Egypt was punified with frogs and diverte kind of flies, as is exprest at full in holie writ: and againe bpon Ibarao his feined promiles (the fecrets of whose hollow heart Goo perfectle knew) at the infrance of Poles , thefe plagues were apealed, and the vermine quite ertinguithed: lo I praie you, is it fo abfurd a polition to hold, that faint Patrike find ing the Irish priest to embrace the gospell, as he did in verie bed, might fant fo highlie in God his fanoz, 40 as through his earnest petition made to God, the polloned warmes fould be abandoned. This is not for are a thing boon the implanting of chillian faith in ante region, but rather a propertie incident there. to according to Chaiff his promile: Signa autem ess,qui crediderint, hac sequentur; In nomine meo damonia egicient: Mar. 16. D. 17. linguis loquentur noun: serpentes tollent: & si mortiferum quid biberint, non eis nocebit : super agros manus imponent, & bene habebune . And there tokens thall follow them that believe; In my name thall they call out divels, co they thall freake with new tongs, they thall drive awaie ferpents, and if they drinke anie deadlie thing it thall not hurt them : they thall late hands on the ficke, and they thall be cured. Wherefore, fith it is fo cuidentlie warranted by feripture, that in the name of Jefus, ferpents may be ortuen awate, if Ireland be found through anie such means to be devote of

Gregor, hom.

@roo.8.

berf.7,17, 224.

Vide Apoc.9.

berfe 3, at

2 1Reg. 8.

berle.37.

10 falm. 117. berle,22

in our eies. Thus farre(gentle reader) incroching byon thy patience, I have imploied my travell in defending my native countrie, against such as labour to die fraine it with their flanderous scoffes. Douching the principall queffion, whether S. Patrike bid erpell polloned wormes out of Ireland, or whether it be the nature of the foile, as I faid in the entrie of this discourse; so I fair againe, that I weigh not two thips which wate the wind bloweth, bicause I see no inconnenience that may infue either of the affirmatine or negative opinion. And therefore if M. Cope had dealt as modefile as Cambrenfis, the author of

polloned warmes, we are to alcribe the glazie hereof

to Goo, according to the fateng of the prophet; A do-

hath beene done by Bab, and it femcth wonderfull

Polychronicon or others, that find to the dentall, h: ue cone ; he thould have gone Cotfræ with his complices, and have made in mounterbankinge the most he could of his wares . But for that he would needs fee further in a millione than others. and not onelie denderlie difproue the trivial opinio on, but scomefallie Camer an whole realine, werein he chall find his superiors in honour, his betters in parentage, his pæres in learning tialimates in wif dome, his equals in courtefie , his matches in hone fie : I muft craue bim to beare it patientlie , if bo crieng him quittance, I ferued him with a bith of his owne cokerie. And if for this my freid dea. ling with him (therebuto I was the somer led, for that as it is courtefie to mollifie wild speaches with milo answers, so I reckon it for good policie now and then to cleave knurd knobs with crabbed wedges he will feme to take pepper in the note, for anie recompense he is like to have at mine hands, he may wive his note on his fleue. And if it shall stand with his pleafure, to replie either in English or in Latine (the occasion of which is rather of him growne than by me giuen)he chall find me willing, if Cod spareme health, to refoine with him in fo god a quarrell, eb ther in the one language of the other: and when both tales are heard, I bethrow him, for my part, that Mall be driven to the wall.

Cambrensis reporteth of his owne knowledge, Chebal and I heare it audived by credible perfons, that bar, nacle, nacles thousands at once are noted along the shores in Ireland to hang by the beakes, about the edges of putrified timber, as thips, oares, mails, ando: holos, and such like, which in processe taking linelie heat of the funne, become waterfoules, and at their time of ripenesse either fall into the sea, or file abroad into the aire. The same do never couple in the adof generation, but are from time to time multiplied, as

before is exprest.

Ancas Syluius watteth himfelfe tohaue purfued Sabelparts the like experiment in Scotland, where he learned Can, like the trath hereof to be found in the Ilands Dichades, pog dil. 1. Giraldus Cambrenfis gathereth hereof a prette com rub.15. clusion against the Jewes in this wife following: Thomp,34 Refrice infalix Iudae, respice, vel sero, primă hominia generationem ex limo fine mare & famina . Secundamque ex mare fine , fæmina, ob leg is venerationem, diffiteri non audes .Tertiam Solam ex mare scilicet & famina, quia ostialis est, dura cer- " uice approbas & affirmas. Quartam verò, in qua sola salmest » ex fæmina scilicet sine mare obstinata malicia in propriam per- ,, miciem detestaris. Erubesce miser, erubesce, or saltem ad naturam recurre, qua ad argumenta fidei, ad instructionem no- " Stram noua quotidie animalia sine omni mare vel sæmina » procreat & producit. Prima ergo generatio exlimo, & hat ,, vltima ex ligno. Illa quidem quoniam à Domino natura tantum semel, ideo semper obstupenda processit. Istam vero non " minus admirabilem minus tamen admirandam (quia sape sit) >> imitatrix natura administrat. Sic enim composita est humana natura, vi nihil, prater inustitatum es raro contingen vel "
pretiosum ducar roll administratum es raro contingen vel pretiosum ducat vel admirandum, solis ortum & occasium," mino factum est istud, ex est mirabile in oculis nostris, That 60 quo nihil in mundo pulchrius, nihil stupore dignius, quia quo- >> tidie videmus, fine omni admiratione praterimus. Ecliffin ,, verò folis,quia rariùs accidit,totus orbis obstupescit. Acidem etiam facere videtur, flatu solo, & occulta quadam inspira- " tione citra omnem mixturam apum ex fauo procreatio.

Parke thou wetched Jew, laith Cambrensis, ,, marke yet at length the first creation (that is of A. Dam) of earth without male ogfemale. As for the fe. " cond, of a man without a woman (that is to fair ,, Que) for that thou half the old law in reverence, thou darest not denie. As for the third, both of man and " woman, bicause it is bailie vied as fiffeneckt as " thou art, thou dwelf acknowledge and confesse. But ,, the fourth procreation, in which confiffeth our onelie tulkification (he meaneth the incarnation of Dyll)?

coof a woman without man, with Aurdie and obstinat " rancor to thine offer destruction thou dost detest. Bluth therefore thou buhappie Jew, be alhamed of " this thy follie, and at the least wife have recourse to co nature, and settle hir toolks before thine eles, that for the increase of faith, and to the lessoning of vs, value bissorth a ingenozeth new lining creatures, ce without the coupling of mascle or semale. Avam ce was created of earth, the barnacles are ingendred of wod, bicause Adam was once created by him, who is Lozd of nature, therefore it is continuallic admir ce red. But for that dame nature the counterfeitrelle " of the celefiall workeman, effones bredeth barna cles, therefore their brod is accompted more mark uclious than to be maruelled, more twomberfull than ce towndered. For fuch is the framing of man his na. c ture, as he demeth nothing pretious or wonderfull, but fuch things as feloome happen. What may be thought more beautifull than the course of the sunner " And yet bicause we see it dailie rise and set, we let it 20 coverlip bs as an bluall custome, without anie staring orgazing. paet we are amaged and affonied at " the ccliple, bicause it happeneth verie seldome. The bes that are ingenozed of the honie combe, onlie by Bas how a putte or fecret breathing without anie coupling, lame to upholo this procreation of barnacles . His gendered. therto Cambrentis, with whom concerning the ingending of bees Johannes de sancto Geminiano Johan, de S. Gem in lib. de accordeth.

The inhabitants of Ireland are accustomed to 30 movequestion, whether barnacles be fish or flesh, & as yet they are not fullie resolued; but most vsuallie the religious of Arctaelf abstinence doeat them on fifth bates. Giraldus Cambrenfis, and after him Po-Cambr, lib. 1. lychronicon suppose, that the Irish cleargie in this point straie. For they hold of certeintie that barnas Polyche, lib.t. cles are fleth . And if a man faie they had eaten a collop of Adam his leg, he had eaten fieth. And yet Adam was not ingendeed of malcle og female, but rotten timber. But the Briff clergie did not fo farre fraie in their opinion, as Cambrenfis & Polychro-Boam & Cue nicon, in their disprofe. For the framing of Abam and Eue was supernatural onelie done by God, onche created anothy the helpe of angels or anic other creature. For like as it impatieth natures course to raise the dead, to lighten or inlight the blind, so it flod not with the binall a common linage of nature, but onlie with the supereminent power of God, to frame a man of clate, and a woman of a mans rib. But the 50 ingenoring of barnacles is naturall, a not fo won-Derfull as Cambrenfis maketh it. And therefore the eramples are not like.

Dow it should sæme that in Cambrensis his time, the Irish clergie builded their reason upon this plot. That weuer is fleth, is naturallie begotten or ingendied of fieth; barnacles are not naturallie ingendied of fleth, but onelie of timber and wood; barnacles therfore are not fleth, buleffe you would have them to be woven flesh. And if the reason be so knit it may not be difiointed by Cambrenfis his erample. Asifa man Chould argue thus. She that is begotten of anic man, must be of force daughter to that man; Pelcha was begotten of Aran; Ergo Pelcha was A. rans daughter. This argument is of all parts to fore tified, as it femicity of all fives to be impregnable. Det a busse braine sophister cauilling on the terme (begotten)might faie, that Gue was begotten of As dam, and yet the is not Adams daughter. Erne it is that Adam was not Gues father, no moze than Que was Adams mother, neither by that ingendring was there anie degree of confanguinitie sprong betwene them. But bicaufe the wood (begotten) is taken in the argument for the naturall ingenoring of

man and woman, the inffance given of Gue both not disproue the Maior . And yet for the better but derstanding of the question, it is to be noted that the thilosophers diffinguish Animalia fensitua, that is, sens Thomp. 1. q. fible living things, in two losts, perfect and buper: 91 arcs, ad 2, in fect. The perfect are they that are incended of food. Living fect. The perfect are they that are ingendeed of feed, things are of the unperfect without feed. Those that are naturallie two forts. ingendied with fed, can neuer be naturallie ingen Thomp t.q. Died without feed: albrit Aucenna verie erronious 71.1.0. 1.m. Aucenna.

lie boloeth the contrarie: as for erample. Bicaule man is naturallie ingenozed of man and Ivoman, no man may naturallie be ingendred with out the copulation of man and woman : yet supernaturallieit may be. As Adam was made without Gen.2, berl 7. man and woman: Eue framed without womana Gen.2, ber 21, our faufout Chilf begotten without man. And ther: Luc.1. berl. 34 fore the bluell could not have attainted him of origi nall finne. Contrartivile, the unperfed map be ut gendeed without feed by mire, mud, doing, carten, rotten timber, or anie other thing; and chieflie by the fecret influence and infillation of the celeffiall plas Vide Arift. lib. nets, as the funne and fuch other. As if you put the 6.7. haire of an horfe taile in mire, puddle, or in a dong. hill for a certeine space, it will turne to a little thin fpralling worme , which I have often feine & erperis mented. And they are termed unperfect, not in res frect of their owne nature, in which they are perfect, but in comparison of other sorts of living things. Among this crue muft barnacles be fetled. But here some will saie; Let them be perfect or unperfea, what then : I would faine know, whether Cambrenfis be in an errour, or the Triff clergie. Forhitherto I fee nothing, but Cambrentis his reason bilpiwued. And it is often fæne that a found opinion may be weake ned by a feble reafon, as we fe manie faire garments mard in the making. It is true: and if anie be defirous to know my mind herein, 3 lumole, ac. The barnacle cording to my fimple ludgement, bider the correct meither fith tion of both parties, that the barnacle is neither fifth onclie created of claie, as the barnacles of wod & 40 norfleth, but rather a meane betweene both. As put the case it were enaded by parlement, that it were high treason to eat fleth on fridaic, and fifth on fundaie . Trulie I thinke that he that eateth barnacles both these vaies, thould not be within the compatte of the estatute: yet I would not will my friend to hazard it, least the barnacle thould be found in law fith or fleth, yea and perhaps fith and fleth. As then the lion king of beatts made proclamation, that all horned beaffs thould audio his court, one beaff has uing but abunch of flesh in his sozehead veparted with the rest, least it had beene found in law that his bunch were an home.

But some will peraduenture maruell, that there thould be ante living thing, that were not fiff no; fielh. But they have no fuch cause at all . Pits. flethwormes, bes, butterflies, caterpillers, fnailes, graffehowers, bætels, earewikes, reremile, frogs, toads, adders, fnakes, fluch other, are living things, and pet they are neither fith not fleth, not yet red here ring : as they that are trained in scholasticall points may ealilie luoge. And fo I thinke, that if anie were to tharpe let (the estatute above rehearled, presupos fed) as to eat fried flies, buttero bes, flued fnailes, either on fridate or fundate, he could not be therefore tridicted of haulte treason; albeit I would not be his gheff, unlesse I toke his table to be furnisht with more tholesome and licorous vianos. The like quer The sellwhee stion may be moured of the sell, and if it were well therethe sich canualled, it would be found at the least wife a mot of fielb. cafe. But thus farre of barnacles.

Ireland is flozed of coives, of excellent horfles, of hawkes, of fill and of foule. They are not without wolves greihounds to hunt them, bigger of bone and lim than a colt. Their cowes as also the rest of

Genet 11. berlezy.

exempl & 6-

mili rerum li.

wijether the

ith o: flefb.

ho Tinn

Augult, fuper

15.9.c.18.

Dam e Gua ef mount. $T_{h,\alpha,p,1,q}$ 9: arc 1.ad.3

Thom.p.1,a.71 a.1.0.3.0.

,20

Shape.

Egle.

The Irilly hobbie.

The nag.

The chiefe hozfie.

The mongrell hobbic.

Volat. lib.3. Geog. Afturcones.

their cattell, and commonlie wat elle focuer the countrie ingenozeth (ercept man) is much leffe in quantitie than those of England, or of other realms. Sticepe few, and those bearing course fleses, whereof they frin notable rug. Their there have thort and curt tailes. They there their thepe twife pearelie, and if they be left bulhome, they are therewith rather pained than other wife. The countrie is verie fruitfull both of come and graffe. The graffe (for des fault of god hulbandzie) luffered bneut, groweth lo 10 ranke in the north parts, that offentimes it rotteth their cattell. Egles are well knowen to bied in 3 reland, but neither fo big, noz fo manie as bokes tell. The hortes are of pale calle, in running wonders full fwift, in gallop both falle and full indifferent. The nago: the hackeneie is verie god for travelling, albeit others report the contrarie. And if he be broken accordinglie, you shall have a little tit that will travell a whole date without ante batt. Their hordes of feruice are called thiefe hordes, being 2. well broken they are of an ercellent courage. They reine pallinglie, and champe bpon their bitdels brauelie, commonlie they amble not but gallop and run. And these hordes are but for skirmishes, not for travelling, for their fomachs are luch, as they dife daine to be hacknied. Thereof the report grew, that the Triff hobbie will not hold out in travelling. Pou thall have of the third fort a battard or mongrell bob bie, niere as tall as the horde of service, Grong in trauelling, cafe in ambling, and verie fwiff in run- 30 ning. Of the horde of fernice they make great ffore, as therin at times of neo they repole a great pece of fafetie. This bimb Volaterane writeth to baue come from Aufturea, the countrie of Hispaine, betwene Gallicia and Postugall, whereof they were named Alturcones, a name now properlie applied to the Hispanich genet.

The names of the civities, boroughs andhauen townes in Ireland.

The third drapter.

Dublinum.

Tublin the beautie and eie of Ireland, hath beene named by Ptolome, in ancient time. Cblana . Some terme it Du slina,others Dublinia, mas Inie write it Dublinum, authors of better skill name it 50

Dublinium. The Irish call it, Balle er Cleagh, that is, a towne planted bp on burdels. For the common opinion is, that the plot bpon which the civitie is builded, hath beene a marify ground; and for that by the art or invention of the first founder, the water could not be boided, he was forced to fasten the quakemire with hurdels, and upon them to build the citie. I heard of some that came of building of houses to this foundation: and other hold opinion that if a cart or waine run 60 with a round and maine pale through a firet called the high aret, the houses on ech side shall be percetued to hake. This citie was builded, or rather the buildings thereof inlarged, about the yeare of our Lord 155. For about this time there arrived in To reland thie noble Casterlings that were brethren, Auellanus, Sitaracus, and Propus. Auellanus being the eldeft brother builded Dublin, Sitaracus Waterfood, and Puopus Limerike. Of the four der Auellanus, Dublin was named Auellana, and after by corruption of fpeach Cblana. This citie, as it is not in antiquitie inferiour to anie citie in Free land, fo in pleasant situation, in googious buildings,

in the multitude of people, in martiall chinalrie, in

obedience and localtic, in the abundance of wealth, in largenelle of holpitalite, in maners and civilitie it is superiour to all other cities and townes in that realme. And therefore it is commonlie called the 3, rish or young London. The feat of this citic is of all Dubles fives pleafant, comfortable, and tholesome. If you India would traverie hils, they are not far off. If champi ton on ground, it lieth of all parts. If you be delited with the from mater. the famous river called the Lifte na. fresh water, the famous river called the Little, na. of Dublin med of Prolome Lybnium, runneth fall by Afpon Child. will take the view of the lea, it is at hand. The onlie fault of this citie is, that it is leffe frequented of merchant effrangers, bicause of the bare hauen, Their charter is large. King Henrie the fourth game China this citie the swood, in the yeare of our Lood 1409, giften to be and was ruled by a major and two balliffes, with and was ruled by a maio; and two values, with which were changed into Chiriffes by a charter granted by Dubling Coward the firt, in the yeare of our Logd 1547.In which years John Rians and Robert Jans, two worthipfull gentlemen, were collegues in that of fice, a thereof they are named the last bailiffes a first hice, a there of they are named the mandates that the infirites that have beene in Dublin. At appearethy the ancient scale of this citie, called signam proposational according to the continuous that this citie half beene in old time governed by proposations.

a pronoff. The hospitalitie of the malor and the thirifies for Thehosphy the yeare being, is folarge and bountifull, that foth, interitte lie (London forepiced) perie few lach officers bndcr manyan the crowne of England keepe so great a post, none Jam lure greater. The maioz, ouer the number of officers that take their vailie repall at his table, has peth for his yeare in maner open house. And albeit in tearme time his house is frequented as well of the nobilitie as of other potentats of great calling: pet his ordinarie is so god, that a veriefew let fealls are proutded for them. They that spend least in their majoraltie (as those of credit, yea and such as bare the office have informed me) make an ordinarie ac count of five hundred pounds for their biand and di-40 ct that yeare: which is no small summe to be be-Rowed in houlkeping, namelie where vittels are fo god cheape, and the presents of friends diverse and sundite.

There hash beene of late yeares a woothipfull gene 1551 tleman, named Patrike Scarleffeld, that bare the Patrike office of the matozaltie in Dublin, who kept to great Scartifich post in this peare, as his holpitalitie to his fame and hisholpike renolume refleth as pet in fresh memozie. One of his especiall and entire friends entring in commu nication with the gentleman, his years being well neere expired, moved question, to what he thought his expenses all that yeare amounted ? Trulis James (so his friend was named) quoth maisser Scarleffeld, I take betweene me and God, when I entered into mine office, the last faint Pierome his Chemind Date (which is the morrow of Michaelmasse, on with his some bate the maior taketh his off before the trick have date the maior taketh his oth before the chiefe baron, at the excheker within the castell of Dublin) I had the barnes well frozed and thwackt with come, and I affared my felfe, that anic one of thefe the had bene lufficient to have Cozed mine house with bread, ale, and beere for this yeare. And now God and god companie be thanked, I stand in doubt, whether I shall rub out my majozaltie with my third barne, which is well nigh with my years ended. And yet no thing limiteth me so much at the heart, as that the knot of good fellowes that you fee here (he ment the fergeants and officers) are readie to flit from me, and make their next yeares above with the next maío2.

And certes I am lo much wedded to god fellow thip, as if I could mainteine mine house to my contentation, with defraieng of fine hundred pounds pearelie; I would make humble lute to the citizens,

Dublin builded.

Auellanus the founder of Dublin.

Muellana. Eblana.

to be their officer thefe thee yeares to come. Duer this, he did at the fame time protest with oth, that he fpent that yeare in housekeeping twentie tuns of claret wine, ouer and abone white wine, facke, malmeleie, mulcavell, ic. And in verie deed it was not to be maruelled : for during his matoraltie, his house ipas to open, as commonly from fine of the clocke in the morning, to ten at night, his butterie and cellars were with one crew oz other frequented. To the haunting of which gheffs were the foner allured, for 10 that you Choulo neuer marke him og his bedfellow (fuch was their buromnesse) once frowne or wrinble their foreheads, or bent their browes, or glowme their countenances, or make a fowe face at anie ghelf, were he never to meane. But their intertein, ment was so notable, as they would sauce their bountifull & Deintie faire with heartie and amiable chere. Dis poster or anie other officer durft not for both his eares give the fimplest man that resorted to his house Comozum his interteinment, which is, to 20 hale a man in by the head, and thrull him out by both his intertein: the houlders. For he was fullie refolued, that his worthip and reputation could not be more diffained, than by the curriff interteinment of aniegheff. To be briefe (according to the golden verles of the ans cient and famous Englith poet Geffreie Chaucers

An housholder, and that a great, was hee, Saint Iulian he was in his countrie. His bread, his ale, was alwaie after one, A better viended man was no where none, Without bakte meat was neuer his house, Of fish and flesh, and that so plenteouse. It inewed in his house of meat and drinke Of all deinties that men could thinke. After the fundrie seasons of the yere, So changed he his meat and his suppere. Full manie a fat partrich had he in inew,

And manie a breme, and manie a luce in flew. Some of his friends, that were inubging penies lauthing this outragious expenses, as they tearme it. Tulh my maiffers (would he faie) take not the matter fo hot : the fo commeth to my table, and bath no néed of my meat, I know he commeth for the good will be beareth nie; and therefore Jam be, holding to thanke him for his companie: if he reloct for need, how mate I bellow my goods better, than in televing the pope? If you had perceived me lo far behind hand, as that I had bene like to have brought haddocke to paddocke, I would patientlic permit 40 you, both largelie to controll me, and friendlie to res proveme. But to long as I cut to large thongs of mine owne leather , as that I am not yet come to my buckle, and buring the time I keepe my felfe fo farre aflote, as that I have as much water as my thip draweth : I prate pardon me to be liberall in spending, fith God of his godnelle is grations in fending.

And in deed to it fell out. Foz at the end of his malozaltie he owght no man a dotkin. What he dil 60 pended was his olone : and ever after during his life, he kept to towathie a franding house, as that hee fæmed to furrender the princes sword to other mas tors, and reserved the port a hospitalitie to himselfe. Pot long before him was Picholas Staniburt their maioz, tho was fo great and god an houthole der, that during his matoraltic, the lord chancellor of the realme was his dailte and opdinarie gheff. There hathbene of late worthipfull ports kept by mailler fian, who was twife mator, maifter Sedgrane, Momas fit, Simons, Robert Culache, Walter Culacke, Picholas Fif; Simons, Jaines Bedlow, Chillother fagan, and diverte others. And not one lie their officers to farre excell in hospitalitie, but als

to the greater part of the cluitie is generallic abbic. ted to fuch ordinarie and franding houses, as it would make a man mufe which waie they are able to beare it out, but onelie by the goonesse of Goo, which is the opholoer and furtherer of hospitalitie. What thould There (peake of their charitable almes, bailic and hourelie extended to the nædie? The page puloners both of the Pewgate and the castell, with their or foure hospitals, are chieflie, if not onelie, relieued by the citizens.

Furthermoze, there are so manie other ertraoz. binarie beggers that dattie twarme there, fo charitablie succosed as that they make the whole cluitie in effect their hospitall. The great expenses of the citis zens maie probablie be gathered by the worthie and fairlike markets, weeklie on wednesdais and fridate kept in Dublin. Weir Chambles is to well frozed with meat, and their market with come, as not onelie in The thambles Areland, but allo in other countries non thall not for Areland, but allo in other countries you thall not fee at Dubin. ante one fhambles, or anie one market better furnt. thed with the one or the other, than Dublin is. The citizens have from time to time in fundzie conflicts fo galled the Iriff, that even to this date, the Iriff feare a ragged and fagged blacke francard that the francard. citizens have, almost throughtract of time worne to the hard flumps. This flundard they carrie with them in hoffings , being neuer displaied but iben they are readie to enter into battell, and come to the thocke. The light of which danteth the Frish about

And for the better training of their youth in mar, The muffers tiall erploits, the citizens ble to muffer foure times of Dublin. by the years: on Blacke mondate, which is the mosrom of Cafter Date, on Mate Date, faint John Baptiff his œue, and faint Peter his œue. Thereof two are alcribed to the malos + thirtifes : the other two, to wit, the muffers on Paie daie and faint Peter his eue, are affigued to the maioz and thiriffes of the Bull ring. The maloz of the Bull ring is an office & The maioz of fathers, would take him op verieroughlie for his 40 lected by the effigens, to be as it were capteine or gare the 25ull ring dian of the batchelers and the universed youth of the civitie. And for the years he half authoritie to chassile. and punify fuch as frequent brothelhoules, and the like unchaff places. De is tearmed the maioz of the Bull ring, of an iron ring that flicketh in the come, market, to which the bulles that are yearelie bated be bluallie fied : which ring is had by him and his companie in lo great price, as if mie citizen batthel ler hap to marrie, the mator of the Bull ring and his crue conduct the bridegranic boon his returne from thurth, to the market place, and there with a lotenine hille for his phimum vale, he both homage buto the

Bull ring. The Blacke mondate multer fpzwng of this oe. Che blacke tallon. Some after Ireland was conquered by the montaie. Battons, a the greater part of Leinffer parified, Di. Bitons, 4 me greater part of Letitlet partiet, of Dublin inha-uerle townelmen of Billow flitted from thenle to bited by the Dublin, and in thost space the rivitie was by them to Billollians. ivell inhabited as it grewto bie verie populous. This was a-Wherebpon the cittiens bauing oner great affiance bout the years in the multitude of the people; and to confequentlie of our Loza being somewhat retailesseling the mounteine enimie that lurked wider their noise, were wont to tome and rolle in childers, founctime thee or foure miles from the rolone. The Trith enimie spieng that the citizens were accustomed to fetch fuch ob bagaties, especialite on the holie bales, a having article ling withatt by tome falle clatterfert or other, that a companie of them would have ranged abrobe, on mondate in the Caffer wiede fowards the tond of Cullen, which is biffant two miles from Onblin, they late in Italy verie well appointed, and late in film brie places for their comming. The citizens rather minding the pleature they thould prefentlie mloy,

Hicholas

Cort dicerre

Chaucer th

the prolog of his Can:

turburie tales

Che holpita:

than forecasting the hurt that might infue, flockt bn. armed out of the civitie to the wood, there being in tercepted by them that late housing in ambush, they were to the number of fine hundred miserablie flaine. Wherebpon the remnant of the citizens de ming that buluckte time to be a croffe or a dismall cate, gave it the appellation of Blacke mondate.

The citie some after being peopled by a fresh supplie of Buffollians, to date the Irith entmie, agreed to banket yearclie in that place, which to this date is t observed. For the major and the thirits with the citizens repaire to the woo of Cullen, in which place the maioz bestoweth a costile binner within a mote oz a rundell, and both the thiriffs within another: where they are so well garded with the youth of the civitie, as the mounteine enimie dareth not attempt to inatch as much as a palific cruft from thense. Dublin hath at this daie within the citie and in the suburbs thele churches that infue, of which the greater num. ber are parioch churches, onelie Chailts church with a few oratories and chamels ercepted. Christs church, otherwife named Ecclesia fanctatrinitate, a cathediall thurth, the ancientell that I can find recorded of all the durches now francing in Dublin. I take it to haue beene builded, if not in Auellanus his time, pet some after by the Danes. The building of which was both repared sinlarged by Critius prince of Dub. lin, at the earnest request of Donat the bishop, and Come after the conquest it hath beine much beautifico by Robert fit; Stephans and Strangbow the erle 30 of Penbroke, tho with his sonne is in the bodie of the church intomed. The chappell that Canbeth in the choze, commonlie called the new chaptell, was butle bed by Gerald Fit; Thomas earle of Bildare, in the yeare of our Lord 15 10, where he is intomed.

Saint Patrikes durch, a cathediall durch, in

dued with notable livings, and diverse fat benefi-

ces . It hath a chamell at the north doze which is called the paroch church. This church was founded by the famous and worthie prelate John Commin, a 40 bout the yeare of our Loed 1 197. This foundation was greatlie advanced by the liberalitie of king John. There hathrifen a great contention betwirt faint Patribs this durch and Christes durch for antiquitie, therein doubtleffe S. Patrike his church ought to give place, buleffe they have further matter to thew, and better reasons to build byon than their foundations, in which this church by mante yeares is inferior to the other. Saint Micholas, Saint Michaell, Saint Merberoffe, oz Saint Harburgh, fo called of a Chel 50 thire virgine. The citizens of Cheller founded this thurth, with two chamels thereto annered; the one called our ladies thamel, the other S. Wartins than pell. Hir featt is kept the third of Februarie. This

> the years 1301: but agains by the parochians reedified. Saint John the euangeliff, Saint Au beon, wich is corruptlie called Saint Duen, 02 Diven. His feat is folemnized the fourteenth of August . The paroch of this church is accounted the 60 bell in Dublin, for that the greater number of the aldernien and the worthips of the citie are demucrant within that paroch.

church with agreat part of the citie was burned in

Saint Tullocke noto prophaned . In this durch in old time, the familie of the fitz Simons was for the more part buried. The paroch was meared from the Crane castell, to the fith Chambles, called the Cockhill, with Pretton his innes, the lane thereto adioming, which scope is now united to Saint John his paroch. S. Batharine, S. Michan oz Mighan, Saint James ; his feaft is celebrated the fine and tiventith of Julie, on which dair in ancient time was there a worthie faire kept at Dublin , continuing fir dates, buto thich reforted diners merchants, as

well from England, as from France and Plane vers. And they afforded their wares to doggerape, in respect of the citie merchants, that the countrie was peare by yeare fufficientlie floord by firangers: and the citie merchants not bettering their wares but to luch as had not readie chinkes, and there byon forced to run on the score, were verie much impoue, rithed. Wherefore partlie thorough the canualing of the towne merchants, and partie by the winking of the rest of the citizens, being won bon manie gaie gloled promiles, by plaieng bopepe to beare themselues overlie in the matter, that famous mart was suppell, and all forren faile wholie abandoned. Det for a memoriall of this notable faire, a few cot tages, boths, and alepoles are pitched at Saint James his gate. Saint Pichaell of Poules, alias Daules, Saint Bzigive, Saint Beuin, Saint Pe ter Demonte, or opon the bill, appendant to Saint Patrikes church. Saint Stephan ; this was erec o fed for an hospitall for pore, lame, and impotent la zers, where they abide to this date, although not in fuch chaff and fincere wife, as the founders will was boon the erection thereof . The maioz with his beer then on Saint Stephan his date (which is one of their Cation dates) repaireth thither, and there doub

offer. Saint Anozew now promaned. Both the gates neere the White friers, Saint he The num Both the gate, Hogs gate, Dammes gate, Poule thecine gate, dids Paules gate, Pelogate, a goale or pit fabute if fon, Wine tauerne gate, Saint Audeon bis gate, Dublin,

hard by the church going downe towards the Cocke Aræt. The reason thy this gate, and the Wine tai uerne gate were builded , proceded of this . In the peare 1315, Coward Biulle a Scot, & brother to Robert Bruise king of Scots arrived in the north of Ireland. From whence he marched on forwards with his armie, butill he came as far as Callleknocke. The citizens of Dublin being fore amaged at the ludden & Scarbozough approch of lo putilant an entmie, burned all the houles in Saint Momas his Areet, least he should byon his repaire to Dublin baue ante succour in the suburbs . The maioz (named Robert Potingham) and communaltie be ing in this diffreste, razed downe an abbete of the frier preachers, called Saint Sautour his monale rie, and brought the frones thereof to these places, where the gates now frand; and all along that wate did cast a wall for the better fortifling of the civitie, mistrusting that the wals that went along both the keies, thould not have beene of fufficient force to outhold the entmie. The Scots having intelligence of the fortifieng of Dublin, and reckoning it a folie to late fiege to fo impregnable a civitie, marcheo to ward a place not far from Dublin , called the Sal mon leape, there pitching their tents for foure dates, they removed towards the Paas . But then the cluitie was past this danger, king Coward the fecond gave Aria commandement to the citizens to build the abbeie they razed; fateng, that although lawes were fquatted in warre, pet not with franding they ought to be revived in peace. Gurmund his gate, hard by the Cucull, or Cockolds post. Some suppose, that one Gurmundus builded this gate; and thereof to take the name. Dithers indge, that the Irith all aulting the civitie, were discomfited by the earle of Damond, then by god hap folourning at Dublin . And because he illued out at that gate, to the end the valiant exploit and famous conquest of to iposthie a potentate thoulo be ingrailed in perpetuall memorie, the gate bare the name of Dy mond his gate. The bringe gate, Saint Richolas his gate, Saint Patrike his gate, Bungan his gate, the Pewaret gate, Saint Thomas his gate.

Saint James his gate.

The churches of Dublin.

Christa charch.

The contro= uerfie betweine Chailt church and church.

fitt Siz

D. James

The churches

of Dublin.

Chille

charch.

than forecalling the hurt that might infue, flockt bn. armed out of the civitie to the wood, there being intercepted by them that laie houring in ambush, they were to the number of five hundred milerablic flaine. Where bon the remnant of the citizens des ming that buluckie time to be a croffe or a dismall cate, gave it the appellation of Blacke mondate.

The citie some after being peopled by a fresh supe plie of Britfollians, to dare the Irith enimie, agreed to banket pearelie in that place, which to this date is observed. For the major and the Chiriffs with the citizens repaire to the woo of Cullen, in which place the major bestoweth a cost lie binner within a mote or a rundell, and both the thiriffs within another: where they are so well garded with the youth of the civitie, as the mounteine enimie dareth not attempt to inatch as much as a pastie crust from thense. Dublin hath at this date within the citie and in the suburbs these churches that insue, of which the greater num. ber are partoch churches, onelie Chailes church with a few oratories and chamels excepted. Christs church, otherwise namco Ecclesia fanctatrinitatis, a cathediall thurth, the ancientest that I can find recorded of all the churches now Canding in Dublin. I take it to have beene builded, if not in Auellanus his time, pet Some after by the Danes. The building of which was both repared sinlarged by Critius prince of Dublin, at the earnest request of Donat the bishop, and some after the conquest it hath beene much beautified by Robert Kit; Stephans and Strangbow the erle 30 of Wenbroke, who with his sonne is in the bodie of the church intomed. The chapell that Canbeth in the choze, commonlie called the new chaptell, was build bed by Berald fit; Thomas earle of Bildare, in the yeare of our Lord 15 10, where he is intomed.

The contro= uerfie be= torene Chiff church and faint Batribs church.

Saint Patrikes durch, a cathediall durch, indued with notable livings, and diverse fat benefices. It hath a chappell at the north doze which is called the paroch church. This church was founded by the famous and worthie prelate John Commin a 40 bout the years of our Lozd 1197. This foundation was greatlie advanced by the liberalitie of king John . There bath rifen a great contention betwirt this durch and Childes durch for antiquitie, therein doubtleffe S. Patrike his church ought to give place, bulette they have further matter to thew, and better reasons to build opon than their foundations, in which this church by manie yeares is inferior to the other. Saint Micholas, Saint Michaell, Saint Merberolle, 02 Saint Harburgh, fo called of a Chef. 50 thire birgine. The citizens of Cheffer founded this thurth, with two chamels thereto annered; the one called our ladies thamel, the other S. Partins thap pell, Hir featt is kept the third of Februarie. This thurth with a great part of the citie was burned in the years 1301: but agains by the parochians reedified. Saint John the euangelift, Saint Au beon , wich is corruptlie called Saint Duen , 02 Diven. His feath is folemnized the fourteenth of August. The parody of this church is accounted the 60 lawes were squatted in warre, pet notwithstanding best in Dublin, for that the greater number of the aldernien and the worthips of the citie are demurrant within that paroch.

Saint Tullocke now propanco . In this durch in old time, the familie of the fitz Simons was for the more part buried. The paroch was meared from the Crane castell, to the fith Chambles, called the Cockhill, with Pretton his innes, the lane thereto adioining, which scope is now united to Saint John his paroch. S. Batharine, S. Wichan oz Pighan, Saint James; his fealt is celebrated the fine and tiventith of Julie, on which date in ancient time was there a worthie faire kept at Dublin , continuing

lir dales, buto which relocted diners merchants, as

well from England, as from France and Planders. And they afforded their wares to dog cheape. in respect of the citie merchants, that the countrie was yeare by yeare fufficientlie flored by firangers: and the citie merchants not bettering their wares but to such as had not readie chinkes, and the revyon forced to run on the score, were verte much impoue, rithed. Wherefore partlie thorough the canualing of the towne merchants, and partite by the winking of the rest of the citizens, being won boon manie gate gloled promifes, by plateng bopepe to brare themselucs overlie in the matter, that famous mart was suppest, and all forren faile tholie abandoned. Det for a memoriall of this notable faire, a few cot tages, boths, and alepoles are pitched at Saint James his gate. Saint Pichaell of Poules, alias Paules, Saint Brigide, Saint Benin, Saint Be ter Demonte, og voon the hill, appendant to Saint Patrikes church. Saint Stephan; this was erec ted for an hospitall for poze, lame, and impotentia zers, where they abide to this date, although not in fuch that and fincere wife, as the founders will was bpon the erection thereof . The maio; with his beer then on Saint Stephan his Daie (which is one of their flation daies) repaireth thinher, and there doub

offer. Saint Anozew now promaned. Both the gates nære the White friers, Saint he. Them uen his gate, Hogs gate, Dammes gate, Poule of the gate gate, alias Paules gate, petogate, a goale or pot fuburba fon, Mine tauerne gate, Saint Andeon bis gate, Dubin, hard by the church going downe towards the Cocke fræt. The reason why this gate, and the Wine tai uerne gate were builded , proceeded of this . In the yeare 1315, Edward Bille a Scot, & biother to Robert Biglie king of Scots arrived in the north of Ireland. From whence he marched on forwards with his armie, butill he came as far as Calle knocke. The citizens of Dublin being fore amaged at the ludden & Scarbozough approch of lo putfant an enimie, burned all the houses in Saint Thomas his Aret, leaft he Chould opon his repaire to Dub lin have ante fuccour in the fuburbs. The mato; (named Robert Potingham) and communaltie ber ing in this diffreste, razed downe an abbete of the frier preachers, called Saint Sautour his monate rie, and brought the frones thereof to these places, where the gates now frand; and all along that wate did cast a wall for the better fortifieng of the civitie, mistrusting that the wals that went along both the keies, thould not have beene of lufficient force to outhold the enimie. The Scots bauing intelligence of the fortifieng of Dublin, and reckoning it a folie to late fiege to fo impregnable a civitie, marched to ward a place not far from Dublin , called the Sal mon leape, where pitching their tents for foure Daies, they removed towards the Paas . But when the clutte was past this danger, king Coward the fecond gave Aria commandement to the citizens to build the abbeie they razed; fateng, that although they ought to be revived in peace. Gurmund his gate, hard by the Cucull, or Cockolos polf. Some lupole , that one Gurmungus builded this gate; and thereof to take the name. Others ludge, that the Irith all aulting the civitie, were discomfited by the earle of Damond, then by god hap folourning at Dublin . And because he issued out at that gate, to the end the baliant exploit and famous conquest of to iposthie a potentate thould be ingratted in perpetuall memorie, the gate bare the name of Dy mond his gate. The bridge gate, Saint Picholas his gate, Saint Patrike his gate, Bungan his gate, the Pewiret gate, Saint Thomas his gate, Saint James his gate.

fitt Siz

do. Taince his faire.

The names oithe ftræts, hioges,lanes m Dublin. Jihn Decer.

Oftmanni.

The Dammes fret, the Caffle fræt, fretching to the pillogie, Saint Merberoffes freet, Saint John his fræt, alias fift hamble fræt, Skinners rew reaother no thing from the pillozie to the tolehall, or to the high croffe . The High Areet bearing to the high pipe. This pipe was builded in the yeare 1308, by a worthis citizen named John Decer , being then malor of Dublin . He builded not long before that time the bridge hard by Saint Wolffans, that reas dethouer the Lime. The Pelugate firet, from 10 the pewgate to Saint Audoen his church . Saint picholas his fret, the Wine tauerne fret, the Coke fræt, the Baioge fræt. This fret with the greater part of the heie was burnt in the yeare 1304. The Modkete, the Perchant keie, Dimontowne, fo called of certeine Cafferlings og Pozmans, properlie the Danes that were called Dit manni, They planted themselves hard by the water five nære Dublin , and discomfifed at Clontarfe in altirmith diverte of the Irith . The names of the Irily capteins dame were Bian Bogrough, Diagh mache Bzen , Tabie Dhellie , Bolin Shertegan , Bille Barramede . Thefe were 3. rith potentates, and before their discomfiture they rated the roft . They were interred at Bilmate name ouer against the great crosse. There arrived a freth fuplic of Cafferlings at Dublin in the yeare 1095. and letted themselves on the other side of the civitie, which of them to this date is called Dife towns, why to mantowne, that is, the towne of the Difmannes, 30 thereof there artieth great likelihoo to have beine a separat towne from the citie, being parted from Dublin by the Liffie, as Southworke is feuered from London by Chaines . Saint Thomas his firet; this firet was burnt by mithap in the yeare 1343. The Dew bulloings, the Dew fret, Saint Francishis Greet, the Mowme, Saint Patrike his freet, the backefive of Saint Sepulches, Saint Beuen his fræt, the Poule, or Paulmilfret, Saint Bigios freet, the Sheepe freet, alias the Ship freet. 4 For diverse are of opinion, that the sea had passage that waie, and thereof to be called the Ship fret.

This as it fæmelh not wholie impossible, conlidering that the lea floweth and ebbeth hard by it: lo tt carieth a more colour of truth with it, because there have beine found there certeine fron rings fastned to the towne wall, to hold and graple botes withall. Saint Merberoffes lane, up to Saint Picholas his Aret , now inclosed , Saint Wichaell his lane , bes ginning at Saint Pichaell his pipe, Chailichurch 50 lane, Saint John his lane, Ram lane, alias the Scholehouse lane, Saint Audoen his lane, Befers lane. This lane is fleepe a flipperie, in which others wiles, they that make more half, than good speed, clinke their bums to the froncs. And therefore the ruder fort, whether it be through corruption of speech, or for that they give it a nickename, commonlie terme it, not so homelie, as trulie, Bide arde lane. Rochellane, alias Backelane, on the fouthfide of the flesh Chambles , the Cokestreet lane, Fraper lane , 60 Siglottes hill, Parie lane, Saint Tullocke his lane, Scarlet lane, alias Jouos lane, Saint Pulders lane, Saint Kenin bis lane, the White friers lane, Saint Stechan bis lane, Dogs lane, the Sea lane, Saint Beorge bis lane, where in old time were builded diverse old and ancient monuments. And as an insearcher of antiquities may (by the view there to be taken) contecture, the better part of the luburbs of Dublin Chould læme to have Aret: thed that waie. But the inhabitants being dailie and hourelie molected and preided by their prolling mounteine neighbors, were forced to lufter their buildings fall in decate, and embaied themselues will in the citie wals.

Among other monuments, there is a place in The o'd Ela that lane called now Collets innes, which in old cacar. time was the Cleacar of Orcheker. Thich thould implie that the princes court would not have beine kept there, unlesse the place had bene taken to be cockfure. But in fine it fell out contrarie. For the baron litting there folemnlie, and as it famed, retchlette; the Irith espieng the oportunitie, ruthed into the court in plumps, where furpilling the unweapos ned multitude, they committed horrible flaughters by sparing none that come inder their dint; and with all, as far as their Scarbozough leafure could ferue them, they ranfacke the prince his thefaure, bpon which milhap the excheker was from thenle remo, S. Grozge ued. There hath beene allo in that lane a chamell de, his chappell, Dicated to faint Beorge, likelie to haue beine foun-Ded by some worthis knight of the garter. The mais or with his brethren was accultomed with great tris umphs and pageants perelle on faint Ocozge his fealt to repaire to that chamell, and there to offer. This chapell hath beene of late raged, and the froncs therof by confent of the attemblie turned to a commonouen, converting the ancient monument of a boutie, aduenturous, and holie knight, to the cole. The buoges, rake sweeping of a pulloafe baker. The great bridge going to Difmantowne, faint Picholas his brioge, the Poule gate bitoge, repared by Picholas Stant. burit about the yeare one thouland five hundred for tie foure, the Caffell bitoge, S. James his bitoge.

The castell of Dublin was buttoed by Benrie Thecastell. Loundres (Cometime archbilhop of Dublin, and load fuffice of Ireland) about the yeare of our Lord one thousand two hundled and twentie. This castell hath belide the gate houle foure goolie and lubifans tiall towers, of which one of them is named Ber, mingham his tower, whether it were that one of the Berminghams of inlarge the building thereof, 02 else that he was long in dureste in that tower . This caffell hath beene of late much beautified with luni drie and gorgious buildings in the time of fir Hen. rie Stonete, sometimes lood deputie of Freland. In the commendation of which buildings an especiall welwiller of his loodlyips penned these verles:

Gesta libri referunt multorum clara virorum, Laudu & in chartis stigmata sixa manent. Veriem Sidnæilaudes hæc saxa loquuntur, Nec iacet in solu gloria tanta libru. Si libri pereant, homines remanere valebunt, Sipereant homines, ligna manere queunt. Lignaque si pereant, non ergo saxa peribunt, Saxaque sipercant tempore, tempus erit. Si pereat tempus, minime consumitur auum, Quod cum principio, sed sine fine manet. Dum libri florent, homines dum viuere possunt, Dum quoque cum lignis saxa manere valent, Dum remanet tempus, dum denique permanet auum, Laus tua, Sidnai, digna perire nequit.

There standeth nære the castell over against a boid rome called Pretton his innes, a tower named Houds tower . It toke the name of la Beale Houd, Houds to Daughter to Anguith king of Ireland . It femeth to wer. have beine a caffle of pleasure for the kings to recreat themselnes therein . Which was not willike, confivering that a meaner tower might ferue fuch lingle foule kings as were at those dates in Freland. There is a village hard by Dublin, called of the faid la Chappell Beale, chappell I soud.

Saint Pulchers, the archbithop of Dublin his Saint houle, as well pleafantlie lited, as go:gcoullie buil. Pulchers. bed. Some hold opinion, that the beautifuller part of this house was of let purpose fired by an archbilhop, to the end the governors (which for the more part laie there) (hould not have to good liking to the house : not far dilagræing from the policie that I heard a noble

Wermingham. his tower.

The lane or.

man tell he vied, who having a furpalling good horie, and fuch a one as over ran in a fet race other choffe horses, did bobtaile him bron his returne to the flas ble, least anie of his frænds casting a fantalie to the beatt, thould crauchim. The noble man being fo bountifullie given, as that of liberalitie he could 1101,4 of discretion he would sæme to give his frænd the repulle in a more weightie request than that

The names of the fields abtoining to ದಿಂದರು=

trother.

were.

24

Steine, Dumantowne greene. In the further end of this field is there a hole commonlie termed Seald brothers hole, a labyrinth reaching two large miles binder the earth. This hole was in old time frequented by a notozious thefe named Scalobzother, therein he would hive all the bag and baggage that he could pilter. The variet was to fwift on fot, as he hath efflones outrun the swiftest and lustiest young men in all Damantowne, maugre their heads, bearing a pot or a pan of theirs on his Choulders to his 20 nor Ighelle . This citie is properlie builded, and den. And now and then, in derition of luch as purfued him, he would take his course under the gals lows, which frandeth verienigh his caue (afit figne for fuch an inne) and to being throwsed within his lodge, he reckoned himfelfe cocklure, none being found at that time to hardie as would aduenture to intangle himfelfe within to intricat a mage. But as the pitcher that goeth often to the water, commeth at length home broken: so this luftie youth would not furceafe from open catching, forcible fnatching, and prinie prolling, till time be was by certeine gaping grontes that late in wait for him, intercepted, flee ing toward his couch, having boon his apprehention Scaldbrother no more wong done bim, than that he was not for ner hanged on that gallowes, through which in his pouth and folitie he was wont to run. There fandeth in Ditmantowne græne an hillocke, named little John his thot . The occasion proceeded of this. In the piere one thousand one hundred fours score

Mitle John. 1189.

and nine, there ranged the robbers and outlaws in 40 England, among which Robert Hood and little John were chefeteins, of all theues doubtleffe the mot Robert Hood, courteous. Robert Hood being betrated at a nunrie in Scotland called Bricklies, the remnant of the crue was scattered, and everte man forced to thift for himselfe. Therebpon little John was faine to fle the realme by failing into Ireland, there he for toznied for a few daies at Dublin. The citizens being done to understand the wandering outcast to be anercellent archer, requested him hartilie to trie 50 how far he could that at randon: who yelding to their beheff, food on the bridge of Dublin, and that to that mole hill, leaving behind him a monument, rap ther by his postcritie to be wondered, than possiblie by anie man living to be counterscored. But as the repaire of lo notozious a champion to anie countrie Ivoulo some be published, so his above could not be long concealed: and therefore to either the danger of lawes, he fled into Scotland, where he died at a towne or village called Morauie. Gerardus Mercator in his cosmographie affirmeth, that in the same towne the bones of an huge and mightie man are kept, which was called little John, among which bones, the hucklebone or hipbone was of fuch large. nelle, as witnelleth Hector Boetius, that he thrult his arme through the hole thereof. And the same bone being futed to the other parts of his bodie, did argue the man to have beine fourtene fot long, which was a pretie length for a little John . Thereby appeareth that he was called little John frontcallie, like as we ternic him an honest man whom we take for a knaue in graine.

Little John?

becealed.

Pere to the citie of Dublin are the foure ancient manois annexed to the crowne, which are named

to this date, the lkings land; to wif, pewcallell. Mallaggard, Eldire, and Crumlin. The mandiof Cumb Crumlin paieth a greater chefe rent to the pince than ante of the other thie, which proceded of this, The seneschall being offended with the tenants for their mildemeanor, twhe them op verie Marplie in the court, and with rough and minatorie fpeches be gan to menace them. The lobbith and ochperat clob bertousnesse, taking the matter in dudgeon, made Saint Stephans greine, Hogging greine, the 10 no moze words, but knockt their fenefchall on thecofard, and left him there spralling on the ground for dead . For which beteffable murther their rent was inhanted, and they paie at this date nine pence an acre, which is double to anie of the other this mai nozs.

s. Walnum founded by Sitaracus (as is walnum aforefaid) in the peere one hundred fiftie and five. Prolome namethit Manapia, but whie he appropria Manapia teth that name to this citie, neither both he beclare, perie well compact, formethat close by reason of their thicke buildings and narrow freets. The haven is palling goo, by which the citizens through the intercourse of foren traffike in thort space atteine to a bundance of wealth. The foile about it is not all of the best, by reason of which the aire is not berie sub. till, yea nathelelle the tharpnelle of their wittes le. meth to be nothing rebated or duld by reason of the groffenelle of the aire. For in goo loth the townel. men, and namelic Audents are pregnant in concep ring, quicke in taking, and fure in keeping. The citizens are verie bedie and warie in all their pub. like affaires, flow in the determining of matters of weight, louing to lake yer they leave. In choling their magiffrate, they respect not onlie his riches, but also they weigh his experience. And therefore they elea for their maior neither a rich man that is yong, not an old man that is pose. They are cherfull in the intertsinment of Arangers, bartle one to another, nothing given to factions. They love no tole bench thistlers, no; luskith faitoes: for young and old are wholie addiced to theining, the men commonlie to traffike, the women to spinning and carding. As they distill the best Aqua vita, so they spin the choisest rug in Ireland. A frænd of mine being of late be murrant in London, and the weather by reason of an bard hoare froft being fomthat nipping, repaired to Paris garden, clad in one of thele Waterfood rngs. The mastifs had no somer espied him, but de ming he had beene a beare, would faine have baited bim. And were it not that the dogs were partlie muss led, and partite chained, he doubted not, but that he thould have beene well tugo in this Irith rug; where bpon he folemnlie volved never to fee beare baiting in ante luch wed. The citic of Waterford hath continued to the crowne of England Coloiall, that it is not found registred lince the conquell to have beine distained with the smallest spot, or dusked with the lead freckle of treason; notivith Canving the sundie 60 affaults of traitozous attempts: and therefore the cities armes are beckt with this golven wood, Intalla Chipain manet : a police as well to be hartilice followed, as walter greatlie admired of all true and local townes.

Limerike called in Latine Limericum was buil Limite ded by Puozus, as is before mentioned, about the pere one hundred fiftie and fine. This citie coaffch somethin on the fea hard byon the river Sennan, whereby are mind by most notablie seuered Pounsser and Connaght: the manks Arith name this citie Loumneagh, and thereof in Englith it is named Limerike. The towns is white planted in an Alann international from the country that the country that the country the country that the country the country that the country t planted in an Fland, which plot in old time, before the building of the citie was flored with graffe. During which time it happened, that one of the Frish por tentates, railing warre against another of his pars,

24

man tell he vied, who having a furpalling good horie, and fuch a one as overran in a fet race other choife horses, did bobtaile him bron his returne to the flat ble, least anie of his frænds casting a fantalie to the beatt, thoulo crauchim. The noble man being fo bountifulite given, as that of liberalitie he could 1106, t of discretion he would sæme to give his frænd the repulle in a more weightie request than that were.

Whe names of the fictor abidining to ទ្ធាណ៦= bjother.

Steine, Damantowne grene. In the further end of this field is there a hole commonlie termed Seale brothers hole, a labyrinth reaching two large miles under the earth. This hole was in old time frequented by a notozious thefe named Scalobzother, therein he would bloe all the bag and baggage that he could pilfer. The variet was to fwift on fot, as he hath effiones outrun the swiftest and lustiest poing men in all Damantowne, maugre their heads, bearing a pot or a pan of theirs on his Choulders to his 20 ben. And now and then, in derition of fuch as purfued him, he would take his course under the gallows, which frandeth verienigh his caue (afit figne for fuch an inne) and so being throwded within his lodge, he reckoned himfelfe cocklure, none being found at that time to hardie as would adventure to intangle himfelfe within to intricat a mage. But as the pitcher that goeth often to the water, commeth at length home broken: to this luttie youth would not furcease from open catching, forcible snatching, and prinie prolling, till time he was by certeine gaping gromes that late in wait for him, intercepted, flee ing toward his couch, having bpon his apprehention Scaldbrother no more wong done bim, than that he was not for ner hanged on that gallowes, through which in his youth and folitie be was wont to run. There fan-Deth in Damantowne greene an hillocke, named little John his thot . The occasion proceeded of this.

In the pere one thouland one hundred fours loose

Little John. 1189.

erecuteb.

England, among which Robert Hood and little John were chefeteins, of all themes doubtleffe the most Robert Hob, courteous . Robert Hob being betraied at a nunrie in Scotland called Bricklies, the remnant of the crue was scattered, and everie man forced to thift for himselfe. Therebpon little John was faine to fix the realme by failing into Ireland, where he for fornied for a few daies at Dublin . The citizens being done to understand the wandering outcast to be how far he could that at randon: who perloing to their beheff, frod on the bridge of Dublin, and that to that mole hill, leaving behind him a monument, ras ther by his posscritie to be wondered, than possiblie by anie man living to be counterscored. But as the repaire of lo notozious a champion to anie countrie would some be published, so his above could not be long concealed: and therefore to either the danger of lawes, he fled into Scotland, where he died at a cator in his cosmographie affirmeth, that in the same towne the bones of an huge and mightie man are kept, which was called little John, among which bones, the hucklebone or hipbone was of fuch large. nelle, as witnelleth Hector Boetius, that he thrult his armethrough the hole thereof. And the same bone being futed to the other parts of his bodie, did arque the man to have beene fourtene fot long, which was a pretie length for a little John . Whereby appeareth that he was called little John ironicallie, like as we ternic him an honest man whom we take for a knaue in graine.

The king his

Little John]

becealed.

Pace to the citie of Dublin are the foure ancient manois annexed to the crowne, which are named

to this date, the Kings land; to wit, pewcallell Massaggard, Eschire, and Crumlin. The manded Cumb Crumlin pateth a greater thefe rent to the prince than anie of the other thice, which proceeded of this, The seneschall being offended with the tenants for their miloemcanoz, toke them by verte Charplie in the court, and with rough and minatorie fpeches be gan to menace them. The lobbith and desperat clob bertousnelle, taking the matter in dudgeon, made e. Saint Stephans grane, Hogging grane, the 10 no more words, but knockt their fenelchall on the co. ffard, and left him there spalling on the ground for dead . For which detestable murther their rent was inhanced, and they pate at this date nine pence an acre, which is double to anie of the other this mas nozs.

s. amaterford was founded by Sitaracus (as is waining aforefato) in the pære one hundred fiftie and five. Prolome namethit Panapia, but whie he appropria Managa teth that name to this citie, neither both he beclare, noz Igheffe . This citie is properlie builoed, and perie well compact, somewhat close by reason of their thicke buildings and narrow freets. The bauents palling goo, by which the citizens through the intercourse of foren traffike in thort space atteine to a bundance of wealth. The foile about it is not all of the best, by reason of which the aire is not berie subtill, pea nathelelle the Charpnelle of their wittes le. meth to be nothing rebated or ould by reason of the grollenelle of the aire. Foz in good outh the townel men, and namelie Audents are pregnant in concep ring, quicke in taking, and fure in keeping. The citizens are verie hadie and warie in all their pub. like affaires, flow in the determining of matters of weight, louing to loke yer they leave. In choling their magistrate, they respect not onlie his riches, but also they weigh his experience. And therefore they elea for their inator neither a rich man that is yong, no; an old man that is poze. They are cherfull in the intertsinment of firangers, hartie one to another, and nine, there ranged the robbers and outlaws in 40 nothing given to factions. They love no tole bendy thifflers, no: lufkith faitoes: for young and old are wholie addiced to thrining, the men commonlie to traffike, the women to spinning and carding. As they distill the best Aqua vita, so they spin the choisest rug in Ireland. A frænd of mine being of late be murrant in London, and the weather by reason of an hard houre frost being fom what nipping, repaired to Paris garden, clad in one of thefe Waterfood rugs . Ale maltifs had no foner efpied him, but de anercellent archer, requested him hartilie to trie 50 ming be had beene a beare, would faine have batted him. And were it not that the dogs were partlie mus led, and partite chained, he doubted not, but that he thould have beene well tugo in this Irith rug; where, bpon be folemnlie bowed never to fæ beare baiting in anie luch wied. The citie of Materford hath continued to the crowne of England Colotall, that it is not found registred lince the conquell to have being distained with the smalless spot, or dusked with the lead freckle of treason; notivithstanding the sundite towne or village called Moranie. Gerardus Mer- 60 affaults of traitorous attempts: and therefore the chi ties armes are beckt with this golden wood, Intalia Chipplin manet : a polic as well to be harrilie followed, as walling greatlie admired of all true and loiall townes.

Limerike called in Latine Limericum was buil Limite ded by Puozus, as is before mentioned, about the pere one hundred fiftie and fine. This citie coaffeth something on the fea hard boon the river Sennan, whereby are rund by mold notablie senered Pouniter and Connaght: the mails. Brith name this citic Loumneagh, and thereof in English it is named Limerike . The towns is which planted in an Fland, which plot in old time, before the building of the citie man Control building of the citie was stored with grase. During which time it happened, that one of the Frish po tentates, railing warre against another of his pars, incamped

incamped in that Ale, having so great a trope of bottomen, as the bottos eate by the grade in source and twentie houres. Therebpon so, the notocious number of hotes, the place is called Lourn ne augh; that is, the hote bare, or a place made bare or eaten by by hotes. The verie maine sea is thee score miles distant from the towne, and yet the river is so miles obtain thom the towne, and yet the river is so mangable, as a Chip of two hundred tuns may saile to the keie of the citie. The river is termed in Arith shave amme, that is, the old river; so, thave is so, a mine is a river, deducted of the Latine word Amas. The building of Limerike is sumptuous and

Corke, in Latine Coracium, 02 Corracium, the fourth citie of Ireland hamilie planted on the fea. Their has uen is an hauen rotall. On the land five they are in combred with euill neighbors, the Frith outlaws, that they are faine to watch their gates hourlie, to keepe them thut at feruice times, at meales from fun to fun, nog fuffer ante franger to enter the citie with 20 his weapon, but the same to leave at a longe amoins ted. They walke out at fealons for recreation with power of men farnithed. They trust not the countrie adioining, but match in wedlocke among them. felues onelie, so that the thole citie is welnigh line ked one to the other in affinitie. Diogheba, accounted the bell towns in Ireland, and trulie not far bes hind some of their cities . The one moitte of this towne is in Deth, the other planted on the further five of the water lieth in Allier. There runneth a blind procheste on this tolone, that Rose was, Bu, 30 blin is, Drogheda shall be the best of the three.

Rolle, an hanen towne in Pounter not far from Waterford, which fæmeth to haue beene in ancient time a towne of great post. Whereof fundie 4 probable confedures are given, as well by the old difthes that are now a mile diffant from the wals of Rolle, betweene which wals and ditches the reliks of the ancient wals, gates, and towers, placed betwone both are yet to be fæne . The towne is buil bed in a barren foile, and planted among a crue of naughtie and prolling neighbours. And in old time when it flogished, albeit the towne were sufficientlis peopled, pet as long as it was not compassed with wals, they were formed with watche ward, to keepe it from the greedie fratching of the Brith enimies. With whome as they were generallie molested, so the prinat consening of one pessant on a sudden, intenied them to inuiton their towne with firong and substantiall wals. There repaired one of the Irish to 50 this towns on hornebacks, respieng a peece of cloth on a merchants Call, toke holo thereof, and bet the cloth to the lowest price he could . As the merchant and he flood dodging one with the other in cheaping the ware, the horsteman considering that he was well mounted, and that the merchant and he had growne to a price, made wife as though he would have drawne to his purse, to have destrated the mos nie. The cloth in the meane while being tucked bp and placed before him , he gave the spur to his horse 60 and ran awate with the cloth, being not imbard from his posting pale, by reason the towne was not perclosed either with ditch as wall. The townermen bes ing pinched at the heart, that one ralcall in luch fcomefull wife thoulo give them the Campaine, not formuch weiging the flemoernesse of the losse, as the thannefulnette of the foile, they put their heads togt. ther, confulting how to prevent either the funden rus thing, 02 the posthast flieng of anie stich adventurous rakehell bereafter.

In which confultation a famous Wivo, a chaft wirdow, a politike dame, a bountifull gentlewoman, called kivle, who representing in finceritie of life the fivetnesses of that hearbe whose name the bare, wir

folved the deutle, how anie futh future milchance thould be prevented: and withall opened hir coffers liberallie, to have it furthered : two goo properties in a councelloz. Hir deuile was, that the towne Mould incontinentlie be inclosed with wals, & there, withall promiled to discharge the charges, fo that they would not ficke to find out labourers. The ocuile of this worthie matrone being wife, and the of fer liberall, the townelmen agreed to follow the one, and to put their helping hands to the atchiuing of the other. The worke was begun, which thorough the multitude of hands feemed light. For the whole towne was assembled, tag and rag, cut and long taile: none erempted, but such as were bedied and impotent. Some were talked to delue, others appointed with mattocks to dig, diverse allotted to the onheaping of rubbith, manie bestowed to the case riage of frones, fundate occupied in tempering of moster, the better fost busied in oversking the works men, ech one according to his vocation imploied, as though the civitie of Carthage were afrefy in buils ding, as it is featlie verified by the golden poet Virgil, and neatlie Englithed by mafter Docto; Phaer.

The Mores with courage went to worke, fome vnder burdens grones: Some at the wals and towrs with hands were tumbling up the stones. Some measurd out a place to build their mansion house within: Some lawes and officers to make in parlment did begin. An other had an hauen cast, and deepe they trench the ground, Some other for the games and plaies a statelie place had found. And pillers great they cut for kings, to garnish foorth their wals. And like as bees among the flours, when fresh the summer fals, In shine of sunne applie their worke, when growne is vp their young: Or when their hiues they gin to ftop, and honie sweet is sprong, That all their caues and cellars close with dulcet liquor fils, Some do outlade, some other bring the stuffe with readie wils. Sometime they ioine, and all at once doo from their mangers fet The flothfull drones, that would confume, and nought would do to get. The worke it heats, the honie smels of flours and thime ywet.

But to returne from Dido of Carthage, to Role of Rolle, and hir works. The labourers were to manie, the worke, by reason of round and excheker pais ment, fo well aplied, the quarrie of faire marble fo nere at hand (for they affirme, that out of the trens thes and ditches hard by their rampiers, the fones were had: and all that plot is so stonie, that the four dation is an hard rocke) that thele wals with dinerle braue turrets were fuodenlie mounted, and in many ner Coner finished, than to the Brith enimites notio fied : which I wille was no littall toglie to them. Thele wals in circuit are equall to London wals. It hath the gorgeous gates, Bithophis gate, on the eat live : Algate , on the east Contheast live : and South gate, on the fouth part. This towne was no more far mouled for thele wals, than for a notable woodert brings that Acetched from the towns onto the other five of the water, which must have beene by reasonas ble furticle tivelue score, if not more. Diverse of the poales, logs, and fakes, with which the bridge was binderpropt, flicke to his date in the water . A man

Roffe.

€o:k€.

Role, of Hole.

αť

10

Her.

would here suppose, that so stoursthing a towne, so firmelie builded, fo lubitantiallie malled, fo well peo. pled, so plentiouslie with thriftie artificers stored, would not have fallen to anie ludden decaie.

Rolle Decaied.

But as the fecret and deepe fungements of God are betted within the coverture of his dinine maie. life, fo it flandeth not with the onlineffe of man his wit, to beat his braines in the curious infearching of hidden mysteries. Wherefore I, as an historian bindertaking in this treatile, rather plainelie to des clare what was done, than rathlie to inquire why it Mould be done : purpole, by Goo his allifance, to accomplift, as nere as I can , my outie in the one, leaning the other to the friuolous deciding of buffe heads. This Kole, who was the foundrelle of thefe former rehearled wals, had illue thee fonnes (howbeit some hold opinion, that they were but hir nes thues) tho being bolffered out thorough the wealth of their mother, and imported by their traffike, made diverse prosperous volages into forcen countries. 20 But as one of the three chapmen was imploied in his traffike abroad, to the prettie poplet his wife bes gan to be a fresh occupieng giglot at home, and by report fell fo farre acquainted with a religious clother rer of the towne, as that he gat within the lining of hir smocke. Both the parties wallowing overlong in the finking puble of abulterie, suspiction began to cræpe in some townesmens brains : and to be briefe, it came to farre. thorough the full judges ment of God, to light, whether it were that the was 30 with child in hir hulband his absence, or that hir los uer vied hir fondlie in open prefence, as the prefump tion was not onetie behement, but also the fact to aparent : hir bnfortunat hulband had no foner no tice given him bpon his returne of these sozowfull netices, than his fingers began to nibble, his tech to grin, his eies to trickle, his eares to bindle, his head to dazell, infomuch as his heart being feared with geloufie, and his wits installed thosough theense, he became as mad as a Warch hare.

The pangs of geloulic.

But how heautlie loeuer hir hulband toke it, dame Rose and all hir friends (which were in effect all the townslmen, for that the was their common benefactelle) were galled at their hearfs, as well to heare of the enormious abulterte, as to le the bed lem pangs of beainlicke geloulie. Wherebpon die uerle of the townelmen grunting and grudging at the matter, faid that the fact was hourible, and that it were a deed of charitie biterlie to grub awate luch wild flyubs from the towne : and if this were in a. 50 nie dispunishable wife raked op in the ashes, they Mould no loner traverle the leas, than lome other would inkindle the like fire afresh, and so conses quentlie diffioness their wines, and make their hus bands to become changelings, as being turned from fover mod to be homewood, because rutting wives make often rammily hulbands, as our proverb doth inferre. Dthers fothing their fellowes in these mutinies turned the panat inturie buto a publike quarrell, and a number of the townelmen conspiring for togither flocked in the dead of the night, well appointed, to the abbeie, wherein the frier was close stered (the monument of which abbeie is yet to be seene at Kosse on the south side) where underspare ring the gates, and bearing by the dozmitozie doze. they stabbed the adulterer with the rest of the couent thorough with their weapons. Where they left them goaring in their blond, roaring in their cabbins, and galping by their flitting ghoffs in their

The bproze was great, and they to whome the flaughter before hand was not imparted, were wonderfulte the reat affonied. But in especiall the rem: nant of the cleargie bare verie bollow hearts to the

townslmen; and how frændlie their outward countenances were , yet they would not with inward thought forget nor forgive so horrible a murther, but were fullie resolued, thensoener oportunitie fer. ued them, to fit in their fkirts, by making them foulfe as forowfull a kyrie . Thefe three brethren not long after this bloudie erploit , fped them into fome out landily countrie to continue their trade. The religi ous men being done to bnderfrand, as it fæmed, by forme of their neighbors, which forefailed them home ward, that thefe three brethren were readie to be im barked, flunkt privilie out of the towne, and refor ted to the mouth of the hauen, niere a castell, named Dulke tower, which is a notable marke for pilots, in bulking directing them which wate to fferne their thips, and to clinew the danger of the craggie rocks there on eneric lide of the those peking. Some indge that the faid Role was foundzelle of this tower, and of purpole did build it for the fafetie of hir children, but at length it turned to their bane. For thefe reuengers nightlie did not mille to late a lanterne on the top of the rocks, that were on the other five of the water. Thich practile was not long by them continued, when thefe these pallengers bering faile with a luftie gale of wind, made right bpon the lanterne, not boubting, but it had beene the Hulke tower . But they toke their marke to farre amille, as they were not ware, till time their thip was batht and patht a. gains the rocks, and all the passengers overwhich in the fea.

This beaute hap was not to followfull but the townelmen, as it was gladfome to the religious, thinking that they had in part cried them acquite tance, the moze that thep, which were drowned were the archbrochers of their brethrens blond. Howbeit they would not crie hos here, but fent in post some of their conent to Rome, where they inhanced the flaughter of the fraternitie to beinoutlie, and concealed their ofone prankes to covertie, as the pope er commenged the towne, the towne accurifed the frie ers: to that there was fuch curlling and banning of all hands, and such distentious burlie burlie raffed betweene themselues, as the elate of that flourish ing towne was turned artie berlie, toplide the other. wais, and from abundance of prosperitie quite er

changed to ertreame penurie.

The wals frant to this date, a few freets and how The male fes in the towne, no fmall parcell thereof is turned dand in to orchards and gardens . The greater part of the towne is frepe and freaming opward. Their durch is called Chills church, in the north lide whereof is placed a monument called the king of Denmarks his tome: whereby contedure may rife, that the Danes were founders of that durch . This Kolle Ground is called Rolle Nous, 02 Rolle Ponti, by reason of their ob Boll bringe. That which they call old Kolle, beareth ealt thee miles from this Rolle, into the countrie of Wieisford, an ancient manour of the earle of hil Bolt F dares. There is the third Rolls on the other lide of barran. the water, called Kosse Ibarcan, so named, for that it Amoeth in the countrie of Kilkennie, which is divided into thee parts, into Ibircan, Ida, f I bouth. Weilford a hauen towne not far from Kolle, wellow I find no great matters thereof recorded, but onelie that it is to be had in great pace of all the English posteritie, planted in Ireland, as a towne that was the first fostresse and harbozetse of the English con-

Milkennie, the best oplandish tolone, og (as they killing terme it) the propered drie town in Ireland, it is parted thto the high towne, and the Irith towne. The Frish towne claimeth a corporation apart from the high towne, whereby great factions grow valle betweene the inhabitants. True it is, that the Irth

folione is the ancienter, and was called the old little bennie, being wider the bithop his becke, as they are or ought to be at this present. The high towne was builded by the English after the conquest, and had a parcell of the Irith towne thereto united, by the bis Shop his grant, made buto the founders bpon their carnell requeft. In the peare 1400, Robert Calbot a worthie gentleman, inclosed with wals the better part of this towne, by which it was greatle fortified. This gentleman deceased in the yeare 1415. In flis towne in the chose of the frier preachers, Willis am Parchall earle marchall and earle of Denbroke inas buried, who departed this life in the yeare 1231. Richard brother to William , to whome the inheris tance descended, within their peares after deceased at Bilkennie, being wounded to death in a field gie nen in the heath of Bildare, in the yeare 1234, the twelfe of Apzill, and was intomed with his brother, according to the old epitath here mentioned:

Hic comes est positus Richardus vulnere fossus, Cuius sub fossa Kilkenia continet ossa.

The churches

Ealbot.

william

Marihall.

Ch: gram A)1:garct fitigerald.

4Auerce

Butler.

This towne half thee churches , faint Bennies falkennie. durch,our laotes church, alids S. Paries church; and S. Patrikes durch, with the abbeie of S. John. S. Bennies durch is their cheefe and cathedrall church, a worthie foundation as well for gorgeous buildings; as for notable livings. In the west end of the durch pard of late have beene founded a grammar schole by the right honozable Pierce oz Pocter Butler erle of Demond and Ditorie, and by his wife the coun- 30 telle of Damond, the ladie Pargaret fit; Berald. fifter to Biralofit; Biralo the earle of Bildare that laft was. Dut of which ichole have fprouted fuch proper impes, through the paincfull diligence, and the laboursome industrie of a famous lettered man D. Pita white, Poter White (sometime fellow of Dziall college in Drford, and schole mailler in Bilkennie) as general lie the thole weale publike of Ireland, and especial: lie the foutherns parts of that Iland are greatlie thereby furthered. This gentlemans method in trai- 4 ning by youth was rare and fingular, framing the concation according to the scholers beine . If he found him fre, he would bridle him like a wife 3fo, crates from his boke; if he percetued him to be dull, he would four him forward; if he understoo that he were the worle for beating, he would win him with rewards: finallie by interlating fludie with recreas tion, for row with mirth , paine with pleasure, sower note with sweetnesse, roughnesse with milonesse, he had so god successe in scholing his pupils, as in god 5 south 3 may bololie bide by it, that in the realme of Irel mo was no grammar schole so god, in Eng. land I am well affured none better. And bicanfe it was my hapte hap (God and my parents be thanked) to have beine one of his crue, I take it to fand with my dutie, lith I may not fretch mine abilitie in requiting his goo turnes, yet to manifell my god will in remembring his paines . And certes, Jacknowledge my felfe so much bound and beholding to him and his, as for his take I reverence the meaneff stone comented in the wals of that famous schole. 60 This towne is named kilkennie, of an holie and learned abbat called Hanicus, borne in the countie of Bilkennie,02 (as it is in some bokes recorded) in Connaght. This prelat being in his luckling peres folicred, through the providence of God, with the milke of a cow, and baptized and bishoped by one Lu. racus, thereto by Gods especiall amountment depui ted, grew in tract of time to such denotion and learning, as he was reputed of all men to be as well a mirrour of the one, as a paragon of the other: where. of he gave lufficient confedure in his minoritie. For being turned to the kieping of thepe, and his fellow hapheards, wholie palving themselves like lustiff

bagabunds to flouth and fluggiffine Te, yet would be Mill find himfelfe occupied in framing with offars and twigs, little wooden durches, and in fathioning the furnitures thereto amerteining . Being tept further in yeares , he made his repaire into Eng. land, where clottering himfelfe in an abbeie, wherof one named Dodus was abbat, he was wholce wed. bed to bis boke, and to ocuotion : wherein he continued to painefull and diligent, as being on a certeine time penning a ferious matter, and having not fullie drawne the fourth wocall, the abbeic bell tingo to affemble the couent to fome spirituall exercise. To which he so hastened, as he less the letter in semiciro clewife bufinished, butill he returned backe to his boke. Some after being promoted to ecclefiafticall orders, be travelled by the consent of his fellow monks to Rome, and in Italie he gave fuch manis fell profe of his pietie, as to this date in some parts thereof he is highlie renowmed.

Thomas towne, a proper towne bulloco in the Theinas countie of Bilbennie, by one Chomas fitzantonie towne. an Engliffman. The Friff thereof name it Ballie Chomas mac Andan : that is , the towne of Fitzantonie. Fitzantonie. This gentleman had iffue two daughters, the one of them was espouled to Denne, the other marrico to Archdeacon, or Packodo, whose heires have at this daie the towne betweene them in coparcenarie. But bicause the reader map see in what part of the countrie the cities and thefe townes Cand, 3 take it not far amille to place them in order as infueth.

Drogheda Carregfargus, Downe, Armagh, Ar of the charle glafh, Cloagher, Puncighan, Donnegaule, Barreg townes in mac Rolle , Bewie , Carlingford , Ardie , Don Aller. Dalke, Louth . Dublin, Bulrudgie, Lufke, Swoods, The names Tathaggard, Lions, Pelwcallle, Rathcoule, Dugh, of the chafe ter arde, Paas, Clane, Painoid, Pilcocke, Ka. Leinster. thaimgan, Bildare, Luianne, Call letowne, Philips towne, Waribozongh, Bilcullen, Caffle Marten, Thillevermot, Kilca, Athie, Catherlaugh, Leighe, len, Bauranne, Thomas towne, Enefficke, Ca. fhelle, Callanne, Bilkennie, Unocktofer, Rolle, Clonmelle, Weileford, Fernes, Fidderd, Enefcas tte, Tathmon, Mickloa, Ackloa. Waterford, Lifmoze, Dongaruan, Doghill, Corke, Limerike, in Mounter. Bilmallocke. Aloane, Galuoie, Anrie, Louaghriagh, Chale towns Clare, Toame, Sligagh, Kollecomman, Aralowne. in Connaght. Trimme, Donfhaghlenne, Rathlouth, Pananne, Chefe towns Aboie, Scrine, Tarangh, Bemles, Donboine, in Math. Brenocke, Duleke. Polingare, fowie , Lough, Chafetowns feude, Bilkeniwell, Dollagagh, Beluinne.

In the foure and thirtith yeare of the reigne of hing Benrie the eight, it was enacted in a parlement bolben at Dubline before fir Anthonie Sentleger knight, losd deputie of Ireland, that With Chould be dinioed and made two thires, one of them to be called the countie of Deth, the other to be called the countie of Wellmeth, and that there thould be two thiriffes and officers convenient within the same

thires, as is more express in the act.

Loughfoile, the Banne, Molverfrith, Crareg. The names fergus, Strangford, Ardglas, Longheuen, Car, of the chicte lingford, kilkeale, Dundalke, kilclogher, Dunane, nauen town, Drogheba, Boulepatrike, Panie, Baltraie, Bit moze, Balbriggen, Roggers towne, Skerrift, Kuth, Palahive, Banledwile, Houth, Dublin, Dale ke, Mickincloa, Arckloa, Meifford, Bagganbun, the Pallage, Waterford, Dungaruan, Rolle nous, Ponghille, Corke mabegge, Corke, kinfale, kierie, Koffe Albere, Dogrie, Baltinimoze, Downenere, Downelljead, Downclounge, Attannanne, Craghanne, Downenebwine, Balinefkililiedge, Dangine Ichonic, Tralie, Seninne, Callanne, Bilne. wine, Limerike, Innifkarte, Belalenne, Arinco newine, Blanemaugh, Balliweiham, Binwarre,

in wedmath.

1542

hauen town g

Downis.

obve to cat= Chelife of Downis, Woan, Kokam, Galwate, Killinillie, Junesvoffinne, Divan, Hoare, Kilcolken, Burske, Belleclare, Kathesilbene, Bierweiswege, Burauets hare, Ardne makow, Kosbare, Kilgolinne, Walsta, klaleis, Kadranne, Strone, Burweis now, Zalsta, klalbalie, Ardnocke, Argowse, Sligaghe, Innes Mosseume.

Camb, lib.t. top.dift.2, rub. 3.&4. Cambrenis observed in his time, that then the sea doubled at Dublin, it educid at Bristou, and sloweth at Polisod and Westfoud. At Wickloa the sea cobeth when in all other parts it commonlie sloweth. Furthermore this he noted, that the river which runneth by Wickloa upon a lowed be is falt, but in Arckloa the nert haven towne, the river is fresh when the sea is at suil. He writethals, that not far from Arckloa stanceth a rocke, and when the sea educid in one side thereof, it soweth in the other side as fast. Cambrensis insearcheth diverse philosophical reasons in sinding out the cause, by observing the course of the mone, who is the empresse of mostsure. 20 But those substitutes I leave so, the schoolestreets.

Of the strange and woonderfull places in Ireland.

The fourth diapter.

6. Patrike his purgator Thinke it god to begin with 5. Patrike his purgatorie, partlie bicause it is 30 most notoziousie knowne, 5 most notoziousie knowne, 5 partlie the moze, that some writers, as the author of Polychronicon and others that were miscaried by him, seeme to make great doubt twere they nev not. For they ascribe the finding out of the place not to Patrike that converted the countrie, but an other Patrike an abbat, thom likewise they assume to have been timploied in converting the Fland from heathenrie 40 to driftianitie.

But the author that brocheth this opinion, is not found to carie anie such credit with him, as that a man may certeinlie affirme it, or probablie confecture it; unlesse we relie to the old withered worme eas ten legend, loved with as manie lowd lies, as lewb lines. The better and the more certeine opinion is, that the other Patrike found it out, in luch wife as Cambrenfis reporteth. There is a pole or lake, faith he, in the parts of Allter, that inuironneth an 3- 50 land, in the one part whereof there Canbeth a church much lightned with the brightfome recourse of ans gels: the other part is ouglie and gafflie, as it were a bedlem allotted to the vilible affemblies of hogets ble and grillie bugs. This part of the Pland contets neth nine caues. And if anie dare be to hardie, as to take one night his looging in anie of thefe ins, which hath beene experimented by some rath t harebraine aduenturers, streight these spirits clawhim by the backe, and tug him fo ruggedlie, and tolle him fo 60 crabbedlie, that now and then they make him moze franke of his bum than of his twng; a paiment cox respondent to his interteinement. This place is called S. Patrike his purgatorie of the inhabitors. For when S. Patritie laboured the convertion of the people of Allfer, by fetting before their eies in great heat of spirit, the creation of the world, the fall of our progenitors, the redemption of man by the blef. fed and pretious bloud of our fautour Jelus Chriff, the certeintie of death, the immortalitie of the foule, the generall refurrection, our latter dome, the totes of heaven, the paines of hell, how that at length e nerie man, small and great, young and old, rich and poze, king and kealer, potentate and pezzant mult

either through God his gratious mercie be eralted to the one, to floatiff in perpetuall felicitie, or through his unlearchable inflice tumble downe to the other, to be tormented in eternall miserie. There and the like grave and weightie sentences, cherwith he was abundantile flored, so far funke into their harts, as they seemed verie sterible in convescenting to his her is of that some profe of his estrange preaching could have been everested. There open, without surther delaie, they spake to the prelat in this wise.

Sir, as we like of your preaching, fo we dilike ,, not of our libertie. Dou tell vs of manie gugawes and estrange dieames. You would have be to aban, " don infidelitie, to cage op our libertie, to bride our » pleasure: for which you promise vs for our toile and ,, labour a place to vs as buknowen, lo as pet bucer teine. Pou fermon to bs of a dungeon appointed " for offendors and milcredents. In deed if we could , find that to be true, we would the somer be weanen from the livest name of our libertie, and frame our felnes pliant to the will of that Cod, that you retreale buto bs. S. Patrike confidering, that thefe fealie foules were (as all dulcarnanes for the more part are) moze to be terriffed from infidelitie through the paines of hell, than allured to challianitie by the toies of heaven, moft hartilie belought God, lo it food with his gratious pleature, for the honour and glorie of his diuine name, to giue out fome euident og glimfing token of the matter they importunatlie required. Finallie by the especiall direction of God, he found in the north edge of Alfter a defolatecop ner hemmed in round, and in the middle thereof a pit, where he reared a church, called Regliso, Re Rigiale glatte. At the east end of the churchyard a doze leadeth into a closet of from like a long ouen, which they call S. Patrike his purgatozie, for that the people relogt thither even at this date for penance, and have reported at their returns estrange visions of pains and blide appearing buto them.

The author of Polychronicon writeth that in the Polychild. reigne of king Stephan, a knight named Dwen pil 1.636. grimaged to this purgatozie, being fo appalled at the firange visions that there he law, as that boon his returne from thense he was wolse mortified, and sequestring himselfe from the world, he spent the remnant of his life in an abbeie of Lubenus. Also Dyonisius a charterhouse monke recodeth a liberat viffor feene in that place by one Agneius, or Egne, noull and ius, whereof who lo is inquilitiue, may reloct to bis treatise waitten De quatuor nouisimis. Iohannes Ca- JohCanto mertes holdeth opinion, which he furmisesh byon the lid Solution gette of other, that Claudius writeth of this purga 35. togie. Which if it be true, the place muft haue bene ertant before faint Patrike, but not lo famoullie knowen. The poet his verles are thefe following: Claud.lib.

Est locus, extremum pandit qua Gallia littus, Oceani pratentus aquis,quo fertur Vlysses sanguine libato populum mouisse silentum, Flebilis auditur questus, simulachra coloni Pallida, defunctásque vident migrare figuras. There is a place toward the ocean sea from brim of Gallish shore, Wherein Vlysses pilgrim strange with offred bloud ygore, The people there did mooue, a skritthing shrill from dungeon lug The dwellers all appall with gastlie galpe of grislie bug. There onelie shapes are seene to stare with visage wan and sad, From nouke to nouke, from place to place, in eluish skips to gad. They that repaire to this place for denotion his

Camb. lib 1. topog.dift.2. ferts, they faie they for a plaine resemblance of their owne faults and vertues, with the horror and comfort therewate belonging, the one so terrible, the os ther fo follows, that they verelie deeme themselves for the time to have fight of hell and heaven. The renelations of men that went thither (S. Patrike yet lie uing) are kept waitten within the abbeie there adiois ning. Then ante person is disposed to enter (for the pope is ever fpard) he repaireth firft for deuise to the archbilhop, who catteth all pericles, and diffuadeth the pilgrime from the attempt, bicause it is knowen that diverse entering into that cave, never were fene to turne backe againe. But if the partie be fullie resolued, he recommendeth him to the prior, who in like maner fauourablie erhozteth him to chole fome other kind of penance, and not to hazard fuch a danger. If notwithifanding he find the partie fullie bent, he conducted him to the church, infoineth him to begin with prater and fall of fifteene vales, fo long togither as in discretion can be indured . This time expired, if yet he perseuere in his former purpose, the thole convent accompanieth him with folemne procollion t benediction to the mouth of the caue, where they let him in, and to bar up the doze untill the next morning. And then with like ceremonies they as wait his returne and reduce him to the church. If he be feine no moze, they fast and prate fifteene dates affer. Couching the credit of thele matters, I fæno cause, but a christian being persuaded that there is both hell and heaven, may without vanitie upon fulficient information be resolued, that it might please God, at sometime, for considerations to his wisdome knowen, to remeate by miracle the vision of toics and paines eternall. But that altogither in fuch lost, and by luch maner, and to ordinarilie, and to luch per-

lons, as the common fame ooth otter; I neither be-

lieue not with to be regarded. I have conferd with

the order of the premittes to be true, but that thep

faw no fight, faue onelte fearefull dreams when they

chanced to not, and those they said were ercebing bourible. Further they added, that the fall is rated

more or lette, according to the qualitie of the pent-

which dowing other while with ghostlie meditations,

and other tibile a dread for the conscience of their des

Cambrenfis aftirmeth, that in the north of Mount 1000g diffinet. Acr there be two Ilands, the greater and the leffe. In the greater there never entereth woman or aniels. uing female, but forthwith it dieth. This haft beene of ten promed by bitches and cats, which were brought thither to trie this conclusion, and presentlie they died. In this Jiand the cocke or maicle birds are fone to thirpe, and pearth by and downe the fwigs, but the ben or female by inffind of nature abando. nethit, as a place otterlie polloned. This Iland were a place alone for one that were vered with a threwd wife. The leffe Hand is called Infula vinentium, bis cause none died there, ne mais die by course of na. 60 ture, as Giraldus Cambrenfis faith. Dowbeit the dischers when they are fore fruit with ficknesse, or to farre withered with age as there is no hope of life, they request to be conveied by boate to the greater Iland, where they are no somer insposed, than they polo op their ghous, For my part, I haue beine ver rie inquittive of this Ikmp, but I could never find hisefrange propertie fothed by anie man of credit in the whole countrie. Petither trulie would I with anie to be folight, as to lend his credit to anie such scined gloses, as are neither verefied by experts ence, not warranted by ante colonrable reason. Therefore I fa not the it thouse be termed Infula viventuan inlesse it be that none vieth there, as long

as he lineth.

Cambrenfis telleft further, that there is a church Cambren, in pard in Aller, which no female kind maie enter. If codem loco, the coche be there, the hen dareth not follow. There is also in the west part of Connaght an Ilano, plat Bren, ced in the fea, called Aren, to which faint Brendan had often recourse. The dead bodies new not in that Fland to be gravelled. For the aire is so pure, that the contagion of anie carrien mais not infea it. There, as Cambrenfis faith, maie the conne le his father, his granofather, his great grandfather, tc. This Iland is enimie to mice. For none is brought thither, but either it leapeth into the fea, or elfe being Stated it diethpresentlie. There was in kiloare an Che fires ancient monument named the Firehouse, therein boute of tails Cambrenis faith man there continued for bout how bare. Cambrensis saith, was there continuall fire kept day and night, and pet the alles never increased. I trauelled of let purpole to the towne of kildare to lee this place, where I did fie such a monument like a bault, which to this daic they call the Firehouse.

Couching the heath of Bilbare Cambrenfis will Che heath of teth that it mais not be tild: and of a certeintie with kildare. in this few yeares it was tried, and found, that the come with was so wed did not prove. In this plaine (faith Cambrenfis) flood the flones that now fland in The flones of Salifburie plaine, which were connected from thenle plaine, by the fleight of Werlin the Welth prothet, at the request of Aurelius Ambrolius king of the Britons. There is also in the countie of kildare a goodie field called Dolleaghmaft, betweene the porrough and Molleagh Bilka. Divers blind propheties run of this place, that mate. there thall be a bloudie field fought there, betweene the English inhabitants of Ireland and the Irish. and to bloudie for foth it thall be, that a mill in a vale bard by it thall run foure and twentie houres with the streame of bloud that thall power downe from the hill. The Irith doubtleffe repose a great affiance in this baloucktum breame. In the top of this height fimd motes of rundels berie formalie falhioned, where the Grength of the English armic (as they say) diverte that had gone this pilgrimage, who affirmed 40 thall be incamped.

The Carle of Suller being load lieutenant of Ireland, was accustomed to with, that if anie such propelle were to be fallifled, it thould happen in his gouernement, to the end he might be generall of the field. Pot farre from Dolleaghmalt, within a mile of Caliledermot, or Matilledermot, is there a place marked with two hillocks, which is named the Ge. The Geral raldine his throw or cast. The length of which in ve, dines throw, rie ded is inconverfull. The occasion proceeded of this. One of the Beraloins, tho was ancestor to those that now are loads of Lackath, preded an enimie of his. The earle of kiloare having intelligence therof. funzelling affection of kinred, and moved by seale of inflice, purfued him with a great trope of hoofe. men, as the other was bringing of the prede home. mard. The Geraldine hauing notice giuen him, that the earle was in hot purinte, and therefore being warned by the messenger to hie him with all speed posible: the gentleman being nettled, that his kinsman would seme to rescue the prede of his dead. lie to; and as he was in luch fretting wife frieng in his greate, he brake out in thele cholerike words, And both my couline biloare purlue me in bed. Pow in godfath, thereas he fæmeth to be a lupreffer of his The Geral kindged, and an opholder of my mostall entinie, I dines with, would with him no more harme, than that this dart ... were as far in his bodie, as it thall flicke forthwith " in the ground: and therewithall giving the spurres " to his horde, he hurled his dart to farre, as he abathed with the length thereof aswell his companie as his posteritie.

The Beraldine was not berie farre from thence, tiven the earle with his band made hot fort after, and

The carle of

dogging

The ceremo: entering 5. Datrike bis purgarouc.

Camblib.r.

mir

2(IL L.48.

en il

b.\$.

The earle of Rildares anlwer.

The hill of Caragh.

Callicknocke. The Arange

Camb.in lib. 1, topog.dift.1, rub.8,& 10,

dogging fill the tracke of the predours, he came to the place there the part was hurled, where one picks thanke or other let the earle to bider frand of the Ge. raldine his wild fpeches there delivered. And to inhanse the hemousnesse of the offense, he shewed how farre he hurled his dart, when he withed it to be pit? thed in his locality his bodie. The erle affonced at the length thereof, laid: Pow in good loth, my couline in behaving himselse so couragiouslie, is worthie to have the prede that fræ. And for my part I purpole 10 not so much to formach his cholerike will, as to im, brace his valiant prowelle. And there with all commanded the retreat to be blowne and reculed backe. There is in Pæthan hill called the hill of Caragh, therein is a plaine twelve score long, with was nat med the Kempehis hall: there the countrie had their meetings and folkemotes, as a place that was accounted the high palace of the monarch. The Iriff historians hammer manie fables in this forge of Fin mac Coile and his champions, as the fronth hillo 20 tuosam noustatem fidem omnium excedere videatur, nosta. ried with of king Arthur and the knights of the round table. But doubtleffe the place fæmeth to beare the their of an ancient and famous monument.

Dere is in Castleknocke a village not far from Dublin, a window not glased noz latized, but open, and let the weather be Comie, the wind bluffer bots fferouflie on enerie five of the honfe; yet place a canole there, and it will burne as quietlie as if no puffe of wind blew. This maie be tried at this date, tho fo thall be willing to put it in practife. Touching the 30 Grange wels that be in Ireland, I purpose to speake litle more than that which I find in Cambrenfis, whole words I will English, as they are Latined in his boke. There is (faith he) a well in Pounifer, with the mater of which if anie be walhed, he becometh forth with houre. I have fiene a man that had one halfe of his beard, being died with that water hoare; the other halfe unwashed was browne, remaining still in his naturall colour. Contrartwife, there is a founteine in the further edge of Wilfer , and if one be bathed 4 therewith, he thall not become houre : in which well fuch as loath greie heares are accustomed to dive. There is in Connaght a well that fpringeth on the top of an bill farre and diffant from anie lea, ebbing and flowing in foure and twentie houres, as the fea both; and vet the place is bplanoilly, and the water fresh. There is another spring in the same countrie? the water of thich is verie whollome to men and too. ment, but pollon to bealts: and if a man put but the granell of this well into his mouth, it quencheth pier 50 sentlie his thirff.

There is in Alffer a famoing pole thirtie thous land pales long, and fifteene thouland pales brode, out of which springeth the noble northerne river, call led the Banne. The fifthers complaine more often for burffing of their nets with the over great lake of filh, than for ante want. In our time beon the conquest a fith fivair from this pole to the those, in thape refembling a falmon, but in quantitie to buge, that it could not be drawne or carried wholie togither, 60 but the fillmongers were forced to backe it in gob bets, and to carrie it in pecemeale throughout the countrie, making thereof a generall dole. And if the report be true, the beginning of this pole was Arange. There were in old time where the pole note Candeth, vicious and beacilie inhabitants. At which time was there an old faid faw in cuerie man his mouth, that as some as a well there springing (with for the supersitious reverence they bare it, was continuallie couered and figned) were left open and bui figned, so some would so much water guth out of that well, as would forthwith overwhelme the whole ters ritorie. It happened at length, that an old trot came thither to fetch water, and hearing hir child whine, the

ran with might and maine to bancle hir babic, for getting the observance of the superatitious order to fore vied. But as the was returning backe to have concred the fpring, the land was fo farre overflowne, as that it past hir helpe: and Moutlie after the, hir faciling, a all those that were within the whole territozic were drowned. And this fameth to carie more likelihod withit, bicause the fithers in a cleare sunnie date fæ the fræples and other piles plainlie and distinctlie in the water. And here would be noted, that the river of the Banne flowed from this head fpring before this floud, but farre in leffe quantitie than it doth in our time. Ditherto Giraldus Cam-

Boctius telletha rare propertie of a pole in Ite Helbert. land, a for that he maketh himfelfe an crewitnesse of in Sociace the matter, he shall tell his owne tale. Ac quoniam delengage Hibernia incidit mentio, prater infinita in ea rerum miracu. Sed. 19. la, haud importunum fore existimem, si vnum, quod ob portenmen verum experti samu, adiunxerimu. Lacus in caest, circa quem amplissimo circumquaque spatio nec herba nec arbor vlla nascitur, &c: in quem si lignum infig as anni circiter unius curriculo, id quod in terra fixum ent, in lapidem conuertetur; quod deinceps aqua operietur, inferrum: reliquum aqua exstans ligni formam naturámque serualit . Ita consuncta , lapis, ferrum o lignum eodem in fipite inaudita nouitate confectantur . But for that mention is made of Ireland, oner and about the infinite number of wonders in that land, it will not be tholic befice the purpole, to infert one maruellous thing, with ale though it may fame to some to have no colour of truth: pet because it bath beene by be experimented, and found out to be true, we maie the better admoud it. There is a flanding pole in that Iland, north which of all fides groweth neither herbe, thind, nor bulh . If you flicke a rod og pecce of timber in this pole, that which Micketh in the earth within the space of one yeare turneth to a ffone; as much as is dipt in the water, is converted to iron; all that is about the water remaineth Aill in the priffinat and former wooden shape. So that you may fee that which is Grange, in one focke or ffiche, fone, from mo wod linkt and knit togither . Thus much Hector Boetius.

In the countrie of Bilkennie and in the bothers thereto confining, they bled a welenme triall by a war ter they call Pelathee . The propertie of this water is, as they lay, that if a perfured perfon drinke there which of , the water will gulh out at his belie, as though the dainker his nauill were bood with an auger. The river that runneth by Dublin named the Liffie bath Chilik this propertie for certeine, and I have observed it at fundate times. As long as it resgneth, yea if it sloo powing sp dates, you hall find ofuerse challow bankes, and the river will be nothing thereby in created : but within foure and twentie houres after the thowes are ceast, you thall perceive such a subben fpring flow, as if the farmer raine were great; a berie few places of none at all will be found palable. Cambrenfis witteth, that in the fouth part of Cambre, betweene the maine fea coalling on Diff Ladd. paine and faint Brendan his hills , there is an 3 land of the pire live incompalled with a river about dantlie lieves with fifth, For the other part inclosed with a little broke. In which place faint Brenban was verie much tellant. This plot is taken to be fuch a fanidinavie for bendis, as if ante hare, for, flag, or other will beatt be times rivere that Ilano by bogs, it makes araight boon the broke, and ale lone as it palleth the Areaine it is to cockelure, as the hunter may perceitie the bealf refling on the one banke, othe dogs quelling on the other bim, being as it were by forme ininfible railes imbard from dipping their feet in the thallow food, to purfue

the beat chaled. On the other live of this Fland there runneth a river force above measure with fresh was ter fift, and in especiallie with falmon . Which a bundance, as Cambrentis witteth, proceded of Bod, to mainteine the great hospitalitie that was kept there . And because the divellers thereabout thall not like pinching coiffeels make anie fale of the fift, let it be poudered as artificialite as may be , yet it will not keepe (as though it were manna) about the first night or vaie that it be taken . So that you 10 muft eate it within that thoat compafte, otherwife

it putrificth and fandeth to no feed .

The Halmon

This river overfloweth a great rocke, bluallie called the Salmon leape: for as it is commonlie the propertie of all fifth to fivim against the tide, as for birds to ditter against the wind; fo it is naturallie given to the falmon to Aruggle against the Areme, and when it approcheth nære this high rocke, it ben beth his taile to his head, and sometime taketh it in his mouth; and there with all beareth it felfe ouer the 2 water, and suddenlie it fetcheth such a round whiske, that at a trice it skippeth to the top of the rocke . The like falmon leape is nere Leiflip , but not fo high as this. There be also, as witnesseth Cambrensis, in the further part of Aller, certeine bils niere to faint Bean his church, where cranes pearelie bied. And when they have laied their egs, if anie purpose to ranfacke their nells, let him but attempt to fouch the egs, they will thew like young scralling pullets without feather or downe, as though they were new 3 batched, and prefentlie brought out of their thels. But if the partie plucke his hand from the neft, forthwith they thew (whether it be by anie metamozphofis, or fome jugling legier de maine by dazeling the eies) as though they were transformed into egs. And further, faith Cambrensis, let two at one in Chance be at the neft, and let the one of them onelic give the gaze, and the other attempt to take awaie the eas, they will ferne to the loker on as egs, and bare as a bird his arte.

The towne of Armagh is faid to be enimie to rats, and if anie be brought thither, presentlie it dieth. Which the inhabitants impute to the praiers of faint Patrike . But to omit the Arange places , that elther by falle reports are furnifed, or by profe and erperience vailie verefied: there are in this Iland fuch notable quaries of greie marble and touch, fuch ffoze of pearle and other rich flones, such abundance of cole, fuch plentic of lead, fron, latin and fin, fo may nierich mines furnished with all kind of metals, as nature famed to have framed this countrie for the Cosehonse or iswelhouse of hir chiefest thesaure. Howbeit the hath not thewed hir felfe to bountifull a mother in powing foith such riches, as the prouethhir selse an envious Repoame; in that the instilleth in the inhabitants a drouse lithernesse to withdraw them from the infearthing of hir hourd ded and hidden tewels . Therein the fareth like one, lenoragmo biander, would bid diverse ghests to a cofflie and beintie binner, and withall for fauing of his meat with some secret inchantment would be num them of their lims, or with some hidden loth somnesse would buil their formachs, as his ghest's by reason of the one are not able, 02 for the other not willing, by taking their repail to refresh themselus, in so much as in my thantalie it is hard to decide thether estate is the better : either for a ofligent las boter to be planted in a barren or ffonte foile, or for a luskith lotterer to be settled in a fertill ground; becanfe the one will, and may not; the other may and will not through his painefull travell reape the fruit and commoditie that the earth yelveth.

Of the lords spirituall of Ireland, their names and dignities.

The fift dapter.

Despirituall invilatation is ordered into foure prouinces, thereof the primalic was ex all ucr given (in reverence of faint Patrike that converted the countrie) to the archbioghy thopsike of Armagh, who is

Acalled Primas totius Hiberma, and the archbishop of Dublin, Primas Hibernia. This cuffome was fince confirme by Cuffenius the third, 1148, 02 1152: Who fent withall the other palles of archbilhops to be placed, one at Dublin, one at Cathill, e the last at Twene . To thefe are fuffragans in right nine and twentie, and they all to the Primas of Armagh, binder whole province are the bis Armagh. thous of Deth and Deren, Ardach, Bilmoze, Clogher Doune, Coner, Clonknos, Kabo, Dzomoze Ander Dublin, therebuto Innocentius the third b. Dubline nited Glandelagh, the bilhop of Elpine, Kildare, Calbill. Fernes, Dlogie and Leighlin . Under Cathill , the bilhop of Waterford, to whome Lilmore is united Coake and Clone, Roffe, Ardigh, Limerike, Cinc. Emene, lie, Killalwe, and Arofert . Under Twene , Kilmaco, Dlfine, Anaghdoune, Clonfert, Porco. In this recount some difference hapneth by reason of perso nall and reall bution of the fees, and for other alteras tions. I have observed in perusing of old bakes the names of certeine bithops and arthbithops of Dub, lin : and albeit I could not find a inft regitter og catalog of them , pet I toke it to be better to place fuch as I could find, than to omit the whole. I Tomas thus was one of the first bithops that I have read of , but I am well affured , that there were dicerfe Lib. to. Scot. of, but I am wen anured, that there were vinethe this. fol. 212, others before his time. He flourished about the feet. 40. yeare 893, of this billion Hector Boetius maketh to the taker as young red little cranets, being as 40 mention. Dunanus was bishop of Dublin long after Comachus: for Dunanus died in the yeare 1074. He was buried in Christs church in Dublin, in the ower part of the chancell on the right hand.

Patricius was consecrated bishop of Dublin in Paule his thurth at London by the archbishop of Canturburie Lanifranus of Lanfrancus. The read fon of this confecration was, for that as yet the mefropolitans of Ireland received not their pall. A pall Pall Suhat is an indowment appopriated to archbilhops, made of white filthe the breaoth of a fole, but it is of ano. ther fathion. And where you thall espie the armes of anie archbifhop blazed, there you may perceive the pall fet out in white, with a great manie blacke croffes byon it. An archbifhop within the moneths coll after his confecration or confirmation ought to des mano his pall, other wife he may be remoued; nei, ther ought he to name himfelfe archbiffion before the equod ficur recett, neither may be before fummon or call a count nul. tell, make chaffme, vedicate churches, giue ogders, 02 De privil, & that to purchase the name of a sumptuous frankes 60 consecrat bishops. He may not weare his pall with, excess privile out the church, neither in other provinces; albeit in Cap. Archie, & in another province he may be in his pontifications, to glof. that pontificalia Differeth from the pall. Further, c.ex marum, more, an archbifhop map not lend his pall buto ano, & c.adhoc. ther, but it ought to be interred with him. But to re, de auch & turne to Patricius, his time was but thoat, for lone viu pal. affer as he was croffing the feas to Dublin ward. he was drowned with his felow pattengers the fame pere that he was confecrated, the ninth of Daober.

Donatus, of fome called Bungus, fucceded Pa: tricius, and likewife confecrated by Lanfrancus archbiffiop of Canturburie, at the instance of Ters vilnacus king of Freland, the bishops of Freland, the clergie and the citizens of Dublin : he deceaffer

Irriand the

Trmaab.

1 1 5 2.

1162.

1180,

in the yeare one thousand ninetic and five. Samuell fucceved Donatus , and died in the piere one thou. fand one hundged two and twentie . Gregorius Did nor fucceed imme diatlie after Samuell, for there be thirtie yeres betwene them both. Ehis Gregorius was the first metropolitan of Dublin, and was confecrated archbishop in the piere one thousand one hundred fiftie and two, and died in the yeare one thou-

fand one hundred the core and two.

S. Laurentius Dithothille . This prelat was 1 firt abbat of S. Benins in Glindelagh , and after he was folemnice confecrated and installed in Chiff durch at Dublin by Gelacius the primat of Are magh, and not by Canturburie, as the bishops of Dublin were before the pall given them. He died in Pormandie, and was burted in our ladie church of Angie in the yeare one thousand one hundred and foure score, the fouretenth of Pouember.

Johan Tummin an Englishman succeeded Laurence. Dis famous piclat being cloiffered bpin 20 the abbete of Cufham in Worceffershire was high, lie renowmed of all men, as well for his depe lears ning, as for the integritie of his life. The clergie of Dublin being given to understand of so worthie a clerke, became humble petitioners to the king his mateffie Benrie the fecond, that through his means such an unvaluable tewell should be installed in Laurence his dignitie. The king bowing to their earness lute agreed he thould be consecrated their ar thbithop; which was an happie houre for that coun. 30 trie. For belides the great travell he indured in edle fieng his flocke in Chiffian religion, he was founver of S. Patrike his durch in Dublin, as is before specified. He deceased in the piere one thousand two hundred and twelve, and was intomed in the quere

of Chills church. Henrie Londzes lucceded Cummin . This man was nicknamed Scozdbill, oz Scozdwillein thorough this occasion. Being fetled in his fe, he gave commandement to all his tenants to make their ap. 4 pærance before him at a daie appointed: and for that he was raw as pet in his revenues, he toke it to fand best with their ease and quietnes, and his commodifie, that ech of them thould thew their eutdens ccs. Wereby he might learne, by what tenure they held of him . His tenants miltrufting no fluttif dealing, but confirming all to be meant for the bet, delivered their evidences to their landload, who did scantile well peruse them when he flong them all in the fire. The pore tenants espicing this subtill pranke 50 to be perie unfitting for a bilhop, could not bride their tongs, but brake out on a suoden : Thou an archbishop: Paie, thou art a scoochvillein. But it could not be gelled to what end this fact of his ten. ded; for notwithstanding this, the tenants intoled their lands, unlesse he did it because they should be te nants at will, and fo to fand to his denotion. This prelat doubtleffe was politike, and well lettered, and for his wiscoome and learning he was eleded lood fuffice of Ireland. He was the founder of the caffell of Dublin, as is before mentioned. He becealled in the peare one thousand two hundred twentie a flue, and lieth buried in Chaiffs church. Wherby appereth that Matthæus Parifienfis die ouerfhot himfelfe, in writing one Hu or Hugo to be archbishop of Du blin in the yeare one thouland two hundred and thir, tiene, thereas Londres at that time was in the le, as from his confectation to his death may be gather red, being the space of thirtene peares.

Johan Stamford fucceded Londres, but not immediatlie, and was confecrated in the yeare one thousand two hundred foure score and fine . This man, byon the death of Stephan Fulboine archbie thop of Tune, was made losd tuffice of Ireland in the veare one thousand two hundred foure score and feauen. And sone after being in England he fvas fent from Coward the first as ambassades to the French king, and opon his returne he occasied in England, & fone after was buried in faint Patrike his durch at Dublin.

Willielmo Hothom is placed by some antiqua. ries to be archbiftop of Dublin much about this loan Coal time, but whether the man have beine infalled in Canada o this feat all og no, Jam not able to affirme, not to dimbat. denie: but certeine it is that the date is milfaken, for bpon Johan Stamford his death, Richard Flerings was confecrated archbishop of Dublin, betweene whome and the lood Comund Butler there aroses Comund great controversie in law, touching the manner of Butter. Polition with the appurtenances . Which mano; political mano; the logo Butler recovered by an arbitrement of com fingal, polition taken betweene them in the king his bench at Dublin. This prelat departed this life in the pere one thousand the hundred and sir.

Richard de Pauerings was fuccesto: bnto fle. rings, who after that he had continued welnere the frace of five peares in the fee, was fore appalled, by reason of an estrange and wonderfull dreame. for on a certeine night he imagined that he had fone an valie monster standing on his breast, who to his thinking was more weightie than the whole world, in so much as being as he thought in maner squiled or present to death with the hest of this huge monster, he would have departed with the whole substance of the world, if he were thereof pottetted, to be difburbened of to beaute a load. Apon with with he ludbenlie awoke. And as he beat his braines in di uining what this dreame Chould import, he bethought Hanering himselfe of the flocke committed to his charge, how Dicame. that he gathered their fleces yearelte, by receiving the revenues and perquilits of the bishoppike, and pet Inffered his flocke to ffarue for lacke of preaching and teaching . Wherefore being for his former lack nelle fore wounded in conscience, he travelled with all speed to Kome, where he resigned by his bishops rike, a burthen to heavie for his weake thoulders, and being byon his relignation competentlie beneficed, he bestoined the remnant of his life wholie in

Denotion. Johan Lech nechue to Panerings, opon the re 1311 fignation was confecrated archbifhop. This prelat was at contention with the primat of Armagh, for their turifoidions: infomuch as he did imbarre the primat from having his croffe borne before him within the province of Leinster, which was contras Deprint & rie to the canon law, that admitteth the crosser to excellent beare the croffe before his archbifhop in an other pro, chrehep nince. This man deceased in the yeare one thousand

thice bundled and thirteene.

Alexander Bigenoz was nert Lech consecrated 1313 archbithop with the thole confent affell of the chaps ter of Challes church as of S. Patriks. Howheit by on the death of Lech there arole a schisme & dinision betwene Walter Thomsburie losd chancellour of Ireland and Bigenoz wen treasures of the same countrie. The cancellog to further his election determined to have polled to Rome, but in the wale he was drowned with the number of 156 pallengers. Bigeno: faicing in Freland, with lefte adventure and better speed, with the consent of both the chapters was elected archbithop. And in the yeare 1317 there came buls from Kome to confirme the former election. At which time the archbishop and the earle of Allter were in England. This pzelat fone affer te. 1316 turned load fulfice of Ireland, and some after hehad landed at Poghill, he went to Dublin, where as well for his spiritual surfolation, as his temporall promotion he was received with procession and great

Colemnitie.

pag.316.

Matth Parif.

in vita Ioan,

\$ coach:

folenmitie. In this man his time was there an onto uersitie sounded in Dublin, ichereof maister Will liam Rodard was chancellog, a well learned man and one that proceeded doctor of the canon law in this universitie. Bigenor deceased in the yeare 1349.

John de faint Paule was confecrated archbifhop boon Bigenozhis death. He deceasted in the yeare one thousand these hundred firtic and two. Thomas Minot succeeded John, and died in the yeare one thousand the hunded seuentie & fir. Kobert Wike- 19 ford lucceded Thomas, and died in the peare one thousand the hundred and nintie. Robert Walder bie fuccesco Wikeford, this prelat was first an Augulfine frier, and a great preacher, and accounted a bertuous and fincere liver. He occeased in the yeare one thousand thee hundred ninetic and seauen. Kis thard porthalis was removed from an other fee and chosen archbishop of Dublin , who likewise beceat fed the fame yeare he was elected. Thomas Craulie an Englishman succeded him the same years, and came into Ireland in the companie of the buke of Surreie. This archbiffiop was cholen lood fuffice of Ireland in the peace one thousand foure hundled and thirtiene. In whose governement the English the farmath did fairmith with the Trith in the countie of kildare nere bilka, where the English vanquished the enimie, flue an hundred of the Frith. During which time the archbishop being losd tustice, went in procession with the whole clergic in Triffelvermot , 02 Castles permot, a towne adioining to kilka, praising for the 3 prosperous successe of the subtects that went to skir mish with the enimie. This prelat was of stature tall, well featured, and of a fanguine complexion, decking his outward comelinette with inward qualities. For he was so liberall to the rich, so charitable to the poze, to deepe a clerke, to profound a doctor, to found appearder, fo vertuous a liver, and fo great a builder, as he was not without good cause accounted the menir of his time. In vailie talke as he was in performing. In the yeare one thouland foure hundied and fenenteene, he failed into England, and env dedhis life at Faringdon, and was buried in Pew college at Orford. In the years one thousand foure hundred thirtie anine, there bath beine one Richard archbishop of Dublin, and lood suffice of Freland, before whome a parlement was holden at Dublin, in the eighteenth viere of the reigne of king Henrie the firt. In the yeare one thousand soure hundred and littie, Walter was archbishop of Dublin, 4 deputie 50 to Jasper duke of Bedford, lieutenant of Ireland. The bilhops I found in an ancient register the names of certeine bishops of kildare, that were in that sæ since the time of faint Brigio; the names of whome I thought here to insert. Lonie was bishop in faint Briogios time, which was about the years of our Lord foure hundred fortie and eight; the rest do have follow:

Anoz. 14 Kobert. Conlie. 15 Bonifacius. Donatus. 16 Wadogge. 17 William. Dauid. Pagnus. 18 Balfride, 19 Richard. Richard. John. 20 James. 21 Wale. Simon. 22 Baret. Picholas. 11 Walter. Comund Lane, who 12 Richard. florished in the yeare L13 Thomas.

There hath beene a worthie prelat, canon in the cathedrall church of laildare, named Paurice Jake, camedant chirch or introduction of the charitable deeds, builded the control of the charitable deeds, builded Moden, and the bridge of laticulten, and the next yeare fellowing be builded in like maner the bridge of Leighlin, to

the great and dailie commoditie of all such as are occasioned to travell in those quarters.

The lords temporall, as well English as Irish, which inhabit the countrie of Ireland.

The fixt chapter.

Erald Fitzgerald, earle of kildare. This house was of To the nobilitie of Flozence, came from thenle into Pos mandie, and so with the ans cient earle Strangbow his kiniman, whose armes he gi Males, niere of bloud to Rice ap Griffin, prince of Wales by Poffa the mother of Maurice Fitzgerald & Robert Fitze ftemans, with the fato earle Paurice fitzgeralo ro moued into Ireland, in the yeare one thousand one hundred firtie and nine. The familie is verie properlie toucht in a sonnet of Surreies, made opon the earle of kloares lifter, now counteffe of Lincolne. From Tuscane came my ladies worthie race, Faire Florence was sometime hir ancient seat: The westerne Ile whose pleasant shore doth face Wild Cambers cliffes, did giue hir liuelie heat, Fostred she was with milke of Irish brest, Hir fire an earle, hir dame of princes bloud, From tender yeares in Britaine she dooth rest With kings child, where the tasts costlie food.

Hunsdon did first present hir to mine cine, Bright is hir hew, and Geraldine she hight, Hampton me taught to wish hir first for mine: And Windsor, alas, dooth chase me from hir sight, Hir beautie of kind, hir vertues from aboue, Happie is he, that can obteine hir loue.

The corrupt orthographie that ofuerle vie in wit. thort, to he was tweet. Hard in promiting bountifull 40 ting this name, doth incorporat it to houses thereto linked in no kinred, and confequentlie blemifheth diverse worthie exploits atchived as well in England and Ireland, as in forcen countries and donnis nions. Some waite Berolo, fundgie Beralo, diuerfe berie corruptlie Gerrot , others Gerard. But the true orthographie is Giralo, as maic apeare both by Giraldus Cambrenfis, and the Italian authors that make mention of the familie . As for Berrot it Diffes reth flat from Giralo: pet there be some in Ireland, that name and waite themselves Berrots, notwith franding they be Biraldins, whereof diverle gentles men are in Deth. But there is a lept of the Berrots in Ireland, and they fæme forfoth by threatning kinonelle and kinozed of the true Giraldins, to fetch their petit degrees from their ancestors, but they are so neere of blows one to the other, that two bulkels of beanes would feantlie count their degrees. An other reason thy diverse estrange houses have beine shulfled in among this familie, was, for that fundrie gen, tlemen at the childrening of their children, would have them named Bicalds, and pet their furnames were of other houses, and if after it happened that Birald had flue Thomas, John, Robert, or fuch like, then would they beare the furname of Girald, as Thomas Fitigiralo: and thus taking the name of their ancellogs for their farname, within two or three descents they home themselves among the kindred of the Biraldins. This is a generall fault in Freland and Males, and a great confusion and ertinguish ment of houses.

This noble and ancient familie of the Giraldins, haue in fundite ages florifhed in the moft renowmed Marth. Parifin countries of Europe. Warring Fifzgiralo was one vira loh. pag. in great credit with king John, I find an other Gie 316. veil 40. ratoine

1518.

Pag.480.

Giraldus Cambrensis. raldine Archiepiscopus Burdegalensis, tiho flourished in king Henrie the third his time. There was an other Giraldine patriard of Ferufalem, in the pare one thousand two bundeed twentie and nine, as witnes feth Matthaus Parificnfis. There was one Giralo of Berneill an excellent poet in the Italian tong: an other named Baptift Girald, was a famous citi. zen of Ferrara, an expert phylician, and an erquifit pilolomer, being publike profestor of pilolomie in the faid citie, during the space of ten yeares. I have sæne a trocke of one Gregorius Giraldus Ferrariensis de dis gentium, dedicated to Hercules duke of Ferrara, a pithie boke and berie well penned. Also Sylucfter Giraldus Cambrenfis hath beene one of this familie, nære of kin to fir Paurice Fitzgiralo. This gentleman was borne in Males, and thereof he is named Cambrensis, of the wood Cambria, that in old time was adapted to that part of Britannia. He was berie inward with Penrie the fecond, conqueror of Ireland, being at that time the kings fecretarie. 2 And for that speciall affiance king Henrie reposed in him, he was appointed to accompanie prince John the kings sonne into Ireland, as one of his chiefelt and discretes councellors.

This gentleman was verie well learned, a tol lerable ofuine, a commendable philosopher, not rude in phylike, fkilfull in colmographie, a fingular god antiquarie, an orator, in indenor comparable to the best, in his stile not in those dates taken for the wager, rather electioning the name of a rude waiter, 30 belowing the despitefull reports of envious backthan purchating the fame of an eloquent chronicler. Among other his works, he wrote one boke of the description of Ireland, other two of the conquest thereof. John the abbat of faint Albons faith, that this clerke was somewhat spare in woods, and liber rall in fentences. That he meaneth by this verdict 3 know not, unlesse he taketh the man to be overlauth of his pen in framping of his adverfaries with quips ping tawnts, which (as I gette) flowed rather from a flanting offentation of a rollting kind of thetopike, 40 force, than love their persons. And reason god than from anie great malice he bare anie one. How beit, I maie not gainefaie, but as he was kind where he toke, so he was somewhat biting where he dilliked . But what his indgement is of the Giraldins maie plainlie appeare in his chronicle, out of which I

Cambrenfis lib. 2. conqu. Hib.rub.17.

Jeannes de lo-

co frumenti

granarij.

have culled this praifeworthie fentence infuing. Hoc est huius generis omen & hac conditio. Semper in armat a militia chari, semper primi, semper rebus in Martys ausis nobili prastantismi. Cessante verò necessitatis articulo, statim exosi statim vitimi, statim ad ima liuore depress. Ver- 50 of the Biraldines, now I purpose particulariie to untamen tante generositatu filuam liuor ad plenum extir-pare non potuit . Vnde & usque in hodiernum gens hac nous plantularum succrementu vires in insula non modieas habet. Qui sunt, qui penetrant hossium penitralia? Giraldida . Qui funt , qui patriam conseruant ? Giral-dida Qui funt,quos hosses sormidant ? Giraldida . Qui funt , quos liuor detractat? Giraldida. Siprincipem tanta strenuitatis merita dignè pensantem reperissent, quam tranquillum, quam pacificum olim Hibernia statum reddidissent? Sed horum fine caufa semper est sufpecta frenuitas. This bath been 60 à Diraldine the fourth earle of laidace, in the years continuallie, faith Cambrenfis, a bellinie og fatall propertie annexed to this house. In warre and martiall brotles they are dandaled, they are colled, they are fulled, who but they . They rule the rost. But when these martiall garboiles are appealed, they are either through falle informations wrongfullie behated, oz elle by enuious carpers finiferlie fulpec. ted . Howbeit , enuie with all hir malicious drifts, could never wholie supplant the fertill groue of this couragious & noble progenie. And maugre the heads of all malicious promoters, this fept, yea even at this date beareth, with the few Airs there ingraffed, no small Groke in Ireland . Who are they that scale the enimies fort . The Giralomes; Tho are they

that defend their countrie - the Giraltines. Who are they that make the enimie quake in his fain : Ale Giraldines. And who are they whome envie backbie teth: The Giraldines. If it had find with the god fortune of the Giraldines, that the king with equall balance would poile their balure, long yer this had all Ireland bæne put in quiet and peaceable flaie. But their valiantnesse and power bath beine from time to time without fufficient caule fulpeaed. 196 o therto Cambrenfis.

And fothlie, as often as I call to mind the fatena of this historiographer, I may not but muse how impe he hitteth the naile on the head . And thois will conferre their continuall successe from the penning of this fentence (which was written about 400 veares and boward) with this age of ours, thall fone perceive, that these words were rather prophetics of future milyap, than complaints of former infuries. At this daie let them behaue themsclues valianilie in warre, and locallie in peace; yet not with flanding, fuch flanders are raised, such rumors noised, such tales bented, such fables twitled, such untrue reports twatled, such malicious inventions forged, that such as are in authoritie cannot but of force suspenthem, buleffe they were able, like goos, to paie in the bota tome of each mans conscience. But the so witheth anie godnelle to that milerable countrie, and noble progenie, let him with all the beines of his heart befieth God, first that the higher powers be sowe in biters. Secondlie, that the Giraloines beare them felnes in all their affaires to outifullie, that thefe curious inferchers be not able to depaint their feigned glotes with anie probable colours. So thall fuspicion be abandoned, fo thall malicious flanders be squatted, so thall that noble house be trusted, and confequentlie the battered weale-publike of Ireland recolled. The familie is English, and it is well knowne that the Irish rather feare their pardie. For the Irith bearing in mind, that the Gi raldine being thereto deputed by the prince, hath in all ages conquered their lands, abated their courages discomfited their men, banquithed their armies, daunted their power, suppelled their force, and made them become true and tributarie subjects to the crowne of England: they have god cause to beare that sept but holow hearts, what thew so ever they make in outward apperance. Thus much generallie treat of the house of kildare.

Paurice Fitzgirald, one of the earles progent to25, was lo2d inffice of Ireland in the yeare 1242, at which time be builded the caffell of Sligagh. This Emelli Haurice was lood of Tireconille, and being entire. Europa lie scized of the whole countrie, he game the one moies tie thereof to Cozmocke mac Dermot , mac Ros rie. I read the Giraldine baron of Oppalie, in the Barma pears 1270. Thate fæne it registred, that there oled Depair. 1287. But I take that kalendar to beare a false date. Wherefore the truth & certeintie is , that John Fity Chiffid girald, sonne to Thomas Aitzgirald, was the first of silbert earle of kildare, and was created carle bpon this

In the yeare 1290, and in the eightenth yeare of the Country the first, William Welcie was made lood until fullice of Ireland. This man being either negligent jufich oz raw in the government of the countrie, emboloe, ned the Arith enimie to indamage the kings subjects more efflones than they were accustomed to do. These enormities being for the space of foure years tolerated, the labieds militing of the flacknesse of their gouernour, gave out luch linifter fpeches of the

low tuffice, as he was glad to the hart rot. Sone af ter, as the nobles in open aliemblie were ripping up by peccincle the feuerall harms their tenants fuffe, red, the load tuffice willing to different himfelfe of the crime, began with miffie kind of fpeaches to laic the whole fault on the lood John Fitzgiralos thoul. pers, fateng in parable wife, that he was a great oc calion of thefe biloiders, in that he bare himfelfe in prinat quarrels as fierce as a lion, but in thefe pub. like infuries he was as mocke as a lambe. The bar 10 ron of Phalie spelling and putting these spllables

together, spake in this wife.

per gentleman.

Cition accus

j ajgiraid.

¢

Dy lozo, Jam hartilie fozie that among all this engrandwer. noble affemblie, you make me your onelie marke comperent to thot your belt . And trulie were my des ferts to bemous as I fusiole you would with them to be, you would not labour to cloud your talke with ce luch barke rivles, as at this present you have done; but with plaine & flat Englift, your lorothip would ce not flicke to impeach of felicine or tresson. For as 20 I will be fure to bite. mine ancestors with spending of their bloud in their ce fouereignes quarell aspired to this type of honour, in which at this vaie (God and my king be thanked) I fand: fo your loodhip taking the nigher wate to the ce wood, by charging me with treason, would gladie trip for oundlie on my top, that by thedding of my ce bloud, and by catching my lands into your clouches, that butt to nere boon your manoes of Kildare and ce Rathimgan, as I bare faie they are an cie-fore buto

A gentleman ? quoth the load inffice : Thou bald baron, I tell thee the Mescies were gentlemen before ce the Ciraloines were barons of Dihalie, yea and be. fore that Welfh bankrupt thine ancestour (he meant ce fir Baurice Fitzgirald) fethered his neft in Lein. ffer. And whereas thou takelt the matter lo farre in fnuffe, I will teach the thy lyaripups after an other fathion than to be thus malepertite cocking and billing with me that am thy gonernour . Wherefore, 4 ce albeit thy taunts are such as they might force the patientest this somer that is , to be thout with tholer : ce yet I would have the ponder my speches, as though I delivered them in my most sober and quiet mod. I saie to the face of thee, and I will anow what I say cc buto the, that thou art a supporter of theenes, a bolife. rerof the kings entinies, an opholocr of traitors, a ce murtherer of lubieus, a firebeand of diffention, a ranketheefe, an arrant traitoz: and befoze 3 eate blade.

The baron beforling with might and maine his holer, bare himselfe as colo in countenance, as the lood fulfice was hot in words, and replied in this wife. Hy load I am verieglad, that at length you " unwapped your selfe out of that net, wherein all this wile you malked. As for mine ancellor, thome you terme a bankerapt, how rich or how pore he was cc bpon his repairs to Ireland, I purpole not at this ce that he came hither as a bier , not as a begger . He bought the enimies land by spending his bloud : but ce poulurking like a spider in his copweb to intrap flies, endende to beg subjects livings wrongfullie, by despoiling them of their innocent lives. And wheras cc you charge me with malepertnes, in that I prefume to thop logike with you being governour, by answer ce ring your framith ouid, with a knamith our, I wold with you to binder trand, now, that you put me in mind of the diffication, that A as a subted honour ce your rotall authoritie, but as a noble man Tochife pour dunghill gentilitie. Lastlie, whereas you charge ce me with the odious termes of traitor, murtherer, and

the like, and there with all you will me to refolue my

felfe, that you reft byon reason, not byon rage: if these words proceed from your loodhip, as from a >> magistrate, 3 am a subject, to be tried by order of law, and am force that the governour, two ought by vertue of his publike authoritie to be my inoge, is by reason of prinat malice become mine accuser.

But if you biter thefe lyecthes as a privat per >>> fon, then I John Fitzgiralo, baron of Dihalie, do tell the William Tefcie, a fingle fole gentleman, 22 that Jam no traitoz, no felon; and that thou art the onelie buttrelle, by which the kings entinics are sup- >? posted, the meane and instrument by which his mate. flies subiens are dailie spotled. Therefore 3 as a lotall subject saie traiter to the teeth, and that thalt thou 22 well understand when we both shall be brought to the reherfall of these matters before our betters. How >2 beit during the time you beare office, I am resolued to give you the mastrie in woods, and to suffer you like a brailing cur to barke, but when 3 fe my time

These biting spæches palling to and fro, great The lord Sta factions on both fives were raised, with high and raidpotteth mightie words, and deepe othes; till time either part into England appealed his owne. The baron of Dipalie not flop. ing no; flacking his matter, fquoted with all haft into England, there he was no loner inthosed, than Acleie, affer he had lubattuted William Haie in loweth. his rome, was imbarked, making as hot fot affer the baron as he could. The king and his councell but you, you might make my mailter your sonne a pros 30 derstanding the occasion of their subden arrivals, to the end the truth thould be brought to light, appointed a fet date for the deciding of their controucrite, and that each of them frould speake for himselfe what he could. Wherebpon Melcie being commanded to

begin spake to this effect. My dread souereigne, as I must acknowledge Elescies

my felfe somewhat agreeued, to be intangled in fo in, ogation, tricate a matter, fo Jam as glad as hart can thinke that so weightie a controuersie is brought to the occibing of to byzight an bmpire. And thereas it fod ,, with your materies pleature, with the adule of this pour honourable councell, that I, as bnworthie, >> thould have the government of your realme of Ireland;and during my time, your matefties lubiects, 22 haue beene, I may not benie it, diuerflie annoied, for my discharge, as I sato in Ireland : so I anow here in England, that he knæleth bere befoge your high, 32 nelle (pointing to the baron of Ohalie) that is the rot and crop of all thefe enormities . For it is well 22 " thele words, I will make the eate a peece of my 50 knowne, that he beareth that froke with the Irith, as if he once but frowne at them, they dare not be fohardie as once to peaks out of their cabbins. And 33 thereas his force both greatlie amaze them , thinke ,, you but his countenance doth twonderfulie income rage them ? To the furtherance of which, it is awa? rantlie knowne, and it thall be proved, that he hath >> not onelie in backer mucker, by fundzie mellages,, imboloened your maiesties enimies, to spoile your subjects, but also by his personall presence, in secret >> time to bebate . Det thus much I may boldlie faie, 60 meetings, be gaue them fuch courage, as neither the >> rotaltie of your highneste, nor the authoritie of your ,, deputie, neither the force of your lawes, nor the arength of your pullant armie, was able to quench >> the flame of these hurlic burlies, that through his >> traitorous drifts were inkindled. These and the like enormities through his printe packing with rebels ??

> Wherebpon being in conference with fuch as were the chiefteins of your realme of Ireland, al. 3

being dailie committed, to bying me your maieffies >>

governour in the hatred of the people, his adherents ,, both fecretlie muttered, and openlie erclamed a. gainst me and my government, as though the re, "

dele of all these harmes had wholie lien in mine 15

66 beit 3 twie it to be expedient, to point with my fine " ger to the verie finhe or headfpring of all the treas cons, that by fecret confpiractes were pretended and or practice against your matelie and your subjects, yet not with fanding having more regard to modes " fie, than to the deferts of the baron of Dipalie, I bid but glanse at his packing in such secret sort, as " none of a verte few of the companie could geffe, " thome with my miffic speaches A did touch. And as " commonlie the galo horfe doth somest kicke, so this 10 " gentelman being paicht, as it thould fæme with the fling of his giltie confcience, brake out on a fuoden, and forgetting his allegiance to your highneste, and ce his dutie to me your deputie, he toke me op fo " roughlie, as though I had beene rather his binder, " ling than his gouernour. The fumme of which bef-" pitefull speaches I refer to the testimonie of the hoco nozable audience where they were delivered. As for " his manifold treasons, I am alhamed to rehearle " fuch things as he did not flicke to commit. And if it 20 " thall fand with your maieffies pleasure, to adjourne se the triall for a few vaics, I will charge him with fuch " sparent Items, as were his face made of braffe, he 46 Mall not be able to denie anie one article that Mall " be bolted against him. Then Tescie had enoco, the co baron of Dipalie preft himfelfe fomethat forward, ce and in this wife spake.

The laid Wi=

Spott putsant prince and my dread louereigne. ralds ogation. were maifter Telecte his mouth to talk a measure, as co what he spake, should be holden for gospell, this had 30 co bene no fit place for so arrant a traitor, as he with his feigned glofing would gladlie proue me to be. But fith it pleased your maiestie, with so indifferent ce balance to ponder both our tales, I am throughlie perfuaded, that my lotall innocencie thall be able, to onerpoise his forged treatheric. Dour maieffie hath ce heard manie words to small purpose. And as his cc complaint hitherto hath bæne generallie hudled op, ce so mine auswer thereto may not particularlie be franted. Thereas therefore he fermeth me a suppor 40 cter of theues, a packer with revels, a conspirator ce with traitors, if I thould but with a bare word denie the premiffes, all his gate glofe of glitting speaches would suddenlie fade awate. Dea, but he craueth refe co pit for the botting of his articles. Trulie to he hath co ned. For lottering and lingring is the onlie wate he may denile to cloke his feigning and forging. Where in he theweth himselfe as craftie, as the philosopher ce was accounted wife that promifed a tyrant opon comenacing wordes, to schoole his affe in philosophie, 50 so he had seven yeares respit; bicause that in that so space he was persuaved, that either the typant, the ce affe,02 he would die. In likewife matter Mefcie, bp on respit granted him, would hang in hope, that elther the life of your maiestie (which God forbid) " thould be thostened; or that I, in tract of time, would ce be disfauoured; or that he by one subtill pranke or o. ther thould be of this heavie load disburdened.

But if I have bene as manie yeares a maleface co to as he advoucheth, how happened it, that his twng 60 ce was tied before this late diffention begun- Thie did he not from time to time souertife the councell of comp treasons? Thereas now it may be probablie cc confedured, that he was ego to this feruice rather co for the hatred he beareth me, than for anie love be oweth pour rotall maiestie. Touching the words I ce fpake in Ireland, I purpose not, for ought I heard cc as pet, to eat them in England. And then I hall be calo to testifie such speaches as I delinered there, I will not be found fo raw in my matter, as to lofe "my errant in the carriage, as matter Aelcie hath done, or focusic further respit for the registring of his manifold treasons. As for my fecret meetings

with Frish rebels, where I perfuaded matter Welcie,

that you were able to prove them, I would be found willing to acknowledge them. For if my conscience " were to depelie flong, as you pretend, I would take " it for better policie, by acknowledging my trespalle," to appeale to my king his mercie, than by denieng my faults, to fand to the rigor of his inflice.

And as for meetings, I had never fo manie in " wods with revels, as you mafter Aescie, have had " in your chamber with cowes. For it hath bene ma. nifestile apparented, that when the baron of Ophalie, " and the best of the nobilitie of Ireland have beine imbard from entring your chamber, an Frish cow " thould have at all times accelle but o you. Po, ma, " fer Aelcie: a cow, an horse, an hauke, and a since " cup have beene the occasion of your slacknesse. Then " the subtects were presded, you would be content to " winke at their milerie, so that your mouth were Ropt with batherie. And when you had gathered your crums sufficientlie togither, you held it for a pretie policie (and pet it was but a bare thift) to charge the nobilitie with such packing, as you dailie did prac tife. But you must not thinke that we are babes, 02 that with anie such stale denile, or grosse suggling tricke, you may to casilie duske or dazell our cies, Can anie man that is but Aenderlie witted, to far be caried, as to believe, that mafter Wescie, being the kings deputie in Ireland, having his maieffiestrea fure, having the nobilitie at his becke, the kings ar "mie at his commandement; but that, if he were oil " poled to besturre himselse, he were able to ferret out " such baredzeech brats as swarme in the English ", pale? If he fato he could not, we must smile at his simplicitie, if he could and would not, how may he colour his difloialtie?

Dea, but I beare such Aroke with the Irish, as that boon ante patuat quarrell Jamable to annois them. What then & Bicante the baron of Ophalie ,, can revenge his privat infuries without the alli-Cance of the deputie; therefore the deputie may not ,, vanquily weake and naked rebels without the fur. therance of the baron of Dphalte: thereas the cone,, trarie ought to be inferd, that if a privat person can ,, tains the Brith, what may then the publike magir, Arat do, that hath the princes paie. But in dedit is hard to take hares with fores. You must not thinke, ,, matter Helcie, that you were fent governour into Areland to dandle your truls, to pen your felfe by ., within a towne or citie to give rebels the gaze, to pill, the lubieds, to animat trations, to fill your coffers, ,, to make your felfe by marring true men, to gather the birds thillest other beat the bushes, and after to impeach the nobilitie of fuch treatons, as you onclie, haue committed.

But for fo much as our mutuall complaints frand bpon the one his yea, and the other his nate, and that ,, you would be taken for a champion, #3 am knowne to be no coward : let vs, in Gods name, leave licing, for barlets, berding for ruffians, facing for crakers, ,, chatting for twatters, scoloing for callets, boking, for fertueners, pleading for lawyers; and let vistrie ,, with the dint of fword, as become martiall mento, do, our mutuall quarels . Therefore to tuffife that "," I am a true fubiea, and that thou Melcie art an arthy ", traitor to God a to my king, here in the presence of his highnesse, and in the hearing of this honorable Thrombs allemblie, I chalenge the combat. Whereat all the chalenge auditozie Chouted.

Pow in god faith, quoth Celcie, with a right god will. Wherebpon both the parties being dilmiss but till the kings pleasure were further knowne, it was agreed at length by the councell, that the fittell triall Mould have beene by battell. Wherefore the parties being as well thereof advertised, as the date by the king appointed, no finall prouttion was made for to

a , wed on the

The first erle

Ebe wurt

carice of

aufhare.

1315

cager a combat, as that was presuposed to have hene. But when the prefired daie approched nære, Cocice turning his great booth to small rost, began to crie creake, and secretic safled into France, king Coward thereof advertised, bestowed Hescies lood, thips of Kildare and Kathingan on the baron of Di phalie, faieng that albeit Aeleie conneied his person into France, yet he left his lands behind him in 3. reland.

tion of all his friends, and was created carle of kildare, in the ninth yeare of Colward the second his reigne, the foureteenth of Paie. De deceaffed at La. raghbitne (a village nere to Bainoth) in the peare 1 3 1 6, and was buried at kildare, to that he was earlebut one yeare. The house of Kilvare among diverte giffs, iherewith God hath abundantlie indued it, is for one fingular point greatlic to be admit red, that not with Canding the louer all affaults of dis now lineth is the tenth earle of Kildare, to whome from John the first earle, there bath alwaies continueda lineall descent from father to son: which trus lie in mine opinion is a great bleffing of God. And for as much as this earle now living as his ancefloss before him, have beene threfwolic thoused at by his enill willers, fairing that he is able, but not willing to profit his countrie: the polic that is framed for him, fignifieng his mind, runneth in this wife:

Quid possim, iastant: quid vellem, scire recusant: vtraque Regina sint, rozo, nota meæ.

His elvett fonne is loed Giralo, baron of Dpha 199 Cirolo, lie, for whom thefe two verfes following are made:

Te pulchrum natura fecit, fortuna potentem, Tefaciat Christi norma, Giralde, bonum.

Sir Thomas Butler earle of Demondand Dl. Ented Of ferie, The Butlers were ancient English gentles men, and worthie feruitors in all ages. Theobald Butler lood of Carrike and John Cogan were lood his as Iam inflices of Ireland. This Butler died in the castell 40 informed) are of Archelow, in the years 1 2 8 5. This load Theomin more valo Butler the younger, and fon to the cloer Theowhich bane bald, was fent for by Edward the first, to serue as the gainst the Scots. This noble man deceased at Tur. uie, and his bodie was conveighed to Meneie, a towne in the countie of Limerike . Sir Comund Butler a wife and valiant noble man was dubbed knight at London by Coward the fecond.

This man being appointed lieutenant of Fre. law, byon the repaire of John Mogan (who before 50 was lood tuffice) to England, belieged the Obsenies in Olindalogie: and were it not that they submitted themselucs to the king and the lieutenants mercie, they had not beene onelie for a scason variquished, but also otterlie by him criticped. This noble man was in his government such an incourager and furtherer of feruitoes, as that he dubo on faint Wie thavil the archangels date thirtie knights in the car stell of Dublin. He was a scourge onto the Scots that invaded Ireland, when he was lieutenant. He 60 discomfited Dmourgh a notozious rebell, neare a towne named Balie lethan. After diverle victorious exploits by him atchined, he failed into England, and so to Pilpaine in pilgrimage to faint James. Apon his returne to England, he deceased at London, and his bodie being connected into Ireland was intomed at Balligauran.

James Butler earle of Dymond was lood in-2359 Acc of Ireland, in the years 1359. The losd Butler and vicount Apriles was dubd knight by Henris the firt in England, in the yeare 1425, at which time fir James Butler, fir John Butler, fir Rafe Butler, were in like maner knighted. James Butler, who Charles maried the earle of Herefords daughter, was prefer-

red to the earledome of Dimond in the first yeare of of Dimond. Coward the third, which fell byon the heirs generall, lattice opon fir Thomas Butler earle of Wilthire, after whome it reuerfed to Dierce Builer, whome a little before king Henrie the eight had created crie of Dlogie. I read Butler earle of Tipperarie in the Cipperarie peare 1300. The Latine historie calleth him Domi num de pincerna, the English le Butler. Whereby it appeareth, be had some such honour about the prince. Elebaron returned to Treland with the gratular to Pis berie name is Wecket, who was advanced by Denrie the feconds eldelt fonne, lord Butler, in recompense of the death of Momas of Canturburie their kiniman. His eldelt some is the lood Butler and vicount Thurles. For the carle now living thefe two verles (in the remembrance of him) are made:

Magnus assus masorq pater, sed natus viroj Corporis aut animi non bonitate minor.

Beraldfit; Beraldearle of Delmond. Maurice Delmond, fit; Momas a Weraldine, was created carle of Dele uerle entinics in lundite ages, pet this earle that 20 mond the lame yeare, some after that Butler became earle of Dymond. Dis elocit fonne is lozo fits Deraid of Defmond. The erie now living, thus freaketh;

> Euafstandem, iactatus fluctibus alti, Et precor in portu sit mea tuta ratus

Sir Richard Bourke earle of Tlenrickard, Clearicketts. a branch of the English familie de Burgo. The Bourkes have bene ancient noble men before their comming to Ireland: and in old time they have hone earles of Alfter. His clock sonne is lood Bourke baron of Entkelline. Dis berfe is this:

Quam mihi maiorum fama bona gesta dederunt, Hanc mihi natorum barbara faéta negant.

Connogher Dbzen earle of Tomond: the name Comount of earle given to Purragh Dbeen for tearine of life, and after to Donogh Objen, in the fift yeare of the reigne of Coward the firt, now confirmed to the heires males, his clock fonne is baron of Ibracan. Upon the erle now living this fantalic was reutled:

Non decet externos, sine causa, quarere reges, Cimlicet in tuta vinere pace domi.

Pac Cartie Poze earle of Clencare, created in the Ciencate, fon Acount of Gormansolve: therbuto is late. Boch. lie annexed the baronie of Vature 2000. their ancestors fir Robert Presson, then chiefe bas ron of the ercheker, was dubbed knight in the field, by Lionell duke of Clarence. This gentleman mats djed in wedlocke with Pargaret Birmingham la. die of Carbzie, who occeased in the yeare 1361. After those death fir Robert Pection was seized of the faid loadship in the right of his wife, and being molested by rebels, placed a garison in the castell, whereby the subjects were greatlie eased, and the rebels greatlie annoied.

There hath beene another fir Robert Picken of this boule, great grandfather to the vicount now living. This gentleman was deputic to Richard, fecond fon to Coward the fourth, in the firteenth years of the reigne of his father: and after like wife in the reigne of Benrie the lenenth, he was deputie to Jalper buke of Beoford, erle of Penbroke, & licutenant of Ireland: and at the same time was he appointed by the king generall receiver of his recenue in Free land. How wifelie this noble man behaued himfelfe in peace, and how valiantlie he bequit himfelfe in warre, fundice of king Henrie the fenenth his letters to him being deputie, addielled, do manifefflie witneffe. There was a parlement holden before him at Drogheda, which was repealed in the tenth yeare of Henric the fenenth. Sir Chaillother Paelson was dubbed knight in the field by Comund earle of March, lood veputie of Ireland. William Preffon was lood inffice of Ireland in Henrie the eight his reigns. The house is uncient, planted in Laucashire,

1 3 5 1

1476

1397

D. 1.

from Mancaffarc.

Pacifion came and from thense be parted into Ireland, being to this date leized of a manour in Lancathire, named of the house Prefton. The vicount now living speaketh in this wife, as it were present in person, and saith:

Si quantum vellem, tantum me posse putarem, Nota esset patrix mens mea sirma mex.

Wattinglade.

1542

1175

Ensface alias powar, vicount of Baltinglaste, lord of Bilcullen to him and his heires males, the foure and thir tith yeare of Benrie the eight. Their ancestor Robert de Powar was sent into Ireland 1 with committion, and his offpring hath reffed there fince the yeare 1175. Dowar alias Ensface is writs tenbaron of Domuile in the yeare 1317. The bis counts poeue now living is this that followeth:

Cum bonus ipse manes, an non laus magna putatur, Prudenter cuius posseplacere viro ?

Mountgaret. 1550 Dáce. Athenrie.

Sir Richard Butler vicount Pountgaret to him and his heires males in the fift yeare of Coward the firt. Afcount Dece. Lord Bermingham baron of Athenrie, now degenerate and become meere Irily, 20 against whome his ancestoes served valiantlie in the yeare 1300. John Bermingham was lood of Athen: rie Anno 1316. John Bermingham baron of Ar. digh, called in Latine de alrio Dei, in the yere 1318. Pac Paurice, alid fitzgerald, baron of Berie. L. Courcie, not verie Trith; the ancient descent of the Courcies planted in Ireland with the conquest. Fleming baron of Slane. Simon fleming was baron of Slane, 1370. The L. now living thus speaketh:

Slanius inuictus princeps mihi nomen adaptat, In bello clarum nomen 👉 omen habens.

Billing.

Ardigh.

Courcie.

Blaine.

Beric.

Plunket baron of Billine, his familie came in with the Danes, whereof they have as yet speciall monuments. Sir Chistopher Plunket lozd of Bil. line, was losd lieutenant of Ireland, which title is to be fæne at this day in Killine, graven on his tome. The baron that now liveth, thus frameth his poelic:

Crnant viuentem maiorum gesta meorum, Talia me nequeunt viua cadente mori.

Deluin.

Pugent baron of Deluen, an ancient house. Sir Gilbert de Pogent , or Pugent, came into Ireland, with fir Bugh de Lacie, one of the first and valiant conquero2s of the countrie. This Bilbert matched with Kola de Lacie, lister to Hugh de Lacie. He had given him bpon the conquett the baronies of foure, and of Deluine by the faid fir Hugh, of whose brother Michard de Pogent, otherwife called Richardus de Capella, the house of Deluin is descended. In a conuciance past from sir Bilbert to his brother Kichard, thele woods are inserted : Dedi & concessi fratrimeo Ri- 50 chardo de Capella totum conquestum meum in Hibernia, 💸 terram quam dedit mihi dominus meus Hugo de Laci, qui vocatur Deluin, o totam terram meam in Anglia. The bas ron now living + louing his countrie thus speaketh:

In patria nutus,patria prodesse laboro,

viribus in custris, consultiff, domi. S. Laurence, varon of Howth, signifieng the Howth. disposition of his mind, he speaketh in this wife:

Stredamas,redamo,fifpernis,fperno.Quid ergo? Non licet als J. tuis viuere posse bonis?

Plunket baron of Dunsanie. Apon the baron now living, this denile was framed as you fee:

Gratia quod dederat, si non fortuna negabit, Dux tam praclaro stemmate dignus eris.

Erimic: ftowne.

Dannagh.

Dunfanie.

Barnewall baron of Trimlellowne. They came from litle Britain, where they are at this day a great furname. Upon their first arrivall, they wan great possessions at Beirhauen, where at length by confpi racie of the Irish they were all saine, except one yong man, who then Audied the common lawes in England, who returning, dwelt at Drunnagh befides Dublin, where his heires to this date are fetled. This house as well for antiquitie, as for the number of worthipfull gentlemen that he of the furname,

beareth no fmall Aroke in the English pale of Ite. land : howbeit of late it hath beene greatlie maimic thozough the occease of these worthis and famous Barnewals. The first was Kobert Barnewall L. of Robin Trimleffolune that last was, a rare noble man, and Baing. indued with lundzie god gifts, who having wholie wedded himselfe to the reformation of his miscrable countrie, was resolved for the whetting of his wit, which nathelette was pregnant and quicke, by a thort trade and method he take in his fludie, to have fint up the verte fap of the common law, and upon this Determination failing into England, fichened Both lie after at a worthipfull matrones house at Torny berie, named Pargaret Tiler, where he was to the great greefe of all his countrie pearled with death, when the weale publike had mod need of his life. The second Barnewall that deceased was D. Dar, Marin cus Barnewall of Donbros, whose credit and au Hanney thoritie had it beine correspondent to his valure and abilitie, he would (3 doubt not) haue bone accounted and knowne for as od a gentleman (none difprati

fed) as ante in the Englith pale of Ireland. Let there of the furname that departed this life, direction was fir Chiffocher Barnwall knight, the lanterne photosis was fir Chiffocher Barnwall knight, the lanterne photosis was first vart of Tre, ballings

and light as well of his houle, as of that part of Ire, land where he dwelt : who being fufficientlie furnitht as well with the knowlege of the Latine tong, as of the common lawes of England, was zealouflie bent to the reformation of his countrie. A viepe and a 30 wife gentleman, spare of speech, and therewithall pithie, wholie addited to gravitie, being in anie pleas fant conceipt rather given to fimper than fmile, be rie byzight in dealing, measuring all his affaires with the lafetie of conscience, as true as fixle, close and fecret, fait to his friend, fout in a god quarell, a great houtholder, sparing without pinching, speni ding without walling, of nature mild, rather chofing to pleasure where he might harme, than willing to harme where he might pleasure. He sickened the the and twentith of Julie of an hot burning ague, and ended his life at his house of Turnie the fift of August, to the great loss as well of his friends as of his countrie, bpon whole death a sonne in law ct his framed this epitath confifting of firtiene berfes.

Leta tibi, sed mæsta tun mors accidit ista, Regna dat alta tibi , damna dat ampla tun. Latus es in calis vllo sine fine triumphans, Mastus at in terris dines inopfque incet. Namsapiente caret dines, qui parta gubernet, Nec, qui det misero munera, pauper habet. Te gener ipse caret, vidua, te rustica turba, Atque vrbana cohors,te(socer alme) caret. Non est digna viro talis respublica tanto , Num sanctus sedes non nisi sancta decet. Miraloguor , sed vera loquor, non fieta reuoluo, Si maiora loquar, nil nisi vera loquar. Mortuus es? Nobis hoc crimina nostra dederunt Mortum es? Virtus hoc tibi facra dedit. Vium es in cœlo, dedit hoc tibi gratia Christi, Vium vt in mundo sis, tibi fama dabit.

For the lord of Trimle Cownell now living, dellring a name of fame after death, this was deuiled.

Quodmihi vita dedit , fratri Mors saua negauit, Quod dederat fratri, det mihi fama precor.

Cowerd Butler baron of Donboin , giuen to Dunbein. Comund Butler efquier, and his heires males, in the three and thirtith years of king Henrie the eight. For the baron now living, these verses are made.

Dum sequitur natus summi vestigia patru, Filius optato tramite cuncta geret.

Sir Barnabie Fitispatrike baron of Apper Di Cipper Di ferie, giuen to Barnabie Dac Gullopatrike and ne. his heires males, in the three and thirtith yeare of Henrie the eight . Donat Clonnagh Pachgilpae

trike was a perclette warriour in the yeare 1219. Sir Barnabie Fitzpatrike, now lood of omer De ferie, was knighted by the duke of Martolke at the fege of Leith in Scotland : in the begining of Q. Clijabeths reigne, for thom thefe beries are made:

principis in gremio summi nutritus & altus,

Hauste dillustri regia dona schola.

Pluntket, baron of Louth, to sir Christopher Plunket and his heires males , in the 33 yeare of 13. Henrie the eight . This baronte was an erlbome 10 perteining to the Berminghams, in the yeare 1316, floner. For the baron now lining, this was deniled:

Nobilu, ingenuus, firmu quoque firmus amicu, Nubila seu cœlum lúxue serena regat.

Oneile, baron of Dungauon , to whom the earles dome of Ciron was intailed by gift of king Henrie the cight . Powar , baron of Cutraghmoze . Pac Surtan, lord Defert, his ancellors were lords in the time of Lionell duke of Clarence , earle of Miller , in the yeare 1 3 60: now verie wilo Frift. Pur, 2 ragh Dhrene , baron of Insirkoine , to him and his heires males, in the fine and thirtith yeare of hing Benrie the eight. There are besides these noble men, certeine gentlemen of worlhip, commonlie called baronets, thom the ruder fort doth regiller a mong the nobilitie, by terming them corruptlie bas rons; whereas in verie bed they are to be named neither barons, noz baronets , but banrets . He is propertie called a banret, whole father was no car-Kentet what pet knight, but dubbed in the field under the banner 30 or enligne. And because it is not vouall for anie to be a knight by birth, the eloeff fonne of fuch a knight with his heires , is named a bannerret , or a banret. Such are they that here infine. Sentleger , bantet of flemarge , mere Briff . Den, banret of Posmanffowne, waring Brith. Fitigirald, banret of Burnechurch . Wellellie , banret of Pozragh, Buleie, banret of Baltrim . Saint Dige hell, banret of Scrine . And Pangle, banret of the Panan . Englith gentlemen of longest continue 40 ance in Freland are those, which at this day either in great powertie oz perill ow kæpe their properties of their ancellors lands in Allfer, being then companions to Courcie, the conqueror and earle of that part . Thefe are the Sauages, Jogbans, Fity Ste mons, Chamberleins, Kullels, Benfons, Andicies, Thites, Kit; Arfulies, now degenerat and called in Irilh Pac Pahon , the Bearrs fonne .

> Thenames or furnames of the learned men and authors of Ireland, and what bookes they wrote.

The seuenth chapter.

Scotus fermeth Barbosus, because of his long beart, a age the countrie was not for red with such as imploied

their labors in gathering together the fatengs and dwings of lage persons, the discontinuance of his fame is rather to be imputed to the ignozance of the time , than to the want of his beferts . He flourithed in the yeare 1053. Alen, a learned thylician. James Archer a Audent of diamitie . Argobalius, the fecond bishop of Argentine, successor to the holiepzelat faint Amand , bozne in Freland, a learned and deuont clerke: who leaving his countrie and lining in heremit wife, in certeine folitarie places of France, instructed the people of that realme in the ware of God, and the knowlege of the feriptures.

In his preaching he was noted to have to lingular a grace, and fo profperous fucceffe, that fuch as were by anie worldlie miladuenture affliced, bpon the hearing of his godlie fermons would subdenlie be comforted. The french king Dagobertus , aduer. tifed of his lerning and vertue, caused him to be fent for , bling him as his chiefe councellor in all his incightie affaires; and after advanced him to be bis thop of Argentine: bewrote a bake of homilies. He deceased in the yeare 6581 & was buried hard by a gibbet nære the citie, pitcht on the top of an hill called faint Dichaels hill, which was done by his owne amointment, in that he would follow the erample of his mailler Chait, who oid bouchfafe to fuffer without the citie of Zerusalem , where offen bors and malefactors were executed. Barnwall. Bradie & preacher. Brendan an abbat borne in Con. Bradie. nagh, in his youth trained by bider Bercus a bis Bienban thop: and being further dept in yeares, he travelled into England, where he became a profell monke, bnder an abbat named Congellus, he flourished in the years 560; and wrote these bothes insuing. Confessio christiana lib. 1. Charta cœlestis hareditatis lib. 1. Monachorum regula lib. 1.

Comund Bernerden a frior, be proceeded bodor Bernerden of dininitie in Dublin, in the yeare 1 3 2 0. Brigide Brigide. the virgine , borne in Leinster, the flourithed in the yeare 5 1 0: the wrote a boke of hir reuclations. Browne a civilian . Burnell . Butler a Water fordian , sometime scholer to maister Peter White; Browne, he translated Maturinus Corderius his bothe of Butter. males into Englith, in the yeare 1562. James Cabbell, he waote Diversa epigrammata. Carberie Cabbell. a profound civillan . Cellus archbishop of Armagh, Carberie, borne in Freland, and schooled in the universitie of Cellus, Orford, he flourished in the years 1 128: he wrote thele bokes following . Testamentum ad ecclesias lib. 1. Constitutiones quædam lib. 1. Ad Malachiam epistolæ complures. Clere,bone in Bilken. nie, and proceeded mailler of art in Priord. John Clere. Clin borne in Leinster , being profest a greie fris er , he bestolned his time in preaching, chieflie in the Clim, towne of kilkennie. This man was a good antiquarte, as ameared by a chronicle he wrote, begins ning at the nativitie of Chilf, and fretching to the yeare 1350: in which yeare he flourithed. He wrote these bokes following. Annalium dronicon lib. 1. De regibus Anglorum lib. 1. De custodijs prouinciarum lib. 1. De Franciscanorum comobijs & eorum distinctionibus lib. T.

Henrie Cogie bodoz of divinitie, pzoceded in the univertitie of Dublin, in the yeare 1 3 20. Colme, Come a learned and an holie monke, he flourished in the Colme. yeare 670: he wrote a boke intituled Pro focijs Quartadecimanis. Columbanus , bonne in Aller, and trained in learning and knowledge as well in Columbanus. England as in France , for his learning and berlearned man, greatlie in old tue, was elected to be abbat. Hauing travelled distinct renotwined in Ireland.

13 time renotwined in Ireland.

13 time for as much as in his 60 and there in an abbete by him founded, called Monafterium Bobiense, he ended his life the twentith of Pottember. De left to his posteritie these bakes: In pfalterium commentarios lib. 1. Collationes ad monadios librum 1. De moribus monadiorum metrice lib. 1. Monasteriorum methodos lib. 1, Epistolas ad commilitones lib. 1. Aduersus regem adulterum lib, r. Conganus an Irilly abs Conganus, bat , of thom faint Barnard maketh great ac count, he flourithed in the yeare 1150 : and wrote Barnardus in to faint Bernard Gesta Malachiæ archiepiscopi vita Malachiæ lib. 1. Ad Bernardum Clareuallensem epist. plures, in præfat. Connour . Calter Conton : he wote in the La. Connour, tine tong diverle epigrams and epitails . Simon Contil. Confell a Diume. Cornelius Bibernus, other wife Cornelius. named

15arnmail

Argobaltus.

Ardericus

Dangauon,

Corregt)

Defett.

Infirkoin:

Barenete.

(t

40

hift.

Creagh.

Crumpe.

grammata.

Dalie.

Curren. Culacke.

Darcie.

Delahide.

Deuror.

Dillon. Douball.

Dozmer.

Duns Iohannes maior lib. 4.cap. 10.

Cicin orat. pro Arch. pocta.

named Pissous, by reason that he was taken in his time for an ergutlit antiquarie, as may appeare Hestor Boctin by the Scottly historian Hector Boctius, by thom he acknowledgeth himselse to be greatlie surthered. De flourished in the peare 1230: and wrote Multarum rerum Chronicon. lib. i. Richard Creagh borne in Limerike, admine, he wrote Epistolas complures, Responsiones ad casus conscientiæ. De vitis sanctorum Hiberniæ. Topographiam Hibernix, with diverse other bokes.

Henrie Crumpe borne in Ircland, and brought by in the univertitie of Drford,, where he grew by reason of his prosound knowledge in divinitie to no fmall credit . Pauing repaired to his native countrie, minding there to defraie the talent wherewith God had indued him, he was suddenlie appehended by Simon bishop of Weth, and kept in dureste, by res fon that he was suspected to be of no found religion. He floriffed in the years one thousand thick hundred ninette and two, and wrote thefe bokes : Determi- 20 nationes scholast.lib.r. Contra religiosos mendicantes lib. 1. Responsiones ad obiecta lib.1. Comund Turren archdeacon of old Laghlin, there bath beine an Irith bithop of the name . Patrike Culacke a gentleman borne, and a scholer of Drford, sometime scholemaister in Dublin, and one that with the learning that God of impart him, gave great light to his countrie; he imploied his Audies rather in the instructing of scholers, than in penning of boks, he florished in the years one thousand fine hundred 3 thice score and fir, and wrote in Latine Diversa epi-

Dalie Choled in the universitie of Paris, has ning a pretie inlight in scholasticall dininitie, he made Diuerfas conciones . Sir Willielme Dar cie knight, a wise gentleman, he wzote a boke intituled, The occase of Ireland. Dauid Delahide, an erquifice and a profound clerke, fometime fellow of Perton college in Orfoid, verie well fene in the Latine and Greeke twngs, expert in the mathema. 40 the moze part suppose him to have beine an Irish ticals, a proper antiquarie, and an erac divine. Whereby I gather that his pen hath not beene lasie, but is dailie beeding of fuch learned bokes as Chall be auatlable to his polleritie. I haue feene a proper oration of his in the praise of matter Weiwoo being: Christmade lood in Werton college intituled, Deligno & fono, also Schemata rhetorica in tabulam contracta. Deuror, there are two brethren of the name learned, the elder was sometimes scholemaister in Taleifeford.

Peter Dillona divine, and John Dillon like wife a ftudent in divinitie. Doudall, sometime pale mat of Armagh, a grave, a learned, and a politike prelat, verie zealouslie affected to the reformation of his countrie, he made Diversas conciones. Doze mer a lawyer, boine in Rolle, scholer of Drfoid, he wrote in ballat rotall, The decate of Rolle. Iohannes Duns Scotus an Frishman borne, as in the forefront of this treatife I have declared. Powbett Iohannes Maior a Scotiff chonicler would faine prouchim 60 borne in the countie of liftoare. Danid Fitzgirald, to be a Scot . Leland on the other five faith he was borne in England. So that there thall as great contention rise of him, as in old time there rose of Ho. mers countrie. For the Colophonians faio that 190. mer was borne in their ciffie; the Thyans claimed him to be theirs, the Salaminians advouched that he was their countriman : but the Smirnians were so fiffelie bent in proving him to be borne in their. ferritogie, as they would at no hand take no naisin; the matter, a theropon they did confecrat a church to the name of Homer. But what countriman soener this Scotus were he was boubtleffe a fubtill and profound clerke. The onelie fault wherewith he was dusked, was a little spice of vaineglozie, being given

to carpe and taunt his predecellor dinines, rather for blemishing the same of his aductionies than for abnancing the truth of the controverties. Thereboon great factions are growen in the scholes betwene the Momits and Scotiffs, Momas being the ring, Thomps, leader of the one feet, and Scotus the beliveadder of Scottle the other. He was fellow of Perton college in Er, food, and from thense he was sent for to parts to be a professor of vivinitie. Finallie, he repaired buto 10 Cullen, where in an abbeie of greie friers (of which profession he was one) he ended his life. The bolis he wate are thefe: Commentarij Oxonienses lib.4. Reportationes Parisienses lib. 4. Quodlibeta sdiolastica lib. 1. In Analytica posteriora lib.2. In metaphysicam quæstiones lib. 12. De cognitione Dei lib.1. De perfectione statuum lib. 1. Sermones de tempore lib. 1. Sermones de Sanctis lib. 1. Collationes Parisienses lib. 1. Lectura in Genesim lib. 1. De rerum principio lib. 1. Commentarij in euangelia lib. 4. In epistolas Pauli lib. plures. Quattiones vniuersalium lib. 1. Quastiones pradicamentorum lib. 1. In Aristotelis physica lib. 8. In categorias Aristotelis lib. 1. Tetragrammata quædam lib. 1. Commentariorum imperfectorum lib. 1.

1362

Cufface a doctor of dininitie, a verie good fcoler Cufface man, he floathed in the yeare one thouland fine hundred thirtie and fir. Dlifer or Dliver Eufface a fin. bent of the civill and canon law, a god humanician, and a proper philosopher. Dicholas Cufface a geno tleman borne, furpatting birth by learning, and learning by bertue. Paurice Gufface a ffudent of ob uinitie, one that not with Cambing he were borne to a faire living, yet did wolie sequester himselfe from

Fagan a batchellog of art in Orfogd, and a fagan Scholemaister in Waterford. Daniell Ferraile, a Ferraile diuine and a scholemaister. Fergutius son to Fer, Fregutius quharous king of Ireland, the first king of Scots, whome some affirme to be borne in Denmarke, man. De florithed in the yeare of the world three thousand fir hundred seventie and eight, and before the incarnation two hundred minetic and two, in the five and twentify years of his reigns. He was by by misaquenture deowned nière a rocke in the north of Ireland that of him is called to this date Carrege Carrege fergus; bpon whole milhap thele berles were made: lergus.

Icarus Icareis ve nomina fecerat undu, Fergusius petra sic dedit apta sua.

This Fergulius wrote a boke intituled, Leges politica lib. 1. Finnanus scholer to one Pennius finnanus and Segenius, faken for a deepe diuine in his age;he florished in the years fir hundred firtie and one; he wote Pro veteripaschatisritu lib.r. field a thysich find. an . Thomas Field a maffer of art . John Fitigi rald, commonlie named John Fitzedmund, a verie well lettered civilian, a wife gentleman, and a god housholder.

Robert Fitzgirald alias Robert Fitzmaurice Sitzenski bluallie called Dauto Dutte, borne in Berie, a civilian, a maker in Irith, not ignorant of mulike, skilfull in phylike, a god & generall craffiman much Dippias. like to Pipias, surpassing all men in the multitude of crafts, who comming on a time to Pilatothe great triumph called Olympicum, ware nothing but such as was of his owne making; his thoses, his pattens, his cloke, his cote, the ring that he did weare, with a fignet therin verie perfectie wrought, were all made by him. De plaied ercellentlic on all kind of infruments, and fong therto his owne berles, which no man could amend. In all parts of lo gike, rhetozike, and philosophie he vanquished all men, and was banquifted of none.

Richard

Richmo Fitzrafe, primat of Armagh, icholer in the universitie of Orfogo to Baconthogoe a good this loscher, no ignozant diaine: an enimie to friers, namelie such as went begging from doze to doze, thereby he purchated the hatred of all religious perfons. He was by Coward the third his means made archocacon of Lichfield, after created primat of Arc magh, being cited before pope Clement the firt, for reprouing the begging friers. In the heat of the faid contention he deceassed in Italie, whose bones 10 were carried into Ireland, and buried at Dondaike, where he was borne . He wrote these bokes insuing: De paupertate servatoris lib. 7. Contra fratres mendicantes lib. 16. In extrauagantem Ioannis 23 lib. 1. Determinationes ad eundem lib. 1. Contra fuum arhidiaconum lib. 1. Propositiones ad papam lib.1. Contra fratrum appellationem lib. 1. Sermones ad crucem Pauli lib.i. Sermones coram pontifice lib. 1. Destatu vniuersalis ecclesiæ lib.1. Lectura sententia. rumlib.4. Quaftiones carundem lib. 1. Lectura the- 2 ologicalib. 1. Sermones ad clerum lib. 1. Sermones de tempore lib. 1. Sermones de fanctis lib. 1. Mariæ laudes Auenioni lib. 1. Illustrationes euangeliorum lib. 4. De passione dominica lib. 1. De peccato ignorantia lib. I. De Iure spirituali lib. I. De vafricijs Iudeorum lib. 1. Propositionum suarum lib. 1. Epistolarum ad diuersos lib. I. Dialogorum plurium librum vnum.

farale.

Malter fitifimons, archbithop of Dublin, lozo indice and loso chancellos of Freland at one time, a 2 famous clerke, and exquifitelic learned both in philos fothe and diminitie: being in companie with king Henrie the feuenth, and hearing an oration that was made in his praise, the king dem moed him, what fault he found most in the oratione Trulie (quoth he) if it like your highnesse, no fault, fauing onelie that the grater flattered your maiellie quermuch. Pow ingod faith, eur father of Dublin (quoth the king) we minded to find the fame fault our felues. Thos mas fitzsimons, a verie proper diuine : he wrote 4 in English a treatife of the church . Leonard fitzsi mons, a depe and pithie clerke, well fene in the Greeke and Latine tong, sometime fellow of Trini tie college in Orford, perfect in the mathematicals, and a painefull fludent in divinitie: he harh a byother that was trained by in learning in Cambridge now beneficed in Trim . Dichaeft fit; fimons, Icholemaffer in Dublin, a proper findent, and a dilis gent man in his profession, he wrote Orationem in aduentum comitis Essexiæ Dublinium, Epitaphion 50 in mortem Iacobi Stanihursti, Diuersa epigram-

Philip Flattifburie, a woothie gentleman, and a flattifbarie, biligent antiquarie, he wrote in the Latine twng, at the request of the right honourable Giralo Fitzgis ralderle of lattoare, Divertas chronicas : he flozifhed in the years one thousand flue hundled and seauchtone, rocceased at his towne named Johnstowne nicre the Paas. Thomas fleming: there is a fleming now living, of thome I heare great report to be an absolute binine, and a professor thereof. 60 Foillanus a learned monke, he travelled into France, there thosough the liberalitie of an holie birgine, named Gertrude, he founded an abbeie called Monasterium Fossense, where at length he suffer red martyidome . Furfæus peregrinus , lo called, bis cause he was borne in Ireland, and did bestow his yeares as an estranger in France, where he founded an abbeie named Conobium Latiniacense: he wrote certeine pamiblets, that by tract of time are perithed, he flourished in the yeare fir hundred and Artie, and was buried in his owne monasterie.

Robert Barnie, fellow of Duall college in Dr. ford, a Advent of both the lawes, a man well spokers

as well in the English as in the Latine. Robert Gogan. Bogan a preacher. William Pardit a doctor of die Pardis umitie,proceeded in the briverlitie of Dublin, in the peare one thouland this hundred and twentie. His Dickie, the phylicians, the father and his forme. Hugo de Hibernia , to called , bicause his surname is not knowne, he was a greie frier, and a great traveller, he flourished in the years one thousand thee hunbyed and firtie, he wrote Itinerarium quoddam lib. 1. Dliver Hufeie, a profestor of the aris in Dolvaic. Bulcie. Derbie Burlie, actualian, and a commendable this Burlie. losther : he wate in Aristotelis physica. Robert Jose. Jolle, bome in Milkennie, a gwo humanician. Ra- Bellia. outlins thellie a monte, brought op in the know ledge of the Latine tong in Bilbare, in which he profited to well, that for his eloquence and wifedome he mas fent to Clement the firt, as the fpeaker og prolocutor of all his order, and also was appointed the generali aduocat og Ceputie binder Petrus de Cafa, mafter generall of the order. After he was aduanced to be archbishop of Cashill, in which honour he deceaffed, having at vacant houres watten In jure canonico lib. 1. Epistolarum familiarium lib.1. Tho mas kenedie, a ciulian.

Bernie, he wote in grith Catechilmum, Tranf. Benedie. lationem biblix. Cagher, a nobleman bozne, in his Renamagh. time called Pac Purrough, he descended of that Das Durrough that was sometime king of Leinfer, he was a furpatting vivine, and for his learning and versue was created bishop of Leighlin and abbat of Grage: he hourithed in the yeare one thous fand fine hundled and fiftie, and was an hundled peares olo when he occeased. James King, boine in King Dublin, and Scholer to D. Watrike Tusacke, bnder twoine being commendablie trained, he repaired to the binuerlitie of Cambiloge, where he deceased before he could atteine to that ripenede of learning, whereto one of so pregnant a wit was like in time to aspire, he waste Carmina in laudem Henrici Sidaæi, Leie. o Diversa epigrammata, Leis, a learned am an erpert Leurouse. pylician. Leurouse a learned dinine, sometime bis thop of kiloare, and deane of faint Barriks in Du Loghien. bim. Aeneas Loghlen, or Pickleighlen, mader of art, and a preacher. Thomas Long bodor of both the Long. laines, he proceeded at Paris, in the years one thou-Lord five hundred feventie and fir in August, be is a proper philosopher, no Granger in scholasticall bining tie, a prette Latinifi: he wrote Despeciebus contra mendacem monachum, In Aristotelis physica, Theses ex præcipuis iuris vtriusque partibus selectas Carolo Borbonio cardinali consecratas.

Peter Lombard boine in Waterford , lebeler to Lombard, mafter Peter White, hauing imploied imo yeares and a halfe in the fludie of philosophie at Louaine, he mas cholen when he proceded matter of art, Primus vninersitatis, by the uniforme consent of the foure principals, which preferment oic hamen to none in fuch confenting wife, in manie peaces before: he wote Carmen heroicum in doctoratum Nicholai Quemerfordi. Darbie Bacchragh , a ftudent in dis Macchragh. uinitie. Pacgrane, a scholematter in Dublin, he Macgrane, inzote carola ann sundie hallana adalastica barra wrote carols and fundrie ballads . Malacias vorne in Alder, his life is cradlie witten by faint Barnard, in whose abbeie he died in the yeare one thou fund one hundred fortie and eight, he wrote Conftitutorum communium lib.1. Legum cœlibatus lib. 1. Nouarum traditionum lib.1. Ad D. Barnardum epift, plures. Palachtas, the minorit or greie frier, a Audent in the brinerlitie of Drford, there he attel minorit. ned to that knowledge in divinitie, as he was the onelie man in his time that was appointed to preach before the king and the nobilitie, a tharpe reproduct of vice, a zelous imbracer of vertue, entimie to flate terie, friend to simplicitie; he dourshed in the yeare

1556

Abalachias

Garale,

fodlanus.

615 4

Mauricius. Johannes Camert in cap. 35.5cl

7

Mauricius

Myligh.

Moncie. Meilan.

Bigran.

Miling.

Caffilienfis.

one thouland their hundred and ten , he wrote De peccatis & remedijs, lib. 1. Conciones plures, lib. 1.

Mauricius Hybernus, of him Iohannes Camertes, thus writeth. Annu ab his proximis excelluit, ex ea infula oriundus Mauricius, D. Francisci ordinu professus , in dialecticn, vtraque philosophia, metaphysicu, ac facra theologia plurimum erudiing. Vix insuper dici potest, qua humanitate, quaue morum sanctimonia præditus fuerit. Îs cum annis plurimis in Pataitino gymnafio bonas artes docuiffet, cum fumma omnium gratia, ob cius singularem cruditionem, ac candidisi- 10 mos mores, à Iulio secundo pontifice maximo in Tuanensem archiepiscopum creatus est. Quò cim relicta Italia bellis in ea sanientibus proficisceretur, non multium post, magna studiorism iactura, cum nondum quinquagesimum atatu sua attigisset annum, mortemolyt. Erant plurima sua doctrina in manibus monumenta, sed ea ob immaturam oius mortem edere non licuit. Quantum fuerit inter enm , dum vineret , & me necessitudinis vinculum, testantur sexcentæ epistolæ, quas plenas charitatis indicys, varys temporibus ad me dedit. En (quanta vera amicitia vis) post amici obitim , relegens soleo assidue 20

There did (faith Ioannes Camertes) of late yeares one Pauricius borne in Freland ercell, a greie frier profett, verie well fæne in logitie, dæpelie grounded in thilosophie, both mozall a naturall, learned in the metappliks, in dininitie pereleffe. Scantlie mate I tell with how great courtesse ; vertue he was in dued. When he had professed at Padua the liberall arts manie yeares with no small renowine; he was created by Julius the second, not onetie for his pro 30 Contra Giraldum Bononiensem. found knowledge, but also for the linceritie of his life, archbithop of Tuen. When he was traucking thitherward, being departed fro Italie, by reason of the opposes that were there daily increfing, he ended his life to the great loss of learning, before he was full fiftie year cs old. De had fundite works in hand, which he could not have finished by reason of his ontimelie death. How dere and entier friends he and I were one to the other during his life, the letters he addressed me from time to time, to the number of fix 40 hundred, thwackt with love and kindnesse, do manis festile declare. And by perusing of them after his death (such is the force of friendship) I am greatlie comforted. Thus farce Camertes. This Pauricius mote Commentarios super Scotum in prædicabilia, In magistrum sententiarum lib. 4. Mauricius archi bithop of Cathill, he flouthed in king Johns reigne. Giraldus Cambrenfis, ppon his comming into Fres land, and debaling the countrie in the hearing of this prelat, faieng that albeit the inhabitants were 50 from to byag of the number of their faints, yet they had no martyes: Pou fair verie well fir (quoth the archbithop) indeed as rude as this countrie is o; hath beine, pet the dwellers had the faints in some reue: rence. But now that the government of the countrie is come to your kings hands, we chall (I trust) Mostlie be fosed with martyss.

John Miagh a Liuine, he weote a treatile, De polfessione monasteriorum. Doneie a ciulian and a good Latiniff. Peilan, sometime fellow of Alfoules 60 med Downe, according to the old verfe, with faith: college in Drford, a learned phylician. Patrike Pigran a diume. Philip Pooris a licholee of Drfoed and after ocane of S. Patriks in Dublin , he flourt thed in the years 1+46, and wrote these workes. Declamationes qualdam lib.1. Lecturas scripturarum lib. 1. Scrinones ad populum, lib. 1. Contra mendicitaten validamlib. 1. Augent , baron of Deluin, Schwled in the bniverlitie of Cambaioge. William Pugent a proper gentleman, and of a line gular god wit, he wrote in the English tong diverse

Dbuge.

Bugent.

Danio Dbuge, borne in the towne of Bildare; for his learned lectures, and fubrile disputations openlie published in Drfoed and Treuers in Germanie, he

was taken for the gem and lanterne of his countrie. In his time Giralous Bononienfis, being maiffer generall of the Carmelits, was at iar with Willi am Liblington, the proumciall of all the English Carmelites . Wherebpon tenne of the wifest and learnedest Carmelits that then were resiant in England, being fullie elected to relift their generall. Dbuge was chosen to be the forman of all the faib crew. Giraldus Bonontensis binderstanding that Giralda he being an Irifhman, was so hot in the controuer. Bonomic fie, was egerly bent againft Dbuge, because he affu, red himselfe to have had favour at his hands, by read fon Dbuge was borne in that countrie where the Biraldines his kinfmen were planted, and thereby, on he was banished Italie. This storme in processe of time being appealed, the outcast Carmelite was made the generall gardian of all his fraternitie in Ireland: which countrie by his continuall teaching and preaching was greatlie edified . Duer this he was to politike a councelloz, that the nobilitie and e flates in causes of weight, would have recourse to him as to an ozacle. He was in pilosopie an Aristo, tle, in eloquence a Tulie, in divinitie an Augustine, in the civill law a Juffinian, in the canon a Panop mitane, he flourished in the yeare 1 3 20, he deccaled at Bildare, leaning these learned worker insuing to posteritie. Sermones ad Clerum libr. Epistolæ 32 ad diuersos lib. 1. Propositiones disputatas lib. 1, Lectiones Treuerenses lib. 1. Regulæ Iuris lib. 1.

Diven Doethee, a preacher, and a maker in J. Doubis rich. Thomas Dheirnaine, deane of Cooke , a lear. Dheman neodinine, be wote in Latine Ad Iacobum Stanihurstum epist. plures. Thomas Dheirligh, bilhop of Ohinich Rode, an erquiute binine, brought bp in Italic. Panoer, a man zeloudie addicted to the reformation Pander. of his countrie, whereof he waote a politike boke in Patrinus Latine, intituled Salus populi. Patricius, wonot. withstanding he be no Irishman bozne, yet I may not overfliphim in the catalog of Irith authors, for as much as his whole works tended to the convertion and reformation of that countrie the was lurna, med Succetuso: Magonius, an absolute dinine, a dogning his deepe knowledge therein with fincerly tte of life . Being fent into Ireland by the amoint ment of Celeffinus the firft, accompanied with Se getius a priest, he converted the Iland from idolatric and paganisme to chistianitie. He wrote thele bokes following. De antiquitate Aualonica lib. 1. Itinerarium confessionis lib. 1. Odorporicon Hyberniæ lib. 1. Historia Hyberniæ ex Ruano lib. 1. De tribus habitaculis lib. 1. De futura electorum vita lib. 1. Abiectoria quædam 366, lib. 1. Ad Cereticum tyrannum epist. I. Sermones lib. I. Ad Aualonicos incolas epist. 1. Ad Hybernicas ecclesias epist. plures . Ad Britannos epist. plures . He occeased, being one hundled, twentie, and two yeares old, in the yeare 458,02 as some suppose 491, and licth buris ed in an ancient citie, in the north of Ireland, na-

Hi tres in Duno tumulo tumulantur in vno, Brigida, Patricius, átque Columba pius.

Patricius Abbas a learned man, and much ginen Patricius to the ediffeng of his countriemen : he flogished in abbas the yeare 850, and occeased at Blasconburte. Some afcribe the finding of faint Patrikes purgatorie to this abbat, not to Patrike that converted the countrie; but that errour hath beene before fufficientlie reproued. This abbat wrote Homilias lib. 1. Ad Hybernos epist. plures. Petrus Hybernicus, professor of perusity pilolophie in Paples , at with time Thomas Aquis bernies nas that after became the lanterne of icholemen, both in philosophie and diminitie, was his scholer; being therefore as highlie renownics as Socrates is

43

for being mailter to plato; or plato is, for having Ariftotle to his Choler . This Petrus flourithed in the peare 1230, he mote Quodlibera rheologica lib. 1. Plunket, baron of Dunianie, scholer in Ratough, to B. Staghens, after lent by fir Chiftogher Barnes wall knight, his frændlie father in law, to the buf. nerlitie of Orford. There, how well he profited in knowledge, as such as are of his acquaintance prefentlie percetue, so hereafter when his workes thall take the aire, that now by reason of bathfull mode, 10 flie,og modelt balhfulnelle are wongfullie impgilo ned, and in manner ffielled in Chadowed couches, I doubt not, but by his fame and renowine in lear, ning, hall be answerable to his defert and valure in witing.

pomrell, a batchelog of divinitie, sometime chap. leine in pewcollege in Drford, after returning to his countrie, he was beneficed in Daogheda , from thense ditted to Lousine, where through continual his privat Audic, he purchased a laudable know. leage in dimmitie. Thereby he gave manifest thew of the profit that rifeth of exercise and conference. Aponthisoccation, one of his acquaintance was accullomed to tell him that he had all his diminitie by hearefaie. De deceased at Louaine in the yere 1573. Picholas Quemeford, bodor of dininitie, proceded Quemerford, the three and twentith of Daober, he wrote in Englicha verie pithie and learned treatife, and there, withall equilitelie pend, intituled; Answers to 30 certeine questions propounded by the citizens of Wlaterford; Diuerle fermons. There lined latelie of the furname a grave prelat in Materford, and

propertie learned. Rian, there lined two brethren of the furname. both (cholers of Orford, the one a good civilian, the other verie well fiene in the mathematicals. Kichard archdeacon of faint Patriks, chancelloz in the bnis versitie of Dublin, proceded doctor of the canon law in the years one thousand there hundred and 40 twentie. Robert Rochford borne in the countrie of Weileford, a proper dinine, an cract philosopher, and a verie god antiquarie. There is another Rochford that is a Audent of Philosophie. Koth, batcheloz of law, proceeded in the univerlitie of Orford. There hath bæne another Koth vicar of S. Johns in Lile kennie pretilie learned. Iohannes de facro bosco, boine in ipolitood, and thereof furnamed Defacro bosco; he wrote an excellent introduction, De Sphara. Seograue, two brethren of the name, both Andents in diginitie. Shaghens fellow of Balfoll college in Drford, after Cholemaister in Freland, a learned and a vertuous man. Speine, scholer in Dr. ford and Paris; he wrote, De Repub. Clias Sheth borne in Bilkennie, sometime scholer of Orford, a gentleman of a pasting goo wit, a plefant conceited companion, full of mirth without gall; he wrote in English diverse sonets. Dichaell Sheth boane in Bilkennie, mafter of art. Skiomog bogne in Cooke, and gardian of Doghill.

Richard Smith borne in a towne named Kack machneie, theé miles diffant from Weileford, furnamed Smith; of his father, who was by occupation a lmith, being fouret me peres of age he fole into Englind, and repaired to Drford, where in trac of time he proceded doctor of vivinitie, was elected dodozof the chaire, taken in those decies for a pereless. pearle of all the divines in Drford, as well in Icho lafficall as inpositive diminitie. Upon the death of quene Baris he went to Louaine, where he read o Penlie the apocalople of faint John, with little admiration and lette reprehension; he wrote in English against licentious fasting, or the libertie of fasting; The affection of the facrament of altar; A defense of

the facrifice of the matte one boke; Df onwitten verities one bake; Ketradations one bake. In the Latin tong he wrote De cœlibaru facerdorum lib.i. De votis monafticis lib. 1. De iustificatione hominis

Dicholas Stanihurft, be woote in Latine Die- Stanihurft. tam medicorum lib. 1: he died in the yeare one thou land five hundzed fiftie and foure. James Stante burft, late recorder of Dublin, over his exact know: lege in the common lawes, he was a god ozatoz, and a proper diuine . De wrote in Englith, being fpea, ker in the parlements; An oration made in the beginning of a parlement holden at Dublin befoze the right honorable Thomas earle of Suller, to: in the third and fourth yeares of Philip and Parie; An ozation made in the beginning of the parlement hole den at Dublin before the right honorable Ahomas earle of Suller, in the lecond yeare of the refane of our fouereigne lavie quene Blifabeth ; An ozation hearing of lectures and disputations, more than by 20 made in the beginning of a parlement holden at Dublin befoze the right honorable fir Henrie Sionete bnight, ac: in the eleventh yeare of the reigne of our souereigne lavie quene Clisabeth . De tozote in Latine, Piasorationes. Ad Corcaciensem decanum epistolas plures : he deceassed at Dublin the fenen and twentith of December, being one and fiftie yeares old. Apon whole death, I, as nature and dutie bound me, have made this epitaph following:

Pita breuis, mors sancta fuit (pater optime) visa, Pitatimenda malis, mors redamanda bonu. Prls est orba sopho, legum rectore tribunal, Causidicoque cliens, atque parente puer. Plurima proferrem, sed me prohibere videtur, Pingere vera dolor, fingere falsa pudor. Non opus est falsis, sed qua sunt vera loquenda, Non mea penna notet, buccinu fama sonet. Hoc scripsisse satus, talem quandóque parentem Est habuisse decus, sed caruisse dolor. Filius hac dubitans, talem vix comperit v quams Vllus in orbe patrem, nullus in vrbe parem. Mortuus ergo, pater, poteru bene viuus haberi, viun enimmundo nomine, mente Deo.

Walter Stanthurff, sonne to James Stanthurff, he translated into English Innocent de contemptu mundi. Abere flourithed before anie of thele a Sta, Circas moura nihurst, that was a scholer of Drfoed, beother to Gennet Staniburff, a famous and an ancient matrone of Bublin, the lieth buried in faint Michaels durch . Sutfon, one of that name, is a berie gob Sutton. maker in Englith. Patthew Talbot ichwlemafter, Talbot. a Audent in Cambaioge. William Talbot . John Talbot sonne to William, a master of art, he wrote in Latine, Orationem in laudem comitis Essexiæ, Diuersa epigrammata. Comund Tanner a p20 Canner found diuine, he wrote Lectiones in summam D. Thoma. Tailer batcheloz of art,proceded in the be Cailer. ninerlitie of Drfoed, he weste in Latine Epigrammata diuersa.

Thomas Hybernus bonne in Palmer fowne nere Thomas Hy 60 the Paas, he proceeded doctor of diulnitie in Paris, a deepe clerke and one that read much, as may easilie be gathered by his learned workes: he flourished in the yeare 1290, and wrote with dinerle other workes, these bokes inluing: Flores biblia, Flores doctorum lib. 2. De driftiana religione lib. 1. De illusionibus dæmonum lib.1. De tentatione diaboli lib. t. De remedijs vitiorum lib. t. Laurentius Toole Tole archbishop of Dublin. Trauerle dodog of diuinitie, Trauerle he florithed in the reigne of Henrie the eight. There hathbæne after him a scholemaister in Bublin of that name. Tundalus Magus aknight, after he be, Tundalus, came a Charterhouse monke, much given to contemplation, aberein he is reported to have freme bis uerse visions of heaven and hell, and therebpon he

Dianker.

The force of erercife.

Domicil.

Hian. Richard.

Koth, Deligro

Dibgrang. Dhaghens.

Dheine. Sheth,

Dkiomoz. Dmith.

The description of Ireland.

Virgilius Solinagus.

754

Virgilius Soliuagus a noble man borne being ffept in yeares, he travelled into Germanie, where being knowen for a vertuous and learned prelat, he was chosen by Dollon duke of Bauaria, to be their rece tor or gardian of an ancient abbeie, named S. Des ters abbeic, placed in the citic of Salisburgh, after be was created Episcopus Iuuaniensis, and founded time one Bonifacius an Englithman, being genes rall visitour in Bauaria, rebaptize o certeine, ubome he suspected not to have beine orderlie baptized. Mirgilius deteffing the fact, having consulted with Si-

Tomo primo conciliorum.

Wiltagh. Vitanus.

Vrgalius.

Willier. wabbing

waith.

weilelleie.

white:

wile.

william.

wolle.

woote Apparitionum fuarum lib.1 . he flogished in the yeare 1149.

in the faid towne of Salitburgh a church. In his to donius archbishop of Bauaria, with God Bonifacius in his fond attempt. The controverse being brought before pope Zacharias, he occret that Bonifacius held an erroz, and that Airgilius and Sidonius pub. lubed in that point found boarine, as who fo will read Zacharias his epille buto Bonifacius thall 20 plainclie fæ. Ulirgilins deceaffed 784, and lieth burt. ed in his thurch at Salisburgh; he wrote Ad Zachariam Rom.pont.epist.1.

Dwen Altagha phylician, his father procéded bodog of phylike in Paris. Vltanus a lerned monke fellow to Foillanus, with whome he travelled into France, and with continuall preaching evified the inhabitants of that realine; he floathed in the yeare 640. Gilbertus Vrgalius a profest Carmelite, and a Audent in Drford, he florithed in the yeare 1 3 3 0, 30 he wrote in two great tomes, Summam quarundam legum, De rebus theologicis lib. 1. Wither, or Wither a Audent in Tambitoge, and a preacher. Wacding, a proper verlifier, he wrote in Latine opon the burning of Paules freple, Carmen heroicum, Diuerfa epigrammata. Edward Walth, he flosithed in the yeare 1550, and wrote in English The dutie of luch as fight for their countrie, The reformation of Ires land by the word of God. James Walth, master of art, and fludent in divinitie, he translated into Eng. 40 glorious, manie loxerers, excellent horsemen, de, people 11th, Giraldum Cambrentem, he wrote in Latine Epigrammata diuersa.

Kichard Walth matter of art and fludent in dinis nitie. There is a learned man of the name beneficed in S. Patrikes church in Dublin, Aubent in Cambringe, and now a preacher. Peter Walth a proper youth, and one that would have beene an ornament to his countrie, if God had spared him life, he died of a furfet at London, about the yeare 1571. Were dwelleth in Waterford a lawyer of the furname, 50 tho writesh a verie proper Latine verle. Welledete deane of Bildare, there liveth an other learned man of the name, who is archoescon of faint Watrikes. Peter Thite borne in Materford, fellow of Driall college in Drford, the luckie scholemaster of Doung fer ; he bestowed his time rather in the making of scholers, than in the penning of bokes, and to the infiruation of youth, he waste Epitom in copiam Erasmi, Epitom. figurarum rhetoricar. Annotationes in orat.pro Archia poeta. Annotat.in orationem pro 60 T. A. Milone. Epigrammata diuerla. John White batcheloz of divinitie bozne in Clonmell, he wzote in Latine Diuersa pia epigrammata. Andzew White a good humanician, a pretic philosopher. Wille, of this forname there flosifhed fundzie learned gentlemen. There liveth one Wife in Waterfood, that maketh verie well in the English. Andrew Wise a toward youth, and a goo verlifter. William an abbat, and (as it is thought) a loth faver, he floathed in the yeare 1 298, and worte Prophetias rerum futurarum lib. 1. Pauld Wolfe, a biuine.

Thus far (gentle reader) have I inocuoured to heape by togither a catalog of such learned Frish men, as by diligent infearch could have bin found.

Howbeit, I am to requell the not to mealire the ample number of the learned of that countrie by this briefe abstract : considering, that diverte have bene yea and are yet living, of profound knowledge that to me are buknowne, and therefore in this regio Cernot recorded.

The disposition and maners of the meere Irish, commonlie called the wild Irish.

The eight chapter.

Cfore Jattempt the bu-folding of the maners of the more Irth, I thinke it er-pedient. In footname pedient, to forewarne the reader, not to impute anie barbarous cultome that thall be here laid downer, to the circumstance, and in

habitants of the English pale, in that they differ litle or nothing from the ancient cultomes and dispositiv ons of their progenitors, the English and Welth men, being therefore as mortallie behated of the L rift, as those that are borne in England. For the Irihging Brith man frandeth fo much bpon bis gentilitie, that think, he termeth anie one of the English fept, and planted in Ireland, Bobbeagh Balteagh, that is, English churle : but if be be an Englithman boine, then be nameth him, Bobocagh Saronnegh, that is, a Sar on churle: so that both are churles, and he the onelie gentleman. And therebpon if the baleft pessant of them name himselfe with his superioz, he will be fure to place himfelfe firft, as 3 and Dneile, Jano you, I and he, I and my master, thereas the cours telle of the English language is cleane contrarie.

The people are thus inclined, religious, franke, at The incline mozous, trefull, fuffcrable of infinit paines, berie tion of the lighted with wars, great almelginers, palling in hospitalitie. The lewocr sort, both clearkes and late men are lenfuall and ouer lose in living. The same being vertuoullie bred op or reformed, are luch mir ross of holinesse and austeritie, that other nations reteine but a Hadow of denotion in comparison of them. As for abstinence and falling, it is to them a familiar kind of chaffifement. They follow the dead coaple to the grave with howling and barbarous outeries, pitifull in awarance : thereof grew, as I Cowiff

supole, the prouerbe; To weepe Brith. Bredie of praise they be, & fearefull of bilhonor, and to this end they elicane their poets, also write chamd the which they are bountifullie rewarded; if not, they fend out libels in dispatile, whereof the loads and gentlemen frand in great awe. They loue tenderlie fofter their foster children, and bequeath to them a childes church postion, whereby they neurth fure friendship: so ber neficiall euerie waie, that commonlie fine hundred coives and better, are given in reward to win a noble mans child to folter, they love a truft their foller Cheftston brethren more than their owne. The men are cleane of the forth of thin and hew, of stature tall. The women are well fauoured, cleane coloured, faire handed, big flarge, suffered from their infancie to grow at will, no thing curious of their feature and proportion of

boote Their infants, they of meaner fort, are neither Intale fivabled nor lamed in linnen, but folded by farke naked in a blanket till they can go. Proud they are of long crisped bushes of heare which they terme glibs, and the same they nourish with all their cunning, to single crow the fame they nourish with all their cunning, erop the front thereof they take it for a notable piece

Their diet.

poite.

Collecting.

allowers.

Lio.pri.Acn.

arca finem.

Differ.

Grome.

herne.

Ligheiren

Galloglaffe.

Barrow.

of villanie. Taxter creffes, which they tearme tham. rocks, rots and other herbs they feed byon, otemeale and butter they cram togither, they drinke wheie, milke, and befe-broth. fleth they ocuoure without bread, and that halfe rate : the reft boileth in their for machs with Jqua vita, which they fwill in after fuch a furfet by quarts and pottels: they let their cowes bloud, which growne to a gellie, they bake and ouer, friead with butter, and fo eate it in lumps. Po meat they fantie fo much as poste, and the fatter the bet, 10 ter. One of John Onels houthold demanded of his fellow whether befe were better than porke? That (quoth the other) is as intricat a quellion, as to alke

whether thou art better than Dnele.

Their noble men, and noble mens tenants, now and then make a fet feast, which they call coffering, where to flocke all their reteiners, thom they name follo, wers, their rithmours, their bards, their harpers that feed them with multike : and when the harper twangeth or fingeth a fong, all the companie must 2 be while, or else he chafeth like a cutpurffe, by reason his harmonie is not had in better paice. In their cothering they fit on fraw, they are ferued on Braw, and lie bpon mattrelles and pallets of Graw. The antiquitie of this kind of feating is let forth by Virgil, where Dido interteineth the Troian prince and his companie. They observe diverse degrees, ac. coiding to which each man is regarded. The baleft fort among them are little yong wags, called Daltins, these are lackies, and are serviceable to the 3 gromes or horneboies, tho are a degree abone the Daltins. Of the third begree is the Berne, who is an ordinarie fouldior, bling for weapon his fluord and target, and sometimes his peece, being commonlie logud markemen as they will come within a score of a great castell. Herne fignifieth (as noble men of depe sugement informed me) a shower of hell, be, cause they are taken for no better than for rakehels, or the divels blacke gard, by reason of the finking flurre they hope, therefocuer they be.

The fourth degree is a galloglaffe, bling a kind of pollar for his weapon . These men are commonlie weielvard rather by profession than by nature, grim of countenance, tail of fature, big of lim, burlie of bodie, well and tronglie timbered, thieflie feeding on befe, porke a butter. The fift degræ is to be an horfe. man, which is the chiefest next the lood and capteine. These horstemen, when they have no state of their owne, gad rrange from house to house like arrant untill they rive into the ball, and as farre as the table. There is among them a brotherhod of karrowes, that proffer to place at cards all the yeare long, and make it their onelie occupation. They plate awaie mantle and all to the bare fkin, and then truffe them. felurs in fraw or leaves, they wait for passengers in the high wate, invite them to game boon the grene, and afke no moze but companions to make them sport. For default of other fluffe, they pawne their glibs, the natles of their fingers and toes, their 60 dimilaries, which they like or redieme at the courte-

lic of the winner.

One office in the house of noble men is a tale, teller, tho bringeth his lost all epe with tales vaine and frinolous, wherebuto the number give foth and Litth spoken credit. Without either precepts or observations of congruitie, they speake Latine like a bulgar language, learned in their common scholes of leachs craft and law, thereat they begin children, and hold on linteene or twentie yeares, conning by rote the apopulmes of Hipocrates, and the civil institutes, with a feth other parings of those faculties. In their scholes they arouell boon concles of fraw, their bokes at their notes , themselves lie flat profrate, and to they thant out with a lowd voice their lettons by pecemeale, repeating two or three words thirtie or fortie times togither. Dther lawyers they have lia. ble to certeine families, thich after the custome of the countrie determine and judge caules. Thefe confider of wrongs offered and received among their neighbors : be it murther, felonie, or trefpaffe, all is remedied by composition (except the grudge of pars ties feke revenge) and the time they have to spare from spoiling and pretoing, they lightlie bestow in parling about such matters. The Breighon (so they Breighon, call this kind of lawyers) litteth on a banke, the loads and gentlemen at variance round about him, and then they proceed. To rob and spoile their enimics they deme it none offense, nor fæke anie meanes to recover their loffe, but even to watch them the like turne. But if neighboas a friends send their purvet ors to purloine one another, such actions are judged by the Breighous aforefato. They honour and reue Religiois rence friers and pilgrims, by fuffering them to patte fauoured. quietlie, and by fparing their mantions, what foener outrage they thew to the countrie belides them. The like fauoz do they extend to their poets & rithmours.

In old time they much abused the honogable state Matrimonis of mariage, either in contracts bnlawfull, meting abufce. the degrees of prohibition, or in dinorlements at pleafure, or in reteining concubines or harlots for wines: pea enen at this daie, where the clergie is faint, they can be content to marrie for a yeare and a date of probation; and at the years end, or ante time after, to returne hir home with hir mariage gods,02 as much in valure, opon light quarels, if the gentlewomans friends be bnable to revenge the ininrie. In like maner maie the forfake hir bulband. In some corner of the land they bled a damnable fur somerflitten persition, leaving the right armes of their infants in baptilme. buchriffened (as they tearme it) to the intent it might 40 gine a moze bugratious and deadlie blow. Dthers John Cai, lize write that gentlemens children were baptifed in Cantant. milks, and the infants of pozefolke in water, tho had the better of rather the onelie choile. Diverte o ther vaine and execrable superstitions they observe, that for a complet recitall would require a feuerall Treland who bolume. Thereto they are the moze stiffelie wedded, superstitions, bicaule luch fingle preachers as they have, reprome not in their fermons the pecufihnelle and fononelle of these frivolous oceamers. But these and the like linights of the round table, and they never dismount so enormities have taken so deperor in that people, as commonlie a preacher is soner by their naughtie lives corrupted, than their naughtie lives by his preaching amended.

Againe, the verie Englich of birth, conversant with the fauage fort of that people become begenerat, and as though they had taffed of Tirces polloned cup, are quite altered. Such force hath education to make 02 mar. God with the beams of his grace clarifie the eies of that rude people, that at length they maie fee their milerable effate: and also that such as are beputed to the gouernement thereof, bend their industrie with confcionable policie to reduce them from rude, nes to knowledge, from rebellion to obedience, from trecherie to honeftie, from lauagenesse to civilitie, from idlenesse to labour, from twickednesse to goolis nellegahereby they mate the lon ter espie their blind, nelle, acknowledge their lolene s, amend their lines, frame themsclues pliable to the lawes and ordinances of hir maiestie, whome G or with his gratious affiliance preferue, afwell to the profperous gonerns ment of hir realme of England, as to the hamie re-

formation of hir realme of 3rd land.

13 a bulgar

Ataleteller.



The first inhabitation of Ireland,

by whome it was instructed in the faith, with the seuerall inuasions of the same, &c.

The authors preface or introduction to the fequele of the historie.

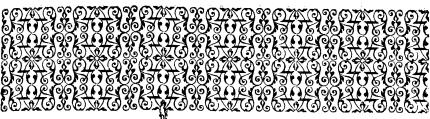


Lthough (vndoutedlie) the originall of all nations for the more part is so vncerteine, that who soeuer shall enter into the search thereof, surther than he findeth in the holie scriptures, may seeme as it were rather to talke with men that dreame, than to gather authorities sufficient wherevpon to ground anie warranted opinion: yet for as much as the authors (whom in this Irish historie we chieslie follow) haue set downe what they haue sound in the Irish antiquities, concerning the first inhabitation of this countrie of Ireland, and be-

cause the reader also may be peraduenture desirous to vnderstand the same, we have thought good to recite what they have written thereof, leaving the credit vnto the due consideration of the circumspect reader; and where the errors are too grosse, giving by the way some cautions, in like fort as our authors themselves have done. According therefore to the order of all other nations and people

that seeke to aduance the glorie of their countries, in fetching their beginning with the furthest from some one of ancient antiquitie: so likewise the Irishmen haue registred in their chronicles, that their countrie was first inhabited by one of Noahs neeces, after the manner following.





THE FIRST INHABI

tation of Ireland, &c.



A the yeare of the world, 1 5 25: the patriarch Poah began to aomonish the people of bens geance to followe for their wickednesse and to build his arke to foelhew his kinffolkes and friends of that

bninerfall floud which was to come, wherewith the thole face of the earth Mould be covered with was ter; that within few yeares, ercept they amended in time. This did he before the generall floud, one hundred & fine and twentie yeares. But when enerie man famed to negled this abolesome atmonition, 20 one Telara that was nice to Poah, hearing hir bucles prothefie, doubted least the fame thould come to palle; and therefore determined with certaine hir adherents to læke aduentures in some forren region, persuading hir selfe, that if the might find a countrie never pet inhabited, and so with fin buspotted, the generall sentence of Gods wash Gould not there take effect. Therebpon rigging a naute, the committed hir felfe to the feas, failing footh, till at length the arrived in Ireland onelie with themmen, & fif 30 tie women, having lost the resione of hir companie by missortune of sundrie thipwracks made in that bir long stroublesome fourneie. The names of the men were thefe, Withi, Laigria, and Fintan. The coast where the first fet fot on land, and where also the lieth buried, is called Nauculare littus, that is, the thipping riusge of those. The frones wherein the memorte hereof was preferued from violence of waters, have bene fæne of some (as they themselves 4 have reported) but how trulie I have not to fay: within fortie daies after hir comming on land there, the univerfall floud came souerflowed all that coats as well as all other parts of the world. But where as this tale bewraieth it selse to manifesslie to be a more butruth, if the time and other circumstances bethroughlie eramined, I will not frand longer a bout the profess disprofe thereof; saving that it is fufficient (as I thinke) to bring it out of credit, to 50 consider, how that the art of sailing was unknowne to the world before the universall floud, and no part the Mass in inhabited except the continent of Spring, and there, about a Martin naste luch a forgen fable, with the abouts. But to passe such a forged fable, with the record thereof graven in a stone (a devise bosowed from Josephus, as some thinke) it shall be sufficient to the glosic of the Frith antiquitie to grant that

Areland was discourred and peopled by some of Po ahs kinred, even with the first Ilands of the world (if they will needs have it so, as the likelihood is great) according to that which is let forth in their An mundibiliozies, when about the hundred yeares after the after the bell generall floud immediatlie boon the confusion of authors make twigs, Taptet & his posteritie imboldened by Poahs 300 yeares, erample, aduentured to commit themselves by thip betweene to palle the leas, & to learth out the buknowne cor Boshs floud vetestable lins, 10 ners of the world, and so finding out diverse Hes in and Babell. thele well parts of the woold.

There was (laie they) in that retinue one of or Baltoles the same programe named Bartolemus or Bassole aus. nus, tho incouraged with the late attempt and successed of Pinnod kinsman to Pinnos (then newlie in lib.). truded byon the monarchie of Allyzia) fearched fo far welt, intending to atteine to some governement, where he might rule without ante partner in authoris tie, till at length fortune brought him and his people bpon the coast of Ireland. Here he settled himselfe with his the formes Languina, Salamis, and Ruthurgus, right active and fout gentlemen, tho fear, ching the land from fide to fide, and from end to end, left remembrances of their names in certeine notable places named after them; as Languinie, Stragruns, and mount Salanga, fince named faint Dominiks hill, and Kuthurgus his pole. Little is remembers of Bartolenus, fauing that in thoat space with manie hands working at once, he rid and made plaine a great part of the countrie overgrowen with woods and thickets.

Thus was Ireland inhabited by this people bri Freiand firth der the government of those thee sons of Bartoles nus and their offpring, about the space of three buns deed yeares. Togither with Bartolenus arrived Areland certeine godles people of Pintods focke, Giantsi worthilie termed glants, as those that in booilie thape exceeded the common proportion of others, and bled their Arength to gaine fouereigntie, and to op Bergonthe presse the weake with rapine and violence . That it some of Repnage (Chams brod) did grow in there tibile to great tune and broa numbers, and alwaie indenoied themfelites tibere (as lon Bale numbers, and alwate indeposed themselves where (as Iohn Bale societ they came to beare the rule over others). Die hath) conques caule hereof was their bobilie frength, answerable red Ireland to their hugenoffe of fature; another, the eramples and the Daks of Cham of Zosoalires the magician, and Mimrob wis. Euill cramgrandfather to Pinus. Which two perfons in them ples fone tolfelues and their progenies were renowmed through towed, the world as victorious princes, ruling ouer two mightie Bingboms Ggypt and Allysta A third chile there was, as this : they repined at the bleffings be-Nowed opon Sem and Japet, thinking it necellaris to withit and and prevent all lawfull rule and bome nion, leaf the curfe of Cauerie prothefied by Hoah Hould light upon them, as at longth it did. Were

Ruthurgi stage

The first inhabitation of Ireland.

Rebellion 8: gainft gouers 11015.

3 worthis refolution.

bpon revelliousie withdrawing their due obedience from their lawfull governors here in Freland, and taking head, let by a king of their owne faction, and mainteining his estate to the oppession of the fubicas, by bringing them into continual bondage. The fuccesse was variable on both sides betwirt the lawfull governoes thefe vlurpers, with bailie rat. les and thirmithes, so much to the griefe of them that courted to live in quiet onder their rightfull princes, that they determined with the chance of one gene, to rall battell, either wholie to subdue those proud revel lious treants, or elfe to end their lives in frædome, and so to be rid of further miserie. But first , there there had growen certeine debates and enimitie as mong themselves, whereby they had infæbled their owne forces, they thought good to make peace togither, before they put their whole fate in hazard of one battell against the giants, concluding therefore an agræment, and foining in league with promife to als fiff ech other to suboue their common entinies, they affemble their power forth of all parts of the land, and comming to foine battell with the giants, after they had fought right fiercelie togither for the space of certeine houres, the victorie inclined to the right, full part; fo that the lawfull kings prevailing againft the wicked typants, great flaughter was made on the whole bood of that mildefous generation . For the kings meaning to beliver themselves of all dans ger in time to come, bled their hamie bidorie with great crueltie, which turned to their owne confusion: 30 for there they neither spared man, woman, 1102 child that came in the waie for more despite, & fuller latiffs eng of their whole renenge, they did not boudlafe to burie the carcaffes of their flaine enimies; but caft them out like a fort of dead dogs : whereof through ftench of the fame, fuch an infective pestilence infued in all places through corruption of aire, that frin escaped with life, beside those that got them awaie by fea.

man (faie they) faint Patrike was informed of ali

the eleate of the countrie: and after that byon requell

he had received baptiline of the laid Patrike, he de.

ceasted in the yeare after the birth of our fauto; foure

hundred and thirtie, as in the Irith histories bath bin

bnaouiseolie registred. But such folish tales and

baine narrations may warne the adulted reader

how to beware of yelding credit unto the like idle fantalies and forged tales, when they hap to light bp.

bled for invention lake to faine luch dreaming fa-

bles for exercise of their stiles and wits: afterwards

most asured histories. But now to the matter, as

Anno mundi. 2 2 5 7

allictorie to

cruelite bled.

Rusing how tong he lived. men, that one of the giants named Ruanus, than-

cing to be preferued from this mortalitie, lived for foth two thousand and one and fortie yeares, which is more than twife the age of Methulalem. Wy this

Forged tales on such blind legends. Hoz where some of the poets and fables foin credit in among the bn- through error and lacke of knowledge, they have failfull people beine taken with the ignozant for verie true and for true hi= Corces.

> flaine and made awaie in manner afore rehearled, certeine there were that got them into some lurking dens of caues, and there kept them till lacke of vittels inforced them to come forth, and make this for full enance; and perceiving no reliftance because the land was in manner left defolat, they wared bolder; and when they binder frod how things had patted, they Cettled themselves in the best part of the countrie, eafilie subouing the poze sælie soules that remained. and to rentuing their linage, they became loods of the whole Iland, keeping the fame in subjection for the

> space of the Core yeares togither. Among Japhets fons we read in Genells that Pa gog was one, who planted his people in Scythia nere

Tanais, from whente about the peare of the world timo thousand the hundred & seuentæne. Demodus Andone with his foure fonnes, Statius, Barbaneles, Anui nus, Fergulius, capteins over a faire companie of Pitmong people, were fent into Aroland people, were fent into Areland, the passing by Erre with his cia, and taking there fuch as were defirous to fache adventures with them, at length they landed in Arc. land infiabited the countrie, and multiplied therein, Irelande law, in paores the continual warre, which they for any although not without continual warre, which they for its better below the giants for the space of two bunders and from the many of which terms the many of the control of the co firteenc leares, in the end of which terme the giants when prevailing chaled them thense againe, so that they re. The glans tired into Syria . This was about the yeare after the Pariale, creation (as by their account it thould fame) two thousand five hundred thirtie and their, from which time the giants kept polletion of the land without foren inuation, till the yeare two thousand seauen hundred and fouretiene; but pet in all that space they were not able to frame a common-welth: for falling at variance among themselues, and measuring all things by might, feditionlie they bered ech other. Which thing comming to the knowledge of the Gree The Conne cians moued fine brethren, sonnes to one Dela, be, of Dela ing notable feamen and fkilfull pilots to rig a name, Green the and to attempt the conquest of this Fland. These of lating, were of the posteritie of Pemodus, and named Gandius, Genandius, Sagandus, Rutheranius, & Slanius . When all things were readie, and their Thereally companies affembled, they toke the fea, and finallie into Irita, arriving here in Ireland, found the pullance of the giants fore weakened through their owne civil oil, the guara fention: fo that with more ease they atthined their purpole, and wan the whole countrie, biterlie destrois eng and roting out that wicked generation entinies to mankind; and after divided the Fland into fine Chryball parts, and in each of them they fenerallie reigned. the country Furthermore, to fatilitie all fides, and audid con intofoure tention, they concluded to fir a mere-from in the parts, middle point of Ireland, to the which ech of their And hereby lieth a vaine tale among the Frith, 40 kingdoms thould reach, to as they might be equalite partakers of the commodities found within that

countrie soile. These are also supposed to have invented the dis Acoung tribution of thires into cantreds, eucrie cantred of baronie conteining one hundzed townelhips . At Definelle length delire of fouereigntie fet the flue beethen at tanked the bariance, a greatlie hindsed their growing wealths. with But Slanius getting the opper hand, and bringing his foure brethren to a low eb, toke on him as thefe about his other brethren, incroching round about the midle frome for the space of certeine miles, which plot in time obtained the printlege & name of one entier part, a now maketh by the number of five parts (into the which Ireland is fato to be divided) and is called Meth, and in Latine Media, taking that name (as some have gested) for that in respect of the other, it conteined but the moitie of cantreds, that is, fire tiene (where eth of the other comprehended two and thirtie a piece) or else for that it lieth in the middelf we find it recorded of an infinit number of giants 60 of the land. This part Slanius toined as a furplufage over and above his inheritance, to the monarchie: which part notwithstanding grew to a several king dome. Thirtie yeares the monarchie yet continued in this order, but finallie Slanfus departed this life, Slanfish and was buried in a mounteine of Meth, that beat patitolis rethhitherto (as they faie) the name after him. Then ith the princes subied to him, began to stomach the matter, and benied their obelfance to his fuccello: invereppon infued continuall wars betwirt them, falling fill at bebat for the land of speth, which first and of long time might never fullie be appealed. In the of writing mecke of these troubles also there arrived in Ireland and arrely arms of Scythians, thomase claims to the particular in a title of right selection. land by a title of right thich they pretended from bugs

Gen. 20)

their forefather pernodus: and to taking t making parts, they fet all in an opence, that hauncke was made on each five with fire and fwood in most mife. rable maner.

To be Most, they fpent themfelues in purfuing one an other with fuch outrage, that new thepeared not what nation 03 what fouldier they received to Heiraid, to keepe by or beat dolune a fide. By which Simmus in occasion the Britons also put in a fot among them, tanbroatbone who procured Brennus the brother of Belinus to 10 exist the factorist by course thicker, with the same name which he among prople. had made readie to paffe ouer into Ballia, now called France, to the aid of Segwin then king of the allobroges that inhabited the countries called Sauote and the Delphinat . But his enterpale into greland toke small effect, though there were other kings of the Britons that gat dominion there, in fo much that Gurguntius, or Gurgwintius, the fonne of Belinus, accompted Freland among other his withfranding the British princes never intoled the quiet possession thereof, longer than they held it by maine force, but were often repelled and put to the worse with seeking after it, finding there small gaine other than stripes, thereof they bare awaie great plentie. But now to come to the Spaniards. that lattlie (binder the conduct of foure capteins) palfevinto Freland from Biscate, and inhabited that Iland, it shall not be impertinent in following the of their originall, that it may appeare from whenle the Irilly nation had their first beginning.

fall floud 780, whileft the Ifraelits ferned in Egypt, Sathelus the fonne of one Peale, a great lood in Greefa, was byon diffanor exiled his countrie with a number of his factions adherents and friends. hamoze of This noble gentleman being right wife, baliant, this matter in and well spoken, comming into Egypt, got honozas the Scotily billogie moze plainelie appæreth. And al terwards departing that countrie, traversed the leas, and landing first in Postingall, after some bic. kering with the inhabitants; at length yet he got by their confent a postion of the countrie, lieng by the Buida, now banks of the river ancientlie called Punda, 4 now Pondego, where thoulie after he began to build a citie first named Brachara, but now Barlalo, as Hector Boerius hath. After this, ihen Bathelus his people began to increase in power, through persuafion of the Spaniards their neighbors, they remoned into Calicia, where they also builded a citie nas med Brigantium, which is now called Coruns. Ho nallie, when they grew into such an huge multitude,

that Galicia was not able to fusteine them, Gather

lus with a certeine number of them passed over into

Ireland, and there grew into such estimation with

the barbarous people, that for his knowledge specis

allie in all languages, he was highlie honozed: for

but also taught them letters, sought op their anti-

quities, practied their youth in warlike feats after

the maner of the Greekes and Egyptians, from

In the yeare of the world 2436, after the univers

thense he descended. To conclude, he was to acceptable to them, that of Ireland, to gratific such a benefactor, they agreed to name the la werebe: 31 und affer him Gathelia, and after his wife Scotia. This is one opinion but yet incredible, not onclie to hidopinion. Humfreie Lhuid, but also to other learned men, and diligent fearthers of antiquities, by reason of the lundie arguments of improbabilitie, aswell in the miscount of yeares as other bulikelihoos found therein, when the circumfrances come to be onlie eramined, throughlie weled, and well confidered. Pet

certeine it is, that Ireland was ancientlie named Scotia, and the people Scots, as by diverse old water ters it may be sufficientlie proued : albeit by what occasion it first toke that name, or from whense they came, it is as yet doubted. Wut to proceed with the bifforte as we find it. The relidue of Bathelus his people, which remained in Spaine, founded the citie of Baion in the confines of Balcoigne, and replent theo the seacoasts of Spaine with store of inhabitants, and welnere about two hundred yeares af ter their first arrivall there (when they were enfonces pettered with multitude of people) they began to fanfie a new voiage, but whether at that time thep palled oner into Ireland, or some whither else, it is oncerteine.

Portwithstanding sure it is, that in the daies of Gurguntius king of the Bzitons, the chiefe gouers nour of Baion with foure brethren Spaniaros. of the which two are faid to be Piberus and Permion, dominions to belong to him by lineall bescent : not 20 not the somes (some thinke) of Batheius (as Hector Boetius affirmeth) but some other perhaps that were descended from him, who understanding that diverse of the westerne Iles were emptie of inhabitants, alfembling a great number of men, women, and chilbeen, imbarked with the same in thee score great vellels, and directing their course wellward, houe, red a long time in the fea about the Iles of Dike. neie, butili by god hap they met with Gurguntius Gurguntius. then returning from the conquest of Denmarke (as order which our author keepeth, to speake somewhat 30 in the British historie it appereth) whom they befought in confideration of their want of vittels and other necessaries, being such as they were not able longer to abide the scas, incumbed with a fort of momen and children, to direct and amoint them to some place where to inhabit; promising to hold the fainc of him, and to become liege people to him and his heires for euer.

Ourguntius adulling himfelfe hercof, rentem- Gargantins beed with what trouble he held the Irith in subjects appointeth the beginning ble interteinment of Pharao furnamed Drus, as in 40 on, and concessing hope that those strangers should the Spanis on, and concessing hope that those strangers thouse are superior in either subdue or those feats in Ereland to tion, twhe the othes of thole Spaniards with hollar hue boder his ges; and furnithing them and their thips with all subsection. things needfull, fet them ouer into Ireland, where affifted with fuch Britons as Gurguntius had appoin of the Syated to go with them for their guids, they made a cons nieros in Is quest of the thoie countrie, fetled themselues in the reland, fame. Some waite,that Freland was befoge that pre, Geffreie Mong fent bold of all inhabitants: but yet they agree that these Spaniards were guided thither by the Bais tons that under such conditions as before is reciteo. So that it apereth the kings of this our Baitain had an elder right to the realine of Ireland, than by the conquest of Penrie the second, which title they es uer mainteined, and fonictimes prenailed in purfu ing thereof, as in the dates of king Arthur, to wom the Irify (as in some histories is remembred) ac were ficheck knowledged their due subjection with patement of to K. Arthur, their tribute, and making their apparance at the che weltcheller. he not onelie inriched and beautified the Frift tong, 60 tie called in the Britift tong Caer A beon. Whereunto then their fre allent, the submission of their princes with lawfull conquest and prescription are adioined, an inuincible title must neos be inforced.

But now to our purpole. The Spaniards lub. fantiallie aided by the Britons, fetled themfelucs, and divided their feats in quarters, the foure bies then reigning feuerallie apart in foure fundzie po? Diffention tions in good quiet and increase of welth, butill their bermirt the pride and ambition armed two of them against the brethren. other two: as Hiberus and one of his brethren a. Such are the goinst Permion and the other brother. In this oil fraits o. am-fention Permion due his brother Piberus. Of serious tention Hermion was gis blother Herris . 201 god more uhom at the same time the countrie (as some hold) herces in the was named Hibernia, as in the description further beieription,

ameareth.

2 4 3 6

Bigantium. stom næ Dottland. pallety into

Che namen

Co crime fo manitelt og pereftable that wanteth e colourable

amearcth: although some rather hold, that it toke the name of iron, of the plentifull mines of that kind of metfall therewith that land aboundeth: and fo those ancient writers with name it Jerna, named it more aptile after the speech of the inhabitants than others, which name it Hibernia. But toppoced. Hermitor herebyon to anoto the ill opinion of men, fo; that he have thus atterned to the sourreignetic by the unnatural flaughter of his brother, in that unhaps pie cittill warre, purged himfelfe to bis lubieus, that 1 neither malicioulie noz contentioulie, but for his pretente toer- necestarte vefente and fafetie he had borne armes a gainst his brethren : and to witnesse how farre he roas from all delice to rule alone, he appointed certeine capteins as kings , to rule bover him fenerall countries, referring to himfelfe but one fourth part, and the postion of Deth allotted to the monarchie for the better maintenance of his effate. Thefe parts appointed footh in this wife at length

Freiand Diuis bed into fine kingdonits. Dnc foue? reigne ruler ouer the reft.

grew to fine kingbomes , Leinffer , Connagh, Ale 20 fice, and Dountier binibed into two parts, and fonce time to more, by blirping or compounding among fremfelues : but over one was chofen to be chiefe for pereigne monarch oner them all. Thus it læmeth that certeinelie the Spaniards of the north parts of Spaine, inhabiting the countries about Biscaie and Galicia, came and peopled Freland (as both their owne histories and the British do icholie agree:) but from whenle they came first to inhabit those countricvof Spaine, verelie I haue not other wife to a. 30 Unuthifor no other writers that I can remember, but (hich as have registred the Scotist chronicles) make mention of the comming thither of Sathelus with his wife Scota and their people, in maner as by the fato chronicles is pretended. But now to our put. pole. An hundred and thirtle chiefe kings are recko. ned of this nation from Dermion to Lacgirius, the fanne of Bealus Pagnus, in whose time that holie effemed man Batrike converted them to chaiffant tie. But now in the meane time willest the Frishmen 40 ther with all convenient speed . Incouraged with lined in some tollerable order and rest buder their fer merall kings, one Robolike a Scithian prince with a finall companie of men, being weather dituent round about the coales of Battaine, was by chance call opon the those of Ireland.

Dids arrine in Breland.

The oration king of the Picts king of Freland .

Thefe were Wids, and the first that had been heard of in these parties (as some authors have recorded) a people from their verie cradle gluen to diffention, landleapers, mercileffe, fierce and hardie. They being becught and prefented to the Irifh king , craued in 50 terpretors, which granted, Rodorike their cheefeteine made this request for him and his, as followeth: Pot as denegrate from the courage of our ancestours, but fathioning our felues to fortunes course, we are become to crave of Ireland, as humble suplicants that never before this present have so embased our felues to anie other nation. Behold fir king, and regard be well, no light occasion canfeth these lustie valiant bodies to flope. Scithians we are, 4 Pias of Scithia, no fmall position of glosie refleth in thefe 60 and there remained. Walues they wanted also to intwo names. What that! I speake of the civill warre that hatherpelled bs from our native homes, or rip bp old histories to move strangers to bemone bs ? Let our fernants and children discourse therof at lev fure, if perhaps you will bouchfafe to grant be some time of above in your land, to the which effect and purpole our bigent necellitie beleicheth your fauois, a king of a king and men of men are to crave affir france. Princes can well discerne and confider how niere it toucheth their honour and suertie, to behold and releme the state of a king, by treason because. And manifelt it is to all men of reasonable consides ration, that nothing more befæmeth the nature of man, than to be moved with compassion, and as it

were to feele the miclues burt, when they beare and bnoerfant of other mens calamities. Admit (we befeedy your and receive among & you thefe fely featter redremnants of Scithia : if your romes be narrow, we are not manie: if the foile of your countrie be barren, we are borne and enured to hardnelle : if pouliue in peace, we are at commandement as lubieds: if you warve, we are readie to ferue you as fouldiours: we bemand no kingdome, no frate, m pompous frimmth in Ireland : we are here alone and have left fuch things behind be with our ent mies : howfoeuer pou chame of bs, ine thall content our felues therewith, and learne to frame our liking to yours, calling to mind not what we have bene, but what we are.

Great confultation was had about this request Doubthill of thele firangers, and manie things debated to and confutation. fro. In conclusion, the Irith laid forth for answer the Chemiun opinions of their antiquaries, that is, fuch as were of the Inche fkilfull in old histories and farengs of their closes, the request therebute they game credit, and therefore they gather the Pins. red it could not be expedient to accept the Scithians into the land, for that mingling of nations in one realne beabeth quarels: mozeover, that the multitude of the inhabitants was luch, as rome in the thole He was brethable to receive them, and there fore thole feto new commers, being placed among fo manie olo inhabitants, might breed quicklie fome diffurbance to bying all out of toint. But (faid they) though we may not convenientlie receive you as mong be, pet thall pout ind be readie to further you

to be our metahbours.

pot far hense there lieth the great Ile of Bis Che July taine, in the north part whereof, being both of inhat the pitants bitants, your manhous and policies may purchase place them for you romes to place your felues at cafe : we felues in thall amoint you capteins to guide you thither, we 15 attains, thall aftiff to fettle you with our forces in that countrie, make readie your thips that ye may palle this this perfuation, they take their course towards the north parts of Britaine now called Scotland, there contrarie to their expectation Parius king of Bit Marius b faine was readie to await their comming, and with therwike the harpe battell vanquishing them in field, flue Rodo: led Inute rike with a great number of his retinues. Those that Billions, escaped with life. and sought to him for the first that escaped with life, and sought to him for grace, heli cenced to inhabit the ottermost end of Scotland. This Parius Humfrie Lhuid taketh to be the fame, thome the Romane writers name Arniragus, tho reigned about the yere of our Lord feventie, aprince of a noble courage and of no Imall effimation in his vales (as thould feeme by that which is written of him.) His right name (as the fait Humfreie Lhuid anoucheth) was Deurig.

Wit now concerning the Picts, thether that thole that escaped with life, got leats by king Pew rigs grant (as aboue is fpecified) or that getting to their thips, they withdrew into the Iles of Dakeneie, crease their iffue: and bicaute the Bzitons thought scorne to match their daughters with such an bit knowne and new come nation, the Pias continu ed their first acquaintance with the Brith, and by intreatie obteined wines from them, with condition, plasmar that if the crowne thould hap to fall in contention, engineths they should pield thus much to the prerogative of the Irilianian woman, that the prince Hould be elected rather of manufaction the bloud roiall of the female kind than of the male. Third oper (fatth Beda) the Pias were well known to kine have to kæpe bnto his time.

But howsever we shall give credit to this bisto rie of the first comming of Pias into this law, if we grant that to be true which Geffreie of Monmouth reposteth

reported of this victorie obtained by Parius against the Plas : pet have I thought god to advertise the re wer, that the Britans of this Ale were disquisted by that nation long before the supposed time of the faibling Parius. For Pamertinus in his oration intituled Panegyricus, Max. Dictus hath thele woods speaking of the conquest which Julius Cefar had here against the Britons.) But in that age (faith he) Bifaine was neither furnished with anie thips of warre for battell on the lea , and the Komans after 10 the warres of Affrike and Affa, were well practifed with the late warres against pirats, and after that against Withzidates, in which they were exercised as well by fea as land . Dozeover, the British nation was then unskilfull, and not trained to feats of war, for the Britons then being onelie vied to the Plas and Trith entmies, people halfe naked through lacke of fkill, eafilie gane place to the Romans force, fo that Cefar might onelie as it were glozie in this , to have passed in that sourneie over the ocean fea.

Bereby it Could feme that the Picts and Irich bid disquiet the Britons, before the comming of Ju-6+Diodorus line Cefar into this Ne of Britaine. But ichether abolib. 6. they inhabited at that time in some part of Ireland, or in some of the out Mes by Scotl mo, either in anie fen thep part of Germanie, oz Scandinaufa ; oz elfe übether they were alreadic fetteled in the furtheff parts of Scotland, as in Cathnelle, towards Dungelbie head: we have not to affirme, other than that which in Scotland we have written, in following Hector Boctius, whose opinion how farre it is to be suspected in 30 Hea, Boerius, matters of antiquitie, I leave to the confideration of others. But for the first comming as well of the Picts as Scots (whom he maketh inhabitants with, in this He fo long before) either the name of the one nation of the other is remembred to have had ante gouernement here, by anie ancient og approned witer . I cannot persuade my felfe , that either Scots or Picts had anie letteled feats within the bounds of this Tle of Britaine, till after the birth of our faufour : but that rather the Scots , as pet inhabiting in Ireland, and in the westerne Bles called by the Romane writers Bebrides, and the Pias, in the Iles of Dikneie called in Latine orchades, old ble to make often inuations opon the Britons, bwelling boon the coasts that lie neere to the sea side over a. gainst those Iles.

From whense they comming over in such vessels orboats, as the fishermen do yet ble, at length the freie Lhuid bath noted, entred generallie into Cath nesse, and other the north parts of Britaine, where they letteled themselves, and removed the Britons that there inhabited before that time: and thoulite the Scots like wife came oner and got feats in the west parts over against the north of Ireland, and in those westerne Iles, which Iles they first got into their possession. And in this fort those nations Picts and Scots came first to inhabit here in this our 3le of Britaine, as the fato Humfreie Lhuid, not without 60 aduiled contenures grounded byon god reason and lufficient authoritie to lead him to to estime, hath written in his short commentaries of the velcription on of Butaine.

And verelie I thinke we may more fafelie belæne that which he anouchethin this behalfe, than that which Hector Boctius letteth downe, lith for ante thing I can perceive his authorities bring no luch warrant with them, but we may with good reason suspect them. But for the man himselfe, even as he had verie orderlie, and with no lette curning than cloquence let downe dinerfe things incredible, and reported some other contrarie to the truth of the his Notice for the glorie of his nation, as we may take it;

fo in his ercufe it may be alledged, that he was not the anthor of those matters, but wrote what he found in Cambell, Veremound, Cornelius Hibernensis, Gesterie Monand fuch other, in like case as Gefferie of Monmouth mouth the translator not worte what he found in old ancient Battich monus the author of ments & was not the deuter himfelfe (as some have the Buch) suspected of such things as in his boke are by himer, hutone. pressed. But now to returne to the Picts. It may be The doubt of that they came at severall times in like manner as the time of the the Scots old out of Ireland, of uhome the first is comming of remembred to be Fergule, the fon of Fergulard, a Pias and man right kilfull in blaconing of armosic, himfelte Scots into bare a lion gules in a field of gold. The marble from Fergule king whereof in the Scottly historic is mentioned, brought of Scots. into Ireland by Simon Bzechus , and kept till thole The marble daies as a pretions iewell , this Fergule obteined fone. towards the prospering of histourneic: for that it was thought, who to had the fame in possession, could not but obteine fouereigntie and rule over others as a king namelie thole of the Scotish nation . This fone fergule bringing into Scotland, left it there. But although that Fergule be put in ranke among those Scotilh kings that thould reigne in Britaine. pet he bare small rule there, twas divers times beat ten backe into Ireland, where finallie he was orow ned by milfortune in the creeke of knockfergus.

That he incountred with Toilus king of the B26. tons (as the Scots write) is not politible, as our autho; hath verie well noted; ercept they missake the name of Collus for Cailus, with whome the age of Ferguse might well meet: the rather, for that in the first yeare of Tailus reigne the Picts entered, ferguletimmediatlie after them, 330 peares per Chift mas bome; where Collus reigned in the yeare after the incarnation 124, about which time befell the fecond arrivall of the Pias in Britaine. And thus if may be they mistake, by errour of the name, Coilus for Tailus, and the fecond arrivall of the Picts for the first. But now to the course of the historie. Whis 40 lest the Dicts were seated in the north of Britaine, and grew to a great multitude; the Irith made fundie etranos ouer to bilit their daughters, nephues, and kinffolks, and by their often comming and go. ing they were aware of certeine walte corners, and fmall Flands boid of inhabitants, as that which fee med rather neglected and luffered to lie walle.

Hereof they advertised their princes, namelie Renther or Renda, who being descended of Fere Benther of gule, vetermined to inuelt himfelfe in certeine pog, Reuba. Picts first about the pere of our Lord 290, as Hum- 50 tions of land before the Picts. He therefore well appointed paffed ouer, and partlie by composition, and partlie by force, got pollellion of thole quarters which inere desolate, & began to erect a kingdome there, by little and little increating his limits: and finallie got betwirt the Picts and Britons, pollelling that countrie which toke the name of him called Reuderfdahall, and now Kindefdale (as you would faie) Rheudas partifor Dahall in the Scotish twng fignt: fieth a part. In thefe quarters he could not fetle him. felfe, but that he was oftentimes affailed by the Bate tons that bordered nert buto him, and at length his chance was to be flaine, but the kingdome continue ed fill in the hands of his facceffors : and the Picts The antitle and Scots grew in frienothip togithet, permitting betwirt ech other to live in quiet.

The Scots neffled themselves in the Fles and coalf's along if the lea live. The Pias held the middle part. But Gottlie after, the prace began to hang doubtfull betwirt them : for the divertitie of people, place, custome and language, togither with the mes morie of old grudges, moued fuch geloufic and inward hate betwirt those nations, that it sænico they Cheir falling were readie to breake out into open billention opon out. the first occasion. And as in such cases there never

Excets and Dias.

E. 2.

Suam.

brerot in England, Em Ding frid inhabited Same.

Th Drots

Ham. Lhuid,

Atrife about a bog.

wanteth one boulse or other to raise tumults: it chanced that certeine of the Scotish nobilitie had got out of Greece (as some write)a Polosian hound, which both in Awitinelle of fort, and pleasantnelle of mouth, was accounted pæricife. This bound being follow by a Pict, was cause of the breach of peace; so that cruell wars thereof inflied, as in the Scotiff historie more at large appereth. But where some wite, that Eugenius thould reigne ouer the Scots Hector Boetius faith, it was in king Crathlinths vaics. Posouer it thuld feme by that which the fame Boctius writeth, that the bound or grethound for the which this trouble role, was not fetched to far as out of Grecia, but rather beet in Scotland: notwith. standing bicause the Latinists call such kind of dogs Molofa, for that the first generation of them, or the like, came from a citie of Grecia called Poloffe; it may be, that some have thought that this grethound came from thense, for that he was so called after the 20 name of that place from whense the bied of him first came. But to returne to the historie.

G reaulius 288

The Deots

expelled. som more of

encottand.

After the Scots and Dids had tugged togither a agrath them. thile, at length one Caraulius a Briton laboured a Anno Christi, strienoship betwirt them, and bringing his purpose to paste, persuaded them to lend him their helpe to erpell the Romans out of Britaine : but his hap was thoutlie after to be flaine by the Romane capteine Alectus. And so new Aurs were in hand betivist the Britons and Romans, the Scots & Picts for the most part taking part with the Writons, till at length Parimus the Romane lieutenant found means to fet the Scots and Dids at variance, and toining with the Picts in league, bled their aid against the Scots, whome he to earnessie pursued with all the power he might make, that in the end they were otterlie expelled out of all the coaffs of Bestaine, lo that they fled fome into one part, some enes matter in into another, but the most number got them over into Ireland, and the Fles, where they remained for the space of fourtie there yeares, and then at length returned thither, binder the leading of their prince Fergule, being the lecond of that name, as they account him. From thenselwith the Scots kept such fot in Bestaine, that they increched bpon their neighbors, in such wife as they wared Aronger than the Plats, thome in the end they quite roted forth, and neffled themselnes in their seats, although now at their first returne they concluded a firme amitie with the fame Wids, that joining their forces togither, they 50 might the better make head against both Komans and Baitons, whome they reputed as common eni-

The Wide by the secto.

Giraldus Cambrentia. mies to them both. Thus the Scots a livelie, cruell, buquiet, ancient and victorious people, got place within this Ile of Baitaine, mired first with Battons, secondie with Dias, thirdlie and chieflie with the Brith, which after this time left their name of Scots onto those in 1526 faine, and chose rather to be called grift; and then came up the distinction of the name, as scotia major 60 Celestine the first of that name governed the se of for Ireland, scotiaminor for the countrie inhabited by the Scots within Britaine. But Cambrenfis faith, that the Scots chieflie prevailed under the leading of fir valiant gentlemen, fons to Purious king of Allter, who in the time of Peale, furnamed the great that infoice the monarchie of Ireland, palling oner into Scotland to fuccour their countriemen there, at length twike up for themselves certaine parcels of ground, which their posteritie were owners of in the time that Cambrenfis lived, to wit, about the yeare of our Lord 1 200, who treateth hereof more largelie in his boke intituled Topographia Britannia. Since which time they have beine ener taken, reputed and named Scots, the Picilly nation being driven into

corners, albeit the mounteine parts and out gles e uen bnto this date are inhabited with a wild kind of people called Redthanks, efferned by fome to be mingled of Scots and Pitts.

The Scots write, that their king Gregoric the Gregory forme of Dongall, tho began his reigne in the yeare augoiz of our Logo 875, prefending a fitle to Irel mo, as be fubbuth ; longing to him by right of lawfull fucceffour, made triang, a tournete thither, and within a finall time made a when this quarell fell out for frealing of this bound, 10 conquest of the countrie. This Gregorie lieth bu ried in one of the out Iles called Jona, 02 Colmes kill, where they speake naturallie Frish : and there, fore some of the Scots would seme to make the conquest of Benrie the second in Ireland, a revolting from the right inheritoes: although they do confelle they can not tell how they came from the pollet fion of it, other wife than by forging a tale that they willinglie forewent it, as reaping leffe by reteining it, than they laid footh, and so not able to discharge that which was to be defraied about the kaping of it they gave it over, persuading themselves that the kings of England have gained little of nothing by the having of Ireland. And yet in the time whilest fir Benrie Stoneie was gouernour there, when the Strom countie of Alfter was anouthed to belong buto the Dibnut. crowne: it was proved in open parlement, that the revenues of that earldonne, in the dates of Comard the third were reckoned, and found to amount buto the lumme of one and thirtie thouland marks yeare: lie, the same being but a fift part of Treland : so that if things were well loked buto, and such improve ment made as might be, Ireland would fuffice to beare the necessarie charges, and pelo no small fur-

plusage onto the princes coffers. But now as it falleth forth in the historie. We have thought god here to thew in what fort Ireland came to receive the chaffian faith. Whe find in ded that immediatlie after Chaiffes time, faint James Ironobi the apostle, a other trauelling into these west parts, frustom the fact by lar bid first instruct the Brith people, and teach them the James this glad fidings of the golpell, to that diverte amongst polite them even then were chiffened, and believed, but not in such numbers (as map be thought) whereby it Mould be said, that the countrie was generallie converted . Potwithstanding, the Scotish chaonis cles arouch, that in the dates of their king Finco marke, who departed this life in the yeare of our tes demption the hundred fiftie and eight, Ireland was

converted to the faith by this meanes. A woman of the Piatch bloud chanced (fate they) to serve in those dates the quæne of Ireland, which woman being a chiffian hir felfe, firft inftruded hir militelle in the faith and true points of chaillianitic; and the queene hir hulband, who converted the whole Irish nation. Howbeit, by the report of the Irish writers themselves, this should not some altogither true: for they affirme, that their countrie was rather Mill esteemed as one of the buchaitened Iles, till a bout the peare foure hundred twentie and fir, whileff Kome, who bpon conference had with his cleargie, touching the restozing of the christian faith in the west parts of the world, greatlie decaied there by the herefie of Pelagius, under food that Ireland allo by reason of distance from the hart of chaisendome, and rudenelle of the nation, had received little fruit at all of true religion, a thing much to be lamented.

Among other that then were affembled to treat paidons of those matters was one Paladius architector from Kome, who offered his charitable travell towards into Ireland the convertion of anie of those lands whither it thuld pleafe them to appoint him to go . Telestine know their the ing the lufficiencie of the man confectated him bit train him thop, authorised his sournete by letters wider his

Paladius lailded in Treland.

feale, furnified his wants, and affortating to him fuch religious perfons and others as were thought necessarie to assist him, delinered to him the bible with great folemnitie, & other monuments in fur, therance of his god sped. At length he landed in the north of Ireland, from whenle he cleaped right bardlie with his life into the Iles adjoining, where be preached the gospetl, and converted no small number of Scots to the chailtian beliefe, and purged that part that was challened from the infection of 10 the Belagians, as in the Scotish historie more at large appereth. He was required by the Scots that inhabited here in Britaine, to leave the Fles and come oner buto them, there to instruct the people in the waie of true faluation, to the which with the popes licence he færned willing enough: and the bis thop of Rome the more readilie condescended thereto for that in the instant time, when Paladius was to depart, one Patrike attended at Rome, luing for licence to be fent into Ireland. The pope therefore granted that Waladius might 20

Datrike to go with authoritie from him into Ire-

bicanfe it pleased God to bestow such an universail

part of the course of his life. This Patrike in Latine

Datrike fent ino Ireland, paffe ouer to the Scots in Britaine, and appointed

palading ap- land; where, byon his arrivall he found the people fo pointed to go well bent to heare his admonitions, contrarte to their accustomed frowardnesse, that a man would

The toward, have thought that had feene their readines, how that nedectific J: the land has been ereferred for him to convert. And beare Da= benefit to this land by his meanes, we have thought

wherefaint called Patricius, was borne in the marches betwirt Painte was England and Scotland, in a fowne by the sca side

called Ciburne, whose father hight Calphurnius, a deacon and sonne to a pricst : his mother named Conches, was lifter to faint Partine that famous bilhop of Towers in France. Patrike of a child was brought by in learning, fint Patrike and well instructed in the faith, and much given to denotion. The Arithmen in those daies allifted with Scots and Wids were become archpirats, loze off. quieting the leas about the coasts of Britaine, and bled to fache little finall villages that late feattered along the those, and would often lead awaie captive the inhabitants home into their countrie. And as it biotake pile chanced, Patrike being a lad of firtiene yeares old. lour when and a scholer then in secular learning, was taken as kwisyong. mong other, and became flave to an Frish load called Pachuaine, from whome after fir yeares terme he redamed himself with a pace of gold thich he found in a clod of earth, that the fwine had newlie turned bp as he followed them in that time of his captinitic, Indian mass being appointed by the manner of the property of the beautiful as affliction commonlie maketh men religious, the being appointed by his mailler to keepe them. And regard of his former education printed in him fuch remode and humilitie, that being thensefooth wear ned from the world, he betoke himfelfe to contem. plation, ener lamenting the lacke of grace and truth in continuance some god might be wought bpon them, he learned their twng perfectie. And alluring one of that nation to bearehim companie for erer. tile lake, he departed from thenle, and got him into

their mothers wombs) to call for thriftendome. In this purpose he lought out his oncle Parting, by those means he was placed with Germanus the politic in billiop of Aurerre, continuing with him as icholer of disciple for the space of fortie peaces: all which time he belished in like fludic of the holie scriptures, plaiers, and such godlic exercises. Then at the age of

France, ener having in his mind a delire to fee the

convertion of the Frith people, whose babes put with

borne formed to him in his dreames (from out of

the accese and two yeares, being renowned through the Latine durch for his wiscoome, vertue and faill, he came to Rome, bringing letters with him in his commendation from the French bishops buto pope Celestine, to whom he bitered his full mine and fecret vow, which long tince he had conceived touching Freland. Celeffine inueffed him archbiffop and pate Batrifie in mat of the whole Hand, let him forward with all far welled srehbts nour he could denile, and brought him and his oiles floy of free ples animary to their countries ples onward to their countrie.

In the that and twentith pears therefore of the empero: Theodolius the younger, being the yeare of our Lord 430, Patrike landed in Freland, & bicaufe he spake the twing perfectie, and withall being a renerend personage in the cles of all men, manie lifte. ned and gave good eare to his preaching, the rather for that (as writers have recorded) he confirmed his doctrine with diverle miracles: but specialite those regarded his words before all others, that had some tall of the children faith aforchand, either by the comming into those parties of Palavius, and his disciple Aibius an Je one Albius an Triff billiop, or otherwife by fome or riff bilhop, ther: for it is to be thought, that continuallie there visciple to remained some sparke of knowledge of childians, Paladius. tie ever fince the first preaching of the gospell (which was thoutlie after the alcention of our factour) by faint James (as before is mentioned.) In continue ance of time Patrike wan the better part of that kingdome to the faith.

Lalgerius sonne of Peale the great monarch, al Laigerius son god in following our author herein, to touch some 30 though he received not the gospell himselfe, yet per, to Meale the mitted all that would to imbrace it. But fith he refu great monorch fed to be hantison a amile to his decrease. fed to be baptifed, applie to his doctrine; the bithap permitteth the denounced against him a curle from God according. Irilimen to lie, but fempered yet with mercie and indgement, as thang, thus: What during his life he thould be victorious, but trians. affer him neither the kingdome Chould Cand, not his linage inherit. From thenle he toke his waie buto Contil lood of Connagh, the honourablie recetued Contil lood of him, and was converted with all his people; and af Connagh. ter fent him buto his brother Logan king of Lein, Logan king of ffer, whome he likewife converted. In Pounffer he Leinster. found great friendship and fauour by means of an earle there, called the earle of Daris, tho honoured Daris. himhighlie, and gave him a dwelling place in the east angle of Armagh called Sozta, where he erco ted manie celles and monafferies, both for religious men and women. He travelled thirtie yeares in preas ching through the land, planting in places connents co ent bishops and priests, whose learning and bertuous convertation by the speciall grace and favor of God, established the faith in that rude nation. Dther thir, tic years he spent in his province of Armaghamong his brethren, placed in those houses of religion, which by his meanes were founded, and so he lived in the mhole about one hundred twentie two yeares, and

lieth buried in Downe. De laint Patrikes purgatorie ve Mall find in the S. Patrikes description of the countrie, and therefore we do here purgatorie. in that land : and here with not despairing , but that 60 omit it. But pet bicause we are entered to speake of Religious the first foundation of churches and religious houses houses a churhere in Ireland, in following our authoz in that be ches founced, halfe: we will speake somewhat of such other holie men and women as are renowned to have lived in Ireland, as omnaments to that Ile, more glorious than all the triumphs a victories of the world, if their zeale had beene featoned with true knowledge of the ferintures: as it mate well be that in some of them it Mens roings was, howfoener mistaken by the subgement and res mistaken. post of the limple, which hath ratico not onlie of their persons, but also of the verie apostles themselnes, certeine fantalficall tales, which with the learned are out of all credit. But this matter I will leave to ob nines to discusse, trusting that the reader will cours

The earle of

E.3.

54

tent himselfe to heare what we find recorded by old waiters, which we Mall fet bowne, and offer to their conflorrations to thinke thereof as reason maic best mone them.

Ciral.Camb.

dir John

Duffer.

5. Coline.

Conmete pre:

Giraldus Cambrenfis telleth, that in faint Pas triks time flouthed faint Bride the virgine, and faint Colme, which two, with the fame Patrike, were burted in Downe (as in the Scotist historie ve maie find) and (az the fame Giraldus faith) their thee bos vies were found there Mostlie after the conquest. 10 Sir John Contweix being prefident of Alffer, in viewing the sepulture, testisied to haue feine thice principall is wels, which were then translated, as hos nourable monuments worthie to be preferned. Df faint Colme it is doubted in what age he lived. Wate get, otherwise called Baide, was base daughter to one Dubtactius, a capteine in Leinffer, tho percet. uing the mother with wild, fold hir fecretlie (fearing the gealoutic of his wife) to an Friff poet, referning to himfelfe the fruit of hir wombe. The was there de, 20 Latinc, og (as livered of this Briget, whome the Pret trained by in learning, and vertuous coucation, and at length

brought hir home to hir father.

Oct.thatis. Magusin we may fay) a magician oz fwihlaier m Œualifh.

was had.

The king of Leinfter,

The damical also was instructed in the faith by An, Dom, 439. faint Patrike, that preached then in those quarters, ther bpon the became to religious and ripe in judge. ment, that not onlie the multitude of people, but allo The estimation a thole synod of bithops attembled nære to Dub. lin to heare hir aduite in weightie caufes, fuch efft mation they had of hir. Due fact of hir being yet a 30 chilo, made hir famous. The king of Leinster had given to hir father Dubtactius as a token of his goo liking towards him for his valiant fernice, a rich fword, the furniture whereof was garniffed with manie coulie iewels. And as it chanced, the damfell viliting the ficke neighbours dinerflie diffrested for want of necestarie reliefe (bir father being afferne man, and his ladie a cruell theeto) the could deutle no other this to beine to relieve the want of those pore and nadic people, but to impart the fame fewels of 40 that fole fwood among them. This matter was held noutlie taken, and being brought to the kings eares, it chanced that Chootlie affer he came to a banket in hir fathers house, and calling the maid afore him that was not pet past nine yeres of age, he asked hir how the burd prefume to deface the gift of a king in fuch wife as the had don his . The antwered that the fame was bestowed byon a better king than he was, thom (quoth the) finding in Indextremitie, I would have given all that my father hath, and all that you 50 have, yea your felics to a all, were yet in my power to give, rather than Chill thould farue. She profested virginitie, and allured other noble young damfels ted virginitie, buto hir fellowship, with whome the continued in hir owne monatterie, where the was first professed, butill the yeare of our Lord 500, and then departing An. Dom. 500. this life, thee was buried in Downe in faint Pair

Biget depar- triks twine. ted this life.

euangeliffs.

annafter a hithou. ban.

Giraldus Cambrenfis reporteth of his owne know. A cocordance ledge, that among other monuments of hirs, there 60 was found a concordance of the foure enangelits, feening to be written with no mortall hand, beauti hed with implificall piances in the margent, the co lours and cunning workemanthly whereof at the fird bluth appeared barke and nothing delegable, but in the hapfull view of the ofligent beholder verte linchie and wonderfull artificiall. Cenanus that was Commus firft first a fouldier, fucceded faint Patrille in the fee of an afwar, Armagh , affer be had certeine peares followed the matres . Brendan abbat at the age of ten yeares Abbat Bien- was of fuch incomparable bolineffe (as they fair) and ther with so wife and learned, that his father and mo ther, thinking themselnes to have gained the mot worthic fruit that might infue of their mariage, by

mutuall confent profested continencie, and abanto, neo matrimonialicompanie. He flourithed in the Daies of faint Baiget, and lined in familiar focietie with faint Arons the bilhop, and Fintan the abbat.

Davoc alids Coan of noble parentage taken pgi Davoc. foner by the king of Temore, and kept in his court buth ofuerle pong men his scholefellowes, openlie adjured the king to licence him and them to depart, that they might ferue God as they were accusto med, the which being now kept in funder and refired ned of libertie, they were forced to discontinue. Der bpon immediatlie they were dilmiffed. He died bis Mop of Fernes, and laid the foundation of that bur row. His successor Delingus, although he was be Delingus, thop, gaue himfelfe pet to voluntarie labour, and with his owne hands derined and brought a running spzing to his monasterie, induring that trauell daily after praier and Audie for the space of eight

yeares togither.

Fintan abbat was had in such reverence, that Comebing thereas Colme king of Leinster kept Comake the Leinster. kings fon of Tentill prisoner, he went boldie with twelve of his visciples through the prease of all the fonloises, and in fight of the king was fuffered to bogoto the poing prince. For the Irith are not fferne against those of whom they have conceived an only nion of holineac . I remember (faith our author) that Cambrenfis writeth himfelfe merilie to haue objected to Mozice then archbishop of Cashill, that Ireland in so manie hundred years had not brought forth one martyr. The bilhop answered pleasantlie The answer (allubing to the late dispatching of Thomas archbis of the archbis thop of Canturburie) Dur people (quoth he) notwith to Giraldes thanding their other enormities, pet haue spared euer Cambrais. the bloud of vertuous men. Parie now we are de linered to luch a nation that is well acquainted with making martyes, fo that from benfeforth I truft no complaint hall need for want of martyrs. Pala Mathias, chias was borne in Armagh of anoble progenie, brought by in vertue by the example of his mother, and trained footh in learning, profited greatlie in denotion: fo that being pet but a verie babe, he was espied diverse times to feale awaie from his companions to praie in fecret. He was fo grave and modeft, that of himfelfe he chofe the most grave and fenere scholemaitter, refusing an excellent clearke, breause he saw him somewhat lightlie demeaning himselfe at game. In the beginning of his youth full yeares, be became the disciple of Imarius an old recluse, whose austeritie of conversation the whole towne had in great reverence. There he bes came a deacon, and at five and twentie yeares a

The archbishop, for the same and the opinion of his worthinede, received him to be addant to him in office, in the which he to behave himfelfe, that he reformed superstitions, and remined the force of religion, namelie in the buisomitte of their thurth feruice, therin before time they farred. The famous ficted 20 monafferie of Banchas he nace the control of the monasterie of Banchoz he reedified of the patrimo choz repair nie and legacies by his buck left him . The fame monasteric was of old time governed by Congellus, and after him by Columbanus the father of manie religious houles in France. This abbeie being spotled and mintie of his beetheen murbered in one day by the prior, the possessions whereof being come to the hunds of Palachias by his bucles alligne ment, he reftozed forthioffb, and advanced the four dation. At the age of thirtie yeares he was by car nonicall election forced to accept the bishopsike of Concrett, a people of all the Trith then most lanage and will, whome with ineffiniable trauell he reclamed from their beautife maners. In the meane wile bied Cellis bilhop of Armagh, after ichome lucia

ded Halachias at the age of eight and thirtie yeares. But before this, nore hand the space of two hundred yeares togither, a cultome had crept into the comp trie, that the metropolitane lie was conferred bpon 25 hild the luch bilhops as were maried, and were of the bloud partitues rotall, in maner by way of inheritance . Wherefore Pigellus 02 Peale the nert of kinred, animated bp at 1220 of one the parcialitie of some princes, and getting into his har women cultodie the bible and fraffe, and other monuments brame other of faint Patrike, therebuto opinion of the com, I mon people tied the prelacte, came to his palace with a band of fouldiors to have flaine the biffiop. When all the people wept and houled for his perill, he alone Sarnard In freped into the bosome of his enimies, demanding usa Malachie. The bloudie fouldioes lets ting fall their weapons, in Read of executing the metenfed murtherer, fell to reverence him, and at

length departed from him as friends.

This yeares he lat in the primalie rather to dil continue the hoarible coaruption before vied , than 2 with intent to lettle himfelfe there . After he had res moued the abuse, he procured Drafius to succeed him in the archbishops legano he returned to his for mer fæ of Downe, to the which as then was annered the bishop, the of Coner. But Palachias buderstanding that in times past they were fir fenerall les, he divided them againe, and ordefned an other to the bis Chopsike of Concr, belirous rather to letten his cure than to inlarge the fruits by taking moze charge bps then the monkes of Benchoz, where and when he would with to die and to be buried, if it late in his choice. De answered : If in Ireland, beside the bodie of faint Patrike : if beyond the feas, at Clarenale there faint Barnard was then reliant, and in the featt of Alfoules. He purpoled within few daies to fue to pope Eugenius for increase of the number of metropoitians, with request was thoutlie after accomplithed. And in this viage which he thus made, pensic foretheired, that the years of his departure forth of this world was come; and according lie when he had taken leave of faint Barnard and the bree then he went downe from his chamber to the church and there did communicat. Which done, he returned to his longing, and there on Alfouls date in the yeare of his age 54 he gaue by the gholf, so mildlie mo quietlie, that it læmed rather a læpe than a

Malchun.

on faint

fo: lineall

prisent of bis

the most part of his time in the monasterie of Wintheffer in England, and from thense was taken and admitted bilhop of Lilmore . Saint Barnard remembreth of him, by occasion he cured a lunatike dilo in confirming, else (as they termed it) in billiop. ping him. This miracle fæne and confessed by manie hundreds of people, was blowen through the world. The fame time happened discord betwirt the king of Mounter and his brother, and as the mat-Dounter and fer was handled, the king was overmatched and fled into England, where he vilited Palchus in his ab. beie, and would by no meanes depart from him; but remaine there brook his rule and government, so long as it pleased God to denie him quiet returne into his countrie: he contented himselfe with a pore cell, plep pailie to bath himfelfe in cold was ter, to all wage the wanton motions of his flelh, and for his otet received none other delicats than bread, water, and falt, day and night, fobbing and bewate ling with great remorte of conscience his former misormeneo life. At length the other kings and peo ple of Ireland began to revine at the blurper, let bp, on him with oven war, vanquithed him in a pitcht

field, and called home the rightfull prince his brother

againe, to refume his kingdome, who with manie earnest persuations of Walchus and of Walachias could oneth be brought to forfake that trade of life and companie, the which he had with such delega.

tion innred himselfe buto.

Thus far of the Irith faints. Of the which, as some of them are to be esteemed right vertuous and god; liemen, so other of them are to be suspected as perfons rather holie by the superstitious opinion of the people, than indued with anie such knowledge of true godlineffe and fincere religion, as are worthic to be registred in the number of those that of right ought to paste for faints, as by certeine late writers Fox, may apeare. But this we leave to the judgement Bale, of the aduled reader, for that in such matters we mino not to prefuoice anie mans opinion, but one lie with the reader to take heed how he giveth credit to that which offentimes is found written by authors touching feigned miracles, and other vaine supers o fittious dealings, wherethlough manie zealous perfons haue often bone beceiued. Dow therefore to leave faints, and returne to other matters fouching the Brith historie. In the yeare 5 86: the Popluegis The Morwes ans had got dominion ouer the Flands in the north, grans from te west ocean called the Hes of Dakeneie, and scow innade the red the leas, that none other nation durit bunethap. Ites of Dalies peare in light for dread of them . A people given neic. greatlie to lake the conquells of other realmes, as they that could not faile to find more warme and pon him . Palachias being demanded of his bie 30 fruitfull places for to inhabit than their owne. These They innade hot fellowes chanced to light into Ireland by this Ireland, meanes. Careticus the king of Battaine ran into fuch hatred of his people, that they raised warres as gainft him . The Sarons that pollelled now fir leue, rall kingdomes in the Nie of Britaine, reivised not a litle at this civill discord betwirt the Britaine king and his fubicats.

Therebpon meaning to make a full conquest of the Britains is otterlie to expell them forth of all the he fraied at Clarenale , and there dinerfe times o' 40 Ble, he affembled their powers, & foined to the fame Gurmundus, a notable rouer of the Pogivegians, Gurmundus tho having at all times a natie in a readineffe, and of the nation men to furnish it, holpe the Sarons to chase the Bais of Mozwais. tains into the marches of Males. For from thense (being retired into the mounteins and woods) they could not drive them . This Gurmound (as some thinke) builded at the same time the towne of Gur: monocheffer, and after being affifted by the Sarons, made a viage into Freland, where he sped not greate Baldus, though borne in Ireland, pet he spent 50 lie to his delice, and therefore the Irish account not this for anie of their conquelts, as some of their ans tiquaries informed our author . Burmound there, Campios. Fore finding but fortie fucceffe, built a few flight cafels and forts in the frontiers, and to left the land, and failed from thence into France, where at length he was flaine . Dur chronicles in det name him king of Ireland; but the Irish affirms that before Durgeffus, there was none of the eafterne people Curgefius.

that obteined dominion in their countrie.

Giraldus Cambrenfis to make the matter whole 60 (a Goos name) thinketh Turgelius to have conque. red the land, as lieutenant of deputie under Burs mundus . But this being granted, there arifetha more manifest contradiction than the former ; for he himfelfe numbreth betwirt Langirius bing of Bre, Langirius, land that lived in the yeare foure hundred and thirtie, and Edlambing, whome Turgelius banquilhed, 33 monarchs, those reigns comprehended foure bundred peares, to that Aurgelius lived in the peare af ter the incarnation eight hundred and thirtie. Then it is to plaine that he could not have anie doings with Gurmundus, who toined with the Sarons against Careticus, in the years fine hundred faure Che Doubt koze and fir. This knot (fath our author) might be resource

the feas, and

untwifted

Discord be= twane the

butwince with more facilitie thus. Curmundus made much of that little he got, and wate himfelfe king, which title our bifforice do allow him, because he made the wate plaine, intoice it a wife, and fet cpen the gate buto his countrimen. Durgefins at, chined the thole exploit, and brought it to perfection, and in these respeas either of them may becalled

Durzelius what he bio.

Die buildeth fortreffes.

สารเกาไดเร reig fedin ce and thire tie pearen.

:Dmalaohli= ica king of isseth.

Dinalaghi: ien.

king and conqueror of Freland. Durgelius therefore with his Porwegians the fecond time innaded Freland, fuffeined diverte lof 10 with hir firteene proper young men beautifull and a les and overtheowes: but in the end fortifieng himfelfe by the fea coaffs, receiving thereby his frends at his pleasure, wared to strong that he subdued the thole He, fill ereating castels and fortresies as be wan ground, fo to maiffer the Brith that with fuch manner of frengths of wals and rampires had not as pet beine acquainted: for till those dates they knew no defenie but ivods, bogs,or Arokes . Eur. gelius to brocked the Frish kings, and kept them in awe, that without interruption he reigned like a 20 conqueroz thirtic peares. De cried hanocke & fpoile where anterich picie was to be had, sparing neither those of the lattic not of the clergie, neither church not chamell, abufing his victorie verie infolentlie. Dmas laghlilen king of Weth was in some trust with the treant. Dis onelie baughter Turgelius craued for his concubine. The father haning a readie wit, and watching his time, began to breake with Turgefius in this wife : Saving pour fanfie my loed (quoth be) there are diverse ladies of blond in this countrie mee 30 ter be of ellows for a king than that browne griffle: and therewith he began to reckon by a number of his nicces and coulines, indowed (as he let them forth) with such lingular beautie, as they fæmed rather angels than mortall creatures. The tyrant as it were rauthed, and dotting in love of those pæreles pieces before he faw them, by reason of such erces ding praifes as he thus heard of them, doubted pet The policie of leaft Dmalaghlilen ertolled them to preferue his daughter out of his hands: and the fubtill father clo: 40 ked his drift with modelf behaufor, lingering time to inflame the leadners follie, as he that wither anie thing mose to be suspected, than that which he meant mof earneflie to bring to paffe. At length, when Turgelius læmed to take his de.

lateng thus of time somethat displeasantlie, he beed this or the like frech: If I thould faic (quoth he) that ce I gave you my fole daughter with godwill to be defloured, your high wisdome would some gheste that I did but flatter you; and yet if ten daughters were 50 ec derer to me than your god pleasure and contentation on, by whose bountiful goones both the, & J, and the ce all are supported. I were butworthis that secret and

nere frandship wherin it liketh you to ble me. As to ce the wench, it will be in part honorable for hir to be required to the bed of fuch a prince, fith quenes have not flicked to come from farre, and peelo the ble of ce their bodies to noble conquerous, in hope by them to

haue illue . And howsoeuer it be taken, time will ce weare it out, and redeeme it; but luch a frænd as 60 you are to me and mine, neither I not mine thall ce line to fee. And verelie I meane not to hazard pour displeasure, if it were for a greater matter than the

value of twentie maidenheads; fæing fathers have ce not flicked to give by their owne wives to quench the luffs of their fons. Therefore am I thus agreed,

cc name the date and place, leparat your felfe from the view of your court, conferre with those that have a ce deintie inlight, a fkilfull cles in discerning beuties; I will fend you my daughter, with hir the choice of tivelue or firteene gentlewomen, the meaned of the

ce thich may be an empresse in comparison. When they are before you, make your game as you like, and ce then if my child please your fantafie best, the is not

to god to be at your commandement : onclie my requeit is, that if anie other that exclaim bron your >> requeit is, that is and some first whose those this leanings, your maichic will remember whose this

This liberall proffer was of Turgelius accepted (whose befire was most insatiable) with manie and words, thanks, t faire promites. To be fhort, the fame Daie Omalaghilen put his daughter in mince like awarell, attired after the trimmeff wife, and miable to behold : and fo being fent to the king were Chellete presented but o bim in his privile chamber, having grandes presented but o him in his privile chamber, having alternative problems are stated to be supplied to the problems are supplied to t none about him but a few distolute youthfull per, fon to 3fons ther boon those disguised young ariplings drew tas hing a forth from whose their long womanish garments states their skeins, and valiantile bestirring themselves, sometimes their skeins, and valiantile bestirring themselves, sometimes their skeins and valiantile bestirring themselves, sometimes their skeins and the books bestives the skeins and the skeins are skeins as the skeins are skeins a first stabled their weapons points through the bodie bolled is of the tyzant, and then ferued all those youths that Caron were about him with the like fawce, they making fol 12, small of no resistance at all. The boute of this mur. ther was quicklie blowne abrove through all Ire, land: and the princes readie to catch hold on fuch and uantage, role in armes with one affent, in purpole to beliver themselves from bondage, and recoverily bertie.

all Weth and Leinster were specilie got togte The pirtor her, reforting onto Dmalaghlilen the author of this and One practile, who lightlie leapt to horde, and commending laghing their forward redinette in to naturall a quarell, fait: Dy lords and frends, this cale neither admitteth de late, not requireth policie; hart and half is all in all. Whilest the matter is fresh and greene, and that some ,, of our entinies lie fill and fleepe, some lament, some curife, some are togither in councell, and all the whole >> number dismated: let bs preuent their furie, bil member their force, cut oft their flight, felge bpen " their places of refuge and fuccour. It is no vinorie to plucke their feathers, but to breake their necks; not to chale them in, but to rowle them out; to werd ,, them, not to rake them; not to tread them downe, but to rot them by. This lecton the typant himselse » did teach me. I once demanded of him as it were in a parable, by what good husbanozie the land might be " rid of certeine ravening foules that annoted it. He adulted his to watch where they bed, and to fire their " nells about their eares. Do ive then boon thele coz, uozants which theolog themselues in our possessions, and let be so deffrois them, that neither net not rot, >> neither fed not falke, neither branch not flumpe Chall remaine of this jugratious generation. Scarle ?? had he ended his tale, but that with great thowts and clamous they extolled the king, as defender of their lines and liberties; affuring them both of their bold and harote Comachs and speedfull expedition folned with their confederats, and with arunning campe livept enerie conner of the law, rafed the car fels to the ground, chased awaie the frangers, flue all that above battell, ech man recovering his owne,

with the Cate of government, Thus in effect have the Irith writers reported of Eurgelius a Pozwegian, whether he did reigne bes fore the lumoled time of Ourmond, or thether that he came thither as lientenant to him: which if it thulo be true, no doubt the same Gyrmono was some king of the Danes, or Portuguans, and not of the Affricans (as some of our countrienen name bim.) Which error is some committed, in taking one hear Guman thenth nation for another, as those men have done that bave named the Hungartans (when they did innade Gallia before they were christians) Saracens. And to likewife might that author (who to cutt he was) whome Geffreie of Monmouth followeth, finding Gurmond witten to be a king of the mile creants, michake the posinegians for Affricans, be.

ranse both those nations were infidels: and therfore fith hamilie the Affricans in the dates when that au thoslined bare all the brute aboue other heathenich nations then, as the Turks do now, he named them Affricans. Powloeuer it was, certeine it is that the Danes of Poswegians made fundre invalions into Ireland, and that at feuerall times. But for Turgefius, whether he were an absolute hing, oz but a lieutenant of some armie, bnder some other (as such names are son corrupted) I cannot affirme. bicause that no certeine time is set bowne in the chronicles which are written of those nations, where by they may be so reconciled together, as sufficeth to warrant anie likelie confecture in this behalfe.

But if I should faie (with the readers licence) what I thinke, this Gurmound what focuer he was, made noludeconquell of Ireland, not of this our Ile of Bittaine (as by some writers is supposed) but yet might he peraduenture land in Wales, and either in 20 fauor of the Sarons then entinies to the Britons, or in hatred of the chaiffian name perfecute by cruell wars the British nation, and ble such crueltie as the heathenith nations then were accustomed to practife against the chaissians in all places where they came, and chanced to have the opper hand . The chiefest cause that moveth me to doubt thereof, is for that I find not in anie of our approved ancient English witers, as Beda, Malmesburie, Huntington, Houethereby I may be throughlie induced to credit that which I find in Geffrie Monmouth and others recor ded of him, except his name be mistaken, and so thereby some errog crept in, which I am not able to refolue.

But lish we are entred to speake thus farre of the Porwegians, here by the wate I have thought it not impertinent to the purpole of this Irith hillo rie, to write what we find recorded in the chronicles of those northernlie regions, Denmarke, Porwcie, 40 and Sweden, written by Saxo Grammaticus, Al-Alber, Crantz, bertus Crantz, and others, concerning the fundate in ualions made by the Danes, Portugians, or Pormans (whether we list to call them) into Ireland. Fridleie og Fridlenus king of Denmarke that fuccorded Dan the third of that name, surnamed the Swift, arriving in Ireland, belieged the citie of Dublin, sperceining by the Arength of the walles, that it would be an hard matter to win it by plaine force of hand without some cumning policie, he deute 50 led to catch a fort of swallowes that had made their nests in the houses within the towne, tied wild fier to their wiligs, and there with cast them up, and suffered them to die their waies, where upon they com: Dablin fer on ming to their nells, fet the houses on fier, which whiles the citizens went about to quench, the Danes entred the citie and wan it.

Secondlie, Frotho king of Denmarke, the third of that name, after he had subdued the Britons here in this Ile, made a voiage into Ireland also, where 60 he landed with some danger: for the Trithmen had strained all alongest the shore a great number of caltrops of from , with tharpe paicks flanding bp, to wound the Danes in the feet, as they thould come forth of their thirs to follow them, for they meant to fle of a pactenied policie for that purpole. But Frotho perceluing their deceitfull craft, followed them more adulicatie than rathlie, and so put their capteine named keruill to fight, and flue him in the field; those brother remaining in life, & millruffing his owne puissance, péloco himselfe to Frotho, who diniving the prece amongst his foulviers and men of warre, the wed thereby that he onelie lought for glo rie and not for gaine, referring not a pennie of all

the spoile to his owne vie. After this, in the vales of Frotho the king Frotho the fourth of that name, which reigned fourth. ouer the Danes, one Starcater a giant, in compar Starcater & nie of Haco a Danish capteine, made a tournic like, grant. wife into Ireland, where in the same season, one Ouglet reigned as monarch ouer that Ile : who has Duglet bing uing plentie of treasure, was pet so given to cour of Ireland. toulnelle, that by luch unprincelie parts as he plate, to satisfie his grædie destre to fill his coffers, he beking named Gurmound, og peraduenture Gogmo, 10 cameright odious, and farre out of all fanog with his subjects. Det there were of his nobles, verie valiant andiworthie men, namelie two, Begathus, & Suib' Begathus & danus: wherevoon, when it came to palle that he Suivoanus. thould toine in battell with his entinies the Danes, the most part of all his people fled out of the field, so that Gegath and Sulboaue were in maner left a lone. For they regarding their honors and dutie that amerteined to men of their calling, would not fite, but manfullie did what laie in their powers to beat backe the enimies, infomuch that Gegathus raught Haco such a wound, that the oper part of his liver Daco wonthe appeared bare. He also wounded Starcater in the bed. bead right fore, fo that in all his life daies, he had not Startatet wounded. before that time received the like hurt: in the end pet Buglet the monarch of Ireland was flaine, and Buglet flaine. Starcater obteining the victorie, did make great flaughter of the Frith fubients, the which had followed their king to this battell, being men (thozough his corrupt example and flouthfull trade of life) degenes den, of find like, anie plaine mention made of him; 30 rat from all warlike order and ble of manlike exer-

After this, the Danes went onto Dublin, which Dublin was, towne they easilie take, and found such store of ris thes and treasure therein, that everie man had so much as he could with or delire; to as they næded not to fall out among themselves for the partition, sith there was so much for each mans thare as he could convenientlie carrie awaie. Thus hath Saxo Grammaticus witten in effect of Starcaters comming into Ireland: of whome the Danish writers make fuch mention, both for his huge stature and great manhod. Some haue thought, that Starcater was the verie same man which the Scots name Finmace cole, of whome in the Scotish historic we have made mention: but whereas the Scotish writers affirme that he was a Scotily man borne, the Danith wife ters report that he was borne in Castlano, among the people called Estones. Reignirus the sonne of Reignirus Siwardus the fecond king of Denmarke, having atchined lundzie victozies in England and Scotland. and subdued the Iles of Dikneie, he passed likewise into Ireland, flue Delbricke king of that land, and Melbricke toke the citie of Dublin by flege, where he remained king of Fres the whole tearme of twelve moneths before he ver land laine, parted from thense.

After this, Burmo the third of that name king Burmo the of Denmarke, although an infidell himfelfe, and a third of that cruell perfecutor of the christian religion, yet toke to name king of wife a dysistian ladie named Thira, daughter to G. Benmarke. theldged king of England, this had issue by him two Chira daughfonnes knaught, og Canute, and Harold , prouing ter to Ethels men of high valiancie and notable prowelle, infor bredking of much that after the atchiuing of diverse worthie vit- England. toxies against the enimies nere home, they made a Harold, botage into England, not sparing to invade the dominions of their grandfather king Etheldzed: tho rather reioiling, than læming to be offended with thole manlike enterprifes of his coulins, proclamed them his heires to lucked after him in all his lands and dominions, although of right the fame were to descend first unto their mother Thira. The young men being incouraged with their grandfather his Chepinuade bountifull magnificence, attempted the invalion of Eanute is Areland, where at the liege of Dublin, Canute or Caine.

Bnaught

Dublin bc=

byth: Daness.

frotho the third.

Caltrops gd comerfi the Brith to annue the Dants.

kmill go: indmen

Unaught the elder brother was that into the bodie with an arrow, and died of the wound : howbeit his death was kept close by his owne commandement ginen before he vien, till his people had got the citie into their possession. But the gaine was small in refrect of the losse, which was thought to redound onto the whole Danish nation by the death of that noble pong gentleman Canute, who for his high prowelle and valiancie was most tenvertie beloued of all men; but namelie of his father king Gozmo, infor 1 much that he sware to kill him with his owne hands; thosoever should first tell him newes of his death.

This Gozmo was now a man far Ariken in age, and blind, having fmall foic of ante wooldie pleas fures, other wife than to heare of the welfare and prowerous proceedings of his fonnes. When therefore his wife quene Thira had perfect aduertisement of bir formes death, and that neither the not anie other burft breake the matter onto hir husband, the deuts fed a thiff how to fignific that but o him by outward 20 figues, which by wood of mouth the was afraid to ex-Thepolicie of preffe, as thus. She caused mouning apparell to be made for hir hulband, a putting off his rotall robes, clad him therewith, and other things awerteining to morners the also put about him, and prepared all fuch furniture and necessaries as were bled for fune. rall erequies, witnesting the lamentable griefe conceined for the lotte of some friend, with that kind of morning wed and funerall ceremonies . Which then Bormo percetued : Wois me (faith be) you 30 The other had commodities plentie, and cared not then fignifie the death of my sonne Canute. Where: to the made answer, that he and not the did discouer the truth of that which was meant by those morning garments; and with that speech ministred cause of hir hulbands death, thereby the became prefentlie a whow, not open lie morning for hir fonne, before the morned likewise for hir husband : for he toke fuch griefe for Canutes death, that immediatite he died thorough forow and dolor : to as Ahra was thus dinen to lament, as well the death of hir sonne, as 40 of hir bulband both at once. But now to the purpole of the Trith hillorie. De have thus partlie heard what the Danich wal

> fers dw record in their histories, touching the conqueffs which their people made in Ireland; but when ther the fame be meant of that which goeth before, or rather of that which followeth, touching the trade which the Porwegian merchants bled thither; or the ther the Iriff writers have passed these fournies of uer with silence, which the Danish writers in forme 50 (as before is touched) ow make mention of, I cannot affirme. But like it is that as the Danes, 02 pop mans, whether you will call them, did inuade Fre-

land as well as England, France, and Scotland, in those dates according to the report of their writers, and that by waie of open warre as well to conquer the countrie, as to take prefes, prisoners, and boties. and not for trade of merchandize onelie : albeit that they might peraduenture fo get entrie at the first, as by the Trith histories it should sæme they did shortlie after the flaughter of Turgelius. And afterwards when they faw themselves setled, and perceived that they began to grow to be enuied of their Triff neighbours, who there opon would not ficke to molest them as occasions served, they saw no better

meane to affure themselves against their adversa. ries, than to lend buto their countriemen, which in those dates roued abroad (as before I have faid) in everie quarter of this our welt ocean, waiting for oportunitie to adnance their conquells in each countrie where anie thing might be gotten. And so this maie agree verie well with the Irith writers, whom as 3 do not take boon me to controll, but rather to

report the florie as I find it by them written, I will

proceed with the order which they follow. After the countrie was belivered of the trannie where with it was oppeded by the fame Turgefius this people Danes or Porwegians whether they were (for fo Cambrenfis effemeth them) the Brith belingred of fernile bonbage, fell to their olo wonted bomit, in perfecuting each other : and having latelie befaced their fortified townes and castels, as receptacles and coverts for the enimie, all fides late more open o to receiue barme.

This being perceiued and thoroughlie confidered. the princes that in the late rule of Aurgelius had efvied some towardnesse to wealth a case, fell in hand to discourse the madnesse & follie of their ancestors, which faw not the vie of that which their enimies ab used: they begun to loth their buquiet trade of life. to with either leffe discord, or more frength in each mans dominion; to tall the danger of naked countries, readie to call in the enimies, as the frength of forts & callels was a meane to preferue them from loffe. Faine would they have provided remedie in this case, if they had knowne how. The former subtection, though it sæmed intollerable, yet they felt therein proceeding freps towards peace. The gaine that role of merchandize, rest and suertie to the whole estate of the countrie. For the difference was great betwirt the indenours of the two nations, power gians and Jrith. The first knew the wais to theine, might they get some commodious seats and foile. for them.

While the princes and potentats faied boon fuch Cafferlings a good confideration, certeine merchants of poz- begantened wate, Denmarke, and of other those parties, called into Inlan ostomanni, 02 (as in our bulgar language we tearme them) Cafferlings, bicaufe they lie Caff in respect of vs, although indeed they are by other named proper, lie Pozmans, and partlie Sarons, obteined licence fafelie to arrive here in Ireland with their wates, and to biter the same. Herebpon the Zrish, thorough traffike & bartering with thefe Pozmans of Danes (for so they are called also in our English chronicle) by erchanging of wares and monie, finding them civil and tractable, and deliting allo with gaie conceipts, brought into them by those merchants (such astill they faw them they never estemed needfull) they be gan to enter into a belire that a trade might be open betwirt them & the other nations, wherebyon to ale lure other, they licenced these merchant strangers to They build build (if they thought god) haven townes in places townes and most commodious. This was no soner granted, than seconds begun, and with speed finished.

merike; Juozus, Dublin; and fo by others direction Dublin. ther townes were built as letture ferued. Then by the holpe and counsell of these men, manie castics, forts, stæples, and churches, eucrie where were repar red . And thus are the Triff mingled also with the bloud of the Danes, Porwegians, or Pormans, wo from thenlefath continuallie flocked into Ireland, to the great commoditie of the inhabitants, living amongst them obedientlie, till wealth paicked and moved them to raise rebellion: but they could not baue holden out, had not the conquest infuing octer, mined both their quarrels. In the meane while they The moti became loads of the hauens and burrow townes, chantifres planted men of warre in the fame, and offentimes greamout thirmifed with their aduer farice; but yet meafured rebilion their fortune with indifferent gaines, and crept no higher than the fame would give them leave. Dielie a memorie is left of their field in Clontars, where of verse of the Irish nobilitle were Caine, that lie buri The find ed befoge the croffe of kilmainam. Thefe are by our Clouds authoz, not without god inogement, reported to be

Danes,

@ hiratolig= bufeand the beath of their

Wosina dieth

be forrow.

till a of the n:1:gers which in gife datest Haco England, sicordano and crofand.

Danes, which people then being pagans, fore afflice teo England, and after that France, from thenle they came againe into England with William Conqueroz So that thole people called ostomanni, & ferlings, Pozmans, Danes, Pozwegians, & Suebeners, are in effect all one nation , borne in that huge region called Scandinaula; and as it appeareth by conference of times and thronicles, muchuhat a. bout one feason, vered the Frenchmen, affliced Scotland, lubdued England, and multiplied in Fres land. But in the yeare of Chill 1095, perceining great enuie to remaine and lurke in the distinction of the names Cafferlings and Jenh, that were ale togither westerne jano the Gasterlings not easterne inded, but rather limplie northerne: in confideration thereof, and bicause they magnified themselves in the late conquest of their countriemen, who from Comambie comming ouer into England ruled there at their pleasure, these Brangers in Freland Pomans. Long before this time (as you have heard) Freland

was bestowed into two principall kingdomes, and fometime into more, idereof one was ener elected and reputed to be cheefe, and as it were a monarch, thome in their histories they name Maximum regem, harhegreat that is, the greatest king, or elfe without addition, Regem Hibernia, the king of Freland: the other thep name Reguli or Reges, that is to wit, finall hings or elle kings, by limiting the places whereof they were 30 to be reputed kings, as of Leinfter, Connagh, Alfer, Pounffer, o: Weth. To the monarch, belides his

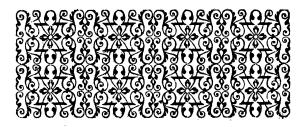
allowance of dominion, titles of bonoz, and other pat

nileaes in furifoiation, there livas granted to him a negative in nomination of bishops, when they were bacaut : for the cleargie and laietic of the diocesse The power of commended one, whom they thought convenient on, the monarch to their king, the king to the monard, the monard bishops, to the archbishop of Canturburie: for that as pet the metropolitans of Arcland had not received their palles.

In this fort was nominated to the bilhoppike of Dubline then boid, in the yeare of Driff 1074, at king of Leine the petition of Goderius king of Leinster, by lufter fter. rance of the cleargie and people there, with the ale Cerdienatus fent of Terdienatus the monarch, a learned prelat the monarch called Patricius, whome Lanfranke of Canturbu, Patricius rie confecrated in Paules church at London, and bullop of Dus fware him to obedience after the manner of his an blinby Lanceftogs. Chaiffian bithop of Lifmoge, legat to Cus franke. genius the third, lummoned a provincial councell Christian bis in Ireland, wherein were authorifed foure metropo foo of Life would algate now be also called and accompted 20 litan leas, Armagh, Dublin, Cashill, and Tuen; of more the which places were bishops at that present, Ge. Fouremetrothe wild places were simply at that percent, the politanles in Irriand. Chough they yelded a primake to the bilhop of Ar. Chebishop of magh in reuerence of faint Patrike the first bifhop Armagh. there: yet the fame was but of goo will, and confire med rather by custome than by fusticient occree; net ther old that archbishop take byon him to inuest o ther bishops, but sent them to Canturburie (as before is mentioned) which from henleforth they vied Laurence not to do, infomuch that the next bishop named Land arced flop of rence, sometime archbishop of faint Beuins in Go Stecums, landlagh, was ordered and installed at home by Be. latius primat of Armagh.

FINIS.

Not well understanding what the writer of this part of the Irish historie ment to sall vpon so blunt a conclusion; but supposing it was vpon some reasonable inducement: we thought it convenient to leave it as we found it: intending (without anie addition herevnto) to set downe the conquest of Ireland, as the same was left recorded by Girald of Cambria: whose presaces and historie, right worthie the reading, doo immediatlie sollow.



The Cafter=

Arimus king op mo.

The names of the gouernors, lieu-tenants, lordiustices, and deputies of Ireland, since the

	conquest thereof by king	g Henrie the Jecona.
he yeare of our Lord.		Iohn Fitzmaurice lord inftice. The years our Leaf
1174	The second of Ichard Others	
1 1 / 4	of Penbroke gouernor,	Walter lord Bermingham lord inflice, hisde-
	hauing Reimond le Grace ioined in commission with him. Reimond le Grace lieute-	puties were Iohn Archer prior of Kilmainan
	Grace ioined in com-	& Baron Carew, with fir Thomas Rokesbie.
	mission with him.	Maurice Fitzthomas earle of Desmond had
* * 7 7 7	Reimond le Grace lieute-	the office of lord iustice for terme of his life,
1177	a lant by lillinging	of king Edward the third his grant.
	Aldelme Firz Aldelme	Thomas Rokesbie knight lord iustice.
	lieutenant, hauing Iohn de Curcie, Robert	Almericke de faint Amand Jappointed L. I. 1357 Maurice Fitzth, earle of Kild. by turnes.
	Fitz Stephans, and Miles Cogan joined in	Iohn Butler earle of Ormond by turnes.
	commission with him.	
	Hugh Lacie lieutenant.	Lionell duke of Clarence lord iustice. 1361
	2 Iohn Lacie constable of Chester gouernors.	Gerald Fitzmaurice earle of Defmond L.I. 1267
1102	and Richard de Peche	William lord Windlor the first seutenant in 1369
	Hugh Lacie againe lieutenant.	Ireland.
	Hugh Lacie the voonger, lord luitice.	Richard Ashton lord instice. 1372
	Henrie Loandoris archbithop of Dublin, lord	Roger Mortimer Lultices and lieutenants 1 2 81
1 2 2	inflice.	Philip Courtneie: Speciallierecorded in Ri-
T 2 2 5	Maurice Fitzgirald lord inflice.	Iames erle of Orm. chard the seconds daies.
1220	3 Iohn Fitzgeffreie knight, lord iustice.	Robert Vere earle of Oxford marques of Du-
1 2) :	Alain de la Zouch lord iustice.	blin created duke of Ireland.
T 2 5 5	8 Stephan de Long Espe lord instice.	Roger Mortimer earle of March lientenant. 1394
12)	William Deane lord inflice.	Roger Mortimer earle of March and Vlster
T 26	Sir Richard Rochell or Capelllordiustice.	heutenant.
126	Dauid Barrie lord instice.	Roger Greie lord iustice.
126	Robert Vfford lord justice.	Iohn Stanleie knight lord lieutenant.
7 2 6	Richard de Excester lord iustice.	Thomas of Lancaster brother to king Henrie 1401
727	Iames lord Audleie lord instice.	the fourth lord lieutenant, whole deputies at
127	2 Maurice Firzmaurice lord inflice.	fundrie times were Alexander bishop of
/	Walter lord Genuille lord iustice.	Meth, Stephan Scrope knight, and the pri-
	Robert Viford againe lord inflice.	or of Kilmainan.
128	Fulborne bishop of Waterford ford suffice.	Iames Butler earle of Ormond lord iustice. 140
	Iohn Samford the archbishop of Dublin, lord	Girald earle of Kildare lord instice.
	inflice.	Iames Butler earle of Ormond, sonne to the 1 407
	William Vescie lord instice.	torelaid lames, lord jultice.
I 2 9	5 William Dodingsels lord instice.	Iohn Stanleie againe lord lieutenant.
	Thomas Fitzmaurice lord iustice.	Thomas Crauleie archbishop of Dublin lord
I 2 9	8 Iohn Wogan lord iuftice.	iultice.
131	4 Theobald Verdon lord inftice.	Iohn lord Talbot of Shefield lieutenant. 1412
131	5 Edmund Butler lord instice.	Iames Butler erle of Ormond the second time 142
131	7 Roger lord Mortimer lord inflice.	lieutenant.
	Alexander Bignor archbishop of Dublin lord	Edmund earle of March, Iames
	inflice.	earle of Ormond his deputie.
I 3 I	9 Roger lord Mortimer second time lord iustice.	Iohn Sutton lord Dudleie, fir
1 3 2	o Thomas Fitziohn earle of Kildare lord inflice.	Thomas Strange knight his
132	I John Birmingham earle of Louth lord inflice.	deputie.
I 3 2	3 Iohn lord Darcie lord inflice.	Sir Thomas Stanleie, fir Chri- Lieutenants
1 3 2	7 Roger Outlaw prior of Kilmainan lord instice.	stopher Plunket his deputie. Stoking Hen-
	Anthonie lord Lucie lord iustice.	Lion lord Welles, the earle of rie the fixt.
133	2 John lord Darcie second time lord iustice.	Ormond his deputie.
	7 Iohn lord Charleton lord iustice.	Iames erle of Ormond by him-
133	8 Thomas bishop of Hereford lord instice.	felfe.
133	9 Iohn lord Darcie ordeined lord inflice by pa-	Iohn earle of Shrewesburie, the
• •	tent during his life, by Edward the third.	archbishop of Dublin in his
	Rafe Vfford lord inftice.	ablence lord inflice
	6 Robert Darcie lord inflice.	Richard Plantagenet duke of Yorke, father to

L. deputies and instices of Ireland.

бı

king Edward the fourth, had the office of lieutenant, his deputie was Walter archbi- The yeare of (c) care of lieutenant by king Henrie the fixt his letters Thop of Dublin. patents for ten yeares. His deputies at sundrie times were, the baron of Deluin, Richard Fitzeustace knight, lames earle of Ormond, and Thomas Fitzmoris earle of Kil-Thomas Fitzmoris earle of Kildare, lord iustice inking Edward the fourth his daies, vntill the third yeare of his reigne. After which George duke of Clarence brother to the K. had the office of lieutenant during his life, & made his deputies by fundrie times thele: Thomas earle of Desimond, Deputies 1 Iohn Tiptoft erle of Worcester, (to the duke 1470 Thomas earle of Kildare, (of Cla-^Jrence. Henric lord Graie of Ruthine. Sir Rouland Eustace lord deputie. Richard duke of Yorke, younger formeto king deputie. Edward the fourth, lieutenant. Edward sonne to Richard the third lieutenant, his deputie was Girald earle of Kildare.

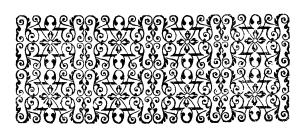
Edward Poinings knight, lord deputie. Henrie duke of Yorke, after king by the name 1501 . of Henrie the eight, lieutenant, his deputie Girald earle of Kildare Girald Fitzgirald earle of Kildare, lord depu-Thomas Howard earle of Surreie, after duke 1520 of Norfolke, lieutenant. Piers Butler earle of Offorie, lord deputie. Girald Fitzgirald earle of Kildare againe lord The baron of Deluin lord deputie. Piers Eutler earle of Offorie againe lord depu- 1 5 29 William Skeffington knight, lord deputie. Girald Firzgirald earle of Kildare, againe lord William Skeffington againe lord deputie. Leonard lord Graie, lord deputie. 1534 Sir William Brereton knight, lord iustice. Sir Anthonie Sentleger knight, lord deputie. 1541

The names of all the lords deputies and justices in Ireland, since the death of king Henrie the eight 1546, who died in Januarie.

SIr Anthonie Sentleger knight by patent, dated 24 Marty, Anno primo Edw. 6. 1546, 1547 Sir Edward Bellingham lord deputie, 22 Aprilis, Anno eodem. 1548 Sir Francis Brian lord iustice. 1549 Sir William Brabeston lord iustice. 1550 Sir Anthonie Sentleger lord deputie, 3. 4 Au-1551 Sir Iames Crofts lord deputie, 20 Aprilis. 1553 Sir Anthonie Sentleger lord deputie, 1 Sept. 4. 1555 Thomas lord Fitzwalter lord deputie, 27 April. Sir Henrie Sidneie Lords instices. 1556 Doctor Coren 1556 Sir Henrie Sidneie lord iustice alone, 18 Ianu-1557 Thomas erle of Suffex L.lieutenant, 19 Marty. 1558 Sir William Fitzwilliams lord iustice.

Iasper duke of Bedford and earle of Penbroke,

Thomas earle of Suffex lord deputie, 6 May. 1559 Sir Nicholas Arnold lord iustice. 1565 Sir Henrie Sidneie lord deputie. Sir William Fitzwilliams 1567 Sid Henrie Sidneie lord deputie. Sir William Fitzwilliams lord instice. Sir William Fitzwilliams lord deputie, 11, 1571 Decemb. Anno 14 Elisab. Sir Henrie Sidneie lord deputie 3. 5 Augusti 3. 1572 Sir William Drurie lord iustice, 14 Septemb. 1579 by patent, 18 May. Sir William Pelham lord iustice. The lord Arthur Graie. Adam archbishop of Dublin Lord iustices 1582 Sir Henrie Wallop Sir Iohn Perot lord deputie.





TOTHERIGHT WOR-

thie and honorable gentleman sir

Walter Raleigh knight, seneschall of the duchies of Cornewall and Excester, and lord warden of the stannaries in Deuon and Cornewall: Iohn Hooker wisheth a long, a happie, and a prosperous life, with the increase of honour.



Mong all the infinit good bleflings, right honorable, which the Lord God hath beflowed vpon vs. I thinke none more expedient and necefiarie, than the vse and knowledge of histories and chronicles: which are the most affured registers of the innumerable benefits and commodities, which have and dailie do grow to the church of God, and to the ciuil gouernment through out all nations. The vse of them began and was receiued even from the first beginning, and immediatile vpon the dispersing of the sonnes of Adam through out the world: for they were no soner divided into several nations, but they did (as Cicero siath) make choise of some one man among themselves, who surpassed the rest in wisedome, knowledge and vinderstanding, Adayum confusiebant. These kind of men for the most part in those daies were preests and philosophers, and nographers for the most part in those daies were preests and philosophers, and nographers in their Druides and Bardos, and Ireland had their Odalies or Rimers, who being verie wise men & of great credit, and their Druides and Bardos, and Ireland had their Odalies or Rimers, who being verie wise men & of great credit, people to attention, and to frame them to the knowledge of vertue, did vse to fing with an infurument such lessons and instructions as they were wont to giue, whether it were concerning manners and common conversation, or matters of policie and government, or of prowesse and martial affaires, or of the getts of their anceonographers fors, or of an instruction of the more appreciate, and willing to applie themselves to vertue and to a commendable course of life, both concerning God how he was to be honored, the magistrate how he was to be ordered and directed. The definition of an historie, he described the same to be the wintesse of time, the light of truth, the life of ciero de oranos, and the mistresse of an historie, he described the same to be the wintesse of time, the light of truth, the life of ciero de oranos, and the mistresse or haue their verie substance of an historie: he described the same to be the witnesse of time, the light of truth, the life of Cicero de gratore, memorie, and the mistresse of life: willing and adulting euerie man at all times and in all matters to have their therin, and by them a man may learne what to do in the life to come. For as the wife man faith, There is nothing Ecclesiast. 1.3. new under the funne; for the thing which is now hath beene, and by the things past we are taught the things to come. And so saith Augustine: Historia magis vel certe non minus pranunciardis suturis, quam enunciardis prateritis inuenitur intenta: Histories doo teach and aduertise vs as well of the things to come, as of the things. Dei.

past : and the knowledge thereof is fo no necessarie that Melancthon would have no man to be vnlearned in hi- Chronica Caflories, bicause Sine quanulla in requisiman sucem habet. And Thucidides the old ancient historiographer of rionis.

Grecia would that euerie man should have about him a booke of histories, as a thing most necessarie for him in Thucidides. all matters what soeuer: and this did he draw and learne (as it should seeme) from Moses, who when he had faithfullie and diligentlie written and fet downe the whole course of the world, the wonderfull works of God, and all the most necessarie precepts and rules for mans life, either concerning matters of religion or causes of ciuil policies, or of common societie: then he and Iosua assembling all the people togither, did deliuer vnto them the whole Pentatychon of Moses to be dailie read & taught, with a commandement that they should neuer haue that booke out of their hands, but to haue alwaies their continual recourse to them, as well for their life, as also for their direction in all their causes. Which thing they did most diligentile observe and keepe, and not onelie in matters of religion, but in all doubtfull matters, as to the most true oracles, they would make their recourse for their full resolutions. As the enimies of selmada, when they saw the prosperous successe of the building of the temple in the times of Ezras and Nehemias, and they much maligning the same, made sute to king Artaxerxes that he would revoke the decree which king Cyrus had made vnto the sews, sicencing them to build the temple, alledging manie great and sundrie matters against them. Wherevpon the king commanded the chronicles to be fearched, whether it were true that had been informed against them. Likewise when Hamon had greeus of the sundries worthie death, the king commanded the chronicles to be fearched. Also when Paule and Sylas full preached the gospell at Thessalous and Bærea, a doctrine then accompted strange and new, they searched and examined the books Num has ita se haberent. For as they found things there recorded, so gaue they credit, and by the same they did proceed in the like. For it was a common thing among the Romans, that not onelie they and all the most necessarie precepts and rules for mans life, either concerning matters of religion or causes of ci-

The epiftle dedicatorie.

they would make recourse in all doubtfull matters to their owne annales: but what so ever they found in the like in anic other nation or commonwealth, which might further them in anie thing touching their owne affaires, they would draw the fame into an example for themselves to follow, which was no small benefit to their com-

Alexander.

Iulius Cæfar.

Mat. Paristensis in prefas.

Ireland yeeldeth fmall matter for an historie.

The inflice of

they would draw the fame into an example for themselves to follow, which was not man benefit to their commonwealth.

Likewise Alexander the great, notwithstanding he were brought up in all good letters under Aristotle, yet when he was to inlarge his empire, he gaue himsels to the diligent reading of Homer, the most exact chronographer of the Troian wars: and so he esteemed that booke, that in the daie time he caried it about him, and in the night time he laid it under his beds head; and at all times convenient he would be reading of it, and in the end was so perfect therein, that he could verbatim repeat the whole without booke; the stratagems, the policies, and the manie deuties used in those warres he practised in his owne warres, which shood him in great steed, Julius Casiar also in his wars searched the ancient bookes and histories of the citie of Rome: and did not one lic thereby draw a paterne for his owne direction, both for his civill and his martiall affaires: but also, he being then the greatest monarch of all the world, thought it not prejudiciall to his imperiall estate and maiestie, to commend under his owne hand writing unto his posseritie, the historie of his owne age and dooings. Manie like princes that England bred, who have bin verie carefull, that the memoriall of the good things doone in their times should be commended to their posteritie, to follow in the like. And therefore euerie king for the course of fundrie hundreds of yeares, was woont to reteine and keepe some wise, learned, and faithfull scribes, who should collect and record the things doone in euerie their severall times, and all which as time and course of yeares did serve, were published; and what great good benefits haue growne thereby to this present age, and like to serve to the suture time, all the world maie easilie see and judge: for this I dare boldlie saie and affirme: No realme, no nation, no state, nor common wealth throughout all Europa, can yeeld more nor so manie prostrable lawes, directions, rules, examples & disco the histories of this little Isle of Britaine or England. I would to God I might or were able to saie the like, or the halfe like of Ireland, a countrie, the more barren of good things, the more replenished with actions of bloud, murther, and lothsome outrages; which to anie good reader are greeuous & irkesome to be read & considered, much more for anie man to pen and set downe in writing, and to reduce into an historie. Which hath been some case of the considered and attacking discouraged to integrated the rein. more for anie man to pen and fet downe in writing, and to reduce into an historie. Which hath beene some cause whie I was alienated and vtterlie discouraged to intermedle therein: for being earnestlie requested, by reason of my some acquaintance with the maners and conditions of that nation during my short abode therein, to continue the historie of that land, from the death of king Henrie the eight vnto these presents, which hitherto hath not beene touched; I found no matter of an historie woorthie to be recorded: but rather a tragedie of cruelties to be abhorred, and no historie of good things to be followed: and therefore I gaue the matter ouer, and was fullie resolued not at all to have intermedsed therewith. Neverthelesse, being againe veric earness the requested, and no excuse neither of my age, not of my often sicknesse, nor of my calling in the service of the commonwelth, nor of my small learning and skill, sufficient to compass such a matter, could be accepted: then (but with an euill will) I entred into it, and the more I bethought my selse of the matter, the more I began to consider, and at length to behold the two great and woonderous workes of God, both of his severe judgement against traitors, rebels, and disobedient; and of his mercie and louing kindnesse vpon the obedient and dutifull. Whereof, though there be infinite examples both in the facted histories and humane chronicles: yet I find none more apparant and effectu-

The inflice of God against rebels.

Hen 2.

Edw.21

Hen 2.

Edw.22

Hen 2.

Edw.21

Ed D. Allen flaine

D. Sanders diet oaduertise of their successe vnt other holie father. The common people such as escaped the sword, all for the eth miserablie, most part are perished with famine, or fled the countrie. The land it selfe being verie fertile, is waxed baren, yeelding nor corne nor fruits; the pathures without cattell, and the aire without fowles, and the whole promine for the most part defolate and vnhabited, fauing townes and cities: and finallic, nothing there to be feene but mile-

eth miserablie. The land left

altogither

The epiftle dedicatorie.

A notable and a rare example of Gods iust judgement and seure punishment, vpon all such as doo resist and rebell against the higher powers and his annointed: which is so greeuous an offense in his sight, that next to the capitall offense against the sigher power resistent against Gods ordinances, and he shall receive judgement. And the Lord shall root him from out of the face of the earth that shall blassheme his gods, and cursen the prince of defendeth and keepeth them, and with his manifold blessing prospereth them; as hir maiesties good subjects dwelling within the English pale, and inhabiting within hir cities and townes can wintesse. They sow and till he land, and doo reape the fruits. Their fields are full of sheepe, and they are clothed with the world. Their passures are full of cattell, and they invoice them. Their cities and townes are well inhabited, and they live in safetue. All things go well with them, and peace and plentie resteth in their houses. Two notable examples (Isaic) and worthic to be throughlic observed; the one of Gods inst indegement against the rebels and trattors, and the other of mercie and love towards the obedient and dutifull subject. Which examples the later they are, the more should they imprint in vs an inward affection and an vindoubted resolution, to yeeld to the superiours all dutie and obedience, and by the examples of the rebels, to shun as a pestilence all disobedience and rebellion; least in doing the like, we doo receive the like just judgements with then. Let therefore the examples of the elders be sufficient persuasions and instructions to the posterities to follow that which is good, and to either that which is cuill. For albeit good counsell of our friends, and conferences with the good men, mair much prevaile with vs, yet none can so much prevaile not be of fush vertue and effect, as the examples of our ancestors, and the actions of our forestaters when they be laid before vs: Magis enim exemptis porest persuaderi, quaim arguments exterqu all affaires, was that which they drew from the examples of their ancestors before them. And for as much as such is the yalue and vertue of the footsteps of our foresathers, I trust it shall not be offensive vnto you, that I do a little digreffe and speake somewhat of your selfe and of your ancestors; who the more honourable they were in their times, the greater cause haue you to looke into the same that what in some of your later forestathers was confopited, maie not in you be consepulted, but rouzed and raised vnto his former and pristinat state. And for as much as I am somewhat acquainted in their descents, let me make bold with you to laie the same downe be-

much as I am somewhat acquainted in their descents, let me make bold with you to laie the same downe before you.

There were fundrie of your ancestors by the name of Raleigh, who were of great account & nobilitie, and alied as well to the Courtneis earls of Deuon, as to other houses of great honour & nobilitie, & in sundrie succeeding of the lord descents were honoured with the degree of knighthood, One of them being your ancestor in the directest line, was named fir John de Raleigh, who then dwelled in the house of Furdell in Deuon, an ancient house of your ancestors, and of their ancient inheritance: and which at these presents is in the possession of your eldest brother. This knight maried the daughter and heire to fir Roger D'amerei, or de Amerei, whome our English chronicles do name lord de Amereie, who was a noble man and of great linage, and descended of the earls de Amereie in Britaine, and alied to the earls of Montfort in the same dudie and prouince. This man being come ouer into England, did serue in the court, and by the good pleasure of God and the good liking of the king he maried the ladie Elisabeth, the third fister and coheire to the noble Gilbert earle of Clare and of Glocester, who was slaine in the battell of Banokesborough in Scotland, in the time of king Edward the second. This earle died sans is single, he being the some and the said ladie Elisabeth the daughter to Gilbert descended of Robert earle of Glocester, sonne to king Henrie the first, and of his wife the ladie Mawd, daughter and heire to Robert Fitzhamon, lord of Astrouillin Normandie, cosen to the Conqueror, knight of the pruie damber to king William Rusis, and lord of the lordship of Glamorgan in Wales. So that your ancestor fit sohn de Raleigh married the daughter of de Amerie, Damereie of Clare, Clare of Edward the first, and which Clare by his father descended of king Henrie the first. And in like maner by your mother you maie be deriued out of the same house. These all were men of great honour and nobilitie, and whose vertu

and continued the great field as the magnetic field and the continued to the old countrie faieng; Be the daie neuer fo long, yet at length it will ring at euenfong: fo this honorable race, though for fo manie deteents, and for the course of fo manie yeares it continued in great honor, nobilitie, and reputation, yet in processe of time the honour became to be of worship (neuerthelesse alied alwaies and matched in houses of great honour and nobilitie) and so euer fince possessed by knights of your owne name, vntill by little and little the honour and estimation of your noble and worthie ancestors seemed at length to be buried in oblinion, and as it were extinguished and to be vtterlie forgotten as though it had neuer beene. And now when all was past anie hope and vnsemembred to the world, it hath pleased God to raise the same euen as it were from the dead, and to looke vpon you the yongest sonne of manie, as he did vpon Ioseph, one of the yongest sonnes of Iacob; and in you hath left a hope to restore the decaied house of your sept and samilie. He hath brought you into the god fauour of your prince, who hath pleased to reward and honour in you the appropued faithfull you into the good fauour of your prince, who hath pleated to reward and nonour in you me approused faithful feruice of your late ancestors and kindered deceasted, and inclined hir princelle hart, conceiuing a great hope of your owne sufficiencie and abilitie to restore you againe, being the last branch remaining of so manie noble and famous houses descended. And whereof comment this, that the Lord hath thus blessed you, and so bountifullie hath dealt with you? but onelie (as the wise man saith) Vr noscas in omni virtute omnibus prodesse, and that you should be beneficiall and profitable to all men. And therefore in all our actions, Semper aliquid ad communem v- Ciemo de office. thould be beneficiall and profitable to all men. And therefore in all our actions, semper aliquid ad communem v-cities effected afferendum: for we are not borne to our felues alone, but the prince, the countric, the parents, friends, wites, children and familie, eueric of them doo claime an interest in vs, and to eueric of them we must be beneficiall: otherwise we doo degenerate from that communitie and societie, which by such offices by vs is to be conserved, & doo become most unprofitable: Naminutilis profits est, qui nullam vtilitatem reipublice ac communi societatipossis afferre, and eueric such man, as a member unprofitable is to be cut off. And as the bee is no longer suffered to have a place in the hiue, than whiles he worketh; no more is that man to have place in the publike weale than whiles he dooth fome good therein, bicaufe through idlenefle they doe not onelie no good, but as Cato faith, Cato, they doe cuill: Nihil agendo homines male agere difcunt. Idlenefle they doe not onelie no good, but as Cato faith, Cato, they doe cuill: Nihil agendo homines male agere difcunt. Idlenefle therefore the mother of all wickedneffe, and Idlers ought idlers the fornes of fo bad a mother, are viterlie to be exiled and expelled out of all well gouerned commonnous relationship to the former of the former do good and be beneficiall to the fame.

And how great your care hath beene heerein, the course of your life hitherto dooth manisest it. For after that

And how great your care hath beene neerein, the courle of your life hitherto dooth manifelt it. For after that you had feafoned your primer yeares at Oxford in knowledge and learning, a good ground and a fure foundation to build therevpon all your good actions, you trauelled into France, and fpent there a good part of your youth in the warres and martiall feruices. And having fome fufficient knowledge and experience therein, then after your returns from thense, to the end you might euerie waie be able to serve your prince and commonweale, you were desirous to be acquainted in maritimall affaires. Then you, togither with your brother fir Humfreie Gilbert, trauelled the seas, for the search of such countries, as which if they had beene then discovered, infinit commodities in the season of the season of such as a such

fundrie respects would have insued, and whereof there was no doubt, if the fleet then accompanieng you, had according to appointment followed you, or your felfe had escaped the dangerous sea fight, when manie of your companie were slaine, and your ships therewith also sore battered and disabled. And albeit this hard beginning (after which followed the death of the faid woorthie knight your brother) was a meter sufficient to have discovered a land, and had made a plantation of the good of your countrie; did not gue ouer, witill you had recovered a land, and had made a plantation of the people of your countrie; did not gue ouer, witill you had recovered a land, and had made a plantation of the people of your countrie; did not gue ouer, witill you had recovered a land, and had made a plantation of the people of your countrie; did not gue ouer, witill you had recovered a land, and had made a plantation of the people of your countrie; did not gue ouer with all cruell immanitie, contraire to all naturall humanities, they subdued a naked and a yeelding people, whom they fought for gaine and not for anie religion or plantation of a commonwelth, ouer whome to satisfie their most greedie and inlatiable couetous end of them to establish as by their owner his flories doorn appeare. These (I saie) do brag and vaunt, that they onelie have drawne strange nations and we knowne people, to the obcdience of their kings, to the knowledge of christianitie, and to they guite insiching of their countrie, and thereby doe claime the honor to be due to themselves onelie and alone. But if these your actions were well looked into, with such a consideration as apperteineth, it shall be found much more benefits of their owner in the worth of their owner is the such as a such process of the such as a such no doubt the cause being so good, and the attempt so honorable, but that God will increase your talent, and blesse your doings, and eurie good man will commend and further the same. And albeit the more noble enterprises a man shall take in hand, the more aduersaries he shall have to deprave and hinder the same: yet I am persuaded, as no good man shall have just cause, so there is none so much carried with a corrupt mind, nor so envisions of his countries honour, nor so bent against you, that he will derogate the praise and honour due to so worthie an enterprise and that so much the some, bicause you have individed so manie crosses, and have through so much enuiengs and missortunes persevered in your attempts, which no doubt shall at last by you be personned when it shall please him, who hath made you an instrument of so worthie a worke. And by how much the more God hath pleased thus to blesse you, so much the more are you bound to be thankefull vinto him, and to acknowledge the same to proceed from his grace and mercie towards you. Give the sease therefores praise you) so be bold with you, not onelie to put you in mind hereof, but also to remember you, how it hath pleased God to bring you into the fauour of your prince and sourceigne: who besides his great suour towards you manie waies, she hath also laid you you the charge of a government in your owne countrie, where you are to command manie people by your honourable office of the stannarie, and where you are both a studge and chancellor, to rule in justice and to judge in equitic. Wherin you are so much the more to be circumspect and wise, bicause you you independ, knowing that a hard judgement abletch for such as be in authoritie, if they judge not vprightlie, and do depend, knowing that a hard indigement abideth for find as be in authoritie, if they judge not vprightle, and do not yeeld judice to eueric man indifferentie. Be you therefore carefull in this respect, that you be well reported for your vpright dealings, both herein, & in eueric of all your other actions to all men. Be you a patterne of vertue, & an example of true nobilities, which is grounded & harth hir foundation vpon vertue, for as the poet faith, Ex virtus nobilities anafeitur, non ex nobilitiate virtus virtus old nobilitat, no caro nee fanguis. And therefore faith Demostrate nobilities mish videris. In my opinion thou art no gentleman. It is a noble thing to be borne of noble ancestors as Aristotle faith, but his nobilitie faileth, when his ancestors vertues in him faileth, Hic enim vere nobilities see fending, beneficiall to their princes and countrie manie & sundrie waies. And as in nature you are descended from them, so it hath pleased God to blesse you with knowledge in learning, with skill of wastike service, and in experience in maritemall causes, and besides hath placed you among the nobles, and in the good grace and fauour of your prince. Wherefore you are so much the more to be carefull to restore the house of your decaied for stathers to their ancient honor and nobilitie, which in this later age hath beene obscured, abiding the time by you to be restored to their first and primer state: which you are not onelie taught by their old and good examples, but also by the ensignes of their and your nobilitie. For the suffice, being an instrument of trauell and labour, do aduertile you, that you are one of the sonnes of Adam, borne to walke in a vocation, and therein to be a profitable member in the durch of God, and in maintenance of the common societie: which when you behold and looke vpon, you must so endeauour your selfe, even as Agasthocles king of Syracusa, whose cuppords, though they were well sumited with great stores and varieties of whe have to be the house, to the sum of the sum of the sum o depend, knowing that a hard judgement abideth for fuch as be in authoritie, if they judge not vorightlie, and do you must so endeaour your felfe, euen as Agathocles king of Syracusa, whose cupbords, though they were well furnished with great store and varietie of rich plate, yet he thought not the same sufficientile fraughted, vales he had also his earthen pitchers and store cups, in which he viced to drinke, to teach & remember him in the middle of his roialitie, to be mindfull of his origin estate and dutie.

The white colour or filuer meetall dooth teach vote you vertue, finceritie & godlinesse. For as filuer is a most excellent meetall and next water gold excelling the colour of the colour

Palingenius.

Fulils, instruments of labours.

Agathocles.

The white colour or filter mettall dooth teach vnto you vertue, finceritie & godlinesse. For as silter is a most excellent mettall, and next vnto gold excelling all others, and with which for the excellencie thereof, the Lord God would have his tabernacle and his temple to be adorned and beautified with vessels and ornaments thereof, and as the white colour, if it be spotted and foule, dooth lose his grace: even so it teacheth you to be aman of an honest and of a godlie conversation, to lead a life in all vprightnesse, without reprodu and disgrace: and that you should be serviceable to God and your countrie in all good actions; and therewith also (which by the gulie colour is meant) you be bold and valiant for the defense of your countrie, and for the safetie thereof to spend both life and goods, that you should be beneficiall to all men, hurtfull and iniurious to no man. And such kind of men were your ancestors, who for the same were beloued and honoured, and their names for ever registred in immortall same and memorie. And so shall it be with you, if you doo the like, and follow their steps and examples, God shall blest you, & you shall prosper & storist as were your ancestors; the whole people shall speake good of you, the honour of your house shall be restored, & your talent shall be augmented & increased, & all things shall go well with you. But to returne where we less. When I had waded as far as I could in the discourse of this historie, according to such as the such as a su

tich instructions as partie by my selfe, but more by other mens helps, I had collected and gathered; and thought to have continued the same from the death of King Henrie the eight, vnto these presents: it came vnto my mind and I thought it verie expedient, to make a new review of that, which by others had beene done in the internal betweene Cambrens; and my dooings, wherein I sound great paines had beene taken, and that the authors had well deserved great praises and commendations. And yet in this they were much to be blamed, that all of them were beholding vnto Giraldus, and not one of them would yeeld that curtesse either to publish his historic, or vsing the same to acknowledge it. For some milliking both method and phrase, framed it into another forme, and penned it in a more lostie stille; and vnder that colour haue attributed vnot hemselves the honour and fruits cambrens. The ingrate-standard many doings. In which, their discourtesse was the more because they injured so no ble and woorthing a strength of the strength of the strength of the description. or ving the same to acknowledge it. For some milliking both method and phrase framed it into another forme, and penned it in a more lostic stile; and vnder that colour haue attributed vnto themselues the honour and fruits of another mans doings. In which, their discourtesie was the more, because they injured so noble and worthing a personage. For Gradus was a noble man by birth, he being the sonne vnto Mauricius, the sonne vnto Giraldus de Windsor, and to his wife the ladie Nesta, daughter to the great Roesius prince of south Wales. He was from his youth brought vp in learning, and proued veric well learned in all good letters both divine and likewise humane: and by prosession he was a man of the clergie, and lived by the patrimonie of the durch. He was chapleine to king Henrie the second, and to king John his sonne, and both of them he attended in their iorneis into stelland, and at the request and commandement of the king the father, he wrot the historie of this land according what he saw and knew to be true. The more noble then that this man was by birth, the more reuerend in calling, the more painfull in tratels, and the better learned he was: even so much the more is their sault, that will borrow of him and not acknowledge it, nor thinke themselues beholding vnto him. For as Plane saith, Internippadoris est sate in a man on a second better, and benefited. I know it hath beene an old vsage in all ages, and among all the ancient writers, both Gracians & Latinists, that they would borrow of other mens writings, and inlarge their owne therewith: as Plato did of Socrates and Pythagoras, Aristotle out of Plato, Cicero of them both; and so likewise others: and these men would not onelic consess the same and other mens writings, and inlarge their owne therewith: as Plato did of Socrates and Pythagoras, Aristotle out of Plato, Cicero of them both; and so likewise others: and these men would not onelic consessed as a counted to be some part of recompense, but also they accounted their owne doings to be somether whic

The genealo-gie of Giraldus.

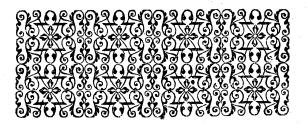
fhould it be so among thristians, especiallic among them of the highest profession, Non profitering of quos profecerint.

But leauing euerie man to himselse, for as much as all historics are to be doone with all sinceritie & truth, whild in this cannot be so well doone, ynlesse the first writer and author of this historic of Ireland haue his place: I haue thought good to publish and set footh Giraldus his owne workes as they are, which, leauing all other translations, I haue as faithfullie translated as the historic requireth, and in as sit an English phrase as is most meete and conquire some further opening, for the better understanding of the reader; I haue suborced and added to cuerie diapter (so requiring) such notes and observations, as he shall be therewith the better instructed and satisfied. This thing thus by me doone, together with so much as I my selfe haue penned from the death of king Henrie the course of some interest which although it maic seeme to be verie imperfect, and to want that fulnesse as the course of some name yeares might afford; or that some things maie be misreported and set downe, otherwise than the truth is, or that some things maie be mistaken, &c: let this be imputed vnto them, through whose default the same is so befallen; for manie things were promised and little performed; and some, who had and haue an interest in the matter, haue refused and would do nothing. But for my selfe, according to such instructions and collections as are come to my hands, I haue after the method and nature of an historic, most sincerclie and faithfullie set downe what is materiall and worthic the writing. And for as much as your selfe was a partie and a docern some part of the Desimonds wars, in which you were a painfull and a faithfull seruitor, and therefore can give some post of the Desimonds wars, in which you were a painfull and a faithfull seruitor, and therefore can give some post of the Desimonds wars, in which you were a painfull and a faithfull seruitor, and therefore can give some post of

1 5 8 6.

Your L. verie good friend and alie at commandement,

IOHN HOOKER,



The first preface of Giraldus Cambrensis vnto his historie of the conquest of Ireland.

Morsomuch as in our Topographie we haue at large set foorth and described the site of the land of Ireland, the natures of sundrie things therein conteined, the woonderous & strange prodigies which are in the Jame, and of the first origin of that nation, even from the first beginning pontill this our time: it resteth, that at the request of sundrie men, and of ne of great estate, we do now in a particular volume declare & fet forth the conquest of the same land in these our daies, together with the noble acts & gests therein doone. For if we have well discouered the old & ancient times long before vs, how much more Should we doo that which we have seene, and for the most part are witnesses thereof, & which are yet in our fresh & perfect memorie? Our Topographie discouereth the things done in times past and long ago; but this present historie intreateth of the things presentie doone, and in our daies. But me thinketh I see some man to shrinke op the nose, and as it were to snuffe, because I have written all things so plainelie and evidentlie; and therfore in great scorne he reacheth the booke to one, 3 with as great distaine casteth it to another. But let him know this, that I have now written this chieflie for the laie people, and for such princes as be not of greatest learning, and are therefore desirous to have things to be ottered in such a plaine and sensible speech as they may best understand the same. For whie, most plaine terms are most meet to be veed, when the noble acts of noble men & worthie servitors are to be published and set soorth to the notice and knowledge of all men . For this cause therefore have I written this historic in as plaine & sensible maner as I can (leaving as much as may be) the darke & obscure maner of writing veed in times past. And for somuch as everie age hath his peculiar manner, Thave according to the mind of the philosopher (whose aduise is, that the lives of the old men, and the pleasant speeches of young menshould be received and followed) Thave (Isaie) of purpose written in that order and phrase of speech as now is most in vre . For sith that words are but messengers of a mans mind, and given onelie to that end he should without close covering and couching plainelie disclose his mind and meaning: I have purposelie indeuored my selfe, that seeing what others doo not see, and knowing what others doo not understand, I might so write as I might of all men be understood. For whie, Seneca saith: It is better to be dumbe and not to speake at all, than so to speake as not to be understood, so that the speech be framed in such phrases of onder as are most meet to be vsed, of with the wife and learned do most affeet. But for somuch as some men haue maliciouslie and slanderouslie depraued my Topographie, I have thought good by the waie here to interlace a few words in defense therof. All men generallie concerning the beginning of a good or a learned matter, doo confider and have respect speciallie to three things; the first is, the author of the thing, then the matter it selfe, and lastlie, the ordering and well handling of the thing so begun. Concerning the first and last of the se three, the envious man being afraid to otter his malice, even against his will gives praise & commendation to both. But yet as a staged man can not alwaies dissemble and cloke himselfe, so this man, who to have his will over me & to deprave me, inveigheth against the second point, thinking and meaning by reproduing me to be a lier therein, to condemne all the rest; he obiecteth therefore and laieth to my charge the strange prodigies which I wrote, namelie how the woolfe spake and talked with a priest; of the man that in the hinder parts was like to an ox; of a woman that had a beard like a man; and a man like an horse; of a gote & a lion, which resorted and accompanied with a woman. But who so misliketh hereof, let him readin the booke of Numbers, The shall find that Balaams affe spake and reprodued his maister. Let him examine the lives of the fathers, and he shall learne how that a satyre in the wildernesse did talke with Anthonie the heremite; and how Paule the heremite was fed in the desert by a rauen. Let him read also the workes of Jerome, the Exameron of Ambrose, and the dialog of Gregorie. Let him likewise read saint Augustine his booke of the The first preface.

citie of God, especiallic the xv. and xxi. bookes, which are full of strange prodigies and woon ders: let him read Isodorus in the xi. booke of his Etymologies, concerning woonders, his xy. booke of beasts, & his xvi. booke of pretious stones, and of their vertues; let him also read Valerius Maximus, Trogus Pompeius, Plinius, and Solinus, & in euerie of these he shall find manie things which he may mislike and thinke to be vntruths, & so condemne the residue of all the writings of so noble and woorthie men. But let him be better aduised, & consider well, how that as S. Ierome faith, there are manie things conteined in the scriptures which seeme to be incredible, and to carie no truth in them, and yet neuerthelesse are most true. For whie, nature dooth not, nor can preuaile against the Lord of nature: and therfore euerie creature ought not loth, but to reverence, and have in great admiration the works of God. & as S. August. faith, How can that be against nature which is doone by the will of God? Bicause the will of so great a creator is the nature and beginning of everie thing created. A portent then or amonster is not against nature, but against it which proceedeth from nature. And therfore as it is not impossible to God to orderne and creat what natures or things he listeth; no more is it impossible to him to alter and change into what forms he listeth the things alreadie created. And yet I would not that euerie thing by me written, should foorthwith be credited and received as an vndouted truth: for whie, I my selfe do not so firmlie beleeue of them, as of things most certaine and true, sauing of such things which by experience I know to be true, and which also euerie other man may by proofe so find it to be. For as for all other things , I so account of them, that I neither do nor will stand either in the deniall or affirmation of them. The iewellers & such as have, & be acquainted with the pretious stones come out of India, do not so strangelie think or have admiration of them, as they who never saw them afore: & yet they having had once experience of them, do the lesse muse & wonder at the strangenes of them. For whie, the dailie ve taketh awaie all strangenes & admiration; and everie thing be it never so strange & maruellous at the first, yet by dailie viewing of them they wax to be contemned and the lesse esteemed:euen as the Indians themselues do litle value or esteeme their commodities, which we do so much maruell & wonder at. S. Augustine therfore vpon the gospell, how the water was turned into wine hath these words: Maruellous great is the power of God in the creation of the heaven Searth, Sof the governing of the same; S as great it is to see how the raine water, by the nature of the vine is turned into wine, and how of litle and small seeds great trees and fruits do spring and grow; and yet because we do see it this daie as it were by anaturall course, we do lesse esteeme & consider of them. But yet God aboue the common course hath reserved to himselfe some small things, which seeme to be of no value, to the end that his power might appeare in greater things, and drive vs the more to confider of them. Wherefore let the malicious & enuious be contented, on not to enuie against the Lord of nature, who of purpose in the fight of man hath doone manie things against the common course of nature: because it Jhould be apparant, & euerie man Jhould well see , that Gods power far exceedeth mans reach Throwledge, This divinitie surpasseth mans understanding. Cassiodorus therfore saith: It is a great point of knowledge in man to understand & have the knowledge, that God can and dooth such great and woonderfull things as do far exceed and passe the capacitie of understanding of man.For God alwases of purpose dooth transpose and alter his great things into strange forms, that albeit men may in some respect discerne the same: yet fullie they can not comprehend the same . If then the old and ancient writers have diligentlie and with good allowance noted & registred in their writings the strange productes in their times; whie are we doing the like (vnlesse the whole world be set in wickednesse) maligned and backbitten? For if there be anie new and strange thing in our worke, and which heretofore hath not beene heard of: yet let not the malicious & spitefull man forthwith, without further allowance condemne and depraue it, but rather suffer to remaine as it is. For as the poet saith: If our forefathers had rejected (as we do) all new things, what shuld now be old? Let him therfore cease to blame or carpe at new things, because in course of time they ceasse to be new, and wax to be old. He may therfore take his pleasure, and depraue the same, & yet no doubt our posteritie will allow therof. He may do what he can to hurt it, yet they will accept and read it. He may do what he can to disprooue and blame it, yet will they love it. He may do what

he can to reiest it, yet will they receive and allow of it.

NAUTONAUTORION

The second preface of Giraldus Cambrensis vnto the noble Earle

of Poitiers.

Auing beene eftfoones, and by manie requested, to register and write the historie of fuch noble acts doone in our times, which I have either feenemy feste, or have heard it crediblie reported; I was for my excuse woont to alleage the wickednesse of the time, wherein, by reason of the excessive riotous field which so aboundeth, all things are so farre out of order, and men so are full to pamper up the bodie, that the mind, which of his nature is free, is now in captiuitie, and cannot have his libertie. Nevertheleffe, confidering, and diligentlie aduifing with my felfe, how necessarie the knowledge of those things will be to our posteritie, and how nothing is more pernicious and hurtfull to a good wit, and an honest disposition, than to lie wallowing in idlenesse and sloth; I did at length with much adoo yeeld my selfeto those requests, and resolued my selfe to satisfie the same. But yet what can be more presumptuous than to write when time serueth not, & leisure wanteth? Or to desire our owne bookes to be commonlie read, and yet at no leisure to read our selues? Or that we should be subject to the examination and sifting of a malicious reader, and an enuious judge, and yet we not at leisture to examine our selues? Tullius, the sounteine and welspring of all eloquence, being on a time requested to make an oration, is said he did excuse himselfe, because he had not studied nor read the daie before. If so famous a man, and the father of all eloquence, did so esteeme the benefit of studieng, what shall others of a farre meaner estate and learning thinke of themselues? For true it is, the wit of manifit be not reuiued with continuall and dailie reading waxeth faint and dull, and with reading it is increased and nourished as it were with a naturall food and sustenance. For as the full barns are soone spent, if they be not new stored; and the stocke of great wealth and treasure soone wasted & consumed, if it be not repared; euen so the knowledge of man being not dailie renewed by reading and perusing of other mens works dooth soone perish and decaie. We are compact and doo consist of two natures, the one temporall, the other eternall, and having respect to both, are to norish both, the earthie part with things transitorie and earthie according to the time, the heavenlie partwith things perpetuall and euerlasting. The bodie for the time hath his cares, but the mind, which of his nature is free, and which cannot be shut vp, and as it were imprisoned, is neither vnder the power of vs, nor of anie others; let it therefore inioie his owne and proper libertie which to it apperteineth, and inioie the freedome to it belonging. As for the outward man, let him wander and straie, and be troubled about manie things, let him follow vaine and trifling toies, and doo all things as will lusteth, & lethim be subject to the miserable condition of the fleth: but the inward man, which as the kernell is inclosed in the shell, let him inioie that right and privilege which God hath given vnto it; let it be so warded and desended, that being in troubles, it be not troubled; and being solitarie, it be not destituted. God and the king have each of them their severall power and empire over vs: the king hath power onelie over the bodie, but the secret and incomprehensible part within vs, namelie the foule, God onelie possessen, and he alone knoweth and searcheththe fame. For it is a most noble and excellent thing, passing all other the gifts of God vnder heauen, being incomprehenfible, and yet comprehending all things, and most euidentlie declaring the diuine power which is in it. For by a certeine naturall agilitie which is in him he comprehendeth all the foure corners of the world, and in a maruellous fecret celeritie dooth difcerne the whole world and all that therein is: it hath the knowledge and vnderstanding of all arts, sciences & knowledges: he is onlie knowen to him that is vnknowen, seene of him that is not seene, & coprehended of him which is incomprehensible. God forbid therefore, that the continual exercises of this soule should be hindered with vaine and worldlie cares, whereby things for a time omitted or fet aside should perish or be forgotten: for what is the bodie to the soule but a heavie burthen, a paine, & as it were a prison, which though not holding him, yet hindering him? For what the shell is to the kernell, the fame is the flesh to the spirit, both of them carrieng his owne impediment and burthen. Wherefore right noble now earle of Poitiers, but shortlie which shall be king of England, & duke of Normandie, having the force and helpe of this, I have yeelded my felfe, and have now written and drawen out the historie of the conquest of Ireland, and the subduing of the barbarous nation of the fame in these our daies, and have dedicated the same vnto your highnesse: that by recording the gifts thereof, and seeing how your father did grow in renowme and honor, so the same also may increase in you and as you are knowen to be the right heire of your fathers inheritance, so you may fucceed him also in his vertues and victories to your great honor. I have hitherto travelled in this rude and rough matter after a grosse manner, but hereafter more

d in this rude and rough matter after a groffe manner, but hereafter more fullie, and in better order to be expressed and set foorth, as time and yeares shall increase, and as I shall be more at full instructed.



To his most reuerend lord and beloued in Christ, Iohn the noble and worthie

king of England, lord of Freland, duke of Normandie and of Aquitaine, and earle of Aniou: Giraldus offereth this his simple worke, and wisheth all health both of bodie and of soule, and a prosperous successe in all things

according to his hearts. desire.



T pleased your noble and excellent father king Henrie, to send me being then attendant upon him, ouer with you into Ircland, where when I had noted sundrie notable things, and which were strange and unknowne to other nations: then at myreturne, I made a cellection and choise of the chiefest matters therein: and within three yeares, I made my booke of Topographie, of the woonders of Ircland, and of the description of that land, doone in and for the honor of your father; who having good liking, and being well pleased with those my travels (for why, he was a prince (a thing rare in curtimes) verse well learned) his desire and pleasure was, I should also write out the historie of the last conquest of the same land, made by him and his. Which renewing my

former trauels I did: but neither it, nor these my paines were considered. For vertue commonlic is more commended than rewarded. But because by negligence, or rather by reason of the great businesse, wherewith I was incumbred: I had almost forgotten the site, nature, and maner of the west parts of the said land, which I had not seene a long time. I thought it good to ouerrun, and peruse againe my said worke, and being better corrected, to dedicat the same unto your highnesse. Wherein our historie taketh his beginning from the time that Dermon mac Morogh prince of Leinster was driven out of his countrie by his owne men, and sled to your father then being in Aquitane: most humblie craving, and at length obtaining aid and succor, untill your first comming into that land, when I was with you: and have faithfullie declared in order, what things were there doone by everie of these noble men and capteins, which then passed their seven from the sirst to the last; and what good or evil was doone by them.

In which historie as in a glasse, a man may most apparantlie and evidentlie see and discerne truth; who, and what they were which deserved the most honor in this conquest; whether the first adventurers out of the diocesse of saint Dauids my cousins and kinsmen; or they of the diocesse of Landass, who came next, and who in verie deed are gentlemen, but more in name than valiant in act, and who upon the good successe of the first, hoping to have the like themselves, went over : or else they which passed over the third time, who were well and fullie furnished at all points with good store of armor, vittell, and other necessaries. Surelie they deserved well, who gave the first adventure: and they also are much to be commended, which continued the same: but they deserved best, who went over last. For they not onelie did establish and confirme the authoritie and dooings of the first and second, but also made a sinall end, and brought the whole countrie into subjection. But alas, by reason of their too hastie returning from thense, and of the unnaturall warres and rebellion of the sonnes against their father, the land could not be brought to a perfect order , nor the things begun could have his full perfection . Wherefore , o nobleking, despise not the great trauels and labors of your father, nor yet my poore paines herein. Doo not impart your honor and glorie to the unworthie and unthankefull: neither for the coueting of an Iland of silver to hazard the losse of one of gold: the one far passing and exceeding the other in value. For the gold of Arabia and the filuer of Achaia doo both fill amans cofer alike: but the one more in price and value than the other . Be fides this, there is another thing which might per suade you to be mindfull, and haue some regard of the land of Ireland. It hath pleased God and good fortune to send you manie children, both naturall, and also legitimat; and more hereafter you may have. It were therefore verie good as you may, to appoint and place in those two kingdomes, two of your sonnes to be governors and rulers of them: and under them to appoint a great number of your men, and endow them liber allie with great livings and livelehoods; and especiallie in Ireland, which as set is rude, unnurtured, and nothing to the purpose by our men inhabited. But if (o be that neither for the increasing of your owne honor, the inriching of your treasurie, nor for the aduancing of your children, you will have respect to your reasure of Ireland, yet have some consideration of your poore veterans and old servitors, who have most faithfullie and trustilie serued both you and your father, and by whose seruice that realme of Ireland was first conquered; and is yet kept and reteined; and yet are supplanted by such yoong nouices and yoonkers as are of late gone

The epistle dedicatorie.

thither, to inioy and to succeed into the fruits of other mens trauels, fortune better fauoring them, than vertue commending. And the follie of these men is growne to such a pride and arrogancie, that as it is said, they are greatlic to be suspected to aspire and to where the whole seigniorie and dominion to them.

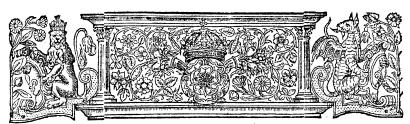
sclues, which it lieth you vpon to see to be quailed and abated.

And in following the feyour Irish affaires, you are to have great care and regard, that when so ever you doo march and take anie iourneie, either for the vanquishing of the enimie, or for the reuenging of anie wrongs and iniuries; that you have alwaies an eie backeward, and leave all things behind you in such safe and fure order, that no danger thereof doo infue unto you. For why, the houshold enimies be alwaics norking of wiles, and waiting for an advantage; and doo but looke when time and place may Serve for them: rebell: and therefore you are to have great care and good regard, that you doo leave all things behind you in safetie, and out of danger: and that you doo not suffer the serpent to lurke and hide himselfe, as it were in your bosome: nor to nourish and rake up the fire as it were in your lap, the same being recase to breake out into great flames: for this shall not onelie be counted a great retchlesnesse, but also a great fillie in you, and loyour great reproch. It is verie expedient therefore to euerie prince, that in his land he doo not foster and mainteine anie such Hydras and venemous serpents. And for princes of Ilands, it should be good for them, that they in their dominions and realmes have in no side anie other marches than the seas it selfe. But if it be so, that you will not be persuaded for anie of the foresaid reasons, to have regard or remorse to your saidland, being so oftentimes desolated, and almost otterlie destroied; that it may be reduced to some better order and state, whereby it may be more profitable to your selfe and which yours: then I praise you to pardon vs Welshmen, notwith standing we be of nature somewhat rash; and give vs leave to put you in remembrance touching which your father, for the advancement of himselfe and of his posteritie, did promise to pope Adrian, when he sirst procured licence and libertic to inuade and to conquer the realme of Ireland. The first is, that you would set up the true religion, and reforms the church of God in that realme: and then, as you doo now in England, so also in Ireland, you doo cause to be paied out of enerie house the Peter pence, according to the tenure of the Said privilege by your father obteined, and which remaineth in the treasurie of Winchester, that you maie so deliver your fathers soule, and satisfic his promise. For why, as Salomon saith: A lieng toong beseemeth not a king, especiallie when he shall live to God, and being a creature, wittinglie to offend his creator; for that is an offense verie heinous and dangerous.

And for somuch as you are to answer before the high and strict judge, having nothing for your excuse and desense than as before is said, for the so much innocent bloud by your father and your selfe alredie shed, and which hereafter mate be shed: you ought to be verie carefull and diligent, that Gods anger maie be appeased, and your fathers promise be performed: that God being thus honored for this conquest, you maie have a prosperous successe, and all yours in this world: and also after this life inivie that perpetuall felicitie, which surpasseth all ioie and felicitie. And because you have not kept nor performed thefe promises, these two defects by Gods iust indgement are befallen unto you. The one is, that this conquest could neuer be brought to his full effect and perfection . The other is , that they which were the cheefest and most principall servitors in this conquest, namelie Robert Fitzstephans, who first entercdin-to the land, and made wase unto others, Henrie of monte Moris, Reimond, Iohn de Courcie, and Meilerius, neuer had anie lawfull issue of their bodies begotten. And no maruell: for not with standing the happie and fortunat successe of the conquest, the poore cleargie was neuer considered, but were driven to beg; and the cathedrall churches which were richlie indued with great livelehoods, possessions, and territories, were altogither wasted and spoiled. These things a good prince of his honor ought to see to be redressed, and to provide that the cleargie, who are and ought faithfullie to asisf and serve him in all weightic causes of councell and importance, should be releeved, and inioie the honor unto them belonging, and that small portion which was promised unto them; that God in some things maie be appeafed and fatisfied for these cruell and bloudie conquests. And moreouer, under your patience we saie also, that for the perpetual memorie of this conquest made by Englishmen, and because in processe of time, and course of yeares, there happeneth great change of lords, and manie times the inheritance commeth to such as are furthest removed in kinred, that therefore there be a year elie tribute rated and yeelded vnto the king, to be paied in gold or such commodities as that land best yeeldeth: and that this be comprised in a publike instrument, that the whole world maie know how the realme and land of Ireland is subject

to the crowne of England. And for somuch as things doone, being put andregistred in writing, and to be read by an interpretor, are not sensible, nor so well understanded of the hearer, as when he maie or dooth read the same in his owne speech and languages it were verie good (in my opinion) that some learned man, and skilfull in the French toong, should translate the same

into French.



SYLVESTER GIRAL-

dus Cambrensis, his vaticinall

historie of the Conquest of Ireland.

The figures of (1)(2)(3) oc: fet before certeine words of the chapters, are to be conferred with the like in the scholies or interpresations following euerie chapter, whereby the authors meaning is opened: this by the wase of a necessarie caucat to the

How Dermon Mac Morogh king of Leinster fled out of his countrie unto Henrie the fecond king of England for aid and fuccour.

Chap.1.



Ermon (1) Wac Mozogh prince of (2) Leinster & gor 1 uernour of the fift part or postion of Ireland, did in our time pollelle & inioie the east part of the land, which boze bereth and lieth to wards England: being diffeuered from the same by 2

the maine leas. This man from his verie youth, and first entrie into his kingdome, was a great oppello; of his gentlmen, and a cruell tyrant ouer his nobles: which beed buto him great hatred and malice . We. fices this, there befell to him an other milchefe: for Dioxide prince of (3) Peth was gone in a iornie, leaning his wife the daughter of Dmolaghlin behind, in a certeine Iland in Weth: there to remaine and taric butill his returne. She (I faie) and this Dermon hav beene long inamoured and in love the one 30 with the other: and the watching a time how to have love and luft satisfied, taketh the advantage of hir bushands absence, and peloeth hir selse to be rausshed, bicause the would be raushed: for by hir owne procurement and intilings, the became and would neds be a prece but othe precer. Such is the variable tlickle nature of a woman, by whome all mildhiefes in the world (for the most part) do happen and come, as mate appeare by (4) Parcus Antonius, and by the destruction of (5) Trote. King Drotte being ab 40 vertifed hereof, was forthwith marvellouslie troubled in a great choler, but moze griened for hame of the fact than for forrow or hurt; and therefore is fullie determined to be avenged : and forth with affems bleth all his people and neighbors, as also procured into his aid and for his helpe Kothorike king of (6) Connagh and then monarch of all Ireland. The people of Leinster considering in what distresse their prince was, and how on everie five he was be-

fet of his enimies, they also call to mind the old fores and griefes, which they of long time had diffembled: \$ to be avenged a wzecked thereof, they make league and become friends with their enimies, and otterlie leave and forfake their king. Dermon læing hims felfe thus forfaken and left ochitute, and that for tune frowned byon him (for he had offentimes incountered with his enimies and ever had the worlf) octermined at length, as to his last refuge to sie o. uer the leas, and to læke for some better chance. By this event and lequele of this man, as also by manie other like examples it appeareth, that it is better for a prince to rule ouer a people, which of a good will and love do obeie him, than over fuch as be froward and Aubboine. This (6) Pero well felt and (7) Domitias nus well knew (8) and Henrie duke of Saronie and Bautre well tried. It is more necessarie and expedient for a prince to be rather beloued than feared. In ded it is good to be feared; so that the feare do proced rather from a good will than of compultion. For that source is outward to one lie and to the shew los ued and received, the fame of confequence must be feared; but what soener is feared, that is not forth with loned. Wherefore feare must be so tempered with loue, that neither a remile god will do war into a colonesse, neither feare grounded byon a rath info lencie be turned and become tyzannie. Loue did inlarge the empire of (9) Augustus, but seare thortes ned the life of (10) Julius Cefar. Well, Pac Pozogh following fortune, and yet in hope that once agains the will turne hir there, having wind and writer at will, taketh they, passeth over the seas, and went buto Benrie the fecond king of England, and most humblie and earnesslie prateth his helpe and succor. Tho being then in the remote places in France and Aquitaine, and bufied in great and weightie affaires; yet most courteouslie be received him and liberallie rewarded him. And the king having at large and one derlie heard the causes of his erile and of his repaire buto him, he take his oth of allegiance and fwees him to be his true vallall and lubied : and there vpon granted and gave him his letters patents in maner and forme as followeth. Henrie king of England, Benrie the 2. buke of Pormandie and Aquitaine, and earle of Anthing of Engiou, buto all his fubients, Englithmen, Bormans, lands file Scots, and all other nations and people being his and letter. lubieds fendeth græting. Whenfocuer thefe our lets ters thall come buto you, know pe that we have recelued Dermon prince of Leinster into our protece

 $\mathbf{C}_{\mathsf{hap},\mathsf{L}}$ life, than before commended for his protecte and

tion, grace, and fauour : therefore tholocuer within our turisdiction will aid and helpe him, our trustie lubica, for the recourrie of his land, let him be allured of our favour and licence in that behalfe.

(1) Dermon is in Latine Dermitius, and Pozogb is in Latine Murchardes, and are meere Irith names: and for a difference given commonlie to a child at his birth or christening: Pac Porogh is a word compounded of Pac which is a sonne and of Pozogh 1 the proper name of a man, and fo Hac Porogh is the fonne of Pozogh: the Latine name is Murchardides, which is to face De Murcharde, og of Mozogh: accosding to the Welfh phase in which the word ap is vsed in the same sense. And this is common to the Irish 4 Wielth, for they call not anie man by the name of his familie or nation as is bled in England: but by the name of difference given to his father, as in this example : Dermon being Pozoghs fonne is called Dermon Pac Porogh. But this name of Pac Po 20 rogh is fince turned and become the name of a familie of nation: for by reason that this Hac Porogh was a noble and valiant man above all the rest of his nation in his dates: therefore his fequele and poferitie haue ener fince and do pet kope that name. Some are of the mind that Hozogh and Haurice are one name: but the Latine differences impor teth the contrarie, and the one is a mære Frish name, and the other a Welly, and bosowed out of Totales.

(2) Leinster in Latine Lagenia, is one of the flue 30 parts or portions of Ireland (for into lo manie is the whole land divided.) It lieth boon the east feas, and extendeth in length from the further point of the territorie of Dublin, which is at the river of the Boine by Drogheda in the north, buto the river of the Sprie which fleteth by the citte of Waterford in the fouth. In it are one and thirtie cantreds other wife named baronies or hundreds. It was fome times divided into five, but now into feaven coun, 40 ties, that is, Dublin, Kildare, Catherlogh, Kilkennie, Merford, Lear, now called the quænes countie, and Offalie called the kings countie. There are elfo in it one archbilhop; namelie Dublin, and foure bishopiths; that is, kildare, Fernes, Leighlin, and Marie.

(3) Peth in Latine Media is one of the five pop tions of Ireland according to the first division. It is the least portion being but of eighteine cantreds, but pet the best and most fertile, and lieth for the most 50 in the end Erole was taken, spoiled, and also der part all within the English pale : and ever since the conquest of king Denrie the second, hath beine sub. ted and obedient to the English lawes and governe ment : and bicause it lieth as it were in the nausl og bowels of the land, it taketh the name accordinglie, being called Media, which is the middle. In it is but one bishop and the suffragan, and binder the primat orarchbishop of Ardmach. His læis at Erim and his house at Arbraghin. There was no prince sole governour of this as was of the other portions: bis 60 and became to horrible in all discoute wantons cause it was alwaies allowed allotted to the monarch, whome they called Maximum regem, 02 Regem Hibernia, as a furplus towards his dict.

(4) Parcus Antonius was a famous and a noble Romane, excelling in wildome, knowledge and learning all the Romane princes in his daies; as ab fo a verie noble and a valiant man in the fields, has uing atteined to great bidoxies and atchived to lundrie conqueffs. And pet not with franding being maried to Cleopatra quæne of Egypt, he so boted byon hir, and was so bewitched in love of hir: that leaning all his wonted manners, he confunce his trhole time in his companie, and in the end was more infamous for his vitious, dilordered, and lofe

pertuc. (5) Trota called also Ilion, was an ancient and a famouscitie in Alia the lelle, and lituated in the prouince of Darbania, builded by Tros the fonne of bing Cricthonius, who called it after his owne name. It was a citie berie large, frong, and rich, and in those dates thought impregnable; & yet by means that Helena was rauthed, the same was in the end o btterlie subverted and destroied: the historie is this. Ditamus the king of Trote had by his wife weed, ba'a fonne named Parts of Alexander : he breamed on a time that Dercurius Could bying bute him the the ladies, Tenus, Juno, & Pinerua, that he thould give his judgement which was the fairest and most beautifull of them. Then Tenus, to have the fudge. ment for hir and in hir behalfe, did promise him that he should have for the same the fairest woman in all Grece. Act long after , Paris being in bis fa, thers court in Troie, there were great speches made of Helena and of hir palling beautie. She was wife to Denelaus king of Sparta in Grece. Where bpon Paris calling to memorie his former dreame, and also inflamed with a fernent delire to see so faire a ladie, maketh preparation both of thips and of men to faile into Greece. Holobeit, some wite that he was fent by the king his father in an amballage to king Menelaus: but thether it was fo ornot, certeine it is he went thither, and was received with all courteffe, and had his interteinement in king Menelaus houle. Paris having viewed and beholden quene Helena, he was not so much war med before byon the onelie report of hir, as now inflamed wift hir paffing forme and beautie : and taking the advantage of king Penelans absence, perforce taketh Helena, spoileth the kings house, and carrieth all awaie with him. Penelans at his returne home, being dismated at so sudden a change and chance, and greeved with fuch an inturie, fer deth his mellenger first to Paris, and then his amballadours to king Priamus for rellitution and amends. But when no intreatie could take place noz requelts be heard, the Orecians not minding to beare with fuch an injurie, do all consent to be anenged thereof: and therefore with all their force and power do prepare to give warres buto Troie, and make choice of Agamemnon the kings brother to be their capteine. The warres were cruell and long, and endured for the space of ten yeares, but

6 Pero, whose name at the first was Claudius Domitius, was in his pouthfull peares well dispos fed to good letters, given to honest exercises. And Claudius the emperor having god liking of him, adopted him to be emperour, and married him bu to his daughter. After the death of Claudius, he bes ing emperour, did governe well enough the first five yeares: but thenlefouth he wared lo victous, neffe, prodigalitie, monfiruous lecherie, couetoul nesse, and all other most wicked vices: that he law med to be borne to the destruction of the wole world. And in the end he was and became to odi ous to the whole world, that it was decreed by the fenat, and fentence given, that he thould be bear ten and intimed to death. Which thing he perceining, fled out of Kome, and finding none that would kill him, did runne himselfe thorough with his owne fword, fateng; Post wickedlic haue I lined, and most thamfullie thall I die.

7 Domitianus, the brother of Titus, and fonns of Telpalian the emperoes, was nothing like buto them, but altogither resembled 4 was of the nature and disposition of Pero: for at the first entrie into the empire, he did to his commendation sundie god acts, but in the end he became so wicked a man and so crued a typant, that he generallie was hated of all men, and adhorred of his owne familie, of whom some of them, to rid the common wealth from so wicked a member, did murther and kill him in his owne

(8) This Penrie was the sonne of Penrie the third of that name, and emperor of Kome, he was 10 king of the Komans in his fathers time, and emper rognert after bim. Dis father died, he being berie yong, and left him to the government of the empresse his mother ; who during his minoritie did rule and governe the empire in verie god order: but when he himfelfe came to the fole government , great dif fentions fell betweene him and his nobles, bicaute he contemned, despised, toppelled them. De gaue hima felfe to wantonnelle and pleasure, and little ellée, med the erecution of fulfice; by means thereof, he had manie entimies, tho fought what they might to depose him both of empire and of his life. The pope also and he were for the most part in continual des bates and frifes, and tho was the cheefe cause thic be was so overlet and hated of his nobles. And be, ing thus overmatched and in the hatred both of the tempozall and eccletiaticall effates, he for verie for rowlanguished and pined awaie, and so died.

(9) Augustus was the sonne of Daaufanus a les nator in Rome, who married Accia the daughter of Julius Cefar, and was first named Dataulanus Julius Cefar. Dis bucle hauing no fon, adopted him, made him his heire, and appointed him to be his fuccellog in the empire. After the death of the faid Juli us, the flate by reason he was so cruellie murthered, was marueloustie troubled and in great perils. But this Octanianus having atteined to fit in Julius Cefars feat, oid so prudentlie order and direct his go. nernement, that he did not onelie reduce and refroze the citie and empire of Rome to a quietnelle; but all 40 increased the same with the conquests of sundrie na. tions. Such also were his ercellent vertues in wife. dome, magnanimitic, courtelle, affabilitie, 4 liberalis tie, and such others; that all people were not onelie raulihed in love with him, but also came and relogied of all nations unto Kome, to vilit, fæ, and heare him. And having stablished the empire in quietnesse, inlarged it with manie nations, & increased unto him felfe the unfuerfall love of all people, the fenat gave him not onelie the name of Augustus, but gave but 50 tohim also the titles of the highest and greatest ho nois, and was called summus pontifix perpetuus dictator Opater patria, and yelded buto him the whole power and empire of the fole monarch of the woold, now repoling that in him alone, which refred before in the les nat and people of Rome. These be the fruites then appudent magistrat and a wife governour ruleth in love and governeth in wifedome.

(10) Julius Cefar was the sonne of Lucius Julino a noble Komane, and came and descended of the 60ancient house of the Julies, who were of the race of Aeneas: he was as noble a man as ever Rome brought fourth, and excellent in all respects: most valiant and fortunate in the warres, and verie prudent in the civill governement, verie well learned, and a notable ozatoz: he deserved well of his common wealth, for he inriched the same with the conquests wich he made oner fundzie nations. But his ambiflous mind and immoderate delire to reigne alone, and to be the fole monarch of the world, drowned all the good vertues which were in him, and for which all the nations feared him, the citizens of Konic hated him, and the fenators envised him: and in the end a conspiracie was made for the murthering of him,

and by the fenators executed. For he on a certeine date, bon occasion being come into the fenat house, and mistrusting nothing, although he wanted not sufficient warnings before given him, was there wounded in two and thirtie places to death, and so murthered.

The returne of Dermon Mac Morogh

from king Henrie through England, and of his abode at Bristow and other places in Wales:

Chap. 2.

Ermon Dac Hogory, haufing received great comfort and courtefie of the king, taketh his leave, and returned home, there through Existent. And albeit he had

ward through Grial and . And albeit he had beine verie honourablie and liberallie rewarded of the king: yet he comforted himfelfe more with the hope of goo successe to come, than with liberalitie res crived. And by his dailie forniong he came at length onto the noble towns of (1) Brittow, where bicause thing and botes did dailie repaire and come from out of Ireland, and he verie desirous to heare of the Cate of his people and countrie, did for a time lotorne and make his above : and whilest he was there he would oftentimes cause the kings letters to be openlie red, and did then offer great interfeinment, and promis fed liberall wages to all fuch as would helpe of ferue him; but it ferued not. At length Bilbert the fonne of Bilbert, earle of Cheptione (2) tame to fee him and to talke with him : and they is long had conferred togither, that it was agreed and concluded betweene them, that the erle in the next foring then following, Hould aid and helpe him: and in confideration thereof , the fato Dermon thould give him his onelie daughter and heire to wife, togither with his whole inheritance, and the fuccession into his kingdome. Thefe things orderlie concluded, Dermon Bac Bo. togh being delicous (as all others are) to le his natue rall countrie, departed and twhe his fourneie to wards S. Paulds head or frone(3) in fouth Wales : for from thence is the thortest cut ouer into Ereland, the same being not a dates failing, and with in a faire date a man may ben and difcerne. At this fame time Rice Fitzgriffith was diefe ruler under the king in those parties; and David the fecond, then bis thop of S. Daulos, had great pitie and compation bpon his diffrette, milerte, and calamitie.

Dermon thus languilling and lieng for pallage, comforted himfelfe as well as he might , sometime drawing and as it were breathing the afre of his countrie, which he famed to breath and finell, fornes times blewing and beholding his countrie, which in a faire date a man may ken and descrie. At this time Robert Kitzstechans under Rice had the governe. ment, was constable of Aberteffe the cheefe towne in Caretica (4) and by the treacherie and treason of his owne men was appehended, taken and delives red buto Rice, and by him was kept in palon that peares, but now delivered, opon condition he thould take part and foine with Briffith against the king. But Robert Fitzikephans, confidering with him felfe that on his fathers five (tho was a Pozman)he was the kings naturall lubied, although by his mo. ther the ladie Pella, daughter to the great Rice fitze griffith, he were colen germane to the faid Fitzgrif. fith, chose rather to aduenture his life, and to læke fortune abrove and in forcen countries, than to ha sard his faith, credit, and fame, to the finner, reproff, and infamie of himfelfe, and of his polleritie. At length by the earnest mediation and intercession of Danio then billiop of S. Danios, and of Paurice

13.y.

Fitzgeralo, which were his halfe brothers by the mothers live, he was let free and at libertie : and then it ivas agred and concluded betweene them and spac Mozogh, that he the fato Mac Mozogh Chould give and grant unto the faid Robert Fitzflephans, and Paurice Fitzgerald, the towns of (5) Wierford, with tivo (6) cantreds of land adjoining, & to their heires in fee for ever: and they in confideration thereof, promiled to aid and helpe him to recover his lands the nert fpzing then following : and to be then with him 10 without all faile if wind and weather fo ferned. Der. mon being wearie of his eriled life and diffrelled estate, and therfore the more desirous to draw home. inards for the recoverie of his owne, and for which he had so long travelled and sought abroad: he first ment to the church of S. Daulds to make his off. fons and praiers, and then the wether being faire, and wind god, he adventureth the feas about the middle of August; and having a merrie passage, he shortlie landed in his ingratefull (7) countrie: and with a 20 verie impatient mind, hazarded himfelfe among and through the middle of his enimies; and comming fafelie to (8) Fernes, he was verie honozablie received of the cleargie there ; tho after their abilitie did refresh and succour him : but he for a time dis fembling his princelie effate, continued as a privat man all that winter following among them.

(1) Briffow in the old time was named Ddera. afferwards Wenta, and now Briftolium, and fandeth boon the river Haumum which is nauigable, & flee teth into Seuerne or the Seuerne leas : in it there are two rodes, the one named kingrode, five miles distant from Bristow, in which the thips do ride. The other is named Hongrode, a place where the thips lie bedded, and this is the miles from Briffow . It franceth byon the bozders or confines of the pronince of Glocefterthire and Summerletthire: fome would have it to be in the marches and bnocr the principalitie, but in the old times it was parcell of the vallete of Bath, which was the metropole of Summerletihire. It is berie old, ancient and bono rable, and fometimes named but a tolone: but fince for befert and other god confiderations, honoured with the name and title of a citie, as also is made a feuerall province or countie of it felfe, being diffina from all others; bauing a maio; and albermen accos. ding to the ancient times, as allo two thiriffes according to the latter grants, by whome the same is directed and governed. It is the chefell emporium in that part of England, the inhabitants being for the most part merchants of great wealth, aduentures, and traffikes with all nations: great delings they have with the Camber people and the Irish nation, the one of them fall bordering boon them, and the other by reason of the necrenesse of the leas, and pleasantnesse of the river, dailie resozting by water to and from them.

(2) Cheptione is a market towne in Wiales, in that province named in old time Wenta, being now 60 bnder the principalitie of Wiales. In times past it was named Strigulia, whereof Kichard Strange bow being earle he toke his name, being called co-

mes Strigulensis.

(3) Daulos head or flone is the promontorie in well Wales, which lieth and reacheth furthell into the leas towards Ireland: and the same being a verie high hill, a man thall the more easilied iscerne in a faire daie the countrie of Wiersord that is the necret part of Ireland unto that part of Wales. Pot farre from this promontorie or point is the cathronal church of saint Daulos, which is the see of the bishop there it was and is called Peneus, and was in times past an archishoppike. But as it is written

in the annales of the fair church, that in the time of Achard Tarew and two of his predecesses bushops there, they were by the kings commandement made to yeeld, and submit themselves but o the metropolican lie of Tanturburie.

(4) Aberteife is an old ancient towne fianding upon the mouth of the river of Teife, and thereof it taketh his name, that is to fair the mouth of Teife, but now it is called Cardigan. The countrie about it was in times past named Caretica, but now Cardy ganthire, so Aberteife is Cardigan towne, and Caretica Cardiganthire.

(5) Weerford in Latine named Guesfordia, is nert after Dublin the chiefest towns in Leinster, it lich full byon the seas, but the hauen is a barred hauen and dangerous: from it is the shortest cut out of 3-reland into England, if you do touch and take land either at saint Dauids or at Misson.

- (6) A cantred (as Giraldus faith) is a word compounded of the British and of the Frish tongs, and conteineth so much ground as therein are one hundred willages: which in England is termed a hundred. Here is that it conteined there is dilages, e enerie village conteined eight plough lands. Other sate that a cantred conteined through lands. Other sate that a cantred conteined through lands and here sate towns hath eight plough lands and hone so sufficient pasture in enerie so, three hundred kine, and none so annote another; and enerie plough land conteineth sir sooze access of land Frish, and euserie Islish acce farre excedes the content of the common acce.
- (7) The place there Dermon landed is named Glassecaerge, it is a creeke of a bate lieng upon the open seas, and in the countie of Werford, sithence there was builded a monasterie which was and is bisolued.
- (8) Fernes is the lie and cathedrall durch of the bithop, ithole diocelle is the countie of Merford, it lieth niere in the midle of the pronince of Leinster, and was somtimes a durch well addred and mainteined, but now in great ruine and occaie, the bishop e chapiter not remaining there at all. Abere is all a trong fort of the princes, therein sometimes was kept a garrison at the princes charges, but now one lie a constable is placed therein, and he hath the sole charge thereof.

The going ouer and landing of Robert FitzStephans and of his companie in Ireland, and of the winning of the towne of Wexford,

Cap. 3.

A the meane time Robert Litzse mans, not bumindfull noz careleffe of his word and promile, prepareth and prontoeth all things in a readineffe, and being accome panied with thirtie gentlmen of feruice of his owne kinsfolks s* certeine armed men, and about the Thelion hundred of archers and formen, which were all of the other minist best chosen and piked men in Wates, they all thip and imbarke the incelues in the Cunotie barkes, and failing towards Ireland, they land about the car lends of Paie at the (1) Banne. Then was the old propelie of Merlin fulfilled, thich was, that A (2) knight biparted thould firft enter with force in arms a breake the bounds of Ireland. If you will but derstand the mysterie herof, you must have resped to his parents, for his father was a Porman and an Englithman, his mother the noble ladie pella was a Camber 02 a Britaine, in his companie also was Heruete of Pont Paurice, a man infortunat, onarmeb.

Chap.3.

armsd, and without all furniture: but he travelling in the behalfe of the earle Richard, to whome he was uncle, wis rather a(3) spie than a souldier. On the nert daie following Paurice of Prendelgaff a (4) lufte and a hardie man, and boine about Pilford in west Wales, he with ten gentlemen of service, and a god number of archers imbarke themselues in two hips, and arrive also at the Banne. These men thus landed at the Banne, and not francing well assured of their safetie, by reason their comming r was blowen abroad through the thole countrie, they with all hall fent incliengers to Dermon, aduerti fing him of their comming. Therebpon diverte of that countrie, who divelling upon the fea coaffs, and the then fortune frowned had and did thrinks as waie from Dermon, now perceiuing that the fauo. red him againe, returned and falwned bpon him; acs cozoing to the fateng of the poet in these words:

Assortune so the faith of man doth stand or fall. Hac Porogh, assome as he heard of their landing 20 and comming, fent his bale fon Donold, a baliant gentleman unto them with fine hundzed men : and verie Mostlie after he himselse also followed with great foie and gladnesse. And then when they had res newed their former covenants and leagues, and had Swonne each one to the other, to observe the same and to kiepe faith : then, though they were people of contrarie dispositions, yet now being god frænds and all of one mind, they toine their forces togither, and with one confent do march towards the towne 30 of Werford, which is about twelve miles diffant from the Banne. When they of the towne heard there of, they being a fierce and burulie people, but yet much truffing to their wonted fortune, came forth about two thousand of them, and were determined to wage and give battell. But when they faw their aduerlaries armie to be better let in ogder than in times palf, and that the horfemen were well armed with armour and thield thining bright : then bpon new chances & changes taking new counsels, they 4 fet on fire and burned their fuburbs, and retired into the towne.

FitzGephans minding and preparing to give the allault, filleth the ditches with armed men, and letteth his archers to marke and watch well the turrets of the wals: which things done, he with great thowtes and force giveth the affault. The townelmen within being readie to frand at defense, cast over the wals great peces of timber & stones, and by that meanes burting manie, made the rest to give over and retire. 50 Among thom a luftic yong gentleman named Ko. bert Barrie, being hot and of a luffie courage, and nothing afraid of death, so he might atchive bus to honour, giveth the first abuenture to scale the wals; but he was Artken with a great stone byon the headpace, wher with he fell headlong downe into the ditch and escaped veric hardie, for with much as dw did his fellowes drain a pull him out of the place. About lirteine yeares after, all his great teeth with the force and violence of this Aroke fell out; and that 60 which is verie Arange, new teeth grew op in their places. Apon this repulse they all retired and with drew themselves from the wals, & assembled thems sclues byon the sea Arands, where forthwith they let on fire all luch thips and vettels as they could there find. Among thome was one merchant thip latelie come ont of England laden with wines and come, which there laie then at anchor, and a companie of these lustie youths having gotten botes so; the purpose, would have taken hir: with the mark ners perceiving, suddenlie cut their cabels and hois led by their failes, a the wind being westerlie and blowing a good gale, they recovered the feas. Thefe youths fill following them, had almost lost all and

marred the market: for if others their fellowes had not made god thist and rowed a god pace after them they would fearfelie have recovered the land againg. Thus fortune, which is onlie confant in inconfant cie, fæmed to haue forfaken Porogh and Fitzife! thans, and to have left them delitute of all hope and comfort: neverthelette, on the next morow having heard dinine fernice through the whole campe, they determine with better, adule and circumspection to give a new allault, with luftie courages drew to the wals. The townelmen within læing this, began to diffrust themselves, to consider how most bunatu rallie and uninfilie they had rebelled against their. prince a fouereigne: wher bpon beigg better abuifed, they fend medlengers to him to intreat for peace. At length by the earnest intercession and mediation of tino bishops, and certeine and and peaceable anenwhich were within the towns, peace-was granted, and foure of the belt t chiefelt men within the towns. were delivered and given for pledges and hoffages, for the true keeping of the peace and their fivelitie. Pac Pozogh, to gratifie his men in these his firt fuccelles, and to acquit the first souentuross, did (aca cording to his former promife and couenant) give unto Robert FitzGephans and Paurice Fitzgerald the towne of Werford, and the territories therebns to adjoining and apperteining, and buto Derucie of Mont Porice he gave in fæ two cantreds, lieng on the fea five betweene Werford and Waterford.

(1) The Banne is a little creike lieng in the countie of Merford, neve to Aither a fither counce, which is belonging to the bithop of that diocelle, the open feas being on the east and not farre from the haven mouth of Materford on the fouth: and as it thould feine, Fitzstephans and his companie missake the place of were byttnen in there, the same being were unapt for a harborow: but the same being the place of the first receipt of Englishmen, there were cereteine monuments made in memorie thereof, and were named the Banna & the Bonne, which were the names (as the common same is) of the two greatest ships in which the Englishmen there arrived.

(2) A knight biparted. The prophetic was not ones lie verified in respect of the parents of Kobert Fitze stephans, the one being a Porman Saron, and the other a Camber: but also in respect of his armes and ensigne which were biparted being of two sundie changes, namelie partie per pale gules, and ermine a sattier counterchanged. For commonlie all prophetics have their allusions but o armes, and by them they are discovered, though at the first not so appear

ring before the enent thereof.

(3) Bentlemen. The Latine wood is Milites, which in the now common speches is termed knights, a name of worthip and honour: but the word it felfe importeth and meaneth men expert and skilfull to ferue in the wars, whether it be on fort or horfebacke. In times past when men ruled by the fwood, then fuch as were valiant and of good experience grew ins to credit and estimation; and the people did make choice of fuch to governe, rule, and befend them, and the for their excellent vertues were called Nobiles, thich in English is gentlemen . And then men being ambitious of honour, did contend who might belt er. cell in feats of prowelle and chivalrie: some deliting to ercell in the fertice on fot; and bicause they bled thieflie the target and thield, they twhe their name thereof, were called scutiferi. Some practifed chieb lie the feruice on horffebacke, and they (according to the manner of their fernice) were named Equites : but both the one and the other were in processe of time called Armigeri, in Englich efquiers : and this is tar hen for a degree somewhat about the effate of a ones 13. iii.

lie gentleman. And for Comuch as Ceruice in the fields did carie awaie with it the greatest hono; and credit, and princes willing t defirous to incourage gentlemen to ercell that waie and in that kind of fernice, they deutled a third degree of honour named knighthod. And this, as it excelleth the others before and not to be given but for great befert : fo to increase the credit and estimation thereof, it was not to be given but with great folemnities and ceremo. nies; and the person so to be honozed, was to be adoze to ned with fuch ornaments as ow speciallie amerteine to the furniture of luch feruice, as namelie a fword, a target, a helme, a paire of spurres, and such like: and they which were thus advanced were named Milites or knights, and thus the name of feruice was turned to the name of worthip: yea this degree did grow and war to be of luch credit, honoz and elimas tion, that kings and princes were and would be berie circumfpect and adulted, before they would dub 02 promote anie man to this effate. Therefore confis 20 dering the estate, nature a worthip of a knight, and iveleng also the course of this historie, it cannot be intended that all they which went over and ferved in this conquest, though they were named milites, that therfore they Mould be compted & taken for knights of worthin and high calling : but that they were fuch as were expert and failfull to ferue in warres according to the nature of the word Miles . Therefore I have and do English the word Miles in this historie a gentleman of feruice.

(4) A spie, not to watch the dwings of his countrimen, whereby to take them in a trip, but to note, marke and confider the nature, maner, and disposition of the countrie and people : whereby to aduer. tile the earle how he thould provide and order his do ings against his comming over into the land.

(5) Paurice of Prendalgaft was doubtleffe a valiant gentleman, and borne and bred in well Wales, in at about the pronince of Wenbroke. He is not named not mentioned in some books of this historie; 40 of like valiantnesse, but of sundrie dispositions and but I finding in such exemplars as I have of best credit, do thinke I thould have done wrong to have omitted him. There are yet of his race, posteritie and name, remaining at these dates in the countie of Talerford, and elsewhere.

Of the ouerthrow given in Osforie, and of the submission of the king thereof.

Chap.4.

Hele things thus done and ended as they would themselves, they increase their are mie with the townelmen of Werford, and being then about thee thouland men, thev march towards (1) Dffozie, whereof Donald was then the prince, sucho of all the revels was the most mortall enimie with Mac Morogh had. For on a time he having the faid Dermons eldelt fon in his 60 them tho do mot feeke for hir, t following them tho ward and handfall, was in gealouffe of him, and miltrusted him with his wife: where byon he did not one lie thut him by in a cloter pation; but also to be auengen thereof, and of other supoled inturies, putteth out both of his(2) cies. First then Dermon and his companie enter into Dilozie, but they durft not march or adventure anie further than to the midft of the countrie, because the whole countrie else was full of woods, fireids, paffes, and bogs, and no waie at all for men to travell. But when they met and incountered with the Mazians, they found not cowards not daffards, but valiant men , and the food well to the defense of their countrie, and manfallie relifted their enimies. Hoz they trusted so much to

their wonted god fortune and successe in such like af. faires, that they thewnke not a whit from them, but draue them perforce out of the bogs and wods, and followed them into the champaine countrie.

Robert Fitzaechans being in the plaine and o ven fields with his horfemen, and fæing that the Difortans being there he had the advantage of them, gi neth most flercelie the onfet open them, and flue a great number of them; and fuch as firaled and were scattered absode, they either flue them or overtheld them: and fuch as were overthrowne, the fatmen with their Ballogialles ares did cut off their heads. And thus having gotten the victorie, they gathered on and brought before Dermon Bac Porogh the hundred of their entinies heads, which they laid a put at his feet; who turning everie of them one by one to know them, did then for loy hold by both his hands, and with a lowd voice thanked God most highlie, Among thefe there was the head of one, whomefper ciallie and aboue all the rest he moztallie hated. And he taking by that by the heare and eares, with his teeth most boariblie and cruellie bit awaie his note and livs.

After this, they made a rode through the whole countrie, a marched almost to the ottermost parts, and fill as they pasted they murthered the people, spotled, burned, and wasted the thole countrie. And therebpon the prince of Dfforie by the adulc of his friends, maketh lute and intreateth for peace : which 30 obteined (although in verie deed it was but a colonred and a diffembled peace on both fives) they put in their holfages, made fealtie, and were fwome to be faithfull and true to Mac Mozogh, as buto their lawfull and true load. In thefe feruices, as in all other, Robert of Barrie, and Pellerius had the pricke and praise, and the wed themselves of all others the most valiant. Both these young gentlemen were nephues to Fitzaephans (4) the one being his brothers fonne, and the other his lifters fonne. They both were natures. For Meilerius being ambitious and delirous of honour, referred all his doings to that end; and whatfocuer he attempted, was to advance his fame and credit, making more account to be reported and have the name of a valiant man, than to be so in deed. The other being of a certeine naturall difpolition both noble and valiant, was neither a gree die feker of land and praife, nor an ambitious crauer of fame and honour; but being alwaies among 50 the best, dio rather læke and trauell to the best, than

to be onelie counted the beff. Belides, he was naturallie indued with such a maidenlie Chamefalinelle, and no bragger nor boar fter would neither glozifie his dwings, noz pet like well of anie others which would to do of him. By means thereof it came to patte, that the lette ambitious and defirous he was of honour, the more the fame followed him : for glorie and honour follow ale wates vertue, as the Madow the bodie, Munning do left regard hir. And manie men are the moze liked of manie, bicaule they feme not to like of anie: and praise, fame, and honour most commonlic, the lesse it is elliemed, the moze loner it is had a gotten. It for tuned on a time that the armie thus being in Mlo rie, they did on a night incampe themselves about an old castell. These two gentlemen as they were es uer wont, late togither, and inddenlie there was a great note, as it were of an infinit number of men, which feemed to breake in and rulh in among them, with great force and a rage, destroieng all that ever was, and making a great noise with clathing of their harnesse, and striking of their bils togither, and there with all fuch a notice and a thowt, as though hear

Chap. 4,5.

uen and earth would have come togither.

Thele kind of thantalmes and illulions do often times hamen in Ireland, especiallie when there be as nie holtings. With this noile the more part of the armie was fo afraid and difmaid, that for the most part they all fled, some into the woods, and some into the bogs, everie one læking a place where to hide and fuccour himfelfe. But thefe two onelie tarteng behind, raught to their weapons, and forthwith full boldlieran to fitzffethans tents, and called againe 10 togither all fuch as were thus leattered, and incouraged them to take their weapons, and to frand to befence. Robert of Barrie in all his hurlie burlie, franding alone by himfelfe muling ercept a man og two of his owne men about him, did about all others not without anie great admiration of manie, and to the great greefe of luch as envied him, best acquit him felfe. Fo: among other god gifts which were in him, this was specialite reported of him; that no feare, or force, no fudden milhap or miladuenture what foeuer, 20 could at anie time make him afrais of discomforted. and to die awaie. For how locuer things fell out and happened, he was alwaies at hand, and in a readines with his weapons to the fight. And such a one as is alwaies readie to abide what foeuer thall happen, and to prevent what misches maie infue, is by all mens inogements counted the best and valiantest man. This man was he, who in this Irish warres was the first who either was friken og hurt. As concerning the forelate chantalme, this one thing is much noted of it; that in the morning following, when all things were pacified and quieted, the graffe and weeds which the night before frod there vpzight and of a great height, did now in the morrow lie downe flat opon the ground, as though the same had bin troden with great multitude of people, and yet was it most cer. teine that none had beene there at all.

(1) Apere be two Offozies, the one named the box Macquilfathrikes, and who are the barons therof; and this lieth in the otocesse of Leighling: the other lieth on the north of Demond, and is buder the iurifdiction of the earle of Demond, who is also the earle thereof, being named earle of Damond and Mosie. It is a diocette of it felfe, and the bifhop thereof is nas med the bithop of Osocie, those lie and house is at kilkennie. It is parcell of the province of Leinster and binder the obelfance then of Dermon Bac Do. rogh.

(2) This was a courteous kind of punishing, for comonlie such is the revenging nature of the mere Irifhman, that albeit he can or do late neuer fo ma. nie plagues and punishments bpon his enimie : pet is be never fatisfied, buleffe be have also his life, yea and manie not there with contented, but will otter their wicked nature even opon the dead carcale, as doth appeare in this chapter of the same Dac Do. rogh, who finding one of his enimies heads, was not latilited, untill in most cruell maner be did with his

teth bite awaie his note and his lips.

(3) There are in Freland theé foets or degrées of foldiers: the first is the horsteman, tho commonlie is a gentleman borne, and he is armed with fuch armoz as the service of that countrie requireth: the second degree is the Bernaugh, & he also is a gentleman oz a freholder borne, but not of that abilitie to main teine a horse with his furniture, and therefore he is a light fouldier on fot; his armod is both light and flenber, being afkull , a left gantlet og a target, a fword and fleine, and thee or foure darts: the third degree is the Galloglatte, who was first brought in to this land by the Englishmen, and thereof taketh his name. For Galloglas is to faie, an English year man og fernant; bis armog is alkull, a facke, an habergeon of thirt of male, a fluord and a sparre, other wife named a Balloglaffe ar og halbert , & this man is counted the best fouldier on fot, and the strength of the hattell. There in all hollings have attending bp. on them a number of botes and thernes, and tho do Spoile and kill all such as be overtheorone and hurt in

The conspiracie of Rothorike monarch of Ireland, and of the residue of the princes against Mac Mo-rogh and Firz flephans.

Chap. 5.

A the meane time the toheele of fortune is turned upfoe downs, and they thich before femed to frand aloft, are now afraid of fle ding : and they which were on high, in perill now to fall. For allone as it was notice through the thole land of the good fuccelle of Dermon, and of the comming in of Arangers into the land, and whereof they were much afraid: Kothozike prince of (1) Co. nagh, and (2) monarch of the thole land, contectu ring how of fmall things great do grow; and confibering that by the comming in of Arangers, the whole land was in some perill; sendeth abrode his mellengers, and summoneth a parlement of the thole land: tho being affembled, and the matter at full debated, they do with one voice and confent conclude and determine to make open warres, and to give the battell buto Bac Bozogh. And forthwith es uerie man bauing made readie both men and armoz to his offermost power, do soine all their forces and Arenaths togither, and with maine and Arenath do inuade the countrie of Dkenfile in Leinfter.

Dermon Pac Pozogh in this diffrelle was forme What disquieted, and in a great perpleritie; partlie per Diogie, which is of the ancient inheritance of the 40 bicaufe fome of his (but gloling) freends diffrusting the lequele, old theinke from him, a hid themselues: some of them most traitozouslie, contrarie to their oth and promife, were fled to his enimics: and fo in this his diffreste he had verie few freends, fauing one lie Robert Kitzstechans and the Englishmen with him. He therefore with fuch companie as he had. went buto a certeine place not farre from Fernes, which was compassed and innironed round about with great thicke woos, high fikle hilles, and with bogs and waters; a place fo frong of it felfe, as it mas in a maner inaccessible, and not to be entred into. And as some as they were entred into the same, they forthwith by the adule of Fitzffethans (3) did fell downe tres, plathed the woo, call great trens thes and ditches round about, and made it fo tiria, narrow, croked, and firong, that there was no palface not entrie for the enimie : and yet by their art and industrie it was made much moze Grong.

> (1) Conagh, in Latine Conacia, is one of the flue 60 postions of the land, according to the ancient dinili on. In it are thirtie cantreos or baronies; and before and until the conquest they were under the government of the fept of the D Conners, the eldest man of which fept by the Irish law was over the prince; but at the conquest it was given to certeine noble men of England, & by certeine descents it came to fir Walter de Burgo, tho was lood of that thole prontince and earle of Wolffer. From thele Burghs descend the Burghs now being in Conagh, thep being of a bale line, and first were put onlie in trust to keepe that countrie to the vie of their loos, who then dwelled and remained in England, This countrie lieth betweene Aller in the north, Pounffer in

the fouth, and the feas in the west. The chasses and onelie merchant towns or emporium thereof is Gallowaie.

(2) There was alwaies one principall gouerno; among the Trift, whom they named a monarch; and he was commonlie either of the Pac Carthies in Pounter, or of the Poroghs in Leinter, or of the D Connoes in Connagh, as this Rothoethe was. He was elected a cholen by the common confert of all the nobilitie of the land : & being once chosen, all 10 they did homage and fealtie buto him . The pronince of Weth, which was the least of the fine feue. rall portions, was referued alwais buto him for his diet. For though the Omologhlins oid dwell in Weth, and were great inheritors or polletioners there, pet they were not counted for princes as the other were. This monarchoid governe the whole land universaffle, a all the princes were directed by him: in him it laie weiber it Mould be peace og warre; and what he commanded was alwaies done.

(3) The maner of the Irithite is to keepe them felges from force of the enimies, or in the bogs, or in the woos: the one of his nature is fo ffrong as no horsteman is to adventure into the fains; the other with industrie they make Grong, by felling of tres & plathing of the woos, and by thele means the hortes men (in whom is all the firength of their warres) can have no passage no entrie to the enimie, but muff either retire, og go on fot, og læke some other waie. If they will and mult needs palle that waie, they must of necessitie go on fot, and then they are to weake, and easilie to be ouercome by the Kernes, whose service is onelie on sot : therefore they do chefelie heepe themselues in such places, as there they can take the advantage of others, and not of thers of them.

The description of Dermon Mac Morogh, and of the message of Rothorike O Connor sent vnto him for peace.

Cap. 6.

Ermon Wac Wozogh was a tall man of frature, and of a large and great bodie, a valiant and a volo warrioz in his nation: and by reason of his continuall hav lowing and crieng his voice was boarle: he rather those and desired to be feared than to be loued : a great oppellog of his nobilitie, but a great aduancer, 50 of the pore and weake. To his owne people he was rough and greenous, and hatefull buto frangers; he would be against all men, and all men against him. Kothozike minoing to attempt anie wate what foes uer, rather than to adventure and wage the battell, fendeth first his messengers with great presents but to Mitisfemans, to persuade and intreathim: that for so much as he made no chalenge nor title to the land, that he would quietlie, and in peace returne home againe into his owne countrie, but it availed 60 not. Then they went buto Pac Pozogh himfelfe, & persuaded him to take part with Kothozike, and to toine both their forces and armies in one, and then with might and maine to give the onfet bpon the Arangers, and to betterlie to deffroie them. And

in this doing he thould have Rothorke
to his good frand, and all Leinster in
refeard quietnesse:
fons also they alledged concerning their countrie
and nation; but all
was to no pur,
pose.

The speeches and oration which Rothorike O Connor made ynto his soldiors.

Chap. 7. 10 a

Othorike D Connor, feeing that hy these his occuses and practice be could do no goo at all, and thinking that for formuch as he could not anaile with words, he with force and armes, as his last periodic and helpe, pre-pareth his armoz, and maketh for the battoll, and as fembling his people togither, maketh buto them these species. He right noble and haliant desendors of your countrie and libertie, 1.15t his consider with that people, and so that causes we are notate, fight and wage the battell . That enimie of his olime countrie, that fyrant ouer his owne people, and an open enimic buto all men, and two fometimes was 20 an eriled man; fe how he being invironce with the force of Arangers, is now returned, a mindeth the otter ochrucion of vs all, and of this his nation. He enuiong the fafetie of his countrie and countrimen, hath procured and brought in a firange nation bron bs, that by the helpe of a hat cfull people he might far tissie and more effectuallie accomplish his malice. thich other wife by no means be could have brought to paste. De then being an enimic, hath brought in that enimiz which hath beene ever hatefull both buto him, and buto bs; and the are most greedie to have the fouereigntie & bominton over be all, protesting and openlie affirming, that by a certeine fatall defite nie they are to be rulers over this land; year fafar hath he thed out his benome, and almost everie man is so invenomed there with, that now no fauge not mercie is to be the wed, D cruell beatt, yea more cru ell than ener was beaft! for to fatisfie his insatiable malice, and to be aucuged with the bloudheding of his owne people, he spareth neither himselfe, nor his 40 countrie, not fer. This is he tho is a most cruell ty rant over his owne people: this is he who with the force and helpe of ftrangers bleth all force and criv eltie against all men. De deserueth well therefore to be hated of all, which like th to be an enimie buto all. Loke therefore (per worthie citizens) well to your felues; I fair loke and confider well how by thele meanes, I meane by civil discord, all realmes a nations have for the most part bene overthrowen s banquished . (1) Julius Celar minding to innade Britaine had the repulle twife, 4 was driven out by the Britons. But when Androgeus fell at variance with the king, he then to be revenged, fent agains for Julius, who ther boon returned and conquered the land. (2) The fame Julius also conquerd all the west parts of the world, but when he wared & became ame bitious, two no be a fole monarch, thave the whole gouernement in himfelfe, then discord was raised, \$ debate was rife, t by that meanes all Italie was file led with murchers and flaughters. (3) The 18: itons being at discord with their king, procured Gurmuns dus, who then was a terror to all the ocean Iles, that he with the Sarons thould purfue and make wars opon their king, who so did: but in the end to their owne confusion and destruction. Likewise not long atter (4) Rembertus the French king, being an es nimie to his owne people, and at discord with them, he procured the fato Burmund to ato and helpe him to subdue his people, who so did: but thereof he had but bad fucceste. Wherfore let tos with one mind like to thefe Frenchmen Kand Coutlie to the defense of our countrie, and couragiouslie give the onset boot our enimies. And whiles thefe Arangers be but few in number, let ve luffilic iffue out bpon them : for fire whiles it is but in sparkles is some covered, but when it is in great flames, it is the harver to be quenched. It is good therefore to meet with things at the beginning, and to prevent ficknesse at the first growing: for diseases by long continuance having taken depend, are hardle to be cured. The therefore, tho are to desend our countrie and libertie, and to leave to our posservite an immortal fame; let be ballantlie, and with a good courage adventure and give the onset, that the overthood of a sew may be a terror onto manie; and that by this example all other foren nations may be afraid to adventure the like

(1) Julius Celar hauling received two repulles, retired a toke thipping , being in an otter despaire not minding to returne ante moze. Wher bpon Calfibelan then king of the land called & affembled all his nobles to London, where for tole he kept a great and a folemne feaff, and at the fame were bled all fuch games and pactimes, as in those dates were most accustomed. And at a weeftling game then it danced two young gentlemen, the one being nethue to the king, and the other confine to the erle of Lone don (Ment) to fall at variance, & in the end the kings newue was flaine. The king much grieued ther with fent for the earle, those name was Androgens: and bicaule he would not come onto him he made wars boon him. The earle confidering in what diffreste he was, and how farre bnable to incounter the power and withfrand the displeasure of the king, sendeth his 3 mellenger with his letters onto Julius Cefar, and belought him most carnestlie to returne with his armie, and he would ato and helpe him against the hing with all the power he had. Julius Celar glad of these tivings returneth with all speed, and in the end hath the victorie : and thus by meanes of debate and division the relme, which other wife was thought to be impregnable, was subuerted and made tribu-

(2) Julius Cefar having hapie and fortunate 40 to I fuccess in all his affaires, grew into such a liking of himselfe, that he would needs be the sole monarch and emperor over the whole world, taking soule evill that according to the ancient government of the komans anie one should be to inco with him: and ambitiouslie seking the same, he became breadful to the people, lothsome to his friends, and in the off-pleasure of the senat; tho maligning at his aspiring and mistrusting the sequele thereof, conspired his beath, and in the end he comming into the senat bouse, and mistrusting noising, was murthered and laine.

(3) At this time Carcticus was king and ruled ouer Bittaine, now named England, who was fo bitious a man in all respects, that he became hater full both to God and man: and his fubicas not abt. ding his typannie, nor broking his wickednesse, fell at dinision with him. Wherebpon Burmindus then king of Ireland was procured (some saie by the Bittons and some saie by the Sarons) who being entered into the land, and feeking by all the meanes they could to be the fole loads of the land, to inuade the land, which he did, and by the helpe of the Barons drove the king out of his realme into Males. And the Sarons having thus their wils droug also all the Britons out, who from thensefwith having lost the land of Britaine, did inhabit themselves in Wales, Cornewall, and elsewhere, where they might have refuge and fuccour. And thus though they were revenged of their king, yet they themselves in the end self the smart thereof: for they were all destroied or bank thed: fuch are the fruits of differition and debate.

(4) This Hembertus was not king of France, but as (Gaufred faith) was nephue to the king a and

the law being then in great froubles, this Nembert made title buto it, and læking by all the meanes and waies he could how to compasse the same, procured Gurmundus to helpe and atd him, prohnting him great rewards. Wheredpon Gurmundus passed of wer into France, there he had but an euist luccesse so, there was he slaine, Nembert overthrowne and the French nation prevailed. And heredpon Kothorike taketh an occasion to incourage his people to same to their tackle, and valiantie to withstand Mac Morogh, who as Nembert had procured in Gurmundus; so had he slocked in Englishmen to over run his countrie.

The oration and speeches of Mac Morogh to his souldiers and people.

Cap.8.

Ac Pologh beheld his men, e perceining them to be somewhat dismated and out of heart, framed his speech to recomfort them, and thus faith buto them. De men of Leine fer, truth and kindged in all adventures hath hither. to foined by in one fellowthip: wherefore let by now plucke up our hearts and like men fand to our des fence. For thy, that wicked and ambitious man Ko. thorike, the author of all wickednesse a mischiefe, who be firous to baue the fole fourreignetie and dominion doth now determine (which God forbid) either to ditue be cleane out of our countrie, or biterlie to des frois vs: and marke you now how he lifteth by his head and loketh aloft. He is so proud and glorieth so much in his great multitude, that by ambition and pride he measureth & balueth his force and Grength: but yet (for all that) manie times a fmall number being valiant and well appointed are better and have pzenatled against great trops, being but fluggards and bnarmed. It he make chalenge and pretend title to Leinster, bicause the same sometimes hath beine tributarie to some one king of Conagh, then by the fame reason (1) we also make demand and chalenge all Conagh: for both thereof and of all Freland our ancestors have beene the fole governors & monarchs. But to the purpose and to speake plainclie, he sæketh not to rule and to reigne as a monarch, but to blurpe and destroie as a typant, to drive be out of our countrie, to lucces into everie mans right & inheritance; and so alone to rule the rost, and to be master over

Panie there are which do beag of their great multitudes, and put their trust therein: but let them be well affured that we Leinster men though we be but few in number; yet we never were not yet are affraid to incounter even with the belt & proudelf. For thy, vidozie is not gotten, neither doth it frand alwates in the great multitude of people, but in vertue and valiantnette, in trength and courage. Wie on our sides against pride, have humilitie : against 60 mongs, equitie: againff arrogancie, modeffie: and againft intemperance, discretion & moderation : and thele vertues are to fight for vs. Hen do not alwais atteine buto bidozie by great trops and multitudes of people, but by vertues. The lawes of all nations do grant and allow to relift and withfrand force and infurie with force and strength: it is a fanourable caule to fight for our countrie, and to defend our pas trimonie. And forfound as they contend for the gaine, but we to elchew the lotte; let be be of a god courage: we Cand boon a good ground, and our leat is naturallie verie frong of it felfe, as also by our industrie made moze strong : but by reason of the Areidnelle thereof, the greater the companie is there in, the moze comberous and troublesome it will be:

anb

and yet to win the victorie, a small companie being valiant, couragious, and of a god agreement thall ferue and be sufficient.

(1) There be(as is faid) fine portions of Ireland, and enerty of them (ercept Pethahid) was referred to the monarch for the time being for his diet) had their particular princes, knone of these did hold ante one of the other; but of some one of them choise was made by the thole estates of the land to be the monard; and he for the time being did take and receive homage and fealtie of all the others, not in respect that he was a particular prince, but bicause he was the monarch. And this Pac Hopogh allegeth for him selfe, denieng that he held anie of his lands of the king of Connagh otherwise than in respect that he was the monarch.

The oration of Robert Fitzstephans made unto his companions and fouldiors.

Chap.g.

Hen Dermon Wat Wozogh haven der his hoch, Kobert Fitzlerhans calleth his companie togisher, & thus he speaketh buto them. De lustie young men and my companions in warres, which have abiden with me in manie perils; & yet fill of mobbe minds & valiant courages: if we would now confider with our felnes, what we are, binder what capteine, and where, 30 fore we ow adventure and attempt these great enterprises, no doubt we thall excell in our wonted bas liantnelle, and good fortune thall be on our fide. The first came and descended from the (1) Troians, and fince are of the French bloud and race: of the one we have these our noble and valiant minds, and of the other the ble and experience in feats of armes: where fore being thus descended of noble progente by two maner of wates and in two respects; as we be now 40 well armed and appointed, so let us also be of valiant minds and luftie courages: and then no doubt this rascall and naked people shall never be able to resist no: withstand vs.

Belives you le and know how that at home, part lie by the fubtill and craftic dealings of our owne coulines and kinknen, and partlie by the fecret mas lice and deniles of our familiars and acquaintances, we are bereft & spoiled both of our countrie and pas trimonie. And now we are come hither, not as gree 50 die cravers for large Aipends, not yet as couetous prollers for gaine and lucre: but onlie in respect and confideration to have and infois the lands & tolones to bs, and to our heires after bs, offered and promis fed. The are not come hither like pirats or thenes to rob and spotle, but as faithfull friends, to recouer and to refroze this noble and liberall gentleman to that his patrimonie, therof he is spotled and dispossessed. He it is that bath allured and flocked to hither; he it is that loveth our nation: and he it is tho purposeth 60 to plant and fettle be and our heires in this Ile. And peraduenture by these meanes the whole land, which is now divided into five provinces or portions, maje be deduced and brought into one, and the fame in time be wholie buto be and our heires: if that by our valiantnesse and prowesse the vidorie be gotten, and Dac Dozogh by our fernice, meanes, and induffrie be restored, and then the whole dominion to be and to our heires for ever to be referved.

D how great were then our hono: a glozie! yea to great, that with the perils of our bodies; loffe of our lines, and the dangers of death, it is to be withed for, lought, and entured. For thy thould we be aftered and that is death I praie you? Is it ance other than

Chap. 8,9,10, a thost velate or diffance of time, as it were a thout flepe betweene this transitorie life and the life eternall to come ? What is beath (I faie) but a fhort pal. fage from baine and transitozie things to perpetuall and enerlating totes. And certeine it is we muft all once die : for it is that ineuitable destinie, which is common to all men, and can be efthe wed of no man for be we tole, and do nothing worthie of perpetual fame and memozie; oz be ive well occupied, whereof inflieth praise and honor: yet die thall we. Then the matter being fo, let them be affraced of beath, tho when they die, all things die with them: but let not them theinke not be dismated, whose vertue and fame thall never die but live for euer. Therefore pe worthie men, who are enoblithed for your valianines and famous for your bertues, let be with bolo minds and amd courages give the onfet bpon our enimies, that in bs our noble race e progenie be not ffained, but that either by a glozious victorie, or a famous Death, we do atchine to perpetuall fame and honor.

How Rothorike intreateth for peace and obteineth the same.

Chap.10.

Dipozitie, when he had well confidered with himselfe bow the events of wars are doubtfull and uncerteine, ethat as the wifeman faith; A man of wifebome and buder fland: ing is to trie all manner of waies rather than the warres: and also being somewhat timozous to aduenture the battell with frangers, sendeth his mes fengers by all the waies they best might, to intreat for peace: who at length through their industrie, and by the mediation of god men, and by Gods godnelle tho prospered the same, obteined the same, and with was concluded in this order . That Dermon Pac Mozogh Could have and entop all Leinster in peace and quietnelle, to bim and to his heires, acknowledge ing Kothozike to be the cheefe king and monarch of all Ireland, and preloing but ohim that feruice and dutie as buto him therein apperteined. And for the performance hereof, he delinered his fonne Cunthu rus in pleage and for an holfage. To thome Kotho rike then promised, byon condition, that the peace and certeine other points obscribed, he would give his daughter buto him in mariage. Thele things be ing openlie published, each partie swoze the one to the other, for the performance and keeping of the fame. And yet that loener the biter thew, it was fe cretlie agrad betwene them, that Dermon Bac Pozogh, then and allone as he had quietlie letted Leinsfer in god order, he thould returne and send home all the Englith people, as also in the meane time should not procure anie more to come ouer.

Of the comming of Maurice Fitzgerald into Ireland: of the yeelding up of Dublin to Dermon Mac Morogh; and of the warres betweene the two princes of Conagh and of Limereke.

Chap.11.

Pefe things thus done & performed, and fortune feeming with a more favorable countenance to finile open them, whole Paurice Fitzgerald, of whom we spake before, who was the halfe brother by the mothers side to Robert Fitzsehans, arrived at Weerford in two thips, having in his companie (which be brought)ten gentlemen of service, thirtie housemen, and of athere and some manual one hundred. A manual he

he was both honest and wife, and for his truth and valtantnelle verie noble and famous . He was a man of his wood, and constant of mind, and there mithall adorned with a certeine kind of womanlie hamelalinelle . Wac Wozogh being verie glav of this new repaire, as also much animated and incom raged therewith, beginneth to thinke boon olo fores. and to call to remembrance the great infuries and tolongs which the citizens of Dublin had in times passoone both unto his father and to himselfe; and minding to be revenged thereof, bendeth his force, and marcheth with his whole armie to beliege the ch tie,but left fitziffephans behind, the was then buil ding a holo of cattell boon a certeine rockie bill calleb the (1) Cariche, about two miles from Wierford, which place although it were verie frong of it felfe. pet by industrie and labour it was made much from ger . Sporice fiftgerald, with all the force and companie of the Englithmen , accompanied and attenved Mac Mozogh, who was his guide, and conducted 2 him onto Dublin. Affanc as they were entred with in the borders and confines of the territorie of Du. blin, they forthwith burned, spotled, and wasted the faine, and the whole countrie thereto adioining. The citizens of Dublin feeing and confidering the fame, began to quaile, and their hearts fainted, and bo fake and intreat for peace; and having obtained the fame, did five are feattie, and gave in hostages for the true and firme keeping of the fame . In this meane time there fell a great enimitie and quarell betweene 30 Rothozike of Connagh and Donald prince of Lime. reke . And allone as Kothozike was with all his force entered into the countrie of Limerche . Der. mon Dac Bozogh lent forthwith Robert Fitzste thans with all his power, to ato and helpe the fair Donald: for he was Dermons sonne in law , by those means be gat the victorie, and Rothorike with thame was driven to retire out of the countrie, and to returne to his owne home: and left the chefferie thich he bemanded . In these and all other like serus 4 ces, Robert Barrie and Deflerins carried the best praise and commendations. At this time was sens a woman tho had a great beard, and a man bpon hir backe, as a horde; of whom I have alreadie spo. ken in my topographie.

(1) The laid Cariche (as is written) is distant from the towne of Werford about two English miles, and franceth byon a high rocke, and is inuiro, ned on two fides with the river which floweth to 50 Merford towne, and it is verie depe and nauigable: the other two fides are boon the maine land, which is a verie fertile soile, and in height almost equall with the castell. It was at the first made but of rods and turffes, according to the maner in those dates; but fince builded with stone, and was the frongest fort then in those parts of the land: but be ing a place not altogither inflicient for a prince, and pet it was thought to good and Arong for a subject, it Gill remaine.

Dermon Mac Morogh sendeth for the earle Richard, who foorthwith maketh great preparation for his comming.

Chap. 12.

sa Bozogh, being by meanes of his god lucceile well quiefed and latilfied , be, thinketh himselfe now of greater matters, and denifeth how and by what means he might recourt his old and ancient rights; as also purchase all Connagh to his subjection. And herein

he vied a fecret conference with Fitzstephans and Fitzgerald, buto whome he ottereth and discoucreth all his whole mind and intent: who forthwith gave his answer that his deutle was verie easilie to be compassed, if he could get a greater supplie and aid of Englithmen. Where upon he made most carnest requelts buto them, both for the procuring of their kinfmen and countriemen, as also for the furthering to effect his purpose and ocuse. And that he might the better perfunde them herebuto, he offerell to either one of them his daughter and heire in mariage with the inheritance of his kingdome: but they both being alreadie married, refuted the offer. And at length after much talke they thus concluded, that he should with all speed send his messengers with his letters buto the earle Richard, of whome we frake before, and buto whome he the fato Wac Worogh at his being at 02 about Briffow, had promifed his daughter to wife, which letters were as followeth. Dermon Hac Pozogh prince of Leinster, to Kie Mac Mo-thard earle of Chepkone, and sonne of Gilbert the roghsittee earle lendeth greeting. If you do well confider and to carle Ris marke the time as twe do which are in diffrelle, then chard. we do not complaine without canle nozout of time: for we have alreadie fene the (1) florkes and finals lows, as also the summer birds are come, and with >> the westerlie winds are gone againe; we have long , loked and withed for your comming, and albeit the winds have beine at east and easterlie, yet hitherto " you are not come buto bs : wherefore now linger no >> longer, but halten your felfe hither with fperd, that it ,, map thereby appeare not want of god will, not for getfulnette of promite, but the inturie of time hath "? bene hitherto the cause of your long state. All Lein, >> fer is alreadie wholie peloed buto bs : and if you will specifie come away with some strong companie and force, we doubt not but that the other foure ?? postions will be recovered and adjoined to this the Aft postion . Pour comming therefore the more fper die it is, the moze gratefull; the moze haftie, the moze toffull; and the foner, the better welcome; and then > our milike of your long lingering thall be recome, pented by your tone comming, for freenothip agod will is recovered and nourithed by mutuall offices, " and by benefits it groweth to a more affurednesse. >> Wilhen earle Richard had read these letters, he takethadusc with his freends, and taking some comfort and fromach of the good fucceffe of fitzflethans, thereof he was at the first both fearefull and doubt full, fullie determineth to bend his whole force and power to follow this feruice and hollings. This earle was a man of a verie noble parentage, and descen, ded of verie honozable ancestozs; but yet moze famous in name, than rich in purite; moze noble in bloo, than endowed with wit; and greater in hope of fuccellion, than rich in pollellions . Well, he thought long per he could wend himselfe over into Ireland, and therefore to compalle the fame to god effea, maketh his repaire to king Benrie the fecond, was pulled downe, defaced and raced, and fo doth will either restoze him to such possessions, as by inher ritance did apperteine onto him; oz elle to grant him the libertie to trie and læke fortune in some other forren countrie and nation.

> (1) The forke and the swallow are named Anes semestres, or the halfe yeares birds : for they come at the spring, and depart againe awaie at the antumne or fall of the leafe, for in the winter they are not fine. And by this Pac Porogh alludeth and meaneth that he bath awaited that whole halfe years

for the earles comming : whole promise was, that in the spring of the yeare past he mould have come.

Q.

Of the arrivall of Reimond le grosse into Ireland, and of the fight which he had against the Waterford men at Dundorogh.

Chap. 13.

De king having heard the earles requells, the end he alowed not of the one, noz grans ted the other, but fed him Mill with god speed thes, and nourithed him with faire woods, commend bing his noble mind, that he would adventure to hos notable an enterpalle. And in woods the king leemed to give him leave to follow his beuile, but to faie the truth, it was rather in game than in earneff, for the king minoed nothing lette . But the earle take king the abuantage of the kings words, and accepting the fame for a fufficient leave and licence, retur, 20 neth home . And the fame being the winter feafon & verie bufit to trauell into forcen nations in martiall affaires, both now make preparation of all things fit to ferue ichen time Chould require. And affone as the winter was past, he senoeth ouer before him into Ireland, a gentleman of his owne houthold and familie named Retmond le groffe : tho had with him tengentlemen of feruice, and the fcoze and ten archers well appointed, and taking thipping about the kalends of Paie, then landed at the rocke of (1) 30 cause of a great desperation and terroz to the ense Dundonolfe, which lieth louth from Werford, and about foure miles caft from Waterford: and there they cast a trench, and buttoed a little castell or hold, with turfles and wattell . This Reimond was nes phue to Robert Kitzstemans and to Paurice Fitze gerald , being the fonne bnto their elder brother named William, and was verie valiant, of great courage, and well expert in the warres and in all martiall affaires. The citizens of Waterford, and Dmolaghlin Dfelin, being aduertiled of this their 40 arrivall, and nothing liking the neighborhood of fuch frangers, take counfell togither what were beff to be done : and finding it most necessarie and needfull to withstand at the beginning, they do conclude and betermine to give the onfet bpon them; and being about three thouland men, they take botes, and rowe bowne the river of the Sure (which fleteth fall by the wals of Materford on the east, and divideth Lein. fer from Dounfter) and fo came to the place where Reimond and his companie were, where they land 5 ded and let their men in order for the allaults, and marched boldlic to the ditches of Reimonds fortrelle or castell: but then it appered how valiantnes can neuer be hio, luftie courage be daunted, noz pet poo inelle or worthines be blemilhed. For Keimond and his companie, although they were but few in number, and to weake to incounter with fo great a companic as their aduerfaries were : pet being of couragious minds & luftie fomachs, went out to met with their enimies; but when they faw that their 60 named Staratus, one of the thee princes with fmall number was not fusicient noz able in the plaines to abide and indure the force of fo great a multitude, they retired to their fort . The enimics thinking then to discomfit and cleane to overthrow them, followed and purfued them to thostlie, that the Englishmen were no soner in at the gates , but the Frishmen were also at their heeles, and some of them within the gate. Which thing when Keimond fair, and confidering also with himfelfe what a bi-Areste and perill he and all his were in, suddenlie turneth backe his face bpon his enimies; and the first of them which entred, he ranne him thozongh with his fwood (or as some saie clave his head at the per) and then with a lowe voice cried out to his come

panie to be of a good comfort. Who forthwith as they turned and food most manfullie to their defense: fo their enimics also being dismated and afraid at the beath of that one man, they all fled and ranns awate: and then they which in this doubtfull chance of fight, were thought hould be banquifted and cleane overthrowne, suddenlie became to be the victors and conquerors. And thefe tharpelie then purfued their enimies, tho were feattered absoan bethought himselse a wille thereof: but in 10 in the plaines and out of arraie; that in a verie host time and space they sue above five hundred per: fons : and being wearie with killing, they salt a great number of those whome they had taken pallo. ners headlong from the rocks into the fea, and fo derwied them. Inthis fight and fernice a gentle man named Milliam Ferand did moft baliantlie acquit himselfe. For albeit he were but of a weake bodic, yet was he of a verte fout fromach & courage; he was difeated and licke of the lepzofie, and there fore desirous rather to die valiantlie, than to live in milerie: and for that cause would and bid adnenture himfelfe in places there most perill and danger was and fæmed to be; thinking it god with a glozious death to prevent the greek and lothfome nelle of a græuous discale.

Thus fell the paide of Waterford, thus decaied their frength and force, and thus began the ruine and ouerthrom of that citie, which as it bred a great hope and confolation to the Englithmen; fo was it the mies. It was a ffrange matter and neuer heard of before in those parties, that so great a saughter fould be made by fo fmall a number : neverthelello by enill counsell and to much crueltie, the En gliffmen abuled their god fucceffe and fortune. for bauing gotten the vidorie, they faued seventic of the best citizens, whom they kept prisoners; and for the ransome or revemption of these, they might have had either the citie of Waterford pedded flurrens deed onto them, or such a made of monie as they would themselves. But Perueie of Pount Poits (who came over with three gentlemen of fervice, and toined with his countrimen and Keimonds) being both of contrarie minds, Arived the one with the o ther, what were best to be done berein.

(1) Dundonolfeis a rocke fanding in the coun tie of Materford opon the lea live, lieng east from the citie of Materford about eight English miles, and is from the towne of Werford about twelne miles, lieng fouthwards from the same : it is now a firong caffell, and swerteining to the ancient house of the Powers of Kilmaithen, & called by the name of Dundozogh.

(2) The citie of Materford or Buaterford, na med sometimes (as Prolomeus writeth) Manapia, is a faire, ancient, and honozable citie, Chanding byon the fouth five of the river of Sure, with fleteth fall by the walles thereof, and was first builded by one came out of the east parts to inhabit that land. It was at the first but a small pile, lieng in forme of a long triangle, but fince & of late times inlarged by the citizens ; inhabitants of the fame. It is the the fest emporium in a manner of all that land, and frandeth cheflie opon the trade of merchandize, they themselues being not onelie great travellers into forren nations, but allo great refort and bailie concourses of Arangers are to it. Concerning the go uernement, oeder, fate and feruice of this citie, and of fundite other things incident to the fame, are at large described in the later historie of this land.

Chap. 14, 15. The oration of Reimond for the delinerie of the prisoners taken.

Chap.14.

Me Cimond being verie delicous that the captures taken might be delivered, tabozeth by all the waies he could how to compate the same, in presence of Peruete maketh these sprecies, and vieth these persuations to all his to companie. Die my noble and valiant companions and fouldiers, for increase of whose honour, bertue and fortune fæme to contend; let us now confider that is best to be done with these our prisoners and captines. For my part I do not thinke it god, nor pet allow that ante favour or courtesse should be at all themed to the entime. But understand you, these are no enimies now, but men; no rebels, but fuch as be panquiffed and cleane overtheowen, and in fland. ing in defense of their countrie, by entil fortune and 20 a worke destinie they are subdued. Their adventures were honest and their attempts commendable, and therefore they are not to be reputed for theeves, facts ous persons, traitors, nor yet murtherers. They are now brought to that distress and case, that rather mercie for examples take is to be thewed, than cruel tie to the increasing of their miserie is to be minifired. Sucrlie our ancestors in times pass (although in dad it be verie hard to be done) were wont in times of god successe and prosperitie, to temperat 30 their lufe minds and burulie affections with some one incommoditie of other. Wherfore let mercie and pitie, which in a man is most commendable, worke fo in vs, that we tho have overcome others, may allo now luboue our owne minds, and conquer our owne affections: for modellie, moderation, and offcretion are wont to fair haftie motions, and to frop rally denifes. D how commendable and honozable is it to a noble man, that in his greatest triumphand

can revenge and be wreaked? Julius Cefar, whose conquests were such, his vice toxics to great, and his triumphs to manie, that the thole world was notice therewith he had not so mas nie frænds tho retotled for the fame, but he had mas nie moze enimies tho maligned and ennied at him, not anclie in flanderous words and cuill reports; but manie also secretlie conspired, denised, and practised his death and destruction; and yet he was so full of pitie, mercie, and compatition, that he neuce come 50 manded not willed anie to be put to death for the fame, fauing onelie one Domitius, whome he had of mare clemencie for his lewoneffe before par boned, for his wickednesse released, and for his trecherie ac. quited. And thus as his pitie did much increase his honour, so did it nothing hinder his victories. D how beautifie then and impious is that crueltie, wherin bis docie is not foined with pities. For it is the part of a right noble and a valiant man, to count them enfo mics which do wage the battell, contend and fight 60 for the bidorie; but fuch as be conquered, taken prifor ners, and kept in bonds and captivitie, to take and repute them for men, that hereby fortitude and force may diminish the battell and end the quarrell, as also humanitie may increase love a make peace. It is therefore a great commendation and more praise worthie to a noble man in mercie to be bountious, than in vidorie to be cruell; for the one lieth onelie in the course of fortune, but the other in vertue: and as ithad beine a great increase of our vidoxie, and an augmentation of honour, if our enimies had beine flatine in the field and overtheowen in the battell: so they being now taken and faced, and as it were men returned from revels to the common focietie and fel-

lowifity of men; if we thould now kill them, it will be to our great Chame, diffonoz, and reproch for ever. And for fomuch as by the killing and defireteng of them we thall be never the nærer to have the countrie, nor never forter to be the loads of the land, and pet the ranfoming of them berte god for the mainte nance of the fouldiers, the god fame of vs, and the advancement of our honour : we must nave thinke it better to ransome them than to kill them. For as it is requilit and met, that a fouldier in the field fight ting in arms, thould then thirti for the bloud of his enimies, trie the force of his smood, and valiantlie fand to his tackle for bidorie: so when the fight is ended, the wars are ceaffed, the armor lato downe, and all fiercenes of holfilitic let apart; then in a not ble man must humanitie take place, pitie must be Welved, and courtelle mult be extended.

> The oration or speech which Herueie made.

> > Chap. 15.

Hen Reimond had ended his speech. the whole companie being in a muttering, and as it were men well pleased and berie well allowing his mind and opinion: then Heruete from up and spake to them all in this mas ner. Reimond hath verie erquifetlie discoursed with bs of pitie and mercie, and in fet speeches bitering his cloquence, hath shewed his mind and declared his opinion; perfuading and inducing bs to belieue, that a Arange land were to be conquered somer by mercie and fond pitie than by fwood and fire. But 3 prais you, can there be a worse wate than so to thinke : Did Julius Cefar of Alexander of Bacedo. nie by fudy means or in fuch order conquer the whole world: Did the nations from out of all places run to submit themselves under their poke and empire, glorie, he counteth it for a fufficient reuenge, that he 40 in respect of their pitie amercie, a not rather compelled to to do for feare & perforce? For people, whiles they are yet proud and rebellious, they are (all pitte and mercie fet apart) by all manner of waies and means to be subdued; but when they are once brought into subjection and bondage, and redie to ferue and obcie, then they are with all courteffe to be intreated and dealt withall : fo that the fate of the governe ment map be in fafetie and out of danger. Herein and in this point mult pitie be viev, but in the other seueritie or rather crueltie is more necessarie : here clemencie is to be spewed, but in the other rigour without favour is to be exhibited and bled . Reimond persuadesh that mercie is to be extended, as opon a people alreadie subdued and subjected; or as though the enimies were fofew and of fo fmall a number, as against whome no valiant service noz chinalrie can be exploited, and yet they redie to ioine with us: whereby our force may be increased, and our power augmented. But alas! Do not we lie how that the thole nation and people of Ireland are upolie bent, and not without cause altogither conspired against

Suerlie me thinketh Kelmand is contrarte unto himselse; for thy, his comming hither was not to be spute of pitte, no, to reason of mercie; but to conquer the nation and to subdue the people. D what an erample of implous pitte were it then, to neglea our olone lafetie, and to have remorfe and compassion byon others diffrestes : Dorconer, we have here in the fields, and in armour more enimies than friends, we are in the middle of perils and dangers, our entintes being round about bs in euerie place: and shall we thinke this to be nothing, but that we must be also in the like diffreste and danger among

our feines. Round about os our enimies are infinit, and within our felues some there be which practife our destruction. And if it should happen that our captimes and prisoners should escape and breake luse out of their bonds, which are but verie weake and flender, no doubt they will fouth with take our owne armours and weapons against vs. Well well, the mouse is in the cupbozo, the fire is in the lap, and the l'expent is in the bosome; the enimie is at hand readie to oppelle his adverlarie, and the gelf is in place 1 with small courtesie to requit his host. And I praie you doth not Keimond execute that in his facts and dwings, which he benieth in his words . Are not his weches contrarie to his deds? Let him answer me to this. If our enimies when they come in god araie and well appointed to give the onfet, and to wage the battell against vs, if they should happen to have the bidoxie and the overhand over bs, would they deale in pitie & mercie ? Wlould they grant be our lives ? Mould they put os to ranfome. Duth that need mar 20 meanes of the comming and fufte of Pac Horagh, nte words when the deeds are apparant. Dur victorie is to be so vsed, that the destruction of these few may be a terro; to manie; wherby all others and this wild and rebellious nation may take an example, and beware how they meddle and incounter with tis. Dt two things we are to make choice of one; for either we must valiantlie and conragioustie stand to performe what we have taken in hand; and all fond pie tie let alive, boldlie and foutlie to overtheow and banquith this rebellious and flubboane people: 02 (if 30 we thall after the mind and opinion of Keimond altogither be pitifull and full of mercie) we must holle by our failes and returne home, leaving both the countrie and our patrimonie to this miserable and wetched people. Herucies opinion was best liked, and the whole companie allowed his inogement, therebpon the captives (as men condemned) were brought to the rockes, and after their lims were broben, they were cast headlong into the seas, and so

The comming ouer of Richard Strangbow earle of Chepstow into Ireland, and of the taking of the citie of Waterford.

Chap. 16.

A this meane time Richard the earle, having provided and made all things in readinelle fit for so great an enterprise, toke 50 his fournie, and came through Wales to S. Daulds: and fill as he went he toke op all the best chosen and piked men that he could get. And having all things in place and in a readinesse meet and nev cellarie for luch a volage, he went to Wilford haven, and having a god wind toke thipping and came to Waterfood, in the kalends of September on the bis gill of faint Bartholomew, and had with him about tivo hundred gentlemen of god feruice, and a thoufand others. Then was fulfilled Celidons prophette, which was; that A little firebrand Chall go before a great fire; and as the sparkels inkindle the small wod, so thall the same set the great wood a fire. Like wife was fulfilled the fateng of Werlin; A great fores runner of a greater follower thall come, and he thall tread downe the heads of Defmond and Leinsfer. and the water before opened a made readie he Hall inlarge. Reimond being advertised of the earles are rivall, went the next morrow buto him with great top, having with him in his companie fortie gentle: men of fernice. And on the morrow opon faint Bartholomeius daie, being tuefdaie, they displated their banners, and in god arrate they marched to the wals of the citie, being fullie bent and determined to give

the affault : the citizens & fuch others as had escaped at Dundozogh manfullie defending themfelues, and gluing them two repulles. Keimond who by the consent and affent of the whole armie was thesen and made generall of the field, and tribune of the hoff, having espice a little house of timber Canding halfe open polls without the wals, called his men togither, and incouraged them to give a new affault at that (i) place. And having hewed downe the polis where boon the house stood, the same fell downe togs. ther with a peece of the towne wall; and then a waie being thus opened, they entred into the citie, and kill led the people in the Arats without pitie 02 mercie, leauting them lieng in great heaps; and thus with bloote hands they obteined a bloote victorie. In the tower called (2) Keinolos tower they toke two murtherers prisoners, whom they bnarmed and killed; al to they toke there Reinold, and Pachlathilen Dipe. lan prince of the Decies : but thefe were faued by tho was also come thither with Paurice Fitzgerald and Robert Fitzsterhans. And when they had let the citie and all other their things in god order, was Dozogh gaue his daughter Cus, thom he had then brought thither with him, to be maried to the earle according to the first pace and covenant; and then the mariage folemnized and all things fet in order, they displate their baners & marched towards Dublin.

(1) In the berie place of the affault is now outlock a frong fort and blockehouse, which is verie well fur niffed and appointed with ordinance and thot. It is in the verie east angle or point of the walles of the citie: and within on the fouth fide the walles both it appere how the fame was burned by the English. men at this their entrie.

(2) The Reinolds tower is a little tower in the wall of the old citie, and is next or verie nere adioining to a late monafterie og friers there : it is a berie 40 flender thing, and not worthie of any report; faving that the author both alledge it as a fort in those baies bled fo; a defenie.

The besieging and taking of the citie of Dublin.

Chap. 17.

Ermon being advertised, and having perfect aduertisement that they of Dubin had procured & flocked all or the most part of the land to come to aid, helps and to do: fend them; and that they had lated all the water, pas fages and freids about the citie, thereby no man could passe that wate, he left all those water; and pass fing through the mounteines of Glundoloch, he brought his whole armie fafe to (1) Dublin. And fuch was his mortall hatred towards the Dublians, that be could not forget the injuries don to himfelfe, and the Chamefull reprochdone to his father. For his father being on a time at Dublin, and there lit ting at the doze of a certein ancient man of the citic, they did not onelie there murther him; but for a further satisfieng of their malice, they cast him and but rico him with a dog : and therefore about all others he most mortallie hated them . The citizens much militulling them felues, they fend mellengers to in treate for peace; and in the end by the mediation and meanes of Laurence then the archbishop of Dublin, a parle and a treatie was obteined : but wiles the old and ancient men were talking of peace, the you ger fort were buffe in weapons. For Reimond and Piles of Cogan, two lufte rong gentlemen, but more delirous to fight bider Pars in the fieldsthan

132ophelies of Celidon and Aberlin fulfilled.

to fit in councell under Aupiter; and more willing to purchase honoz in the warres, than gaine in peace. They with a companie of luftie yong gentlemen subventie ran to the walles, t giving the affalt, brake in, entred the citie, and obteined the vidozie, making no fmall Caughter of their enimies; but pet the great ter number of them, with Halculphus their captein, escaped awaie with such riches a icwels as they had and recoucred themselves unto certeine thips which Two frange laic there, & fo failed to the north Flands. At this time 10 there happened two Arange miracles in the fame citic, the one was of a croffe or a roo which the citizens minding to have caried with them, was not not would be remoned; the other was of a pece of monie, with was offered to the fame root wife, & ever if returned backe againe, as you may le more there of in our topographie. When the earle had fpent a few vales in the citie, about fetting and fetting the fame in good order, he left the fame to the charge and gouernance of Miles Cogan : but he himfelfe by the persuasion of Pac Pozogh (who lought by all the waics be could, how to be revenged byon Droitke hing of Meth) inuaded the borders of Meth, and was fled, spoiled, and pettroied the same. All Weth being in the end wasted by the swood and fire; Kothonke Bing of Connagh thought with himfelf what might hereof befall onto him, bicause his neighbors house being let on fire, his was next to the like perill : he fent his medengers unto Dermon Bac Boogh a with this mellage. Contrarie to the order of the 30 ce peace, thou haff procured, called, and flocked into this land a great multitude and number of Arangers, " and as long as thou dioft fair and kiepe thy felfe a within the owne countrie of Leinster, we bare there with, and were contented. But for somuch as now not caring for thy oth, nor regarding the fafetie of " the holtages, thou half to fondlie a lewdlie palled thy c bounds : Jam to require thee, that thou do retire and withdraw these excurses of Arangers; or else " without faile I will cut off thy formes head, 4 fend 40 " it the. Pac Pozogh when he heard this mellage, full Coutlie answered, and said he would not give over that which he had begun, not delift from his enterprife, butill he suboued all Connagh his ancient inberitance, as also he had reconered the monarchie of all Ireland. Rothozike being advertised of this ans lwer, was formbat warmed and offended ther with, s forthwith in his rage commanded Hac Horoghs fonne, tho was his pledge, to be beheaded.

> (1) Dublin is the oldest and ancientest citie in all Ireland, and was builded by one Amelaus, the eldeft of the brethen named Offinen or Cafferlings: which came first out of Postvaie, or (as some write) out of Pozmandie, and did inhabit the land. It was first named Aghalia, that is, the towne of hurdels; for it standeth somewhat low and in a marish ground: and bicause when the same was first builded, the labozers were wont and did go byon hurdels, it take the name thereof. It was also called Dolin, which 60 is to faie blacke water, for of that name is a certeine broke, fleeting not farre out of the towne, but now iscalled Dublin or Divelin; it Candeth byon the river named Anelighus or the Lifter, and it is a port tolone, being the cheefest citie and emporium of all that land. It is walled with Cone round about, at the east part therof is a verie old castle, builded first by Henrie Lonvers archbishop of Dublin, about the pare 1 212, which is now the queenes castell, & where in the loss deputie of that land most commonly lieth, as also wherin the courts for the common law at the bluall terms are kept. The citie it felfe fands mot on trade of merchandise, tis by that means of god wealth. We inhabitants are mere Englichmen, but

of Ireland birth. The government thereof is binder a maioz and two thirtites. And as concerning the order, governement, thate, policies, and god ferniscs of the fame, I thall more at large declare in my particular billoxie of this land.

The councell or fy nod kept

at Armagh.

Chap. 18.

Defe things thus ended a compleated. there was a fynod or councell of all the clera gie called and affembled at Armagh : there to intreat and eramine what Mould be the causes and reasons, thy a therefore the realme was thus plagued by the reloct and repaire of frangers in among them . At length it was fullie agreed, and enerie mans opinion was, that it was Bods full plague for the finnes of the people, and especiallie bis cause they vied to buie Englishmen of merchants and pirats, and (contrarie to all equitie or reason) oto make bondlaues of them : and God now to avenge and acquit this their iniquitie, plagued them with the like, and hath let thele Englishmen & ffrangers to reduce them now into the like flaverie and bondage. For the Englithmen, when their realme was at reft and peace, and their land in quiet effate, and they not in anie diffreste, want, or penurie, their child den and kinsmen were sold and made bondlanes in Ireland. And therefore it was most like, that God for the fin of the people would to did late the like plague bpon the Irith people. It was therefore decreed by the faid councell, and concluded by that fynod, that all the Englishmen within that land, wheresoener they were, in bondage of captivitie, should be manumilled, let fræ and at libertie.

The proclamation of king Henrie
the fecond against the earle, and of
the sending of Reimond
to the king.

Chap. 19.

bentidings was caried absode of the god luccelle which the Englishmen had in Ireland, the news the further it went, the moze it increased; and the king being ad. 50 nertifed that the earle had not onlie recovered Leins fer, but had also conquered sundite other territories, thereinto he had no title by the right of his wife, did let forth his proclamation, forbidding and inhis biting that from thenfeforth no thip from out of any place, onder his dominion, should passe og trastike into Ireland: and that all maner of his lubicas which incre within that realme, thould returne from thence into England before Caffer then nert following, pron paine of forfeiture of all their lands, as also to be bantifed men for ever. The earle when he faw him felfe in this diffres, being in perill to lose his friends, and in hazard to want his necestaries, taketh aduise and counsell what were best to be done. At length it was agreed and concluded, that Keimond thould be fent over to the king then being in Aquitaine, with letters to this effect. Apright honourable lord, I came into this land with your leave and favour (as I remember) for the alding and helping of your fers uant Dermon Bac Pozogh. And that focuer Thaue gotten and purchased, either by him or by ante others, as I confesse and acknowledge the same from and by meanes of your gratious goodnesse: so thall the same still rest and remaine at your devotion and commandement.

C.ij.

The

Chap.20,21,23

The departure of Reimond to the king, and the death of Dermon Mac Morogh.

Chap.20.

mot commandement given to him) made his repaire with all diligence to the king, a batting delivered his letters did await for the answer. But the king being in some dislike with the earle, and not fauourable also with since the difference of the time, and lingered to give anie answer. Boot this time (1) Noomas the archithop of Cantonium about the king being of Agie, motherie was murthered of Agie, mother was murthered of Agie, when Horizond height of Boogh, being of a god age, and well driken in years died, and was buried at Fernes.

(1) The Romith or popith thurth make much a do about this man, afterming him to be a man of much vertue and holinette, and that he was martyzed for the defending of the liberties of holis thurth, and for this cause the pope canonized him to be a saint. But tho so list to peruse and eramine the course of the English histories, thall find that he was a stoward and obstinat traitor against his master a source of the king and prince: as amongs other writers it appeareth in the boke of the Acs and Ponuments of Iohn Fox. And softomuch as the course of this chapeter tendeth tholie in ertolling of him, I have omitated have, and leave to trouble the reader theres with

The ouerthrow giuen to Hasculphus and the Easterlings or Norwaiemen at Dublin.

Chap. 21.

T this time about the feast of Pentecost 03 Whitsuntide, Hasculchus, the was sometime the chiefe ruler of Dublin, sought by all the water he could how he might be revenged for the reproch and thame which he had received when the citie of Dublin was taken, and he then datuen to flie to his thip, and to faue himfelfe. This man had bene in Portraie, and in the north Ilands to feke for some helpe and aidrand having obteined the fame he came with the efcore thips well appointed, and full 50 fraughted with luftic men of warre buto the coaffs of (1) Dublin, minding to affaile the citie, and hoping to recover the fame. And without anie belatengs he landed and bullyiped his men, tho were guided and conducted under a capteine named John Wood 03 John Had, for to the word Mod meaneth. They were all mightie men of warre, and well awointed affer the Danish maner, being harnested with good brigandines, facks, and thirts of male; their thields, buchlers, and targets were round, and coloured red, 60 and bound about with fron : and as they were in armoz, to in minds also they were as fron firong and mightie.

Abele men being let in battell araie, and in god oder, do march onwards towards the east gate of the citie of Dublin, there minding to give th'assault, and with force to make entrie. Piles Cogan then warden of the citie, a man verie valiant and lustie, although his men and people were verte few, and as it were but a handfull in respect of the others: yet boldie giveth the adventure and onset upon his entimics: but then he saw his owne small number not to be able to resist nor withstand so great force, and they kill pressing a inforcing upon him, he was different order than his entitle than he saw his owne small number not

men to retire backe with all his companie, and with the lotte of mante of his men, and of the mone being verie well armed, yet was his thigh cut off cleane at a froke with a Galloglaffe are. But Richard Cogan brother onto Wiles, understanding how hardlie the matter palled and had fped with his brother, ludden, lie and secrettie with a few men issueth out at the fouth posterne or gate of the citie, and fealing boon the backs of his entmires, maketh a great thout, and therewith tharpelie giveth the onfet byon them. At which suoden chance they were so dismated, that al. beit some fighting before, and some behind, the case was doubtfull, the event bucerteine: yet at length they fled and ran awaie, and the most part of them were flaine, and namelie John Mod, thom with a thers John of Riventford twke and killed. Halculthus fleeing to his thips was to tharpelie purfued. that bpon the lands he was taken, but laucd; and for the greater honour of the victorie was caried backe alive into the citie as a captive, where he was some fime the chiefe ruler and governour : and there his was kept till he thould compound for his ransome. And then he being brought and presented to Diles Cogan, in the open fight and audience of all the peo. ple, and fretting much for this euill fortune and overthrow, suddenlie and in great rage brake out into thele fpeches, fateng: Whe are come hither now but a small companie, and a few of bs, and these are but the beginnings of our aduentures; but if God fendme life, you thall fe greater matters infue and follow. Hiles Cogan then he heard thefe words (for in the twng fandeth both life and death, the lood abhorreth the proud heart, and verie badlie douth he ease his greefe which augmenteth his forrow) commanded him to be beheaded. And so the life to him before cour. teouslie granted, be by his fonomesse of folishie

(1) The post or haven of Dublin is a barred haven, and no great thips does come to the towne it felse but at a fixing or high water, and therefore they do lie in a certeine rode without the barre, which is a bout foure or five miles from the citie, and the same is called Kingwod; and from thence to Holie hed in Wales is counted the Mortell cut between England and Iroland.

Rothorike prince of Connagh and Gotred king of Man do befiege the citie of Dublin.

Chap. 22.

Ifter this, the Irishmen perceiving that by reason of the kings late proclamation, the earles men and vittels old walf, decale, and consume for want of their wonted suplies from out of England; all their princes allembled themselves, and do agree with all their power and force to beliege the citie of Dublin , being procured thereunto by Laurence then archbithop there; tho for the zeale and love of his countrie, did verie earnell lie travell herein : and toining with Rothorike king of Connagh, they fent their letters to Gotred king of the Ile of Dan, and to all others the princes of the Ilanos, making earnoft requeffs, bling theft perfuations, and promiting liberall rewards, if they would come to helpe and aid them to beliege Dublin; they on the water, and the other at land: tho were eatilie to be perfuaded therbuto, and forth with yelded to these requests, not onelie for the De fire of gaines offered: but especiallie, because they doubted, and were afraid of the Englishmen, the having dailie god luccelle they feared leaf they in time would give the onfet on them, and make a conqueff ouer their postellions. And therfore they forthwith made themselves readie, and prepared their thips accordinglie . And as some as the next god wind fernes, they cante in thirtie thips of warre, perie well appointed, and arrived into the haven of Aneliffe, or port of Dublin : abole comming was verie thankfull and gratefull. for thie Thole helps are bell liked when men in their affaires have thole to joine with them which be or feare to be in the like to perils and dangers & But the earle and his companie, who had beene that by note two moneths within the citie, and thole bittels failed, and were almost confumed, by reason that opon the kings commans benient a reftraint was made (and therefore none could be brought buto them out of England) were in a great dumpe and perpleritie, and in Bamaner were at their wits end, and wift not what to do. And in this their cale fee the courle and nature of fortune, the then the frommeth, sendeth not one cuill alone, 20 in the like anguith and heavinette spake thus. but heapeth mildrefe poor mildrefe, and trouble op on trouble. For behold Donald Bac Dermon came from out of the borders of Bencile, & brought news that the men of Merford of Rencile to the num ber of thie thouland persons had beseiged Robert Fitifichans and his few men in his castell of the Bareche, and wileste they did helpe and rescue him within thee dates it would be to late; for they thould and would else be taken . At this time, there was with the earle within the citie Paurice Fitzgerald, 30 and his coline Acimond, who was latelie returned from the court; and thefe were not onelle now trous bled in respect of their owne cause, but for the distres of others, and speciallie Paurice Fitzgerald, who tenderlie twice and was greened with the diffressed state of his brother Robert Fitzstephans, and of his wife and children, that they being in the middle of their enimies, thould be in so weake a hold not able to have out such a companie: and so rising by mas keth this speech to the earle, and to such as were about 40 him, as followeth.

The oration of Maurice Fitzgerald.

Chap. 23.

Eworthie men, we came not hither, nor were we called into this countrie to be idle, 5 not to live velicioulie: but to trie fortune, and to leke adventures. The frod fomtimes 50 byon the top of the thele, and the game was on our five; but now the thiele is turned, we call downe: and yet no doubt the will turne againe, and we thall be on the top. For luch is the mutabilitie of fortune, tluch is the bucerteine fate & course of this world, that prosperitie and advertitie do interchangeablie, and by course the one follow the other. After daie commeth the night; and when the night is pasted, the daie returneth againe. The fun rifeth, and when he meth to his fall: and as some as the night is past, he is againe come and returned to his riling againe. We tho before this have made great triumphs, t have had fortune at will, are now that op on eucrie fide by our enimies. THe be destitute of vittels, and can have no reliefe neither by land not yet by fea: our frænds cannot helpe us, and our entinies readie to denoure bs. Likewife Fitzstechans, whose valid anthelle and noble enterpaile both made waie buto bs into this Fland, he now is also that up in a weake hold and fæble place, to weake and acnder to hold and kope out to great a force. Which then do we tarie? And therefore dw we so linger? Is there anie hope of relæfe from home : po no, the matter

is other wife, and we in worle cafe. For as we be o dious and hatefull to the Irithmen, even to ive now are reputed: for Friffmen are become batefull to our owne nation and countrie, and fo are two obious both to the one and to the other. Therfore for formuch as fortune fauoreth the forward, and helpeth the bold; let us not longer delate the matter, not like fluggards lie fill: but wiles we are yet luftie, and our vittels not all spent, let us give the onset byon our enimies : for though we be but few in number in respect of them, yet if we will be of valiant minds and luffie courages, as we were wont to be, we may bamilie have the victorie and conquest of these naked wetches and bnarmed people. These speeches he bled as the ficke man is wont to do, tho in hope of reconerie of his health, doth manie times beare out a good countenance, and diffemble his inward greefe and heavineffe. When he had fullie ended his talke and spoken his mind, Reimond, tho was all

The oration of Reimond.

Chap. 24.

E renowmed, and worthie, a noblemen. upole fame for valiantnelle and chivalrie is carried and spead beyond and through the of cean feas: we are now to loke well buto out Celues, and to have goo regard to our hono; and crepit. Bou have heard how granelie my bucle Baurice bath veclared, how pithilie he hath adulted, and bow princentlie he hath counfelled be what we shall do in this our diffreste and prefent necessitie. Where fore we are well to confider thereof, a to determine and resolve our felves what we will do. The time is Most, the perils imminent, and the dangers great, and therefore no velates are now to be bled . It is no time now to fit in long councels, norto spend much time in speches; but in present perils we must ble present remedies. De le the entinies both at sea and land round about us, and no wate is there to escape; but we must either give the adventure boon them like men, or die here like beaffs: for our bit. tels faile vs, and our provision wareth frant & Mort, and we know not bow to renew the fame . And how little comfort we are to loke for out of England, and what small helpe we thall have from the king, I have alreadie at large declared buto you . I know his ercellencie dispatsethnot our actuities, but pet he favozeth not our fuccelles: he discommendeth not our valiantnelle, but yet enuich at our glotte : in mozds he reporteth well of our feruices, but he vet fecretlie himsereth the same : he scareth that which we meane not, and doubteth of that which we thinke not. To truff therefore buto them, who care not for vs; to loke for helpe from them, who mind not anie; and to wait for relecte there none is meant; it were but a mære follie, and a lost labor on our parts, and in hath speed his beames all the date time, then be come 60 the end like to return e to our of one shame, reproch, c confusion. Wherefore being out of all hope of ante further helpeoglapplie; and cut of all doubt of anie further comfort or reliefe : let us as becommethno ble, luftie, and valiant men, trie the course of for tune, and prome the force of the entinie. Let it appære buto them as it is knowen buto bs, of what race we came, and from whom we descended. Cami ber (as it is well knowen) the first particular king of Cambria our natine countrie, was our ancellor, and he the sonne of that noble Brutus, the first and sole monarch of all England, whole ancellog was Tros the founder of the most famous citie of Troie, and he descended from Dardanus the sonne of Jupiter, from whom is derived but o bs not onlie the Armine Citt.

of ancient nobilitie, but also a certeine naturall inclination of valiant minds, & couragious Comachs, bent to follow all exploits in prowelle and chinalrie, and therein all our ancellors have beine berte fkil. full and expert. And thall we now like Auggards be. generate from fo noble a race, and like a fort of cow ards be afraid of these naked and bnarmed rascalls. in whome is no valor of knowledge nor experience in armes . Shall fuch a rabble of fauages pinne bs by within the walles of this little Dublin, and make I he afraid of them; when in times past all the princes of Brece kept warres for ten peares & oo moneths continuallie against our ancestors in the famous ch tie of Trote, and could not prevaile against them, untill they vied treasons and practiled treacheries, which beed but o them a more infamous victorie than a glozious triumph: Shall the honoz of our ancestors be withered by our fluggiffmette, and the glozie of their prowelle be buried in our cowardnelle? Shall ive be afraid of a few, and onarmed, when they with, 20 flod infinit multitudes of the most worthiest and bas lianted personages then in all the world. Let it ne. ner be said, that the blond of the Trotans thall be fained in our pulllanimitie, and receive reproch in our follie.

And what though our enimies be never fo manie, and we in respect of them but a handfull; shall we therefore be afrated; as though vistorie frod in multitude, and conquest in great numbers. Po no, kings he not so saved noz princes do so conquer : for a few men well disposed and a small number well incom raged, are lufficient to incounter with a greater number, being weetches and fluggards. For fortune though the be purtrated to be blind, as one void of right judgement; and to fand bpon a rolling fone, as being alwaies fleting and mourable : yet for the most part the helpeth such as be of bold minds and of balfant flomachs. If time did ferue as matter is full and plentions, I could hereof recite manie yea inti-nite eramples. (1) Thomicis the Seithian queene, 4 did not the with a few hundreds incounter with the great monarch Cyzus, having manie thoulands, and toke him and flue him. Alerander with a few Pace donians, did not he overcome Darius the great monarch of the Werlians, and take him, his wife, and baughters priloners, e made a conquest of all perlia : (2) Leonides the Spartan, did not be with fir hundred men breake into the campes of the mightie Ferres, and there flate flue thouland of them. Let bs come a little nærer euen to our selues, who have had 50 in our owne persons, and in this land the like succesfes, namelie you my right honourable earle at Was terford, and my bucle fitstemans at Werford; and I my felfe at Dundojogh : fmall were our companies, and little was our force in refrect of theirs, and yet we few thorough our valiantnelle onercame and conquered them being manie.

What thall I trouble you with the recitall of eramples, fith time thall twner fatte than matter want: and thall we then give over and be white live 60 red . Shall we like cowards couer our progenie, our nation, and our selnes also, with perpetuall thaine and infamile: God forbid. My mind then and opinion is, that we do illue out byon them, as fer cretlic and as fuddenlie as we mate, and boldlie gine the onlet boon them. And for somuth as Kothorike of Connagh is the generall of the field, in whom lieth the chiefe force, and on whom all the rest do depend, it thall be best to begin with him, and then if we can give the overthrow buto him, all the relique will flie, and we thall obteine a glozious victorie: but if we thall fall into their hands and be killed, yet thall we leave an honourable report and an immortall fame to all our polleritie. When Keimond had ended his .

freches and finished his waition, ever te one fo well liked thereof, as with one consent they gave over, and yelded to his resolution and opinion.

(1) Typus the sonne of Cambiles the first mo stridents narch of Perlia, after that he had suboued all A. from inge fia, he minding to do the like in Scithia did ingade like. the fame: Thomiris being then quiene thereof. And on a certeine time having pitched his tents in a faire and pleafant foile, fundenlie as though he had bane afraied of his enimies he fled, and left his tents full of wines and vittels. Which when the quane heard, the fent hir onelie some a young gentleman with the third part of hir holf and armie to follow and purfue Craus : who when he came to the forfaken tents, and finding there fuch abundance a plentie of wine and vittels, inherebuto the Scithians had not before beene accustomed, they fell so hungerlie to their bit. tels, and branke to liberallie of the wines, that thep were overladen and overcommed with furfetting, Which then Cyans heard of the lubbenite and fecret lie in the night came boon them, and finding them all alleve, killed them all. Thomicis hearing of this, was not fo much grieved with forcow for the death of hir fonne, as inflamed with the defire to be renenged. And the likewife faining bir felfe to flie, Crius by purfuing of hir was brought into certeine narrow Areids, where the taking the advantage of him, toke him , killed him , and flue all his companie, to the number of two thousand : infomuch that there was not one left to returne with mellage to beclare the fame?

(2) Leonibes was king of Sparta of Lacodo monta, tho being adverticed that the mightisms narch Terres minding to continue the warres with his father Darius had appointed and begun against all Gréce, ethat he had made preparation therefore side peaces togister, doch also prepare himselse to withstand the same. And notwithstanding that Ferres had in his armite thie hundred thousand of his otime subjects, and two hundred thousand of his otime subjects, and two hundred thousand of this otime subjects bearing gotten Ferres within the streams of Thermipolis, and he having but some thousand solviers gave the onset upon the monard, and sought the battels thie dates togister with him, and at length gave him the overthow.

How Rothorike of Connagh, and all his whole armie was discomstied.

Chap.25.

Mmediatlie opon the foresaid persuali ons, enerie man with all speed had made him felfe readie and got on his armoz, thinking it to long yer they did bicker with the enimie: and being all affembled and in good arraie, they diulded them into the wings or wards, though in num ber they were verie few. In the first was Reimond with twentie gentlemen and his few foldiers. In the fecond Piles Cogan with thirtie gentlemen and his other few foldiers. And in the third was the earle and Paurice Fitzgerald with fortie gentlemen and all their foldiors. And in everie ward were some of all the citizens, fauing fuch as were appointed for the gard and fafetie of the citie. Thus all things being let in an order, they subdentie in the morning about nine of the clocke issued out, but not without some contention and controversies they strined among themselves, who should have the fore ward, and give the onlet opon the enimies, the were in number a bout thirtie thousand: neverthelesse they in the end a greed and appointed in order how all things thould be done : and forthwith issued out and gave the onke

pon their enimies, tho then were out of araie and older, being buwares of their comming. Refmond among the first being the first was foremost, a gaue the arit adventure, and arthing two of his entinies through with his lance or fraffe Que them both. Petlerius also and Girald and Alexander the two sonnes of Paurice, although they were in the rereward; pet they were to hot upon the fourte, and followed in fuch luftic maner, that they were as forward as the fores most, and right valiantlie did overthrow and kill 10 manie of the enimies.

The like valiant minds were in all the whole rest bue, who now frived a ferued all for the best game : and fo luffilie they acquitted themselves, that the e nimies being afrato, were faine to take their heles and to run awaie. But they fill followed and purfued them euen bntill night, Will murthering & Spotling them . Nothorike the king himfelfe truffed fo much in the great trops and multitudes of his peo. ple; that he thought nothing lette, than that fo fmall a number as were within, would iffue out and give the onlet boon lo manie as were without. And there fore taking his pleasure and pastance, he was then a bathing : but ithen he heard how the game went, and how his men were discomfitted & the most part fled or flieng awaie, he neither tarried for his chamberleine to apparell him, noz for his page to help him: but with all the half and post half he could, he turneth a faire paire of heeles and runneth awaie: and albeit he were verie tharpelie purfued, pet (though hardlie) 30 he escaped. At night all the companie being returned, they recovered themselves into the citie againe: not onclie with the honor of the field, but also with great boties and preies of vittels , armoz , and other trash. Immediatlie also were dispersed the other camps, namelie the archbithops, Pachlaghlin, Pa delewn, Gillemeholocke and Dhencelos, who had all the force of Leinster, fauing a few of Benetle and Merford: and these were incamped on the fouth live. Likewise Drortke of Weth, Dharrell of Aciell, Bac 40 Shaghline and Dcadife which were incamped on the north five railed their campes and thifted for thems fclues. On the morrow, all things being fet in god order, and good watch appointed for the fafe keeping and cultodie of the citie, they march towards Weep ford, and take the higher wate by Dozone.

The guilefull and treacherous taking of Robert Fitzstephans at the Karecke.

Cap. 26.

Fter this good fucceste, fortune who cannot continue firme in one ffaie, both now thange hir course, and interlineth advertitie with prosperitie . For whie, there is neither faith firme, not felicitie permanent bpon the earth. For the Werford men and they of Kencile, forget ting their promile, and nothing regarding their faith Fitzstephans, do now assemble themselves to the number of thee thouland, and do march toward the Bareche, there to beliege the fame, where Kobert FitzGephans was then: who mistrusting & fearing nothing, had but five gentlemen and a few archers about him. The enimies give the affalt, & not preualling at the first, ow renew the same agains and againe: but when they saw that all their labours were lot, bicaufe that fitsffephans and his companiethough they were but a few in number, yet they were verie nimble and verie readie to octeno them: felues, and especiallie one William Pott, who in his fernice did berie well and worthilie acquit him felfe; they now do like to practife their old fubtil

ties and guiles. They leading therefore to ble force and violence, do now water colour of peace come toward the Barecke and bring with them the bilhop of kiloare, the bilbop of Wicrford, a certeine other religious persons, who brought with them a malle, boke. Corpus Domini, and certeine relikes : and after a few speches of persuation had with Fitzstephans, they to compasse their matter, twhe their corporall othes, and Moze opon a boke, that the citie of Dublin was taken : and that the earle, Paurice, Refe mond, and all the Englishmen were taken and killed; that Kothozike of Connagh, with all the wolc power and armie of Connagh Leinfer, was comming towards Werford for the apprehention of him: but for his take, and for the god will which they bare bnto him, bicause they had alwaie found him a courteous and a liberall prince, they were come buto him to conveie him alvaie in lafetie. and all his over into Wales, before the comming of that great multitude, thich were his extreame and mortall enfo mies. Fit Mephans giving credit to this their Iwea. ring and anowates, did foothwith peld himfelfe, his people, all that he had buto them and their cultodie: but they forthwith most traitorouslie, of them that thus yeloed into their hands fome they killed, fome they beat, some they wounded, and some they call into prison. But allone as newes was brought that Dublin was falle, and that the earle was marching towards them; thele traitors let the towne on fire, and they themselves with bag and baggage and with their parloners gat them into the Iland Begonie. which they call the holie Iland, and which lieth in the middle of the hauen there.

> The description of Robert Fitzstephans.

> > Chap.27.

Poble man, the onelie patterne of bertue. and the example of true industrie and labours: who having tried the variablenede of fortune, had tafted more advertitte than prosperitie! D worthie man, who both in Ireland and in Wales had traced the phole compatte of for tunes theele, and had endured that soener god for, tune of enill could give ! D Fitzstethans, the berie fecond an other(1) Parties, for if you do confider his prosperitie, no man was more fortunate than be: and on the contrarie, if you marke his advertitie, no man was or could be more miserable. He was of a large and full bodie, his countenance berie comclie : and in flature he was somewhat more meane: he was bountifull, liberall, and pleafant, but pet sometimes somethat aboue modellie given to wine and women . The earle (as is aforefaid) marched with his armie towards Werford, fall by Dozone, which was a place full of ffreits , palles, and bogs, and verie harolie to be patted through: but thichthey had before made and affured buto Robert 60 yet the thole power, force, and frength of all Leinfer came thither, and met him and gave him the battell, betweene whom there was a great fight, and mante of the enimies flaine. But the earle with the lolle of one onelie yangman recouered himfelfe in lafetie to the plaines, and there amongst others, Meilerius theined himselfe to be a right valiant

> (1) This Parius was named Caius Parius, his father was borne in Arpinum, & from thence came to Rome, and there dwelt, being a poze artificer and bandicrafts man , but much relieued by Metellus a noble Koman, in whole home, and buser thom, both the father arm the some were servants: but being giuen

given altogither to martiall affaires, he became a verie valiant man, and did as good fernice to the citie of Rome as anie before or after him. Affrica he conquered, and in his first triumph Jugurtha and his tivo fonnes were bound in chaines, and carted captiues to Kome before his chartot. The Cambrians, Germans, and Tigurians wanting habitations, and thinking to fettle themfelues in Italie, tranelled thitherivards for the fame purpole; but being denied by the Romans, they made moli cruell warres opon 10 them, and flue of them at one time fourescoze thou, fand fouldiers, and the escape thousand of others, inherewith the Cate of Rome and of all Italie was to broken, and ouerthrowne, that the Romans much bewalled themselves, & oto thinks verelie that they Chould be otterlie destroied. In this diffresse Partus toke the matter in hand, and mexing first with the Germans, gave them the battell, sive their king Teutobochas, and two hundred thouland men, befide fourescoze thousand which were taken. After that he met with the Cambitans, and five their king Beleus, and an hundled and fortie fysuland with him, as also toke fortie thousand prisoners. For which bictorie he triumphed the second time in Rome, and was named then the third founder of Kome. Againe in the civil wars which grew by the means of Dau. fins, all Italie was then in armes, and the Romans in everie place had the worle five (for all Italie began to forfake them) and in this diffreste Parius has ning gotten but a small power in respect of the ent, 30 mies, giveth the onfet boon the Warlians, and at two times he flue fouretene thousand of them: which so qualled the Italians, and incouraged the Komans, that the Romans recovered themselves and had the mailirie. As in the warres to otherwise was Parius verie fortunate: for being but of a bale focke, pet he maried Julia, a noble woman of the familie of the Julies, and aunt onto Julius Cefar: he patted thos rough the most part of the offices in Rome: he was first Legatus a senatu , then Prafectus equitum: after that 40 Tribunus plebis, Prator, Aedilis, and Ceuen times was he confull. And as fortune fæmed to faucur and countenance him aboue all other in Kome; fo bid the also diccke him with great reprodes, & burdened him with great mileries. For his price was lo ercelline. and his ambition to intollerable, that the best and most part of the Komans deadlie hated and enuted him; and therefore when he laboured to be Aedilis, Prator, Tribune, he was retened; he was accused for ambition, and proclamed a traitor and an enimic to 50 the common-wealth: he was inforced to forfake Rome and flie into Affrike. Also being at the feas, the mariners cast him on land among his enimics, and draue him to thist for himselfe. When he was pursued by his enimies, he was faine to hide him felfe in a bog, and conered him felfe with dirt a mire because he would not be knowne. Beuerthelesse he was taken and delivered to a flave to be killed. Da. nie other frozmes of advertitie and milerie did he as that in milerie no man was more milerable, and in felicitie none more fortunate and happie than he.

> The description of the earle Strangbow.

> > Chap. 28.

He earle was somethat rubble and of sanguine complexion and freckle faced, his eies greie , his face feminine, his boice fmall, and his necke little, but fornewhat of a high Nature: he was verie liberall, courteous and gentle: what he could not compate and bying to patte in

Ded, he would win by got words and gentle fre. thes . In time of peace he was more readie to pielo and obeie, than to rule and beare fwate. But of the campe he was more like to a foultier companion than a capteine or ruler : but in the campe and in the warres he carted with him the fate and counter nance of a valiant capteine. Of himfelfe he would not adventure anie thing, but being advised and for on, he refused no attempts: for of himselfe he would not rafflie aquenture, oz pzefumptuoullie take anie thing in hand. In the fight and battell he was a most affured token and figure to the whole companie, ei ther to frand valiantile to the fight, or for policie to retire. In all chances of warre he was fill one and the fame maner of man, being neither difmaid with aduerlitie, not putted by with prosperitie.

The earle leaving Wexford vponthe newes that Fitzstephans was in hold, went to Waterford, and from thence failed into England, & Was reconciled to the king.

Chap. 29.

S the earle was marching towards Bucfford, and was come to the borders there of, certeine mellengers met him, and thewed to him the milchance happened buto Robert Attallephans, and of the letting on fire the towne of Werford : soding moreover, that the traitors were fullie determined if they travelled anie further tomarns them, they would cut off all the heads of fit; fremans and his companie, and fend them buto him. Wherefron with heavie cheare & forrowfull hearts they change their minds, and turne towards Was terford. Where when they were come, they found Hernie now latelie returned from the king with a mellage and letters from him buto the earle, perluabing and requiring him to come over into England buto him. Therebpon the earle prepared and made himfelfe readie, and as fone as wind and wear ther ferued he toke thipping, and carted Hernie a. long with him. And being landed he rode fowards the king, and met him at a towne called Bewham nere buto Bloceffer, where he was in redines with a great arinie to faile ouer into Irland. Where after fundite a manie alfercation's palled befwæne them, at length by means of Hervie the kings dilpleafure was appealed, and it was agreed that the erle hould liveare allegeance to the king, and yeld and fur render buto him the citie of Dublin, with the cantreds therbuto adioining, as also all such towns and forts as were bordering boon the lea lide . And as for the refloue he should have and reteine to him and his heirs, holding the fame of the king a of his heirs. These things thus concluded, the king with his ar mic marched along by Severne live, the lea coalis of (1) Westwales, buto the towne (2) of Pen bide and indure, and therefore it was faid of him, 60 broke, where he taried untill he had affembled all his armie in (3) Wilford hauen there to be thipped.

> (1) Westwales in Latine is named Demetia, and is that which is now called Penbrokethire. It read theth from the leas on the north buto the leas on the fouth. In the well part thereof is the bishops le of Deneue named faint Daufos : and on the east five it bordereth vpon Southwales named Depenbart. In this part were the Flemmings placed first.

> (2) Penbroke is the chiefest towne of all Demetia, and lieth on the cast side of Pilford hauen, therein was fometimes a verie arong caffell builbed (as fome watte) by a noble man named Arnulth Pont

(3) Millor

Chap.30,31,32.

(3) Pilsoto is a famous and a goodle harbozough lieng in Demetia, 03 Wickiwales. The Welthmen name it the mouth of two fwords. It hath two brantheso; armes, the one flowing hard to Hanerford west, and the other thosough the countrie named Rollia.

Ororike prince of Meth belieging Dublin, is driven off by Miles Cogan, and hath the worlf fide.

Chap.30.

A the meanetime Drozike, the one eled king of Weth, watching the absence of the earle as alfoof Kelmond, the one being in England, and the other at Materford, he muffered a great number of foldiors, and opon a funden about the kalends of September, laieth fiege to the citie of Dublin: within the which there were 20 then but few men, but yet they were valiant and bes riemen indeed. And as the flame can not be suppel fed, but that it will breake out : enen fo vertue and valiantnelle can not be thut up, but that it will (when time and occasion ferueth) thew it felfe . For Piles Cogan and all his companie opon a ludden iffue out byon the enimies, and unwares taking them napping, made a great flaughter of them: among whom there was the some of Drorike, a luftie poing gene tleman, and he flaine also. And at this time the king of England, lieng at Penbroke in Wales, hefell 30 out with the noblemen and gentlemen of the countrie: bicause they had suffered the earle Richard to take his pallage among them from thenle into Ire. land . And remouting fuch as had anie charge of kee ping of any forts there, he placed others therein: but at length his heat being coled, this displeasure quale led, they were reconciled agains to his god fauour

Thilest the king late there, he had great pleasure in hawking, and as he was walking abroad with a gothawke of Porwaie upon his fix, he had espice a falcon litting opon a rocke; and as he went about the rocke to view and behold him, his golhawke having allo espied the falcon, bated bitto him, and therewith the king let him flie. The falcon fæing hir felfe thus beset, taketh also wing : and albeit hir flight was but flow at the first; yet at length the maketh wing and mounteth up of a great height: and taking the addowne with all hir might, and Arthing hir the clave bir backe afunder, and fell downe dead at the kings fot: wherat the king and all they that were then prefent had great maruell. And the king having good fo hing, and being in love with the falcon, die pearelis at the breeding and disclosing time send thither for them: for in all his land there was not a better and a

more hardie hawke.

The comming of king Henrie into Ireland.

Chap.31.

Dele things thus done, and all prepar red in a readinesse fit for such a noble enterprise, and for which the king had flated a long time in Males, he went to faint Da. ulos thurth, where when he had made his praiers and done his denotion, the wind and the wether well feruing, he toke thipping and arrived buto Mater. ford in the kalends of Pouember, being faint Luks daie: having in his retinue fine hundred gentlemen of feruice, and of bolomen and horfemen a great

number. This was in the seventeenth yeare of his reigne, the one i fortith of his age, and in the yeare of our Logo one thouland one hundged leauentie & two, Alexander the third then pope, Frederike thenem peroz, and Lewes then French king. And now was propheties of fulfilled the prophetie of Werlin , that A firie globe Merlin and thall come out of the east, and thall denour and constitution fume all greland round about : and like wife the prothefie of faint Polin, that Dut of the east challtome a mightic hurling wind, a ruth thorough to the west, and thall run thosough and overthrow the force and Arenath of Ireland.

The citizens of Wexford present vnto the king Robert Fitzstephans, and sundrie princes of Ireland come and submit themselves to the king.

Chap.32.

• Peking being thus landed at Talaterford, and there relling himselfe, the citizens of Terford, bnoer colour and pretente of great humbleneffe and dutie, and in hope of some thanks , they brought Robert Kitzstemans bound as a captiue and a priloner, and prefented him to the king as one who deferued fmall fauozog courtelie, that he had without his confent a leave entered into Ireland, & given thereby an occasion to others to offend and to do euill. The king not liking of him, fell out with him, and charged him berie deepelie and tharplie for his rath and hattie adventures, and that he would take boon him to make a conquest of Fres land without his affent and leave: and forthwith commanded him to be handlocked and fettered, with an other puloner, and to be fafelie kept in Renold tower. Then Dermon Pac Arth prince of (1) Corke came to the king of his owne free will, Submitted himselfe, became tributarie, and toke his oth to be true and faithfull to the king of England. After this the king remoued his armie and marched toward (2) Lisemore, and after that he had tarried as bout two bales, he went to (3) Cashill, and thisher came buto him at the river of (4) Sure, Donold prince of (5) Limerike: where when he had obteis ned peace, be became tributarie and fwoge fealtie. The king then let (of his men) rulers and kapers o uer the cities of Cooke and Limerike.

Then also came in Donold prince of Diforic, and uantage of the golhawke hir aducrfarie, commeth 50 Pacleighlin D Felin prince of the Decies, and all the best & chiefest men in all Pounster, & oid submit themsclues, became tributaries and swoze fealtie. Whome when the king hav verie liberallie rewars bed, he fent them home againe : and he himfelfe returned backe agains to Waterford through (6) It brach. When he came to Materford, Fitzstephans was brought before him , & when he had well behelo him, and confidered with himfelfe the valiantneffe of the man, the good feruice he had done, & the perils & 60 dangers he had beene in the began to be moued with fome pitis and compassion bponhim, and at the intercession & by the mediation of certeine noblemen, he heartilis forgaue him, and released him from out of bonds, and reffored him wholie to his former fate and libertie, fauing that he referued to himselfe the towne of Merford, with the territories and lands thereinto abidining: a not long after some of those traitors, who thus had betrated him, were themselv ues taken and put to death.

> (1) Cooke, in Latine named Corcagium, is an ans cient citie in the pronince of Mounter, and builded (as it Could ameare) by the Casterlings of Poze wates. It Canocth now in a marth or a bog, and bne

to it flowerth an arme of the less, in the which are manic gwolie receptacles or harboroughs for thips, & much frequented as well for the goodie commodities of fishings therein, as also for the trade of merchans dise, by the which the citie is chieflie mainteined: for the inhabitants are not onlie merchants & great tras uellers themselues; but also great flose of ffrange merchants do dailie refort a traffike with them. It is walled round about, and well fortified for a fufficis ent defense against the Irishite. In it is the bishops 10 fee of that dioceste, being called by the name of the bishop of Cooke. The citie is gouerned by a maio; and two bailiffes, who bling the governement accord ding to the lawes of England, do keepe and mains teine the same in verie god ower. They are verie much troubled with the enimie, and therefore they bo continuallie, as men lieng in a garison, kæpe watch and ward both date and night. The prince of that countrie did most commonlie kepe e staie himfelfe in all troubles within that citie, butill the time the 20 fame was conquered by the Englithmen, tho ener fince have inhabited in the fame.

(2) Lisemoze in times past was as faire a towne as it is ancient, and flandeth bpon a goodie river, thich floweth buto Poughall, and fo into the maine fcas. It was fometimes a bithoppike, but of late be nited to the bilhopathe of Waterford, and foit lieth in the countie and diocesse of Waterford, but the soile

it felfe was within the countie of Cooke.

(3) Cathill is an old ruinous towne, but walled, 30 mid franceth byon the river Sure. In it is the fæ and catheorall dourch of the bishop, bearing the name therof, the is one of the foure archbilhopaks of that land, and under him are the bishops of Waterford,

Cooke, and feuen others.

- (4) The Sure is a godlie and a notable river, and one of the chiefest in that land. It hath his head or fyring in a certeine bill called Blandina, but in Triff Sloghblome, for the pleasantnesse thereof. Manie god townes are feated and builded boon the 40 fame, a it is navigable more than the one halfe. It fleteth from the fpring or head fast by the towne of Tholleis, whereof the earle of Damond is baron: from thense to the holie crosse and so to Clomnell, & from thenle to Carig Dac Briffith, where is an are cient house of the earles, sometime named the earles of the Carig, but now earles of Demond; and from thense fleting by Tivzach, it commeth to Water. ford; and fleeting by the wals thereof, it runneth into the feas.
- (5) Limerike is one of the first cities builded by the Porwates or Cafferlings, named fometimes Ditomen: the founder thereof was the pungelt of theé betteen those name was Duozus. It fandeth upon the famous and noble river of Shenin, which gooth round about it, the same being as it were an Ilano. The feat of it is such, as none can be more faire or more fratelie. It lieth in the maine land with in the province of Mounter, called the north Mouns ffer, and is from the maine leas aboue forthe miles, 60 eat and drinke among them. At this time there were and pet at the wals even the greatest thip at the feas maic be discharged and unladen, and perelie so there are: for the citie it felfe is chieflie inhabited by merchants. It is governed by a major and bailiffer affer and according to the English lawes and ort as, It was in times paff bider a particular prince of it felf. but cuer fince the conquest it hath beine inhabited by the Englishmen, who do so still continue therin.

(6) Tibrach is an old towne, which in times past was rich and verie well inhabited, it lieth byon the north five of the Sure, and about two miles from Carig Dac Griffith. In it is a great fonc fanding, which is the bound betweene the counties of kilkens

mic and Damond.

Rothorike OConnor the monarch and all the princes in Vister (ubmit and reeld themselves vnto the king, as he paifeth towards Dublin.

Chap. 33.

Defe things thus donat Waterfood, the king left Robert Fitzbarnard there with his houthold, and marched himselfe to Dublin through the countrie of Morie: and frateng somewhat by the wate in his fourncie, there came and reforted onto him out of eneric place there the great men & princes, as namelie Pachelan Dichelan prince of Dlorie, Pache Talcivic, Dibine, lie Billemeholoch, Dchabele, D Carell of Uriells Drozike of Meth: all which yelved & submitted them felues to the king in their owne persons, & became his vallals, & floore fealtie. But Rothorike the monarch came no nærer than to the river five of the (1)Shenin, which divideth Connagh from Beth, there Dugh de Lacie and William Fitzaldeline by the kings commandement met him, who deliring peace submitted himselfe, swoze allegiance, became trie butarie, and did put in (as all others did) hostages and pleages for the keeping of the fame. Thus was all Ireland fauing Aller brought in subjection, and euerie particular prince in his proper person did peelo and fubmit himfelfe, fauing onelie Rothozike, the then monarch of all Ireland; and yet by him and in his fubmillion all the relioue of the ubole land became the kings fubiects, and fubmitted themselves. For indeed there was no one nor other within that land, tho was of anie name or countenance, but that he did present himselfe before the kings maich tie, and yelded buto him subjection and due obedience.

And then was fulfilled the old and bulgar pro: Prophied thefie of S. Polin; Before him all the princes thall Merimand fall downe, and where a differented submission that apoint is obteine fauor and grace. Likewise the prophetie of Merlin; All the birds of that Iland Hall fle to his light, and the greater birds thall be taken & brought into captinitie, and their wings thall be burned. Ale so the old prothesie of Merlin Ambrole; Five porti ons thall be brought into one, & the firt thall breake and overthrow the walles of Ireland. That with Ambrole nameth here the firt, Celidonius nameth 50 the fift, as appeareth in his boke of protheties. Pow when the featt of Christmaste did apport and draw nære, manie and the most part of the princes of that land relocted and made repaire buto Dublin, to le the kings court: and when they faw the great abune dance of vittels, and the noble fervices, as also the eating of cranes, which they much lothed, being not before accultomed therebuto, they much wondered and maruelled thereat: but in the end they being by the kings commandement fet downe, did also there certeine foldiors, being bowmen, featfed at Ain glas, and they helved and cut dolvine the tras with grew about the churchyard, which had beene there planted of old time by certeine good and holie men: and all these foldiors suddentie fell sicke of the pesti lence and died all : as is moze at large declared in our topogramie.

(1) The Shenin is the cheefest and most famous river in that land, and doth in a manner inviron and inclose all Connagh, & divideth it from the prouinces of Pounter and Peth: his head and fping is in the hill named Therne, which bordereth opon D Connoz Slegos countrie, not farre from the river

Chap. 33,34,35,36. The Conquery of the Wanne in Wilfer, and in length is supposed to be about a hundred and twentie Englith miles. It is increased with sundrie broks, and diverse rivers run into the fame; the chefeft whereof is that which rifeth and commeth out of the logh or lake Foile. In it are mante loghs or lakes of great quantitie or bigs nelle, which are marueloullie replenithed and trozed with abundance of fifth: the cheefelt of which are the logh Rie, and the logh Derigio . It is nauigable as boue the score miles, and boon it fandeth the most i famouscitie of Limerike. There is onlie one batoge ouer it, builded of late yeares at Alone, by the right bonozable fir Benrie Stoneie knight, then lozd beputie of the realme.

The councell or fynod kept at Cashill.

Chap. 34.

De realme beeing now in good peace and quietnette, and the king now having a care and a zeale to fet forth Bods honor and true religion, fummoned a spnod of all the clergie unto Cashill, where inquirie and cramination on was made of the wicked and love life of the people of the land and nation: which was registred in iviting, and sealed under the seale of the billion of Lifemore, tho being then the popes legat was prefount of that councell. And then & there were made 30 and decreed fundate good and godlie constitutions, which are pet ertant; as namelie, for contrading of marriage, for paiment of tithes, for the reverend and cleane kaping of the churches; and that the but. nerfall church of Ireland thould be reduced in all things to the order and forme of the thurth of Eng. land. Which constitutions were forthwith published throughout the realme, and do here follow.

Constitutions made at the councell of Cashill.

Chap. 35.

A the yere of Chains incarnation 1172, in the first yeare that the most noble king of England conquered Ireland, Chaffianus billion of Lisemore, and legat of the aposto. like fæ, Donat archbishop of Cathill, Laurence Ehomond with their fuffragans and fellow-bifhops, abbats, archoeacons, priors, beanes, a manie other prelats of the church of Ireland, by the commander ment of the king did attemble themselves and kept a fynod at Cathill: and there debating manie things concerning the wealth, estate, and reformation of the church, did provide remedies for the same. At this councell were also for and in the behalfe of the king, whom he had fent thither, Kafe abbat of Buldewais, Rafe archoeacon of (1) Landaffe, Picholas the 60 chapleine, and diverse other good clearks. Sundie god statutes and wholesome laws were there deuis led, which were after subscribed and confirmed by the king himselfe, and bnder his authozitie, which were Echiafical these that follow. First, it is decreed that all god faithfull and chististan people, throughout Freland, hould forbeare and thun to marrie with their niere kinsfolke and couling a marrie with such as lawfullie they hould do. Secondarilie, that childzen hall be catechifed without the church doze, and baptifed in the font amointed in the churches for the same. Mirdlie, that everie chaistian bodie dw faithfullie and trulie paie yerelie the tiths of his cattels, come, and all other his increase and profits to the church of

parich where he is a parithioner. Fourthlie, that all the church lands and postessions, throughout all Fre-Land, thall be free from all fecular exactions and impolitions: and especiallie that no loads, earles, no: noble men, nor their dildren, norfamilie, Mall et. tost of take anie coine and liverie, cofferies, nor cuodies, not anie other like cultome from thenleforth, in or open anie of the thurth lands and territories. And likewise that they not no other person ow henseforth eract out of the fair church lands, old, wicked, and detestable customes of coine and linerie, which they were wont to ertost bpon such townes and villages of the churches as were nere and nert bordering by on them . Fiftlie, that when earlike or composition is made among the late people for ante murther, that no person of the cleargie, though he be kin to a. nie of the parties, Chall contribute anie thing there buto: but as they be guiltleffe from the murther, fo thall they be free from paiment of monie, for anie 20 fuch carike of release for the same. Sirtlie, that all and everie god chaiftian being ficke & weake, that before the preeft and his neighbors make his laft will and testament; and his debts and servants wages being paid, all his monables to be divided (if he have anie chilozen) into thee parts : whereof one part to be to the chilozen, another to his wife, and the third part to be for the performance of his will. And if fo be that he have no children, then the gods to be divi bed into two parts, whereof the one moitic to his wife, and the other to the performance of his will and testament. And if he have no wife, but onelie children, then the gods to be likewise divided into two parts, wherof the one to himfelfe, and the other to his chilozen. Seuenthlie, that euerie chriffian bes ing dead, and dieng in the catholike faith, thall be reuerendlie brought to the church, and to be buried as apperteineth. Finallie, that all the divine fervice in the church of Ireland thall be kept, vied, toblerned in the like order and maner as it is in the church of 40 England. Foz it is meet and right, that as by Gods providence and appointment Ireland is now become subleat, and bover the king of England: so the fame thould take from thense the order, rule, and mas ner how to reforme themselues, and to live in better order. For what loener good thing is befallen to the thurth & realme of Ireland, either concerning religio on, or peaceable governement, they owe the fame to the king of England, and are to be thankefull onto him for the fame : for before his comming into archbishop of Dublin, and Catholicus archbishop of 50 the land of Ireland, manie and all socts of wicked nelles in times pall flowed and reigned amongelf them: all which now by his authoritie and goodnette are abolithed. The primat of Armagh, by reason of his weaknesse and great age, was not present at the fynod:but afterwards he came to Dublin, and gaue his full consent to the same. This holie man(as the common faieng was) had a white cow, and being fed onelie by hir milke, the was alwaies carried with him therefoeuer he went and travelled from home.

> The tempestuous and stormie winter.

> > Chap.36.

Heleas, which along time had beene calme, began now to fwell, and to be full of continual floams and tempells, which were fo raging, and fo great, that in all that winter there artued fearfelie ante one thip or barke from anie place into that land : neither was there as nie news heard from out of anie countrie during that winter. Wher boon men began to be afraid, and thinks verelie that God in his anger would punits

them, and be revenged for their wicked & finfull life, and therefore had fent this plague byon them. At this time in Southwales by reason of the extreme and continuall tempetes, the featives and thoses, which had manie yeares bone covered with great fandringes, twere now walhed and carried awaie with the leas, and then there appeared the former fall and firme earth, and therin a great number of træs flanding which did in times past grow there: and by reason they had beine solong couered, fas it were 10 buried buder the fands, they flood as trunked and polled trees, and were as blacke as is the Ebenie. A maruelous alteration, that the place cometimes covered with feas, and a waic for thips to palle, is now become a foile of ground and die land. But fome supose that this was so at the first, and that those tres were there growing before or Chortlie after the floud of Poah . The king remained at Werford, fill longing to heare news from beyond the feas: and fleights he could, how he might flocke and pro. cure buto him Reimond, Piles Cogan, Milliam Makerell; tother of the best gentlemen; that he being affured of them to be firme of his five , he might

The conspiracie made against the king by his sonnes, and the ambassage of the legat from the pope vnto him.

Chap. 37.

be the Aronger, and the earle the weaker.

Fter Biolent the wind being easterlie. there came and arrived into Ireland certeine Hips, as well from out of England, as also from out of Aquitaine in France, which brought him verie ill & bad newes. For there were come into Pozmandie from pope Alexander the third two cardinals in an amballage, the one of them being named Albertus, and the other Aleodinus, to make inquirie of the death of Momas archbishop of 40 Canturburie. They were thought and taken to be full and god men, and therefore were cholen of trult and of purpose for this matter: but pet for all that they were Komans, and who were fullie determined to have interdicted, not onelie England, but also all the whole dominions lubied but the king, if he him: felfe had not the Coner come and met with them. Befides this, there was worle newes told him, and a worse mishap befell onto him (for commonlie god lucke commeth alone, but ill haps coine by heapes 50 and by huddels) which was, that his eldelf forme whom he loued to derlie, and whom he had crowned king, as allo his two punger formes, with the confent and belpe of fundzie noble men, as well in England as beyond the leas, had confederated themselues, and conspired against the king in his absence. Which nelves and fecret conspiracie then he heard and but derstoo, he was in a maruellous perpleritie, and for verie anguith and græfe of mind did tweat. First it grewed him that he thould be suspected and infamed 60 of the crime whereof he was giltleffe. Also he feared of the great troubles which would grow and infine hereby to his kingdome, e all other his dominions. Dea, and it græued him berie much, that he being minded and defermined the nert fummer then following to lettle Ireland in some god state, and to fortifie the same with holds and castels, he should now be compelled and defuen to leave the same bri done. Therefore lending some before him into England, as well to advertise his comming homewards, as also of the safetie he had taken for Ireland, he bethought himselfe, as also toke goo adulte and courfell, what was best to be done in these his weightie

The king returneth homewards through Westwales, and of the speaking stone at faint Dauids.

Chap. 38.

De king being minded and determined to returne into England, fet his realme of Freland in good order, and left Hugh de Lacie (buto whom he had given in fee the countrie of Meth) with twentie gentlemen, fitti Remanse Paurice Fitzgerald with twentie other gentlemen, to be wardens and conestables of Dub lin, Likewise he lest Humfreie de Bohnne, Kobert Fitzbarnard, and Hugh be Bundenile, with twen. tie gentlemen, to kope and gouerne Waterford. Al. to be left William Fitzaldelme, Philip of Pallings, and Philip de Biule, to be governois and rulers of Wickford: they having also twentie gentlemenof and thus lieng folitarie be practifed by all the means 20 feruice appointed but o them. And on the mondate in the Caffer weeke, earlie in the morning at the funne riling, he toke thipping without the barre of Merford; and the wind being westerlie and blowing a god gale, he had a verie god pallage, and arrived a bout the nonetide of the fame date unto the bate of faint Danios: where he being fet on land, he went on fot with a faffe in his hand in pilgrimage, and in great denotion onto the church of faint Danids: thom the cleargie in procession met at the gate cal-30 led the white gate, and with great honour received him. And as they were going verte orderlie and lolemnite in procettion, there came buto him a Welly oz a Camber woman; and falling downe at his fet, the made a great complaint against the bishop of that place: which being by an interpretor declared unto the king, albeit he understwoit well, pet he gave hir no answer.

She thinking that hir lute was not regarded, old luzing hir fifts, and cried out with a lowd boice; ite. uenge vs this dap D Lechlanar, Revenge vs 3 fap, our kindred, and our nation, from this man. And bes ting willed by the people of that countrie, who bider, frod hir speach, to hold hir peace, as also did thrust hir out of the companie; the cried the moze, truling and allubing to a certeine blind prophetie of Perlin, Double which was; that The king of England the conquero, of Main of Freland, Could be wounded in Freland by a man with a red hand, and in his returning homewards through Southwales Could die von Lechlanar. This(1) Lechlanar was the name of a certeine great fene which laic over a broke, which fleteth or runneth on the north five of the churchyard, and was a bridge over the fame : and by reason of the often and continual going of the people ouer it, it was berie fmoth and limeric. In length it was of ten fot, in breadth fir fot, and in thicknesse one fot. And this word Lechlanar, in the Camber or Welfhtong, is I want to faie, The speaking frome. Fog it was an old blind font. fateng among the people in that countrie, that on a time there was a dead corps carted over that Rone to be buried, and the fato from spake, and forthwith brake and clave alunder in the middle, and with clift fo remaineth buto this date. And there boon the pea ple of that countrie, of a verie vaine and barbarous Super fitton , haue not fince , noz pet will carie ante

more dead bootes over the same. The king being come to this stone, and hearing of this prophetie, pauled and fated a little wile; and then bpon a sudden, berie halfilie he mentouer it: which bone, he loked backe bpon the frone, and fpake somewhat charpelie, sateng: Who is he that will be leeue that lieng Perlin anie moze : A man of that place Canding thereby, and feing what had happy ned, ha to excuse Perlin, said with a lowed voice; who 30

Chap.38,39,40.

art not be that Hall conquer Ireland, neither doth sperlin meane it of the . The king then went into the cathedrall church which was dedicated to faint Anbew and to faint Dauto: and having made his prate ers, and heard dinine fernice, he went to super, and robe after to Panerford well to bed, which is about twelve miles from thenle.

(1) The writer hereof (of veric purpole) in the fione, but there was no fuch to be found; and the place where the fato fone was fato to lie, is now an are theo bridge, under which fleeteth the broke aforefaid, which broke both not divide the churchyard from the hurch, but the churchyard & church from the bishops and prebendaries houses, which houses in times pat were verte fatre and good hospitalitie kept therein. But as the most part of houses are fallen bown, and altogither ruinous, so the hospitalitie is also there. fione, there is no certeintie aftirmed, but a report is remaining amongst the common people of such a fione to have bene there in times paft.

The submission of king Henrie to the pope, and his reconciliation, as also the agreement betweene him and the French king.

Chap.39.

De king then take his formie from Danerford homewards along by the fea fide, euch the same wate as before he came the ther; and forthwith in all half he taketh thipping, and failed into Pozmandie: and immediate lie understanding where the popes legats were, he repaired buto them, and prefented himfelfe in most humble maner befoze them. Where & befoze thome them, he purged himfelfe by his oth, that he was giltleffe of the death of the archbishop Thomas: nevertheles he was contented to do the penance inivined him. Foz although he did not kill, not yet know, not consent to the murthering of him, yet he denied not but that the fame was done for his (1) fake. The am. balladoes t legats having thus ended with the king, with much honour returned backe, and homewards to Rome. And then the king travelled and went to the marches of France, there to talke and have conference with Lewes the French king, betweene whome then was discord and debate. But after suns die speches past betweene them, at length by the meanes and intercellion of lundgie god men, and especiallie of Philip earle of Flanders (who was but then returned from Compostella, where he had bene inpilgrimage onto faint James) the fame was en. bed; and the displeasure which he had concesued about and for the death of the archvilhop of Canturburie malice and secret conditacies of his sonnes and their confederats was for this time supressed and quailed, and so continued untill the yeare following.

(1) They which do write and intreat of the life and death of this archbilhop, do afterme that the king af ter the death of this man, did fend his amballadors to pope Alexander at Kome, to purge himselfe of this fact. And notwithstanding that he twhe a copposall oth, that he neither did it noz canled it to be done, noz yet gave anie consent, or was privile thereof, nor yet was giltie in anie respect, saving that he confessed he did not so well favour the bishop as he had done in times patt: yet could not his amballadous be admit.

ten to the prefence and fight of the pope, butil he had peloco himfelfe to his arbitrement and juogement : which was that he Gould do certeine penance, as also to performe certaine infunctions which were as followeth. That the king at his proper colls and char Infunctions ges thould keepe and luffeine two hundred fouldiers by the pope for one thole yeare, to defend the holie land against to the king of the Turke. That he should permit and that it should be ngland. the Turke. That he thould permit, and that it thould be lawfull to all his subjects as often as them lifted peare 1575, went to the foresate place to see the sate 10 to appeale to the see of Kome. That none should be accepted to the see of Kome. That none should be accepted to the see of Kome. counted thenlefouth to be lawfull king of England, butill such time as he were confirmed by the Roman bilhop. That he hould reffore to the church of Canturburie all fuch gods and policitions as were taken and deteined from the same since the death of the archbishop. That he should suffer all such people as were fled or banished out of the realme for his fake, to returne home without belaie or let, and to intoy and have againe all luch good and lands what foeuer with decaied. And for the veritie of the forelaid 20 they had before. Other things this Romilly antithis did demand, and which the king was compelled to grant unto before he could be released: whereby it both appeare how much they do varie from the calling of Chills apostles; and how that (contrarie to the rule of the gospeil) their onclie indenour was to make and have princes and kingdoms subtea to their becke and typannie.

The vision which appeared vnto the king at his being at Cardiffe.

Chap.40

Lit before we do proceed ance further, it were not amille to beclare what happened and befell buto the king in his returning through Wales, after his comming from Ireland. In his fournete he came to the towne of Cardiffe on the faturdaie in the Cafter weke, and after fundrie altercations passed to and fro betweene 40 lodged there all that night. On the morrow being fundaic, and commonlie called little Caffer Daic 02 Low fundate, he went somewhat earlie to the chapell of faint Pertan, and there heard divine fernice, but he stated there in his fecret praiers behind all his companie, somewhat longer than he was wont to ow: at length be came out, and leaving to his horfe, there floo before him one having before him a flake, of a post pitched in the ground. He was of colour fomethat yellowiff, his head rounded and a leane face, of frature somewhat high, and aged about fortie peares; his apparell was white, being close & downe to the ground, he was girded about the middle, and bare foted. This man fpake to the king in Dutch, fais eng; Woo faue the Bking, and then fato thus buto him: Chill and his mother Parie, John baptill, and Poeter the apostle do falute the : and do strictlie charge and command thee, that thou do forbid, that henselwith throughout all thy kingdome and domis ons, there be no faires not markets kept in anie was clerelie released. And by these means, the great 60 place opon the fundates: and that opon those dates no maner or person do anie bodilie worke, but one. lie to ferue God , fauing fuch as be appointed to dreste the meat. If thou wilt thus do, all that thou thalt take in hand thall prosper, and thy selfe thalt have a hapie life. The king then spake in French to the gentleman, tho held his horde by the bridle, and whose name was Philip Wertros, a man borne in those parts, and who told me this tale : Alke him whe ther he dreame or not. Which when he had so done, the man loking opon the king faid : Whether I Dreame or not, marke well and remember what caie this is : for if thou do not this, and specific amend thy wicked life, thou thalt before the years come as bout heare such eaill news of those things which thou

26

louest be fr, and thou that the so much briquieted there with, that thou shalt not find anie ease og end butill thy dieng date. With this wood the king put four to the horse and rode awate towards the towne gate, which was at hand; but thinking boon the words ar reigned his hoofe and faid; Call me yonder fellow againe. Wherebpon the foresaid gentleman as also one William, which two were onelie then attending boon him, first called and then lought him in the chamell, and finding him not there, lought him , throughout the court, the towne, and in all the Ins, but could not find him. The king being berie fad and fogie that he had not throughlie falked with the man, went abroad himselfe to sæke him, but finding him not, called for his horffes and rode from thence by Rempinbrioge to Pelwberie. And as this man had before threatned and faid, it fo came to palle before the yeare was ended : for his eldest sonne Henrie, and his two ponger formes Richard earle of Aquie taine, and Beffreie erle of Battaine, in the Lent fol, 20 lowing for loke and thronke from him, and went to Lewes the French king. Whereof grew and infued buto him such veration and buquietnesse, as he had neuer the like before, and which by one means and o ther never left him until his vieng daie . And werlie it was thought the same by Gods in bludgement so befell buto him: for as he had beine and was a difo, bedient some to his spiritual father, so his carnall formes thoulo be disobedient and rebellious against their carnall father. Panie such forewarnings the king had by Gods mercie and godnelle fent onto 3 him before his ceath, to the end he Mould repent and be converted, and not be condemned: which would to God that everie prince and other man old not from wardlie and obstinatlie condemne, but rather with an humble and a penttent heart they would (as they ought to do) receive and imbrace the fame! And therefore I have and mind to write more at large in my boke, concerning the infiruation and infifus tion of a chailtian paince.

The treason and killing of Ororike prince of Meth.

Chap.41.

P the meane time Ireland was in good rest and peace, bnder such as buto whom the charge thereof was committed. And now on a time it happened, that the one eied D. rolike of Deth, being at Dublin, complained bnto Duch de Lacie of certeine inturies done unto him, prateing redrelle: wherebyon the date and a place of (1) parlie was betweene them appointed for the fame. The night next before the date of this parle, a pong gentleman named Griffith, the nephue of Ko. bert Fitzgephans, and Paurice Fitzgerald, being the some to their elect brother named William, decamed in his sleepe that he saw a great heard of 60 wild hogs to rulh and run bpon Hugh de Lacie and his bucle Maurice; and that one of them being more horrible and greater than the rest, had with his tulks rent and killed them: if he had not with all his force and Arength rescued them, and killed the bose. On the morrow according to appointment, they came to the place appointed for the parle, which was a certeine hill called Drorikes hill: but before they came to the verie hill it felfe, they fent mellen, gers the one to the other, requiring affurance and fafetie: and having swoone on each part to keepe faith and truth, they came to the place appointed and there met, but yet a small companie on either side. For it was agreed byon on both parties, t by coue

nant excepted, that on each part they thould bring but a few and the like number, and they to be all on armed; the fwoods on one fide and the spars on the other five, and for all the relidue of the people and companie to frand alofe and a farre off . But Grif. fith, who came to the faid parle with his bucle Pay rice, was verie pentife and much troubled, concerning the vision which he saw in his sleepe; and doub. ting of the worlt, made choice of feuen of the bed gentlemen of his kindzed, whome he knew to be ba liant, and in thome he had a speciall trust and confidence. These he draweth to the one lide of the hill, but as neere to the place of parle as he could, where everie of them having his fwood, spar and thield: lept and mounted by to their horfes, and ranging the fields they made fundate carreers and luftie tur. naments, onder the pretente and colour of plefant nes and pattime; but in berie ded to be in a readineffe if næd thould to require.

Hugh de Lacie and Drorthe this meane while were talking and discourling of manie things, but concluded not of anie thing; neither did Dzozike meane ante fuch thing. For having a traitorous mind, and watching his time when he might best power out his benem, fained himfelfe to go out and abroad to make water, and binder that colour beckened bito his men, with whome he had concluded and agreed before, that with all hast they should come awaie buto him; and they forthwith in all half lo did, and he also then with a pale, grim, and murtherous counter nance, having his ar or fpar bpon his thoulder, returned bache againe. Paurice Fitzgerald, wich was before warned by his couline Brittith and abuerfised of his dreame, gaue god eie and watched the matter verte narowite; and therefore all the parle time, he had his fwood readie drawne about him: and espteng the traitor to be fullte bent and about to Arthe Bugh de Lacie, he cried out unto him, wil ling him to lake onto himselfe, and to be at defense with himselfe; impercivith the traitor most violentile Grake onto him, thinking verelie to have murthered and dispatched him. But the interpretor of the parlie Ceming in betwere, faued Hugh de Lacie; but he himselse was wounded to death, and his arme cleane cut off.

Then Paurice Fitzgerald with a lowd voicecried out to his companie, who with all half came awaie; and then began a hot and a Charpe bickering of the English swoodsagainst the Irish spars. In wich lkirmiffing Hugh de Lacie was twife felled to the ground, and had fuerlie bene killed, if Paurice had not valiantlie rescued him. Likewise the Irishmen tho were manie in number, they having espied the becking of the traitor, they came running in all half out of the vallies with their weapons, thinking verelie to have made a cleane dispatch and a full end of Hugh of Lacie and of Paurice Fitzgerald . But Briffith and his companions, Itill watching for that which indeed did happen, were at the first call of Paurice in a readinate, and being on hortebacke they came awaie with all speed: which thing when the trastog faw, he gan to diffruff, and thought to thist him felse awate and so to escape. But as he was leaping to his horde, Griffith was come, and with his flaffe orlance Arake downe and ran through both horfe and man : who being thus Arthen downe and kill led, as also the other of his men, who brought him his boote and were in this bickering, they cut of his head from the bodie, and fent it ouer into Eng. land to the king . The residue of the Frishmen fed forthwith and ranne awate, but being hardlie par fued even to the verie wods, there was a great of comfiture and flaughter made of them . Kafethe forme of Hitzuephans, being a lutte and a valiant

Grissiths dicams.

The Conquest of Ireland. Chap.41,42.

pong gentleman , die well acquite himfelfe , and peferued great commendation for his god fer-

(1) The maner of the Friffizie was ever, and yet is, that when to ener there is anie controuertie as mongst them, they will oftentimes appoint places there to mot and allemble themselves for conference; which commonlie is boon some hill distant and facre from anie house, and this affemblie is cal 10 led among them a parle of a parlement. And albeit the pretente hereof is of fome quietnelle and revielle : yet experience teacheth that there is not a worde thing to be bled among them. For lightlie and most commonlie there are most treatheries and treasons, most murthers and robberies, and all wice kednelle imagined, denifed, and afterwards put in practile among them: and for the most part there is no parlie among them, whereof insueth not some milchæfe.

(2) This hill lieth in the prouince of Peth, about twentie miles from Mublin, and is now called the Taragh: some thinke this to be the middle part 03 nauill of that province; it is a verie pleasant and a fertile foile, and also for the most part chams

pion.

Sundrie examples concerning visions.

Chap. 42.

De for much as there be funded opinions and wagments concerning visions, it half not be much aniste, oximpertinent to our matter, to recite a few eramples a true Prepublical reports of the fame. Waterius Parimus in his first boke and feauenth chapter writeth, that two men of Arcadia, tournieng togither in companie towards a towne named Pegara, when they came thither, the 40 one of them lodged himfelfe with his freend, but the other at a common June. He who late in his friends house being in bed and alleepe, ozeamed that his com. panion came buto him, and requested him to helpe him, bicause his hoast of oppesse him; where wish he awoke, but verte Moztlie he fell alleve againe, and dreamed that his faid companion came againe buto him being verte fore wounded, and praied him that although he would not at the first time come and belpe him, yet that be would now revenge his death, 50 declaring that his hold had taken his head and corps, and put it into a cart to be carted to the dunghill, and there to be buried. This man being awaked, and much troubled with this dreame, arole and lought for bis fellow, and finding his dreame to be true, caused the hoalt to be taken and apprehended, who for that his factwas executed and put to death. Aterius Riv fus a gentleman of Rome likewife, being on a time at Stracula, he dreamed that he was killed by a mailler of fense, which came so to passe: for on the 60 morrow after he was present at the place or game of swoodplaiers or maisters of befense, whereas a (1) netcaster was brought in to fight with a swordplaier. Wherebpon Aterius bittering his dreame to him that fat nert by him, would have gone and des parted awate; but being persuaded to the contrarie, dio Caie to his owne destruction. For the netcasser bauing overtheorene the swoodplater, and thinking to have pearled him through with his fword, milled him and froke Aterius, who fat in place nert theres

buto, and fo was he flaine. Also Simonides the poet,

being on a time fet on land upon the fea shore; he faw

there a dead man lieng unburied. The night follows

ing he dreamed that the faid dead man ofo adulle and

admonth him, that he would not take this the daie following: but his felowes minding not to lofe anic time, and the weather fæming then to be faire, they went all about and hoised up their failes; which Sie monides refused to do, and tarried at land . It was not long after but that the weather wared to be fowle, and the seas to be high, and in the end both the thip and men to be all lott: but Simonides credia ting his dreame, was faued. Porcouer Calchurnia. the wife buto Julius Cefar, the night before hir hulband was flaine, dreamed that the faw him greatlie wounded to lie in hir lap: wherewith the being a fraid did awake, and told Julius hir dicame, reques fling him that he would for beare to repaire to the fc= nat house that daie: but he giving small credit to a womans dreame, followed his mind, and was flame by the fenators. But to leave these examples fetched from out of other nations, let vs come nære home to our felucs. Abzother of mine named Walter Bar, 20 rie, a lufte yong gentleman, making himfelfe reas die on a time to ferue in a certeine hoffing againft his enimie; the night before he Chould take his four nie, he dreamed that my mother who was dead on long before, did come buto him, and aduite a warne him, that if he loued his life he thoule in anie wife refraine and forbeare that fournie. She in deed was not his naturall mother, but his mother in law, and pet loued him in hir life time as intirclie as hir owne thild. When he had told this his dreame to his father 30 and mine, for indeed we were both brothers by one father, though we had not one mother: he also gave him the like adule and counfell, but he of his prefumptuous mind, not regarding the fame, followed his owne mind, and the same date was killed by his

(2) As dreames fometimes are god forewarnings to men to elchew entls which are towards, pet thep are not alwaies to be fo received, as prognoficas tions infallible. For fometimes the fame fall out to the contrarte, as both appeare by Augustus the emper roz; who having warres against Bzutus and Caste us, and he by reason of his licknesse carried in a lite ter, his phylician Arterius dreamed that the goddelle Pinerua ofo appeare onto him, willing him to adulle and counsell the emperoz, that he should not by reas fon of his ficknelle come into the field, not be pres fent in the battell, which he did. But the emperor note withstanding entered into the field, being carried in his litter, and toke maruellous great pains. And albeit Brutus taking the emperors tents, feemed to have the victorie; yet was he for all that vanquilhed. and the emperor had the conquett. Likewife in west Wales, of late yeares, it happened a certeine rich man dwelling on the north lide of a certeine mouns teine, he dreamed thie nights togither, that there was a chaine of gold histon in the head frome, which couered and laie upon a certeine well og founteine, named faint Bernaces well, and that he Mould go and fetch it. This man at length, som what believing the ozeame, and minding to trie the same, went to the place, and did put his hand into the hole or place: but his hand was no somer in, but that it was bitten, flong, and envenomed with an adder . Wherefore a man may le hereby that credit is to be given to dicams, and I for my part do to credit of them as I do of rumors. But concerning luch villons as Cod both send by his angels to his prophets and holie men, we must other wife thinke of them; bicaufe the effect of them is most bindoubted, certeine, and al fured.

(1) The Romanshad binerle games, plates, and exercifes amongst themselves, and had for the same certeine amphitheaters and theaters made of pur-D.i.

pole,

Chap.42,4

pose, wherein the people might lit to view and behold the fame . Df thefe plates or games fome were of cruck beatts the one fighting with the other, some of men fighting with beatts, and some of men fighting the one with the other, and these plates were called tudi gladiatory, games of fwood plateng of fighting : for as in combates in England, to they being unbarnelled, die fight with their fwords or weapons in the open fight of the people, indenouring ech one to kill the other, which were spectacles of crus 10 eltie to harden the peoples hearts against killing in the warres. Df thefe some were called Mirmillones, which were such as chalenged the fight; some were called Gladiatores, and thefe were fuch as we do name matters of defences, bicause they bled onelie or theel lie the fword; and some were called Retiary, and these belides their weapons did ble a certeine kind of net, which in fighting they were wont to take and intrap their enimics, and fuch a one was this man, uho fighting with a chalenger, die by chance miffe 20 was once taken in hand, he would foutlie pursue him and kill Aterius.

(2) In the old and first ages, men were much glo uen to dreames and viftons : and oftentimes great forewarnings and prognoffications were given thereby, as dooth appears in the holie scriptures, as allo in prophane hillories. For Joleph the fon of Jacob , king Pharao , king Pabuchodono302 , Mardo, cheus, Daniell, Judas Machabeus, Percules, Pyze rhus, Cicero, Callius, Parmenlis, & manie others dreamed dreames, and the fame came to palle. But 30 pet thefe being but particular cramples, and which it pleased God for some secret cause to ble: they are not to be drawne for presidents and examples to be dailie of in these dates bled; but rather we must have a respect and a regard to Bods speciall commandement, who by the mouths of his prothets hath biterlie forbioden vs to liften to anie dreamer ,02 to give credit onto his words. Thou thalt not (faith he) hearken to the words of a dreamer of dreames, for dreames have deceived manie a man, and they 40 have failed them who have put their trust in them: for thie, they are full of deceipts and guiles, and inuented either for the maintenance of superstition and error, 02 for the increasing of some filthic incre and gaine. Phauorinus therefore inueighing againff the Chalceans, who were a people which were wont to relie much opon dreames, willeth and adulfeth that no dreamer or interpreter of dreames Chould be fought or dealt withall. For (saith he) if they tell the of anie god thing, and in the end do deceive 50 the, thou thalt be in milerie to hope in vaine for the fame. If they tell thee of fome missortune, and yet dolie pet malt thou be in milerie, bicaule thou halt be Will in feare least it may happen . And like wife if they thew the of enill haps, and the same do so fol. low, thou thalt be in milerie and buquieted, that thy fortune and destinie is so evill. But if they tell the of god things, and it belong per the same do hap. pen, thou thalt be much buquieted to loke fo long for it; and alwaies in feare least thine expectation 60 that be frustrated: wherefore in no wife do thou fæke anie luch persons , noz give anie credit bnto them.

> The description of Maurice Fitzgerald.

> > Chap.43.

Dis Maurice was a man of much nobilitie and worthip, but somewhat thamefact and yet berte well coloured, and of a good countenance, of frature be was indifferent.

bring fæmelie and well compact at all points, in bo: die and mind he was of a like composition, being not to great in the one, not proud in the other; of na ture he was veric courteous and gentle, and defired rather so to be in deed, than to be thought or reputed fo to be: he kept fuch a measure and a moderation in all his doings, that in his dates he was a patterne of all sobzietie and good behausour; a man of febr words, and his fentences more full of wit and reason than of words and speeches; he had more stomach than talke more reason than speech, and more wife, Dome than eloquence. And when to ever anic matter was to be behated, as he would take good leafure. and be adulted before he would speake: so when he spake he did it berie wiselie and prudentlie. In mar, tiall affaires also he was verie bold, fout, and valiant, and yet not haftie to run headlong in anie ad. uenture. And as he would be well adulted before he gave the attempt and abuenture, so when the same and follow the fame. He was fober, modelf, and thaff, constant, trustie, and faithfull: a man not altogether without fault, and yet not spotted with anie notozious crime and fault.

The first diffention betweene the king and his sonnes.

Chap. 44.

A the moneth of Aprill then next following, the young king fonne to king Henrie the elder, being no longer able to conceale of sup, presse the wickednesse he had devised against his father: he (I faie) and his two brethren the earls of Aquitaine and of Britaine suddenlie stole awaie into France, buto Lewes the French king his father in law: for he had married his daughter, that having his aid he might over-run his owne father, and Morten his old yeares. And for his further helpe he had procured buto him and on his five manie noble men both French and Englith, who openlie, but manie moze, who secretlie did toine with him to aid him . The elder king the father was beris much troubled and buquieted for and about these and manie other ludden troubles, which on everie side did grow opon him; but yet he bare it out with a god face and countenance, diffembling that outwardie which he conceived inwardie. And to frame firme and affored, he got and procured by all the meanes he could all fuch aid and helpe as was to be gotten and had. He fent into Ireland for his garrison, which he had left there; and being at Rone he committed the charge and government of all Freland unto the earle Richard; but foined Refmond in commission with him, bicaute the earle without him would not do anie thing, not take the charge boon him. And then the king of his liberalitie gave also buto him the towns of Merford with the castell of Guinnilo.

Of the victories of king Henrie the second.

Chap.45.

De king having induced moze than ch uill wars two wole years togither aswell in England as in Aquitaine, in great trow bles, much wachings, a painfull travels, pet at length most valiantlie be prevailed against his e nimies; flurelie it was more of Gods godnes, than by mans poiner, and (as it is to be thought) for the reuenge of the disabedience & wrongs done by the lons Chap. 45, 46. The Conc against the fasher. But forsomuch as a mans owne boulhold are commonlie the word entimies; and of all enimies, the houthold & familiar enimie is most bangerous: there was no one thing, with more troubled and greened the king, than the gentlemen of his prince chamber, and in whose hands in a main ner laie his life oz death, would everie night secret, lie and with treatherous minds run and refort to his formes, and in the morning when they thould do him feruice, they were not to be found. And albeit these 1 warres in the beginning were verie doubtfull, and the king himselse in great despaire : pet his hard beginning had a good ending, and he in the end had the videzie to his great honoz and glozie. And God, tho at the first færned to be angrie with him, and in his anger to powee upon him his weath and indignation: yet now byon his amendement and convers fion, he was become mercifull unto him, and well pleased. And at the castell of Sandividy, thereof Reinulfe Blandeuill was then gouernoz, who was 2 a wife man, and alwaics moft faithfull and fruffic to the hing, there was a generall peace proclamed, and all England in reft and quietnelle.

In this warre the king had taken palloners the king of Scots, the carles of Cheffer and of Letcefter, belives fo mante gentlemen and god feruitors both English and French, that he had fearle a. nie pollons for to manie polloners, nor lo manie fetters for fo manie captines. But forfomuch as in thers, tho cannot also triumth of the conquering of himselfe; and although the king had induced and as biden manie Cozins, great buquietnelle, and much trouble; and at length having overcommed both them and his enimies, he might the foner have been weaked and avenged of them : pet fetting apart those affections even in the middle of his triumps bpon others, he also triumphed over himselfe; bling fuch kinds of courteffes & clemencies as before had uenging mind , he gave honos to his aonerfactes, & life to his entmies. And the warres thus after two peares ended, and all the great formes overcommed, be granted peace to all men, and forgaue ech man his offente and trespatte. And in the end also his somes repenting their follies, came and submite ted themselves, with all humblenesse yelding thems felues to his will and pleasure.

The description of king Henrie the second.

Chap. 46.

T were not now amille, but verie requifit that we hould (for a perpetual remembrance of the king) describe and set forth as well the nature and conditions of his inward man as of his outward; that men which thall noble acts in chivalrie, may also as it were before their eies conceine his verie nature and livelie pos traiture: for he being so noble an ornament to this time and our historie; we might not well, neither both this hillogic permit tos to omit and palle him of uer in filence. Therein we are to crave parbon that we may plainelie occlare and tell the truth: for in all bissozies the perfect and full truth is to be alwaics o. pened, and without it the fame wanteth both anisotitie and credit: for art must follow nature. And the painter therfore, whose profession and art is to make his postraiture as livelie as may be, if he swarve from the fame, then both he and his worke lacke and want their commendation. And albeit no man be

borne without his fault, yet is he most to be borne withall tho is least sported: Thim must we account and thinke to be wife, the knowledgeth the fame: for thie, in all worldie matters there is no certein. tie; and buder heaven is no perfect felicitie, but evill things are mirt with god things, and vices toined with pertues. And therefore, as things spoken in commendation either of a mans good disposition, of of his worthis dwings, dw delight and like well the hearer: even to let him not be offended, if things not to be well liked be also recited and written. And vet the philosopers are of the opinion, that we ought to reverence to the higher powers in all maner of offices and dueties, as that we thould not pronoke nor move them with anie tharpe speches or disordered languages. For (as Terence faith) faire words and fothing speches bied frendship, but plaine felling of truth makes enimies. Therfore it is a dangerous thing to speake entil against him, though the occasio on be never to just, as who can forthwith anenge the fame . And it is a matter moze dangerous , and he adventureth himfelfe verie far, which will contend in manie words against him, tho in one or few words can wreake the famo. It were fuerlie a beric bapie thing, and that which I confesse passeth my reach, is. a man intreating of princes causes might tell the truth in everie thing, and pet not offend them in anie thing. But to the purpole.

Henrie the lecond, king of England, was of a vebaine both a mantrtump of the conquells bon o. 30 rie god colour, but somethat red : his head great and round, his eles were fierie, red, and grim, and his face verie high coloured; his voice or speach was thaking, quivering, or trembling; his necke thort, his break brode and big, frong armed, his bodie was groffe, and his bellie fomethat big, which came buto him rather by nature than by aniegroffe feeding of furfet ting. For his diet was very temperat, and to faie the truth, thought to be more spare than comelie, or for the fate of a prince: and vet to abate his groffenelle, not bene heard. For supressing his malice and re- 40 and to remedie this fault of nature, he did as it were punily his boote with continuall exercise, and did as it were kepe a continuall warre with himfelfe. Foz in the times of his warres, which were for the most part continuall to him , he had little of no reft at all; and in time of peace he would not grant onto himfelfe anie peace at all, not take anie reft : for then did he give himselfe wholie buto hunting, and to follow the same he would verie erlie everie morning be on horsebacke, and then into the woos, sometimes into 50 the forcets, and formetimes into the billes and fields. and so would be spend the whole date untill night. In the evening when he came horne, he would never or verie selocme sit either befoze or after super : for though he were never to wearie, yet fill would he be walking and going. And for somuch as it is verie profitable for everie man in his life time, that he do not take to much of anie one thing; for the medicine it felse which is amointed for a mans helpe & remedie, is not absolutelie perfect and good to be alwaies be befirous hereafter to learne and read his most 60 vico tenen foit befell and hamened to this prince; for partlie by his ercediue travels, and partlie by diverte bauses in his booie, his legs and fet were swollen and fore. And though he had no difeafe at all, yet age it scife was a breaking sufficient onto him . He was of a resonable stature, which happened to none of his fons; for his two clock fons were fom what higher, & his two ponger fons were fomethat lower and leffe than was be. If he were in a good mod, and not any grie, then would be be verie pleafant and eloquent: he was also (which was a thing verie rare in those daies) verie well learned: he was also verie affable, gentle, and courteous; and belides to pitifuil, that then he had ouercome his enimie, yet would he be ouercome with pitic towards him.

In warres be was moft valiant, and in peace be was as provident and circumfpect. And in the wars milirulting and doubting of the end and event ther. of, he would (as Terence writeth) trie all the wates and meanes he could deutle rather than wage the battell. If he lost anie of his men in the fight, he would maruelloudie lament his death, and feeme to pitie him moze being dead than he did regard og account of him being alive, more bewailing the dead than favoring the living . In times of diffreste no 1 man more courteous, and then all things were fafe no man more hard or cruell. Against the Aubborne onrulie no man more tharpe, nor yet to the humble no man more gentle, hard toward his owne men and houshold, but liberall to strangers, bountifull a brode, but sparing at home : whom he once hated, he ivould never or verie hardite love; and thom he once loued, he would not lightlie be out with him, 02 for fake him : he had great pleasure and belight in hawking and hunting. Mould God he had beine 20 as well bent and disposed buto good devotion!

It was faid that after the displeasure growne betweene the king and his fonnes, by the meanes and thorough the intilling of the quæne their mother, he never accounted to keepe his word and promife, but without anie regard of care was a common breaker thereof. And true it is, that of a certeine nat turall disposition he was light and inconstant of his wood: and if the matter were brought to a narrow ffreid or pinch, he would not flicke rather to couer 30 his word, than to denie his deed. And for this cause he in all his dwings was verie provident and circums fpect, and a verie byzight and a feuere minifer of in ffice, although he did therein græue and make his friends to finart. His answers for the most part were pernerle and froward. Justice which is God himselfe is frælie and without rewards to be minis Ared. And albeit for profit and lucre all things are let to fale, and do bying great gaines as well to the clergie as to the laitie : pet they are no better to a 4 mans heires or executors, than were the riches of (2) Behezithe fernant to Elizeus, whose gredie tas kings turned himselfe to otter ruine and destruc-

De was a great peacemaker, and a carefull kee per thereof himfelfe : a liberall almes giver, and a speciall benefactor to the holie land, he loued humilitie, abhorred prive, and much oppressed his nobilitie. The hungrie be refrethed, but the rich he regarded not. The humble he would exalt, but the mightle be 50 liner, that having in few woods made my entrie; o diffained. De blurped much bpon the holie church, and of a certeine kind of zeale, but not according to knowledge; he did intermingle and confoine the prothane with holie things; for the, he would be all in all himselfe. De was the child of the holie church, and by hir advanced to the scepter of his kingdome, and pet he either distembled or otterlie forgat the fame: for he was lacke alwaies in comming to the church buto the dinine fernice, and at the time thereof he ivould be bulled and occupied rather in councels and 60 red, as is the colour of a lions ete, which is common in conference about the affaires of his commons wealth, than in denotion and prater. The livelihods belonging to anic spirituall promotion, he would in time of vacation confilcat to his owne treasurie, and assume that to himselfe which was one onto Chist. Then anie new troubles or wars did grow or come bpon him, then would be lath a power all that ever he had in fore or treasurie; and liberallie bestow that bpon a roifter of a foldier, which ought to have beene given buto the priect. He had a verie prudent a fore. calling wit, and therby foreleving what things might or were like to infue, he would accordinglie order & dispose either for the performance, or for the prevent ting thereof: notwithstanding manie times the e

uent hamened to the contrarte, and he disapointed of bis expectation: and commonlie there happened no ill buto him, but he would foretell therof to his friends and familiars.

De was a maruellous naturall father to his this ozen, and loued them tenderlie in their childhod and pong yeares: but they being growne to some age and ripenelle, he was as a father in law, and could scarfelie booke anie of them . And notwithstanding they were berte handlome, comelie, and noble gen. tlemen : pet whether it were that he would not have them prosper to fast, or whether they have will before ned of him, he hated them; tit was full much against bis will, that they thould be his fuccestors, or heires to anie part of his inheritance. And fuch is the prosperitie of man, that as it can not be perpetuall, no more can it be perfect and affored : for thy, fuch was the fecret malice of fortune against this king, that where he thould have received much comfort, there had be most forrow: where quietnesse & safetie, there briquietnelle and perill: there peace, there enimitie: there courteffe, there ingratitude: there rell, there trouble. And whether this hamened by the meanes of the (3) marriages, offor the punishment of the far thers finnes : certeine it is, there was no god agree ment, neither betweene the father & the fonnes, no; pet among the sonnes themselves.

But at length, when all his enimies and the diffurbers of the common peace were supressed; and his brethren, his fonnes, and all others his adverfaries as well at home as abroad were reconciled : then all things happened and befell buto him (though it were long first) after and according to his owne will and mind. And would to God be had likewife reconciled himselfe buto God, and by amendement of his life had in the end also procured his favour and mercie! Belives this, which I had almost forgotten, be was of fuch a (4) memorie, that if he had once fene and knowne a man, be would not forget him: neither pet what soeuer he had heard, would he be bumind full thereof. And hereof was it, that he had to readin a memorie of histories which he had read, as a know ledge and a maner of an experience in all things. To conclude, if he had beene cholen of God, and beene ob fequious and carefull to live in his feare and after his laws, he had excelled all the princes of the world: for in the gifts of nature no one man was to be compared unto him. Thus much brieflie, and yet not much belides the matter, I have thought good to be ther writers maie have the better occasion more at large to discourse and intreat of this so worthis an bissozie. And therefore leaving the same to others, let bs returne to our Freland, from whenle wedd

(1) The words are oculis glaucis: which some dos Engliff to be greie eies, like the colour of the fkie, with specks in it : but some do English it abright lie a figne oz an argument of a man which will be fone warmed angrie: foit is to be taken in this place : for the words, which follow, be: Advanteruis, which is to faie, grim loking cies disposed to au ger : wich eies were answerable to the completion and disposition of this king.

(2) This hillorie is written in the fift chapter of the fecond bake of the kings, a in effect is this. When the prophet Clitha or Clizeus had healed Paaman the Syzian of his lepzolie, he would have rewarded the prophet, have given great and rich giffs : but he refused the same and would none thereof, wherefore Paaman beparted awaie. But Behegi the fernant of the prothet, being touched with a grædie and a co

wetons

Chap.46.

uetous mind, and angrie that his maller had refufed findrich prefents , fecretlie heran after the Syrian; and ouertaking bim, did afte of bim in his mas fters name a talent of filner, & certeine garments : which he received doubled, and returned therewith. But he was no loner come home, but that his coue. touinelle was rewarded, and he plagued with the les profie of Paaman, which cloue buto him as white as

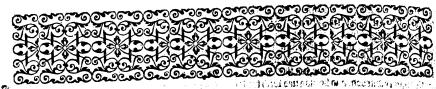
(1) The king maried Cleanor the daughter and 10 heire to the erle of Poittiers (who before was maried to Lewes the eight and king of France, but binozi fed from him for næteneffe of blod) and after that he had continued with bir fundgie yeares, and reces ued by hir fir fonnes and three daughters, he fell in love with a young wench named Rolamino, and then wared wearie of his wife. And the to be awrea, ked, did not onelie in continuance of time find the means to find out this Kolamund, tho was kept lecret in a house builded like a labyzinth of purpose for hit lafe kæping at Mooffocke, where when the queen had found hir, Rolamund lived not long after : but allo for a further revenge, the by means of hir formes tho were noble & valiant gentlemen, caused warres to be flurred and railed against the king to his great proquietnelle; and this is one of the mariages of which this author meaneth. The other was of his fon named Benrie, whome he did not onelie make and crowne bing in his life time, but also for a confirmathe eight then French king, he maried his faid sonne to the ladie Pargaret daughter to the faid French king. By reason whereof his sato somme being once conte to peres of age, and thinking it to long yer he could have the fole government, as also being by the quene his mother intiled, and taking hir part, he fled to the French king his father in law; and by his aid, as also of sundite other moble men both English and french, the toined with him, made warres by on his fato father: which beed onto him no little trouble and onquietnette.

(4) There is not a more commendable & more nes

cellarie pertue in a king, than is the gift of a quicke and good memorie: for by it knowledge both increase and experience is perfected. And therefore faith Cicero, that memorie is the treasurie of all good things, and most necessarie to the life of man : wherein the more the governor excellety, the more provident is his government. For thy, as Plutardi writeth, the remembrance of things pall are speciali presidents and examples of things to come. Diners and lundrie men haue beene famous, and much commended for their ercellencie in this vertue. Mithaidates king of Pontus in Alia had bnder his dominion two and Twentie nations, and he was of luch lingular memorie, that he of not onelie biver than their fenerall languages, but also spake them perfeatie : and in tudgements would heare each man to speake in his owne language, and answer them in the same . Co rus king of Perlia, the fonne of Cambiles, lo ercelled in memozie, that having an erceding great multitude of men in his holl, he would call everie man by his proper name and furname. Cineas an ambal fador from king Pyrhus to the Komanes, was not in Rome aboue one whole date, before he could fas Inte everie of the fenators, and everie noble man of Rome by his particular name. Likewise Julius Cefar and Adzianus the emperoes of Rome were of such excellent memories, that everie of them at one instant could both read and write, as silo speake and heare. The like also is said of the famous and tion of a peace to be had betweene him and Lewes 30 most ercellentite learned man Erasmus Roterodamus, tho having alwaies or for the most part fundrie and divers clearks writing at one time and instant, of fundzie matters, would walke by and downe as mong them, and invite to everie one what he Mould write. And this thing is to necessarie in all princes, that in the old ages they were ever wont to have as bout them futh men as were of a speciall memorie; to put them in mind of all such things as to them thould be meet and requilite, and thele were called Nomenclatores. Whether this king had any fuch at tending byon him or not, it is certeine that he him, felfe was of an excellent god memorie.

Thus far the first booke of the Conquest of Ireland.





SYLVESTER GIRAL

dus Cambrensis, his second

booke of the vaticinal historic of the Conquest of Freland.

The Proheme of the author.



E have thus farre continued our historie, in as perfect and full order as we could, having omitted nothing worthie the memorie, as farre as the matter seemed to require: but being occupied and bussed with the generall and necessarie causes in religion, although we had not sufficient leasure and time to follow and prosecute this our enterprise and matter begun, yet did not we thinke it meet to give the same over, and to leave it halfe undoone. We have therefore, and yet doo continue the historie but breefelie, not in anie high or eloquent stile; but in a common phrase and

plaine speeches, giving rather thereby an occasion to our posteritie for them to set soorth this historie, than to doo it our selves. For indeed our leasure is verie small, and such as it is, it is turned to troubles and vnquietnesse, our love and zeale into hatred, our

ioy into forrow, and our rest to molestations.

For now flourish not the honest exercises of studies, but the busice policies of warres:
now the good studies of the mind are contemned, and the lusts of the bodie imbraced:
now we have no leasure to serve the Muses, but to be hammering with weapons: quiet
minds are not now at leasure, but glistering weapons and armors are in everie mans
hands. Wherefore let not the reader looke now at our hands for anie good order, eloquence, or pleasantnesse in this our writing: for place must be given of necessitie vnto
time. And as the same is now verie troublesome, so can the same bring foorth but troublesome matters. In these troubled times, and wanting convenient leasure and quietnesse,
I have travelled with the more paines to absolue and end this my worke: not after the
maner of a student, but as a traveller; whose nature and condition is, that when he dooth
set foorth on his journie verie slacklie and slowlie, then dooth he make the more halt, and
travell the more speedilie. How soever it shall please God to deale with vs in the seruices now in hand, I have as diligentlie as I can compiled this my historie as
also my topographie, leaving the same as a monument of

also my topographie, leaving the same as a monument of our will, to remaine to our countrie and posteritie for ever.





THE SECOND BOOKE

of the Conquest of Ireland.

The earle is sent backe againe into Ireland, and is made generall of the land, and Reimondis ioined in commission with him.

Chap. 1.



Rie Richard, being now returned into Ireland, the 1 people there being aduertifed of the great trubles which were beyond the feas, they being a people constant on lie in inconstancie, firme in wavering and faithfull in bn, truths; there(3 fap) 2

and all the patrices of that land, the earle at his comming found to be revolted and to become rebels. For the recoverie and suppelling of whom, the earle then wholie bestirred himfelfe; and at length having spent and consumed all his treasure, which he had brought over with him, his foldiors who were under the guiding of Herucie being then constable, lacked their wages and were bupaid; and by reason of the emulation betweene Herucie and Reimond, the fernice and exploits to be don against the Frishie was 30 berie flacke and flender; and by that meanes they wanted such preces and spoiles of neat and cattell as they were wont to have for their vittels. The fouldiors in this diffreste, wanting both monie for their wages and vittels for their foo, affembled themselves and went buto the earle, buto whome with one voice they exclamed and fato; that wnlesse he would make and amoint Reimond to be their capteine againe, they would without all doubt for fakehim, and would either returne home againe, 03 40 (that which is worse) would go and scrue buder the

In this diffreste was Relmond appointed the capteine, forthwith having muffered his fouldiers, he made a rove or fourneis into Dhalfa bpon the rebels there, where he toke great preies, and were well recovered as well in horfe as in armor. From thence they marched to Lifmore, where when they had spots led both the towne and countrie, they returned with the sea side : and being come to the sea shores, where they found thirteene botes latelie come from Was terford, as also others of other places; all these they laded with their pictes, minding to have patted by water buto Waterford . But farieng there for a wind, the men of Cooke, who had heard of their do. ings, and being but firtiene miles from them, dw pre-

pare two and thirtie barks of their owne towne, and do well man and furnish them, being wholie deter. mined to fet opon Reimond, and if they can to give him the overthrow; which they did: betweene whom was a cruell fight, the one part giving a fierce onfet with fromes and spaths, & the other defending thems felues with bowes and weapons. In the end the men of Cooke were ouercome, and their capteine named Bilbert Pac Turger was there flaine by a luffie pong gentleman named Philip Wellh . And then Adam Herford, who was the generall or admerall of that name, being well increased and laden with great preies, failed with great triumph to the citie of Materford.

But Reimond himfelfe was not prefent at this fight bpon the water, and pet hearing thereof, he came in all half and marched towards them, taking his waie by the fea five, having in his companie twentie gentlemen, and the ecocopy demen. And by the wate in his fournete he met with Dermond Mac Artie prince of Delmond, tho was comming with a great band of men to helpe and rescue the men of Cooke where they fought togither : but in the end Pac Artichad the worle lide, and was over, theolone; and then Reimond having preied and taken about foure thousand head of neat, he marched and came to Waterford. About this time also as they marched homewards, certeine griffmen in thole parties lieng faulking & lurking in the twods, then the preies and cattell palled by, they illned out, twhe and carried awate certeine of the cattell into the woods, where byon the crie was up, and came as farre as Caaterford. Wherebpon the fouldiers and most part of the garifon issued out, among whom Mellerius was the belt and most forward. For he being come to the woods, and having in his companie then onelie one fouldier , put fpur to the house, and adventured in the woods, following the Friffy men (by the abetting of the foultier who was with him) even to the furthell a thickell part of the foods; there he was so farre entered, that he was in dans ger of the enimie : and the fouldfer being not sible to retire was there taken, killed and hewed in pieces. Pellerius then leing himfelle to be mulconed round about with the entmics, and he with tike per rill as the other was, bicaule he alone aganit a sign fand was neither able to refcue his man, not helpe himfelfe , but in danger to be taken as was the o ther, like a valiant gentleman drawen his fword, great boties, taking the waie buto Waterford by 50 and with a lustic courage, even in velotic of their teth maketh wate through them. And had in fet op. on him he spared not, but cut off an arme of this man, a hand of that man, a head of one, and a thouls per of another, & heelcaped throughout them without anie harme or burt to his owne bodie, fauing that he brought two darts in his thield, and three in his hozse.

The returning of Reimond into Ire-land, and how he maried Basilia the sifter vnto the earle.

Chap.3.

The ouerthrow given by the Irishmen against the souldiers which came

from Dublin; and what the Oftomenwere, of whom mention is made here and elsewhere.

Chap. 2.

. Hen these things werethus done, a the couldiers well refreshed by the boties and 10 precies taken upon the water and the land, Reimond being adustifed that his father Milliam fitzgerald was dead, he toke thipping and passed over into Wales, there to take feisen, and to enter into the land descended buto him. And in his absence Pervie was againe made lieutenant of the armie: who in the absence of Resmond, thinking to do some service and notable exploit, bringeth the earle bnto Cathill; and for their better frength and further helpe, sent his commandement unto Dub. lin, that the fouldiers there thould come and meet them, tho according came forth: and in the fourneie they passed thorough Dsorie, where on a certeine night they lodged themselnes. Donald then prince of Limerike, a man berie wife in his nation, bauing binderstanding by his privile espials of their coming, fundentie and unwares verie earlie in the morning with a great force and companie stale opon them, and five of them foure gentlemen which were capteins, and foure hundred(1) Alomen in this love dile 30 readinale to go with him. And as some as the this comfiture.

The earle as some as he heard hereof, with great for ow a heavinette returned buto Waterford. Aby means of this milhap, the Irilhmen in everte place toke such a heart and comfort, that the whole nation with one consent and agreement role up against the Englishmen, and the earle as it were a man belie: ged, kept himselfe within the wals and citie of Was terford and from whence he moved not. But Kotho. rike Dconoz prince of Connagh, comming and pale 40 in with their flags, hanging to their top mails, with fing over the river of Shenm, thinking now to reco. ner all Deth, invadeth the fame with fword and fire, and spoileth, burneth, and destroieth the same, all the thole countrie even to the bard wailes of Dublin. leaning no castell standing or undestroied.

(1) Thefe Dif omen were not Triffmen , but pet of long continuance in Ireland. Some fate they came first out of pormate, and were called Dito. men. mat is to faic Cafferlings, or Cafferne men, 50 bicause that countrie lieth Cast in respect of England and Ireland. Some thinke they were Sarons and Pormans; but what soener they were, they were merchants and bled the trade of merchandise, and in praceable maner they came into Ireland; and there being landed they found such favour with the Frish rie, that they licenced them to build haven townes twerein they might owell a vie their traffike. Thefe men builded the ancientest and most part of the cities and towns boon or neere the fea fide within that land; as manuelle Dublin, Waterford, Corke, Lime, 60 rike, and others. And albeit they in processe of time grebriobe mightie and firong, and for their fafetie bid build townes and castels: yet they durif not to divellamong the Iriff people, but fill continued

and kept themselves within their owne townes and forts, and thereof they are and were called fince townelmen, And of them. % swere thefe, being the inhabitants and of Dublin, which came to met and to the earle, and were enicoden e thus laines en a entre tien de la company de la

• He earle then lexing himselfe to be nom in great diffresse, and in a narrow freig, taketh adulle with his frends and councel loss what were best to be done. At length, as buto his last refuge, he sendeth his letters to kei, mond being yet in Wales, to this effect. As some as you have read these our letters, make all the half you? can to come awaie, and bying with you all the heipe, and force that you can make : and then according to vour owne will and befire, you thall affuredic and immediatlie byon your comming have and merrie my litter Balilia. Reimond, as fonc as he had read >> thefe letters, he was forthwith in half to be gone, and thought it long per he could be gone; not onlie in refpec of the faire ladie, whom he had long word, los ued, and delired; but also that he might helpe and fuc, cour his load and mailler in this diffresse and necel litte. Therefore he maketh preparation accordinglie, and by means of frienothip and otherwise, he had gotten thirtie lustie poing gentlemen of his owne colins and kindeed, and one hundeed horffemen; as also these hundred fortmen and bowmen of the best and chosen men in all Wlales: all which were in a ping for them was readie, and the wind feruing, he and his colin Meilerius, with all the faid companie toke the feas, and Mostlie after arrived in twentie barks onto (1) Waterford.

At the verie same time the townslmen of Wisterfold, being in a verie great rage and furie against the Englishmen there, were fullie minoco and deter. mined to have killed them all therefoever they could find them. But when they faw thefe barks comming to them were unknowne, they were affonied at their to ladden comming, and their deuiles were dathed. Reimond forthwith entered the towne with all his companie; and when all things were quieted and ap pealed, he a the earle went from thenle unto Wer ford, with all their force and Arength, leaving behind one (2) Drecell or Durcell his lieutenant at Water, ford. But he verte shortite minding to follow after the earle, twke a boat, and as he patted over the river of the Sure, the maister of the boat and his compar nie which were townslmen of Waterford, flue his Purcell, and those few thom he had then attending bpon him. Which murther when they had thus done, they returned to the citie, and there without all pitie or mercie, spared neither man, nor woman, nor child; but flue as manie as they could find in the firets, houles or anie other places. Howbeit the citte it felie was fafelie kept by such as were then in keinolds tower, who drave the traitors out of the citie, as also in the end compelled them to peeld and lubmit them. felues, and to intreat for peace, which they hardlie ob teined, both, with an entil credit and harder condi tions.

But Reimond Gill mindfull of the promise made buto him, and he languishing butill the same were performed, would not depart from out of Werford, untill messengers were sent to (3) Dublin to fetch and bring his louer Balilla to (4) Telerroro to be mai ried buto him. Which being done, and he maried, they spent all that date and night in featings a pallimes. And as they were in their most follitie, newes was brought onto them, bow that Nothonke prince of Connagh had befroise, walted, fpoiled all Delh, and was entired into the borders of Dublin. Where

Chap.3,4,5.

poor Reimond on the next morrow, letting apart and gluing ouer all wedding pastimes, mustereth all his fouldiors, and without anie delatengs mare theth towards the entimies. But Kothozike who had before tried his valiantnelle, and experimented his force, hearing of his comming, and not minding to trie or abide the fame, retireth backe, and getteth him tohis owne home and countrie. Then Reimond reconcreth againe all those countries, and forth with causeth all the forts and castels then before pulled 10 bowne and defaced, to be now reedified and repared, as allothe castels of Trim, and of Dunlences in Heth, of which Hugh Tirell was before the cone fable, and for want of rescue and helpe compelled to leave and for fake them. And thus by the means of Reimond, all things being recovered and restozed to their former and priftine estate, the whole land for feare of him continued a good time in peace and reft.

amples as I have, and which I do follow in this point: some writing that Reimond of not land at Waterford, but at Werford; and the tumult there being appealed, he went from thenle unto Mater, ford, and brought the earle onto Werford. Some write againe (as is aforefato) that he landed at Was terford, and not at Taerford: but having faluted the earle, amealed the tumult, and let all things in 02. der, he conducted the earle and the whole armie ouer land unto Merford. Although there be some varis 30 ance in the eremplars, yet concerning the lubstance of the historie it is not materiall.

(2) There is also a varietic in the exemplars of this name; some write Fricellus, and some write Paicellus, and fome Pircellus, or Purcell; it is like to be Purcell, for they of that name were feruitors in this conquest, and for their good feruice they were rewarded with lands and territories, and tho are yet remaining about or neere the citie, and in the countie

of Waterford. (3) Itis certeine that this Balilia above at Dublin, but whether the were there married or at Wer. ford it is doubted. Some hold opinion, that Keimond after that he had met and also saluted the erle, they forthwith bearing the countries in Leinster, and el peciallie about Dublin to be in an opzoze, marched thither Araitwaie without anie Aaie. And there Rei. mond as a luftie foldioz in his armoz married the las die Balilia, and they issued with advantage byon the marriage was at TAerford.

The secret practise of Herueie a-

Chap. 4.

14 Perusie feeing the honoz and credit of Reimond dailie to increase moze a moze, the means he can how to frop and hinder the fame: and forformuch as he could not compatte the same by anic open attempt, he practifeth it secrettie, and by secret neutles. Wherfore he is now a suter to marriethe ladie Deffa, daughter to Paurice Fitz. geralo, and confine germane to Reimond; that bus der the colour of this new affinitie, aliance, and but fained freenochip he might take Keimond in a trip. Well, his fecret veuiles being to himselfe, and no such thing suspected not must cutted as he meant; he by his earnest fute obtaineth this gentlewoman, and marriefy bir. And Keimond allo to make freenothip on all sides to be the more sirme, procured that Aline be earls baughter was maried to William eldelf

fon of William Fitzgerald. And to Paurice Fitze gerald himselfe, who was lattic come out of Walcs, there was given the halfe cantred of Dhelan, which he had before of the kingsgift, as also the castell of Buindoloke: and Peilerius bicaufe he was the bet. ter marcher had the other halfe cantred. But the cantred of land which was nærell towards Dublin, and which the king had once given buto fitzitephans, was now bestowed opon the two Herfords.

The obteining of the privilege

Chap. 5.

A this meane time the king, though he were in great troubles, a much buquieted with the wars, pet was he not bumindfull of his realme of Ireland, as also of the orders (1) There is great varietie in fuch bookes and er: 20 made and deviled at the councell of Cathill, for the redrette and reformation of the filthie and lofe life of the Irifhie. And therebpon fent his ambalfadois buto Rome to pope Alexander the third, of and from from he obteined certeine privileges, and under his authoritie; namelie, that he thould be lord over all the realme of Ireland sand by his power and author ritie they to be reduced and brought to the christian faith, after the maner and order of the church of En: gland . This prinilege the king fent ouer into Ire. land by one Picholas Wallingford then prior, but afterwards abbat of Palmefburie, and Milliam Fitzaloelme. And then being at Waterford, they caused an assemblie and a synod to be had of all the bishops and clergie within that land; and then in the open audience of them, the faid grant and privilege was openlic read and published thas also one other privilege before given and granted by pope Adrian an Englishman borne, at the fute of one John of Salifburie, the was made bithop of Karnoceus at 40 Rome. And by this man also be fent unto the king for a token, and in figne of a pollettion thereof, one gold ring, which togither with the privilege was laid up in the kings treasurie at Winchester. The tenure of both which privileges it thall not be amille here to infert. And concerning the first, these are the words thereof .

Adjan the bilhop, the forwant of the fervants of Two printes God, to his most piece sonne in Chist the noble king ges sent from of England sendeth greeting, and the apostolike beenimie . But the waiter of best credit faith that the 50 nediction. Pour excellencie hath bene berie care, land, full and Audious holy you might inlarge the church of God here in parth, and increase the number of his faints and eleasin beaucn: in that as a good cathor like king, you have and bo by all meanes labo; and travell to inlarge and increase Bods church, by teach ing the ignorant people the true and christian religio on, and in abolifying and roting by the weeds of fin and wickednesse: and wherin you have and do crave for your better ato and furtherance the helpe of the as and he much græved therewith, denifeth all 60 postolike fæ, inherein the moze spædilie and discreet. lie you do proced, the better fucceste we hope God will fend . For all they which of a feruent zeale, and love in religion, do begin and enterptife ante such thing, that no doubt in the end have a good and prof. perous fuccelle. And as for Ireland and all other 3: lands where Chaff is knowen, and the chaffian religion received, it is out of all doubt, and your ercellencie well knoweth, they do all apperfeine and belong to the right of faint Peter, and of the church of Rome. And we are to much the more redie, belirous, s willing to fow the acceptable for of Gods word, because we know the fame in the latter daie will be most severelie required at our hands . Hou have (our weibeloued in Chill) aduertifed and fignified

buto be, that you will enter into the land and realme of Ireland, to the end to being them obedient buto law, and boder your subjection, and to rot out from among them their foule fins and wickednesse, as also to velo and paie verclie out of euerie house a yeares lie pension of one pente buto faint Peter: and bes fides also will befond a keepe the rites of those churs thes whole and inviolate. The therefore well allow, ing and favouring this your godlie disposition s come mendable affection, do accept, ratifie, and affent one 10 to this your petition: and dogrant that you for the vilating of Goos church, the punifyment of fin, the reforming of maners, planting of vertue, and the increasing of chailtian religion, you do enter to pole felle that land, and there to erecute according to your infledome what foeuer thall be for the bonoz of God, and the lafetie of the realme. And further also we do Arialie charge and require that all the people of that land dw with all humblenette, outifulnette, and honoz receive and accept you as their liege load and sous reigne, referring and excepting the right of the holie thurth, which we will be inviolably preserved; as also the pærelie pention of the Peter pence out of euce rie house, which we require to be trulie answered to faint Weter and to the church of Kome. If therfore you do mind to bring your godlie purpole to effect, indenoz to travell to reforme the people to some betfer order and trade of life: and that also by your felfe. and by fuch others as you hall thinke met, true, and boneff, in their life, maners and conversation, the durch of God may be beautified, the true chafftian 3 religion folwed and planted, and all other things to be done, that by anie meanes thall or may be to Gods honoz, and the faluation of mens foules: thereby you may in the end receive at Gods hands the reward of an everlasting life, as also in the meane time, and in this life carrie a glozious fame, and an honozable report among all nations. The tenure and effect of the fecond privilege is thus.

The fecond printlege.

Beter pence.

Alexander the bilhop, the fernant of the fernants 40 of God, to his derelie beloued fon the noble king of England sendeth greeting, grace, and the apostolike benediction. Forfomuch as things given and granted bpon god reasons by our predecessors, are to be well allowed of , ratified , and confirmed ; we well confidering and pondering the grant and privilege, for and concerning the dominion of the land of Treland to be apperteining, and latelie given by Adrian our predecesson; we following his steps do in like maner confirme, ratifie, and allow the fame: referuing and fauing to faint Peter and to the church of Rome the pérelie pension of one penie out of enerie honle as well in England as in Ireland . Pronided allo, that the barbarous people of Ireland by your incanes be reformed and recovered from their filthie life and abhominable conversation; that as in name fo in maners and conversation they may be chillis ans: that as that rude and disordered thurth by you being reformed, the whole nation also may with the profession of the name be in ace and life followers of 60 scale, and this countrie before and long after the time the fame.

The titles of the kings of England vnto Ireland.

Chap.6.

Et then the envious & ignozant cease and give over to quarrell, and anough that the kings of England have no right not ti tle to the realme of Ireland. But let them ivell understand that by fine maner of waics, that is to faie, by two ancient titles, and three latter they have to avouch and befend the same, as in our to pographie is declared. First it is enformt and apparent by the histories of England, that Burgunting the forthe of Belin king of Britaine, as he returned with great triumph from out of Denmarke, he met at the Iles of the Dichades a name (1) of acertoine nation or people, named Balventes, now Baions, and those he sent into Ireland, appointing buto them certeine guides and leaders to conduct them

Likewife the fame bistories ow plainlie witnesse that king Arthur, the famous king of Britaine, hab manie of the Irith kingstributarie to him : & he on a time holding & keeping his court at Weltcheller, Willomarus king or monarch of Ireland, with other the vinces thereof, came a presented themselves be fore him . Also the Irithmen came out of (2) Baion. the chiefe citie in Biscaie. And forsomuch as men, be they never to free, yet they maie renounce their right and libertie, and bring themfelues into fubication: fa it is apparent that the princes of Ireland did frelie. and of their owne accord, fubmit & yell themselves to king Penrie of England, & Twoze buto him faith and lotaltie. And albeit fuch men of a kind of a natu rall lightnesse and inconstancie, be not assamed not afraied to denie and renounce their faith: petthat can not fo release and discharge them. Querie man his owne choice and libertie how to contract and oargaine with anie one, but the fame once made he can not flet noz fwarue from it. And finallie the bolie pope, in about is the effect of perfection, and tho by a certeine prerogative and title requireth a class methall Flands, bicause by him and by him and by his meanes they were first reduced and recovered to the chatilian faith; he I fair bath ratified and confirmed this title.

(1) The hilforie is this, that Gurguntius the lon of king Belin made a viage into Denmarke, there to appeale the people, who were then by in rebellion againft him: and having prevailed and overcommed them, he in his returning homewards by the Ilesof the Dichades; there met him a flet of a nauie of this tie of (as some saie) thee score sales of men and wo men latelie come and exiled from out of that part of Spaine, called then Baldenlis, thereof Baion was the chiefe citie, but now it is a part of the countrie of Walcolane. Those capteine named (as some wite) Bartholomew, ofd prefent himfelfe before Burgun tins, and discoursing bitto him the cause of their tras o uels, belought him to confider of their diffreffe, and to grant buto them some dwelling place, and they would become his subjects. Which their request the king granted, and taking their oth of allegiance fent and caused them to be conducted into Ireland, where as his subjects they remained and continued.

(2) These people were named Iberi, t before that they came to fæke buto Burguntius for a land to dwell in, they dwelled in that part of Spaine, where of Balon is the metropole, which is now part of Bi of Gurguntius, was Will subject to the kings of Bile

taine, now called England.

The rebellion of Donald prince of Limerike, and of the taking of the citie of Limerike.

Chap.7.

A the meane while, Donald DBill prince of Limerike wared verie infolent, and nothing regarding his former promite and off made to the king, began e did with dialo his fealtie and feruice. Wherebpon Reimond mugering The Conquest of Ireland.

Chap. 7,8,9. mutering his armie, gathered and picked out the best and lusticit men which he had. And having twentie and ar gentlemen, the hundred hordemen, and the hundred bowmen and formen in readinesse and well appointed, about the kalends of Daober marded towards Limerike to affaile the same. When they came thither, the river of the Shenin, which inuirough and runneth round about the citie, they found the fame to be so deepe and stikle, that they could not passe ouer the saine. But the lustie young gentlemen 10 tho were greedie to have the preie, but more destirous to haue the honor, were in a great agonie and greefe, that they were thus abarred from approching to affaile the citic. Therebpon one (1) Dauld Welth to named of his familie and kinred, although other. wile a Camber or a Welfhman borne, and nethue buto Reimond, who was a luftic and valiant young foldior, and a verie tall man about all the reft, was verie hot and impatient, that they fo long lingered the time about nothing. Wherebpon hauting a grea, 20 ter regard to win fame and honoz, than fearing of anieperill or beath, taking his horde and putting his spurres to his stoes adventureth the water, which being verie fille and full of fones and rocks was the more dangerous: but pet he so wiselie marked the course of the Areame, and so adulted and guided his horne, that he passed the riner, and safelie recoues red the further five : and then he cried out aloud to his companie, that he had found a food: but for all that there was never a one that would follow, far 30

uing one Beffreie. But they both returning backe againe to conduct ouer the whole companie, the fair Geffreie, his hooffe being carried awaie with the violence of the ffreame, they were both drowned. Which then Petterius (tho was also come thither) did fie, he began to fret with himselfe, partite for that his confine & kinsman of so noble an enterpite had so bad a fucceste part licalio distaining that anie should atchine to hono? but himfelfe. There von being mounted bpon alu 40 fie firong house, letteth fpurre to his fide, and being neither dismaied with the Miklenetse and danger of the water, no afraced with the milhap fallen to the gentleman, who was then drowned, more rafflie than wiselie adventureth the river & recovereth the further fide & banke. The citizens some of them wate thing and meeting him at the waters live, and some fanding byon the towne wals fall by the river five, gaine, or to have killed him in the place, hurled flones 50 terford was taken, on a tueldaie Werford was dair of Mars. a good pace unto him. But this noble and luftie gentleman, being thus tharpelie and hardlie belet in the micole of perils and dangers, his enimies on the one five hardie affailing, and the river on the other five Noming and clotting him op from all rescue, trandeth to his tackle, and as well as he could covering his head with his thield, defendeth and faueth himfelfe from his entities. Thileff they were thus bickering there was great thowting and notic on both lides of the water. But Actmond being then the generall of 60 the field, and in the rereward, knowing nothing heres of, as some as he heard of it, came in all half through the campe unto the waters live. There when he faw his nephue on the other five, to be in the middle of his enumies, and like to be otterlie cast awaie and des Aroico unlesse he had some specie helpe and succour, was in a maruellous griefe & agonie, & verie Marp lie crieth and calleth out to his men, as followeth.

(1) This Wickh was so called, the same being the name of his familie and kindred, and not of the countrie of Males, wherein be was borne. He was a worthie gentleman, and of his race there are yet remaining mante god and worthie gentlemen, who

are chieflie abloing in the pronince and citie of Was terford : for there were they first planted.

The oration and speech of Reimond ento his companie, and of the recoucrie of the citie of Limerike.

Chap.8.

Le worthic men, of nature valiant, Pe waythe men, or meeter well tried, and whose proweste we have well tried, come pe awaie . The maie heretofore not knowne, and the river hitherto though not passable, by our adventures a food is now found therein: let be therefore follow him that is gone before, and beloe him being now in diffreste. Let be not fuffer, noz fée fo worthie a gentleman, thus for our common cause and honoz oppressed, to perish and he cast awaie before our eies and in our lights for want of our helpe, and by meanes of our fluggish neffe. It is no time now to ble manie words, nor let fure ferueth to make manie speches. The thoutnesse of the time, the present necessite of this noble gentleman, 4 the fate of our owne honors vigetherpes dition, a requireth halt. And even with these words he put spurres to the horse, and adventureth the riuer: after abome followed the abole companie, eucrie one firining tho might be formoft. And as God would they palled all lafe over, lauting two fouldiass and one gentleman named Buido, who were down ned. They were no foner come to land, but that their entimies all fled and ran awale, whome they purfued, and in the chase live a number of them, as also entered and take the towne. And having thus gotten both the citie and the victorie, they recovered their finall lotte with great spoiles & riches, as also reaped great honoz and fame.

Pow reader, which of thefe the thinkelf thou belt valiant, and best worthic of honors him who first aduentured the river, and taught the way-D; him who feeing the lotte of his companion, the perill of the riner, and the multitude of the enimies, did yet (not fearing death not perill) adventure himselfe in the midle of his enimics. De him tho haffilie fetting all feare apart, did hazard himfelfe and all his hoaff to faue the friend, and to adventure byon the enimic: And this one thing by the wate is to be noted, that on a note cona tueldate Limerike was first conquered, on a tueld cerning rucle daie it was againe recouered, on a tuesdaie Mar Daie of the gotten, and on a tucldais Dublin was wone. And thefe things came not thus to patte, as it were by a let match, but even of a common course of fortune, or by Bods to appointment . And it is not altogither against reason, that martiall affaires should have god fucceffe bpon Pars his date.

The description of Reimond.

Chap.9.

Einsend was his bodied and brode fet, of trature formulat mand his haire yellow and curled, his eies big, greie, and round; his note fomewhat high, his countenance well coloured, pleafant, and merie. And although he were somewhat grosse bellied, pet by reason of a certeine liuclinelle which was in him, he courted that fault: and fo that which feemed to be a blentiff in his bodie, he coursed with the vertue of his mind. We had fuch a speciall care of his men and foldiors, that he would be a frie over his watchmen, and in his travell that wate he watchen mante whole nights, ranging and walking abroad in the camps. And in this he was verte hapie & fortunate, that he C.i.

would never or verte soldome late violent hands byon anie, of whom he had charge or were under his gouernement, although he had rathlic or bnaduited, lie onerthrowne himfelfe, t Graied out of the waie.

He was verie wife, modelf, and warie, being no. thing delicat in his fare, not curious of his awarell. De could awate with all wethers, both hot and cold; and indure anie paines: he was also verie pattent, e could verie well rule his affections. He was more pelirous to bog wo to luch as he gouerned, than to be glorious of his gouernement : for he would thew himfelfe moze like to be a feruant than a mafter. Fi nallie and to conclude, he was a verie liberall, wife, gentle, and a circumfped man . And albeit he were a verie valiant capteine, and a noble foldioz : get in all martiali affaires, he passed and ercelled in wifes doine a prontoence. A man doubtles in both respects much to be praifed and commended: having in him mbatfoener amerteined to a valiant fouldioz, but ere celling in all things belonging to a good capteine.

The description of Meilerius. Chap, 10.

e Cilerius was a man of a browne hew and completion, his eies blacke, his lake grim, and his countenance fower tharpe. and of a meane frature; his bodie for the bignelle verie frong broad breffed, & he was fmall bellied . Dis armes and other lims more fine wouls 3 than flethie, a front and a valiant gentleman he was: and emulous. He never refused anie adventure 03 enterpaile which were either to be done by one alone, or by mo; he would be the first that would enter the field, and the last that would depart from the same. In all fervices he would either have the garland or die in the place, and so bupatient he was in all exploits, that he would either have his purpole, or lie in the dust : and so ambitious and destrous he was to have bonoz, that to atteine therebuto, there was no 40 he fecretlie from time to time fent his mellengers means noz mild thing but that he would fuerlie have the fame either in death of in life: for if he could not have it and live, he would suerlie have it by dieng. And perclie both he and Reimond have been worthie of to to much praise and commendation, if they had beine leffe ambitious of wooldlie honozs, and moze carefull of Chaiftes church, and denout in chaiftian religion, whereby the ancient rights thereof might baue bone preferued and kept fafe and found : and allo in confideration of their fo manie conquells 50 purpofezand had swoone the thole armie to observe and blondie victories, and of the spilling of so much innocent blod, and murthering of to manie chaitian people, they had beine thankefull to God, and liberal lie contributed some god postion for the furtherance of his church and religion . But what chall I faie-It is not fo france but much more to be lamented, that. this buthankefulnelle even from our first comming into this land, until these presents, this hath beine the generall and common fault of all our men.

The commendation and praise of Robert Fitzstephans, and of his cousins. Chap.11.

Apat thall we speake or safe, how well Robert fitzstephans and his sonnes have descrued. What of Paurice Fitzgerald. What Chall I faie of Robert of Barrie, a man berie honest and balfant, those worthis commendations by the premilles are to be knowned That thall be fato of Miles of Togan, the nemue but to Kitistephans and Paurice, who as he came over with the first, so in commendation and for his service deserveth to be the cheese and first : What thall we

Chap.9,10,11,1 faic of Robert Fifzhenrie, & the brother onto Delle, rius, tho if he had not fo some beene dead and cut, he would doubtleffe have beene nothing behind his bao, ther? What thall we speake of Keimond of Bantune e of Robert Barrie the yonger, they both were verie worthie, tall, handlome, and worthie men: What allo thall be faid of Reimond Fitzhugh, who although he were but of a little fature, yet for his honeflie a pro-Dence not to be forgottene Thele thee lafflie fpoken of for their valiantnesse and prowesse done in the parties of Delmond , deferue great honoz and com. mendation, and great is the pittie that through to much hardineffe their dates were to thostened, and their time fo cut off ? What did also a number of our gentlemen of the fame their kindged & coulenage de ferue, whose noble aces were fuch, and descrued such a perpetuall fame and memorie, that if I had a hum died tongs, a hundred mouthes, and fo manie poli ces of pron ; pet could I not ofter and at full be, clare their worthinesse and deferts . D kindzed , D nation, which in bomble respects art noble! for of the Troians by a naturall disposition thou art valiant, of the French nation thou art most expert and skill full of armes and chiualrie. D worthte nation and kindsed! which of thy felfe art fufficient and able to have conquered anie nation, if envie and malice had not maligned at thy worthinelle . Well then Ref. mond had taken order for the keeping of the citie, and had well vittelled the fame, he left therein a gai o rison of his owne men, fiftie gentlemen, two hun. died hollemen, and two hundred bowmen; ouer whome he appointed Piles of S. Dauids his coline to be leiutenant: and so as a noble conquero; he fafelie returned into the borders of Leinster. Butla the nature of enuie, who never cealeth to perfecute vertue. Foz Peruie of Pount Paurice, notwith standing by meanes of the late affinitie he were thought to be a good freend, pet could he not forget bis old malicious mind and wicked denifes : for fill and letters to the king of England, and full untrulie did advertise the state, event, and successe of all things, affirming that Reimond contrarie to the kings hono; and his owne allegiance , had determi ned to have assumed and chalenged buto himselfe not onelie the citie of Limerike, but also the whole land of Areland. And to make this the more probable, and himselfe of more credit, he advertiseth that Reimond had placed and appointed garrifons for the certeine articles by him prescribed, to the great pres tudice of the king . Which his advertisment being in ferlined with manie god words, the king lo credited the fame, that he belowed it to be most true : fo, as it is well fæne, a little suspicion of an insurie done of offered to be done onto a prince, doth more fiche in his mind, than manie benefits and god feruices before done. The king therefore after the winter following, fent over foure of his fernants in mellage 60 to Ireland; namelie Robert Powie, Dhert of Her, loter 02 Derford, William Bendeger, and Adam of Bernemics of with, two of them to come awate and to bring Keimond with them, and the other to farrie and remaine behind with the earle.

The description of Heruie. Chap. 12.

Swehaue of others, folet be also now make and let forth the description of Herute. De was of flature a tall and a comelie man, his eies grate and somethat big, amiable of face and pleafant of countenance, an eloquent man, having a long and a cound necke . his Coulders

39

The Conquest of Ireland.

Chap. 12, 13, 14.

forneigh at low, his armes and hands formining long, he was broad breffed, but small in waste, though the fame being big in others is thought to be commenvable, his belie was somewhat big and round, his highes, legs, and feet being well proportionated and answerable to his bodie; of stature he was indiffes rent . But as in bodie he was well befet & compact, to on the contrarie, his mind, life, and convertation mere corrupt & disordered . Foretien from his chilabothe was ginen to lecherie, being readie and for ward to performe in wanton & filthie actions, whatsomer liked him as ante others, who were of the like disposition : and therefore he forbare neither incest not adulteries, not anie other such like filthinesse. Bestocs, he was a printe and an envious accuser, and a double man, bucerteine, baine, and altogither buconffant , fauing in inconffancie ; a verie fubtill man and a deceitfull: bnder his twng he had both milke and honte, but both of them were mired with poifon. De was fometimes in great profperitie, and 20 all things fell out according to his owne defire; and suddenlie fortune turning hir whele, he had such a fall, that he old neuer recouer the same againe. He was fometimes a verie god foldioz, and had god erperience in the feats of wars, after the maner vied in france; but he was fo suddenlie altred & changed, that he became more fkilfull in malice than valiant inprowette, more full of occeit than renowmed in honoz, moze puffed op in pride than endowed with words than abounding in truth.

> The succouring of the garrison at Limerike. Chap. 13.

De fimond having received the kings de termination by the forefaid foure mellen gers, prepared all things in a readinelle for his pallage ouer accordinglie, and nothing 40 wanted therebuto but onelie a well wind. But before the same happened, medlengers came from the garrifon at Limerthe , advertifing that Donold pince of Thomond had belieged the citie round a. bout with a great armie, and that their vittels which they had in the towne, aswell that which they found at their comming thither, as also what so ever was elle pronided, were all spent and consumed; and there. fore requested that they might with all speed be rescued and holpen. The earle, who was verie forte & pens 50 fife for these neives, and deutling all the wates he coulo to helpe them, caused a muster to be taken of all his fouldiers; who were to græued for the going awaic and departure of Reimond, that they biter. lie benied and refused to go and to serve that wate, bules Keimond were their capteine and lieutenant. Thereupon they take adule with the kings mellens gers what were best to be done in this distresse. At length it was thought best, that Reimond Could take the enterpaise in hand, and he though verie loth, pet at the request of the earle and the foresaid gentlemen, yeloeth himselfe to that service, and marched forth toward Limerike, having with him foure score gentlemen of fernice, two hundred harfmen, & three hundred archers, besides Morogh of Kencile, and Donold of Dagie, and certeine other Jriffmen, who ferued and attended him. And as he was marching and comming toward Calhill, tidings was brought him that the prince of Momono had raised his siege. and was comming towards him to met him, and was now come to the passe of Cathill: which passe als though naturallie of it seife it were verie frong, yet by means of new trenching, plathing of trees, and making of hedges, it was made to Arong, that no

bostmen could either enter or passe through the fame:

The oration of Donold to his foldiers, the recouerie of the citie of Limerike.

Chap. 14.

Einand being now almost come to the place where his enimics lave, divided his hoaft or armie into thee parts or companies, and determined to give the onlet or aducature. Therebyon Donold prince of Diforie, tho was a mostall enimie to the prince of Thomond, and now verie delirous that fome god exploit thuid be done; and beholding the Englishmen now also fet in god araie, for though they were but few in number in respect of the others, yet they were piked men, valiant and couragions : he also to incourage them , to thew themselves like valiant men , bleth and maketh thele speches buto them . De worthie, noble, and valiant conquerous of this land, you are this daie Valiantlie to give the onfet opon your ente mies, which if you do after your old and accustomed maner, no boubt the bidozie will be yours ; for ine with our fpars, and you with your fwords, will fo Charplie them purlue, as they thall berie hardlie el cape our hands, and audid our force. But if it fo fall out, which God forbid, that you be ouerthrowne and have the words live: be you affured that we will leave you and turne to our enimies, and take part worthip, more halfie than hamie, and more full of 30 with them. Wherefore be of god courages, and loke well to your felues, and confider that you are now far from anie fort or place of refuge, and therefore throu fould be definen to flee, the fame will be long and dangerous to you: as for bs ye may not truft buto be, for we are determined to flicke to them who Shall have the victorie, and will purfue and be on the facks of them who thall flee and run awaic; and there fore be no longer affured of its than whilest yee be conquerous. Petlertus tho had the fore ward, hear ring these words, being warmed with the same, suddenlie like a hurling and a bluffering wind entered into the pate, pulled bowne the fatinette, and brake bowne the heages, and fo made waie, with no small flaughter of the enimies, thereby the paffe was reconered and the enimies overcome. And they then marched without perill buto Limerike, where they entered the third daie in the Cafter weeke, being on tueldate. And as the first conquest of Limerike was bpon a tucloaie, lo was the fecond allo, where for a time they fraire , and reflored all things by the ent. mies before spoiled, fet the same in god order . The enimies finding themselves to be to weake, and that it was better to bow than to breake, practife to have a parlie and a communication with Reimond: & in the end the mellengers of Rothopike king of Connagh, and of Donold of Thomond, did obteine the fame; and a parle was appointed for them both, which was in one date, but not in one place; for Rochorike of Connagh came by boates boon the river of She nin, as far as the great logh of Wirigio, & there fal, ed . And Ponolo not far from thenle kept himfelfe and his companie in a certeine wood. But Reimond choie a place not far from killalo, which is about fear uentene miles from Limerthe, and in the midle bes twene them both. The partie betweene these continued a pretie while, but in the end both kings fubmite ted & peloed themfelues, gaue hoffages , made feal. tie, and were swoons to be true from thenselwath for euer, to the king of England and to his heires. These things thus done and concluded, Reimond

returneth in great triumph and folitie unto Lime,

rike. And by and by there came messengers onto

him from Dermon Pac Artie prince of Delmond,

praising and requesting him to aid and helpe him,

being the king of Englands faithfull and leige man against his eldest sonne Common Dlechan, tho went about to drive and expell him out of his land and dominion: a promised him god interteinment both for himselse and for his souldiors for the same. Reimond nothing refuling the offer, and verie delirous of honoz, taketh adulte of his freends and companions; and by all their confents, the forneie towards Cooke was liked. Therebpon Reimond dis plaieth his banner, and marcheth thitherwards, and 10 takethby the wate great prefes and bottes of neat, cattell, and other things: of the cattels he fent a god postion backe onto Limerike for vittelling of that citie; a in the end he conquered the whole countrie, Subdued the rebellious sonne, and restored Dermon the prince to his estate and right. And thus by reason of Kelmond Pac Artie, he was restozed and recoue. red, the other wife had beene in offer despaire, and out of all remedie. And now to recompense his son Kormach, who before this, by waie of a peace and an 20 intreatie, both bufuftlie & guilefullie had taken and imprisoned him , he to acquite guile with guile, and the like with the like, twke his sonne and cast him into pulon, and not long after (mote off his head.

> The death of the earle Strangbow.

> > Chap.15.

Pilest these things were thus adomy in Delmond, there came a mellenger in all half from Dublin, with letters to Kel mond from his wife Balilia, the effect thereof the messenger knew not. These letters Ref. mond forthwith delivered to a familiar frend of his to read them buto him fecretlie, and apart from all others, the tenure of them was as followeth. To Reimond hir most louing load and husband, his oinne Balilia witheth health as to bir felfe . Know 40 væ my dere losd that my great cheeketoth, which was wont to ske fo much, is now fallen out; where, fore if ve haue anie care or regard of me, or of your felfe, come awaie with all speed . Reimond hauting confidered of this letter, did by the falling of the toth fullie contecture the death of the earle, for he late berie sicke at Dublin before his comming awaie from thenle. But he being thus decealed, which was about the kalends of June, they at Dublin did what they could to keepe the same secret, for feare 50 seo over into England; and being landed, old in post and in doubt of the Iriffmen, butill that Reimond were come with his band of fouldiers onto them. Reimond himselfe forthwith returned unto Lime. rike: and notivithstanding he were verie forcie and much greened with this nelves, yet diffembling the fame, and bearing it out with a goo countenance, would not not did bitter or disclose it to anie bodie, fauing to a few wife and discreet men of his familiars and truffie councelloss . And then opon good aduile and ocliberation had among them, it was con, 60 cluded and agreed boon, that forfomuch as the earle was dead, and that Reimond allo was to depart a wate over into England; that the citie of Limes rike with was to farre remoted and in the middle of manie enimies, should for the time be left, and the garrifon to be conducted and brought from thense in to Leinster, for the defense and safe keeping of the townes and forts byon the fea coaffs. There Ref. mond full much against his will veloed to this their aduite and counfell, being much greened that have uing taken paines to recouer the citie of Limerike, he was now neither able to keepe it himselfe, noz yet had any to leave behind him, who would take charge bponhim . But at length he fent for Ponald pince

of Thomond, being the kings baron & fwome lub. tect, and buto him he committed the cullodie and charge of the citie: who foothwith pretending all truthand fivelitie was contented therewith; and ofo not onelie put in hoftages, but allo toke a coppo rall oth, and was folemnlie twozne for the fafe hee, ping and the restitution of the same at the kings will and pleasure, as also in the meane time to kieve the peace.

Then Keimond and all his companie departed and went awaie: but they had not fo some passed of uer the one end of the bridge, but that the other end was forthwith broken bowne, even at their bales; and the citie which was well walled, defended and bittelled was fet on fire in foure fundzie parts, with they faw and beheld with no small grafe of mind, The falle traitor then openlie thewing and teaching what credit was to be given thenfeforth to the Brith nation, who to wickedlie, impudentlie, and perfidi oullie did perfure themselves. The king of England not long after, being advertised hereof, is faid to have thus faid: Poble was the enterprise in the ale uing of the first aduenture byon the citie, but great ter was the rescuing and recovering thereof a gaine: but it was onelie wifedome, when they left and for loke it. Reimond then returned buto Du blin with his whole garrison in safetie, and then the erle, whose corps by his commandement was referued butill Reimonds comming, was buried in the thurth of the Trinitie at Dublin , beforethe roo there, by the amointment of Laurence the archbi Mop, who did execute all the functall feruices and

The comming of William Fitzaldelme and others over into Ireland.

Chap. 16.

Hele things thus done, the kings mel , lengers bpon thele new changes and chances were to take new adulles; and having throughlie debated the fate of the countrie, and the necessitie of the time, they thought it best and vio conclude that Resmond should tarte behind, and keepe the countrie in good fraie and order; but they themselves to returne backe to the king. Tho accordinglie prepared themselnes, and at the nert weller, lie wind then following, they toke thipping and pal and with all the half they could, make their repairs buto the king; buto whom they veclared the death of the earle, all other things concerning the state of that land. The king then bpon adulte and deliber ration had in this matter, fent ouer William Fitze aldelme, with twentie gentlemen of his houlhold, to be his lieutenant, & toined John de Courcie in com million with him, who had attending opon him ten men. Likewise Robert Fitzstephans and Miles Cogan, who had noblie ferued him in his wars two yeres, were also sent with them, having twentie men attending byon them . These allone as they were arrived, and come to land, and Keimond ba uing bnoorstanding of the same, assembleth his companie and foldiors, thich was a companie well befene, and marcheth towards Werford, and there in the confines or marches of the same he met fity aldeline and the rest of his companie, whom he berte louinglie faluted and imbraced : and forthwithaccor ding to the kings pleasure, he pelbed and delivered op bute Fitzaldelme, then the kings lieutenant, all the cities and townes, as also all such hostages as he had within that land.

Fitzalvelnic open he fato and beheld to folie and

The ladie 25afilas let. ter to hir hul= band iReis niond.

luffie a companie about Reimond, and well mar. bing allo Petlerius, and others the nethues of Ref. mond, about the number of thirtie persons, monne ted byon their horfics, verie lustic and braue, and well befrene in like armoz, with their thields about their necks, and their flaues in their hands; courling by a downeafter their maner about the fields. He envied thereat, and turning backe to his men , faid fecretlie buto them; I will thostlie cut off this prive. and qualle this beauerie. Which in the end it parilie 10 focume to patte, for both he and all the rest which followed him in that office, did as it were by a fecret conspiracie, enuie and maligne at Reimond, Dellerius, Fitzmaurice, sonnes to Fitzstephans, and all other of their race and kindged. For this was alwates the lucke and fortune of this kindred and fa-

In all feruices of warres they were then the foremolf, and had in bell price, and in all martiall afbut when there was no fuch feruice in hand, and no ned of them, then were they contemned and no ac count was made of them; but by a fecret malice they were abased, refected and refused. And albeit great was their malice, yet was their nobilitie fo honorable and great; that by no meanes, bo what they could, was the same to be extirpated or roted out. Foreuen at this date, such good successe hath their noble beginnings had, that their offpzing hath noz, force and power. And to faie the truth, who pers feo the force of the enimies in that land? Guen the Geraldines. Tho did best kiepe & prefer the land in fafetie: The Geraldines. Who made the enimies to go backet be afraid . The Beraldines . Who be they with for their good deferts are most maligned and envied at: The Geraldines. Suerlie, if it had pleas fed the prince to have confidered of them, according to their deferts and worthineffe; no doubt the whole fate of Ireland long per this had beine quieted and 40 established. But causelesse were they alwaies had in suspicion, their worthinesse still had in gelouse: another put in trult, as in thome was neither valiantnesse of feruice, nozassurednesse of trust. But pet pe worthie and noble men, who for to atteine to honoz, have not beene afrato of death; and for to obteine fame and renowme, have not eftemed your felues; be not difmaid, though ye be uncourteoullie confidered, and without your deferts distained and your wonted freps of vertue. And if my pen can go according to worthinette, I thall be happie, and receive the guerdon of vertue & immortal fame: for vertue cannot faile noz die, but either in this life or in the life to come, or in both, Mall have his iuch reward and defert. And albeit your valiant feruice and worthinesse, either by the slackenes of the king, or by meanes of other mens fecret and enulous piactics, have not biene historio considered noz publish, and in my writings to renicmber the fame. And therefore theinke not now, neither do you give ouer to labo; and travell from date to date to grow and increase in honoz, fame and renowme. For the memoriall thereof farre furpatting all the treatures in the world) for a time through malice maie be conered, but never supressed nor extincted : but as fire long his, shall in the end breake out into great flames, and for ever remaine in perpetuall mes

About this time was borne in Gwendelocke a montrous man, begotten by a wicked man of that countrie opon a cow, a vice then tw common in that wicked nation. It had the bodie of a man, but all

the extreame parts of an ore, for from the ankles of the legs and the walks of the armes, he had the hofes of an ore, his head was all bald, fauing a few fmall thin heareshere and there : his eies great, round and blacke, like an ore; note be had none but onelie tivo holes, speake he could not but onelie bel lowed like a cow. This monther did dailie reloct buto the house of Paurice Fitzgerald, about dinner times, and such theate as was given him he would take in his hofes, and put to his mouth, and fo feed himfelfe ac : but to returne to the matter. William Fitzaldelme, being now in high anthoxitie, and has tring the government and tharge of the land in his hands, marcheth along the fea coafts, and vieweth all the townes, forts and callels that wates: but fort the inner countrie, the mounteines and hils boon the maine land, and bordering bpon the Irithic, he neither cared not paffed for the fame : but yet mills ked not the welth and riches thereof. For being a befaires they were the best and most valiant men: 20 riegrædie and a couetous man, and especiallie bungrie to have gold and treasure, whereof was god Moze in that land, he gredflie icraped and icratched togither that soener was to be gotten.

About this time, Maurice(2) fiftgerald in the kalends of September died at Werford, whole death was lamented, a his departure bewailed of all the countrie. For thie, he was a verie graue a valiant man, t tho for his constancie, truth, courtelie t lone left not his like behind. After his death, William euer fince (1) continued in that land, in much hor 30 Fitzalvelme fent for the formes of the faid Paurice. and so dealt with them, that he never left them, butill by one means or other he had craffilie gotten from them the castell of Guendoke. Howbeit afterwards he gave them Fernes in erchange : which albeit it were in the middle of their entimies, yet like luftie and couragious gentlemen, they builded there a frong castell, which they kept sinhabited maugre all their enimies. Walter Almane, fo called in name, and not for that he was ether in nature or flature an Almane, being nemue to William Fitzaloeime. was made fenefchall of Werford; tho nothing degenerated from the maners & conditions of his but cle, but was one who was a corrupt man in all his actions & dwings, being couetous, proud, malicious and envious. And suerlie it is commonlie sæne, that there is none lightlie worle, than when a beggerlie rascall from nothing, and from a base estate, is aduanced to wealth, credit and estimation. For such a one alwaies doubting and millrusting all things, maligned at : but go ye onwards, and proceed in 50 suppetteth all things, thinking all things to be law. full for him to do, bleth all extremities at his will and pleasure. There cannot be (I faie) a worle beatt, than when a cruell raicall and prono begger is railed to effate, and made a ruler over his betters.

This Walter entered into acquaintance with Mozogh prince of Bencile, and by him being corrupted with great bribes, did what he could to procure the otter destruction of Reimond, and all his fores fato colins and kinfmen. And to begin the execution rewarded : yet thall not I faile, with my pen to 60 of their practiles, the forefaid William first toke as wate from Reimond all his lands about Dublin, and about Merford. And whereas he received letters of commandement from the king, to restore buto Mittethans a cantred of land which he had in Dhe. lan, he being well bribed, betraced am lingered the erecution thereof: but pet in the end appointed and alligned unto them other places which were further off and remoted; and the same the more perillous, because they were in the middle of the enimies.

> (1) It is verie true, that thele Geraldines even ener lince have continued in this land of Ireland, and dio dailie grow and increase to much honour: there being at this instant two houses avuanced to Citt.

the titles of earledoms, and fundate to the effates of barons. And follong as they continued in the treps of their ancessors, they were not so honourable as terrible to the Irish nation: but when they leaning English gouernment, liked the lofe life of that bipe, rous nation, then they brought in coine and liverie, and a number of manie other Brith and dinelithim. politions, which hath beene the raine of their honour, the lotte of their credit, sin the end will be the quers throw of all their houses and families.

(2) This Fitzgeralo was buried, and yet lieft in a monasterie of Greie stiers without the walles of the towns of Werford, which house is now disolued, and the monument of his buriall almost bestroicd: there wanting some good and towashie man to restore the fame againe. He beferved well of his prince and countrie: and therefore lamentable it is, that in fo unkind a countrie no one good man is to be found, that of so worthie a knight will not restore so wore this a monument.

The description of William Fitzaldelme.

Chap. 17.

Dis fitzatoelme was a groffe and coze pulent man, as well in flature as in proverie liberall and courtlike. And albeit he were of great courtelle, and would give to anie man much honour and reverence, yet was the fame altogither with wiles and guiles: for under honis he gaue benem, and his fugred woods were mingled with potion . And as a benemous ferpent conered with grane leanes, he with an outward thew of courteffe covered his mindfull trecherie. Foz to the outward their he was liberall and courteous, but inwardlie fall of rancoz and malice. In countenance pleasant, but in a Cinking breat was hid a ffinking 4 papoz: outwardlie as meke as a lambe, but within as wille as a for : carrieng onder sweet honie most bitter benem. His words as smoth as oile, and pet indeed they were deadlie trokes : whome he honoured and reucrenced this date, he would either spotle or destroie the nert date. A cruell enimie against the weake and fæble, and a flatterer unto the rebell and mightie: gentle to the wild and lausge, and courte. ous to the enimie; but ertreame to the god lubied, and cruell to the humble; and by that means he was 50 bout ten thousand souldiors, with force invadeth, not fearefull to the one, not truffie to the other. A man full of flatterie, and yet altogifher craftie and deceitfull. He was also much given buto wine and to momen. De was a gredie couetous man, and an ambitious flatterer, being altogither bent to the one and the other.

(1) This William was the fonne of Aldelme father to Burke erle of Kent (as some saie) and his son Richard was fent into Ireland, and there greatlie 60 advanced : and of him (being load of Connagh) del. cended the burgeffes called Clanuicards, this were the best blod of the foresaid Kichard, and these do pet remaine in Connagh, of whom is the earle of Clanrike now living.

How Iohn de Courcie inuadeth Vlster.

Chap. 18.

Dhn Courcie, who (as is before faid) was foined in committion with William Fitzaldelme, when he faw the course and maner of his dealings, who as he was co-

uetous, and did nothing but for monte; to was he fit merous, and bid all things in craft and deceit: as allo that the enimie feared him not, and the good fubica loued him not. And confidering also that the fould ers and garrifon at Dublin, by means of their cap. teins conetouinelle were unpaid of their wages, and by reason of his south and suggishnesse the vittels wared fcant, a none went a fcouted anie moze abrobe as they were wont to get anie boties or preies, he fecretlie dealeth with some of them, and by his wife conference, and wittie persuasions, allureth and intifeth buto him even fuch as were the valiantest, bo. meffeff, and chosen men of them all: who were content and berie glad to accompanie and follow him. And having to gotten into his companie two and twentie gentlemen, and about the hundred others, he bololie entreth and inuadeth into the province of Alfter, a countrie which hitherto had not tried the force and Arength of the English nation . And then 20 was fulfilled the prophetie of Perlin Telodine (as is 3 puntil faid bowbett & will not fo affirme it) A white knight of Mortin fitting opon a white hoale, bearing birds in his thield, fallille, thall be the first which with force of armes thall enter and inuade Alfer.

This John Courcie was somewhat of a browne colour, but there with come what whitish, and at that time he rode bpon a white horffe, as also did beare in his thield three painted (1) birds. After that he had passed thee dates tournete through the countrie of Uriell, became the fourth date (being the kalends of Februarie) to the citie of (2) Downe, without anie reliffance of the inhabitants thereof : he being an e nimie and a ghest buloked for. And (3) Doonell then the ruler of that countrie, being assonied and a mased at their fo funden comming, fled awaie. The foulviers which before their comming from Dublin were halfe pined with famine, and hunger flarucd, having now recovered great boties and preces of neat and cattels, were full and well refreshed.

At this verie present time, there was come this ther out of Scotland a legat from Rome named Minianus, & he toke great pains to intreat & make a peace betweene Doonell & John de Courcie, bling all the perfualions that he could, aftirming that if he would depart and go awaie, there thould be a yeare lie tribute pato to the king of England : but all his words ausiled nothing. Doonell fæing that words could little anatle, affembleth all the forces of the countrie: and within eight daies having gotten a & with great courage commeth to enter & breake into the citie of Downe. For in Ireland, as it is commonlie also in all other lands, they which inhabit in the north, are more warlike and cruell than anie or thers in other parts. John Courcie fæing the courle and bent of the enimies, who not onelie boon a hope and confidence of their great multitude against a felw entinies; but also their valiant and couragious minds, who were fullie determined to invade the citie: thought it better with his small companie which though they were but few in respect of their aductlar rtes, yet they were fouldiors valiant, coragious, and of god feruice) to illue out and admenture the fight with them, than to be pinned & thut by in a begger. lie ward made with turffes in a corner of the citie, and there for want of vittels to be familhed. Where fore he issued out and somed the battell with them, where the fight was hot, the bowes a farre off on the one fide, and the darts on the other fide : then lance against lance, and the bill against the spar, and the Swood against the skeine: tho buckled so lustilis the one against the other , that manie a man fell that date to the dust. And in this terrible fight and buck ling, he that had seene how valiantlie each man thewedhimselfe, and speciallie how John Courcie most valiantlie with the stroke of his swood mange led manie a man , killing fome , but wounded and mained manie, would and must needs have commended him for a right worthie, noble, and right paliant warrioz.

(1) He giveth thick birds as this author faith, which by heralds are thus blafoned . Argent thee grins or geires gules crowned gold : this grip or geire is skind of an eagle , but fuch as is rauenous, and fæ, beth more byon carren than byon anie foule of his owne preteng : & for his cowardnelle carieth neither the name not praise apperteining to the true eagle.

(2) Downe is a townelieng in the Aros, which is in allfer, a profitable and a fertile foile : it is the le of the bishop of that diocesse, who beareth his name of the fao towne, being called the bilhop of

Downe.

(3) The Latine wood is Dunlenus, which I do find to be Englished Doonell, which is the name of a 20 great familie or nation in the province of Alfter; but whether this Latine be trulie to interpreted, I refer it to the reader, or luch as be expert in luch Arith names.

The commendation of Roger Power, and the victorie of Iohn de Courcie, and of the prophesies of Celodine.

A this fight there was manie a work the man, with valiantlie aconstant but if it might be fair without offense, there was no one man who did more valiant ads than (1) Roger le Power, the albeit he were but a yong man and beardlette, yet he thewed himfelfe a infite, valiant, a couragious gentleman; a tho grew into luch god credit, that after wards he had the go. vernment of the countrie about Leighlin, as also each partie manfullie defending themselues, and none pælding the one to the other. But as the com mon proner be is, be the vaie never to long, yet at the length it ringeth at evenlong: so likewise this fierce, long, and cruell fight had his end, and the vice toxie fell to John de Courcie, and a great multitude of the enimies were flaine in the field, as also byon the woars of the leas as they were fleeing and running awaie. Then was fulfilled the old prophetie of Celodine the Irith prophet, who forespeaking of 50 this battell said, that there should be such a great bloudshed therein of the Irish people, that the enimics perceiving them thould wave op to the knees in bloud. Which thing came to to patte; for the Eng. lithmen perceiving them and killing them byon the woars, the same were so soft, that with the weight of their bodies they funke bottone by to the hard knes or twifels, and to the bloud fleting and lieng bpon the woars, they were faid to be therein by to

The same man also (as is said) did write that a pose Aranger, and one come out from other coun: tries, thould with a finall power come to the citie of Downe, and against the will of the governoz thereof thould take the same. Panie other things allo he wrote of fundrie battels to be waged, and of the events thereof, which were all fulfilled in John de Courcie. This boke the laid John had, and he lo estermed the same, that still be had it about him, and in his hands; and did mante times, yea and for the most part direct his doings by the same . It was al so written in the same boke, that a young man with force and armes thould breake and enter in through the wals of Waterford, and conquer the fame with

the great flaughter of the townsinen: moreoner, that the same man Could come to Electford . A from thense to Dublin, where he thouse enter in without anie great relistance; call these things (as is aparant) were fulfilled in earle Richard . Likewise be tozote in the fame boke , that the citie of Limerike should be twife left and forfaken by the English men: but the third time it thould be kept, which thing came to to patte. For first (as is before write fen) Reimond had it and gave it over: the second was, when the king had given the fame to Philip de Baufe, for he being brought thither by fitzitchans, and Piles Cogan, to take and enter into the fame, and being come to the river lide of Spenin for the fame purpole, was there otterlie discoraged to proced anie further, and fo without anie thing done, leaveth the fame as he found it, and came backe a gaine; as hereafter in his place it thall be thewed. And thus (according to this vaticine) twife it was left , but the third time it shall be kept .

But this is to be implied and meant of Panion be Clalognies the indiciarie there appointed; in whose time the sald citie being bnoer his government, was by treatherie and treason destroied, and so for saken and left; but afterwards recovered by Deflerius: euer fince which time it hath remained and beene kept in the pollellion of the Englishmen . Well then to the battels of John de Courcie, first he had the victorie in two notable battels or fights 30 at Dublin; the one in Februarie, and the other in Itilie: in which he having but a small companie of men fought against fifteene hundred of his enimics, of thome he flue and overtheelv a great number, and had the victorie. The third was at Ferlic about the taking of a preie, where by reason of the Arcia ? narrow palles, he was to much and everie effe some of his men being killed, and some scattered and dispersed abroad in the wood and fields, so that in Dilogie . This fight was berie long & boubtfull , 40 he had fcant eleuen persons left with him . And notwithstanding that he had thus lost his men and holles, yet was he of fuch a valiant mind and courace, that with those few thich were left, he went through his enimies, and in spite of them all trauelled two dates and two nights on fot in their armour without meat or drinke thirtie long miles, but till he was past danger, & so came safelie buto his owne castell againe. The fourth battell was at Uriell, where manie of his men were killed and manie fled. The fift was at the bridge of Duoz, affer and opon his comming from out of England, and pet therein he had the vidorie and conquest. So in the battels he had the victorie, but in two he receiued both the lotte and burt; and yet in them did more annois the enimie, than was hurted himselfe.

> (1) The race sidue of the Powers hath ever lince and yet douth remaine in Ireland, who nothing degenerating from this their ancestor, have for their 60 part thewed themselucs baliant and men of god fernice, for which they have beine honorablie rewarded, and are now barons and pæres of the realme. Their habitation and owelling is in the province or countie of Waterford, and not far from the citie of Was terford.

> > The description of Iohn de

Chap. 20.

• Pis John de Courcie was white and pale of colour , but berte fierce and arrogant, he was linowous and a verie livorg made man, berie tall and mightie, and of a fingular audacitie: and being from his verie youth

I prophelie

bent to the wars proud a verie valiant soulding. the would be the first in the field and formost in the fight; and so ambitious and descrous he was of hos noz, that were the enterprise never to perillous, and the feruice neuer to dangerous, yet he would give the adventure. And albeit he were the generall or capteine, yet fetting the patoattie thereof apart, he would be as a common foulding, and ferne in the place of a prinat feruitor; and manie times being mozerally than lutte, and moze hallie than circums 1 spect, he had the word side and lost the victorie. And although in service he were thus forward, carnell, and behement; yet in time of peace and reft he was verie sober, modest, and altogether given and dis poled to ferue God, and having the victorie of his enimies and god fuccesse in his affaires, he would ascribe the honor buto God, and be thankefull for the fame . But as Tullius writeth, nature neuer made anie thing perfect and absolute in all points. And so it ameared in this manifor through his to much pint 20 thing and sparing, and by reason he was verie but certeine and buconstant, his vertues (otherwise great, and deferuing great praises and commenda. tions) verie much imperished and blemished . He maried the daughter of Gotred king of Maime. And affer that he had waged manie battels, and fought funozie times with his enimies, he at length had the masterie and conquest over them: and then having brought the whole countrie to a god peace and reft , he builded fundzie and diuerfe caffels 3 throughout Elister, in such mete and convenient places as he thought best. And by the way this one thing me thinketh is berie Arange, that thefe theé notable & the thiefelt polls of Ireland, namelie Derucie, Keimond, and this John de Courcie, by Gods fecret (but not buiuft indgement) neuer had anie lawfull iffue. I might also fay the like of Mellerius, tho as yet bath no lawfull iffue by his wife . Thus much having breefite and by the wate spoken of the noble acts of John de Courcie, and leaving the fame 40 buto others to be more at large let forth and defcribed, we will now returne againe to Dublin.

The councell or fynod kept at Dublin; of Viuian the popes legat, and of Miles Cogans issuing into Connagh.

Chap. 21.

held a fonod at Dublin of all the clergie, in which he openlie confirmed and published the right which the king of England hath to the realme of Ireland, as also the popes ratification and confir. mation of the same; commanding and charging euerie person, of that estate, degree, or condition soe. ner he were, that bpon paine of ercommunication he should not denie his localtie, nor breake his alle. giance onto him. And mozeover (1) for somuch as 60 the manner and custome was among the Irithie, that whenfocuer anie gods, come, or vittels, were put and kept in anie durch, no man would medle oz deale to carrie the fame awate; pet neuerthelette, he gaue licence and libertie to all Englishmen , that thensoever they went, or were to go in anie bo, fling, and could not elsewhere be proutded of anie vittels, that they might lawfullie take what they found in anie church: so that they left with the churche wardens, or fuch as had the charge thereof, the true and full value of lo much as they toke awaie . Thefe things thus done, Miles of Cogan, who was lieuter mant of the bands of foldiors binder William Fitzal. beline, as also conectable of the citie of Dublin, he

with 40 gentlemen, whereof 20 were boder the conbut of Kalph the fon of Fitzstephans, as also his lieu. tenant, and they having with them 200 hollemen 6 300 formen, palled over the river of Shenin, Cin. naded Connagh, which hitherto no Engliffman had aduentured. The Connagh men foothwith fet on fire and burned all their townes, villages, and thur, thes, as also all such come as they had in their hag, gards, and in their caues, and could not carrie with them. Likewife they take downe the images and crucifices, and hurled them abroad in the fields, Penerthelette, the Englithmen marched onwards till they came to the towne of Thomond, where they fraied eight daies togither; and finding the countrie for faken of the people, and barren of vittels, thep returned backe againe over the Shenin : and by the waie they met with Rothozike prince of Connagh, tho late in a wood neere the Shenin watching for them, and he had the great trops and companies with him of the best fighting men of Connagh . Be. twene them there was a long and a cruell fight, in which Wiles loft but thee of his owne companie, but manie of his enimies were daine. Which done, he recourted over the river, to came fafelie to Dublin.

(1) Whis blage and cultome is yet at this prefent observed, and everte durch in the countric fruffed and filled with great cheffs full of come, witch the bulbandmen do for fafette keepe therein : and this lich fafe at all times, even in the berie warres among themselves: howbeit the same is not so religiouslie kept and observed in these dates as in times past.

How William Fitzaldelme is fent from home into England , and Hugh de Lacie put in his place: and how Miles Cogan and Robert Fitzstephans have the kingdome of Corke giuen vnto them.

Chap. 22.

Alliam Fitzaldelme, who during his above and being in this land, had done no thing worthie the commendation, fauing that he caused the Caste called Johns Caste to be fetched from Armach, and brought to Dublin; he (I faie) and Diles Cogan, with Robert Fitzile thans were fent for by the king to come home. In whole rome the king fent over Hugh de Lacie, and made him his deputie over the whole land, toining popes legat remained fill in Ireland, and schall of Weeffood and Waterfood. The king, after schall of Therford and Matersard. The king, after the returne of the aforefaid Fitzaldelme and others, thinking and confidering with himselfe the god serv vice of Piles Cogan, Kobert Fitzstephans, and others; as also how necessarie it were, that such noble feruitoes and valiant men were placed among the Brith people, whereby to keepe them in good order and dutifull obeisance; he gaue to Robert Fitzstechans, and to Miles Cogan in fee for euer to be equalite di utded betweene them all fouth Mounster (1) that is to faie, the whole kingdome of Cooke, from the west part of the river at Leismoze onto the seas, saving and referuing the citie of Cooke, and one cantred of land therebuto adjoining. Also he gave buto phi lip de Bruse all the north Pounster, that is to saic, the kingdome of Limerike, fauing and excepting the citie of Limerike it felfe with one cantred therbuto adioining, to have buto him and to his heires for e uer in fee. These men thus rewarded, confederated themselues togither to some and helpe one another, and everie of them maketh the best preparation that he can . Which being in redinelle they take thiming and arrived into Ireland in the moneth of Rovent ber, and landed at Waterford: from thense they com

The thick chiefe polts of Svithout iffue lawfull.

stevalong into Corke, where they were recessed with much bonoz both by the citizens, and also by an Englift gentleman named Kichard of London. who

was deputie there bider Fitzaldelme.

As some as they had pacified and quieted Der. mon(2) Pac Artie prince of Delinond, and the refique of the noble men and gentlemen in those parties, fitzaepans and also Piles Cogan divided betwene them the leauen cantreds, which were nee rest to the towne : for these they kept and held in best to peace and reft . Fitzstephans had the three cantreds which late in the east part, and Cogan had the fours which late in the west, the one having the more bes cause they were the wooser, and the other had the fewer cantreds that were the better foile and ground. The citie it selfe remained in their toint gouerne, ment, and the relique of the cantreds being foure and tiventie remained in common, and the profits there, of growing they equallie divided betweene them. A cantred both in English and in Irish is so much land 20 as conteineth one hundred billages, as is in our topographie declared, which is commonlie called an hundred. These things thus done, they bring and conduct Philip de Bruse unto Limerike. Fitzite. mans had with him twentie gentlemen and fortie bollemen, Diles Cogan had twentie gentlemen & fiftie hollemen, Philip de Bule had twentie gentle. men thice score horstemen, belides a great number of bowmen & formen, which they all had when they were come to Limerike, which was about fortie 20 miles from Cooke, conlie the river of Spenin was betweene them and the citie: the fame at their com. ming was let on fire before their eles by the citizens themselnes . Penerthelette, Stemans and Wiles of fered to aduenture oner the water, and to enter the towne, or if Philip thought it to good, they would there build a castell opon the rivers side right over against the towns. But Philip albeit he were a valiant and a god man, yet confidering with himfelfe how dans gerous the place was, being in the middle of the ent 40 mies, and farre remoted from all fuccoss and helpe. without which he was not able with his small companie to defend and keepe the same, as also being partite persuaded by the counsell and adulte of his companie, thought it better to returne home in fafe tie, than to dwell in the middle of his enimies in continuall perill and danger . And it is not to be much maruelled that in this fourneis he had so enill succelle: for whiche had gathered & reteined to him the notablest murtherers, theues, & seditious persons 50 that were in all Southwales, and the marches of the fame, and these were of best credit with him, and he

most ruled by them. About this time Amere duke Fitzsterhans fon, alustie yong gentleman and a towardie, died at Cooke in March, to the great forrow and greefe of all his freends. Pere about this time was found and fæne a great tode at Materford, therof was made much wondering, as is in our topographie declared. Allo within the space of their yeares there was sine 60 the ecliples of the fun, howbeit these were not oni. nthraperes, uerfall, but particular eclipses sæne onelie in the land. After that Kitzsterhans and Wiles Cogan had quietlie and peaceablie governed and ruled the king, dome of Desmond five pieces togither, and by their pudence and modelie had restrained the hastie for wardnelle, and rall disposition of their young men, Piles and Kafe the sonne of Fitzstemans a lustie yong gentleman, and who had maried Miles daugh ter, went toward Lisemoze, there to meet & to have a parlæ with Waterford men: as they fate in the fields waiting and loking for them, one Pachture with whome they should and had amointed to have lien at his house the next night following, suddenlie

and bnwares came fealing byon them, and there traitozoullie flue them, and fine of their companie. By meanes thereof the whole countrie forthwith was in an byzoare, insomuch that Dermon Mac Artie, and all the Irifficie in those parties, as also the traito: Machture, were out: and denieng to be anie longer the kings loiall subiects, made wars again & Fitzstechans, tho now once againe felt the course of fortunes disposition. And these so much annoted him, that be could never recover himfelfe againe, butil that his nemue Reimond, who fucceded him in the government there, came and rescued him: yet that notwithstanding, he was never his owne man, neither could be be at a perfect peace and reft.

And by the wate this is to be noted and confidered, that as the northerne men be warlike and valiant; to are the foutherne men craftle and lubtill, the one fæking honoz, the other deliting in craft & deceit; the one valiant, the other wille; the one of great cour rage, the other let all on treason and fallhoo. But to the matter. When Reimond hard how fortune froloned bpon his bucle Fitzstephans, and what distresse he was in, being that up in the citie of Cooke, and his enimies affailing him round about, forthwith affems bleth his companie, and having in readinelle tiven tie gentlemen, and one hundred of formen and boins men, he taketh thipping at Wierford, and failing along the coalfs, maketh towards Cooke with all the half he can, that he might relieve and comfort his friends, and be a terroz buto his enimies. And in the end having offtimes incountered with the entimies, some he killed some he ozoue out of the countrie, and some he compelled (which was the greater number) to submit themselves and to sue for peace: and thus in the end after great flormes and tempelf followed a faire wether and a calme. Therie Mostlie after Kis chard of Cogan, brother unto Piles, a nothing infer rioz buto him in valiantuelle, oz anie other respect: came into Ireland with a follie picked companie and chosen men, being sent to the king to suplie his brothers rome. Also in the end of the same winter, and in the moneth of Februarie (3) Philip Barrie nephue to Fitzstephans, a verte honest and a wife gentles man, came oner with a luftie companie of chosen men, as well for the aid of his bucle, as also for the recoverie of his land in Dlethan, which was perforce taken awaie (4) from Fitzstechans, as also affer, wards from Kafe Fittlemans fonne. In the fame pallage also came Gerald an other nethue of Fitz sterhans, and brother buto Philip Barrie, who will his good adulte and counfell did berie much pleasure and helpe both his bucle and brother: for he was lear ned and a great traveller, in fearthing to learne the fite and nature of that land, as also the first oxigine of that nation, and whole name the title of the boke beareth. About this time Herrie of Mont Mozis professed himselfe a monke in the monasterie of the Trinitie in Canturburie, and gave to the same in franke and pure almes all his patronages and impropriations of all his churches, lieng by the feat coaffs betweene Waterford & Merford, and fo bes came a monke, eliued a folitarie life in a religious habit: who as he changed his habit, so would Goo he had changed his mind! t as he hath laid awate his les cular weeds, had call off his malicious disposition!

(1) The gift which the king gave buto thefe two gentlemen of this countrie is pet ertant bider his broad feale, and was given by the name of the king, dome of Cooke, being bounded from the river with fleteth by Lifemoze towards the citie of Limerike, buto knocke Brendon upon the leas on the welf, to be holden of the king, and of his heires by thee feare imights fees. The citie it felfe without cantred of

what a can:

land was referred to the king, faning that they two had the cultodie the reof. This bing dome in course of time for want of hetres male of them, came to two daughters. The one of them was married to Carely and the other to Courcie, ethey in the right of their wives infoiced the fame during their lives; and after them their heires, butill such time as by a division growing amongest the Englishmen , the Frithe rie expelled them, and recouered the countrie unto themselnes.

(2) These Pac Arties are yet remaining in the faid pronince of Corke, and they be now difperfed in. to fundic families, but the chiefest of them is named Pac Artie Poze, and he in the time of king Penrie the eight was advanced to the honor and degree of an carle, being called the earle Clan Artie, which in common speech by interpolition of the letter C is

prenounced Clancartie.

(2) In this point there is a varietie among the witers, some witting that Fitzsterhans should take 20 and good governement recovered that nation to god awaie the land from Philip Barrie, and give it to his fon Rafe; and to recover this out of their hands, the fato Philip came ouer with fuch power and force as he could make. Some write agains that the land at fer that it was given to Philip Barrie, he departing into England left it in the cuffodie and charge of Robert Fitzstephans, who when he litted not or could not hope it anie longer, belivered the cullodie theres of to his sonne Rafe: who as his father so was he ivearie to keepe the fame. And for that cause Philip 30 broke the same. Barrie minding to infoie, and to make the bell ther, of, with such force and helpe as he had gotten, came ouer both to helpe his wacle, & allo to fortifie & build holds a cast els opon his said land, whereby he might be the better able to defend and keepe the fame : and this fameth to be the truth of the historie.

(4) This Philip of Barrie, hauing feiged tron lands and possessions in Ireland, his posseritie have ever fince continued in that land; and nothing degenerating from their first ancestor, have from age 40 and to age beine noble and valiant gentlemen, and Tho for their fidelitie and god fernices, were abuanced to honour and made bicounts : and in that title of hono; do confinue fill. But would to God they incre not fo nusled, roted, and altogither fealoned in Brithzie! the name and honog being onelie Englith,

all the rest for the most part Irish.

How Hugh de Lacie builded castels, and fortified in Leinster and Meth.

Chap, 23,

Dilent these things were thus a dwing in Delmond, Hugh de Lacie a good and a wife man buildeth fundzie castels both in Leinster and Meth, and fortifieth the same berie Gronglie: and among others he builded one at (1) Leighlin boon the river of (2) Barrow befos Db foste, a place naturallie of it selfe verie strong, which 60 Blandina or Slogh Blome, in with also are the place Robert Powze by the kings commandement had the charge of, butill he gave the same over and for loke it. D what worthie champions and fit march men were this Power fitzaloelme, to be fent to dwell and rule in a nation, which is destituted and wanteth noble and valiant men! But a man maie le the courle of fortune, tho then the is disposed to fmile, how the advanceth and raileth op men from base estate to high degrees: for they these two had more pleasure in chambering and plateng the wantons with young girls, and to plate bpon a harpe than to beare a thield of fraffe, of to weare armour. And trulie it was to be marnelled, that so noble a prince could fend fuch cowards to beare rule, and have any

Choritie in places of feruice. But to the matter. Hugh de Lacte being a berie wife man, all his care was to bying all things to a peace and quietnetie; and there fore such as were bypested or briven out of their lands and territories, he reflored them, and with fud courteous behaviour and gentle speches he dealt with all men, that in a verie thoat time he view bu to him the hearts of the people, who desirous to divell buder his government; manured the grounds; which being then walt and untilled, was in thost space full Sozed and fraughted both with come and cattell. And then for the lafetie of the people and ocfense of the countrie, he builded townes and erected castels in euerie place, made orders & effablifhed lawes for the government of the people. And by this it came to palle, that ech man inicied the labours of his owne hands, and everie man lived in peace one with the p ther, and everie bodie loved him, and he affurenot all men. But having thus by his wifedome, politie, conformitie and obedience, behold enuie (which ale wates maligneth vertue) he was had in a gealouffe and infpicion, that his drift and policie was to appropriat the whole land to himselfe, and as the lawfull king and monarch would crowne himselfe king of Freland. Which opinion was to received & falle ru mour fo fpzed, that it was in a thoat time caried into England; which when it came to the kings eares, you mate not thinke that he at all liked thereof, or could

(1) This Leighlin standers full opon the river of Barrow, and it is a verte old a ancient castell called by the name of the Blake castell, a fort in those dates verie frong: it fandeth in the baronie of Dozone, which is the ancient inheritance of the Carews, who being barons of Careto in Wales, one of them mai ried the baughter and heire of the baron of this D drone, s fo the Careius became a were for the courle of fundrie peares, butill in the troublesome times, in king Kichard the seconds time they were expelled, as all others or the most part of the English were. But being dwelling there, some one of them builded a religious house of Greie friers nære adioining to the faid castell, which being since dissolved in king Denrie the eights time, the fame fell into the kings hands, who made thereof a fort, and kept there a perpetuall garilon, and thus was it diffeuered from the baronie. There is also one other Leighlin bistant 50 from this about an Englith mile, there is the cather beall thurth of that diocette, and thereof the bithop taketh his name being called the bilhop of Leighlin; but for difference lake the fame is called old Leigh lin, and this other Leighlin bridge, by reason of a bitoge builded of Cone over the river at that place, and thereof the one end butteth byon the foresald Blake caffell.

(2) The Barrow is a goodlie and a notable river, having his head or spring in the hill called Mons heads or springs of the two other notable rivers Sure and the other Coire. This Barrow kepethe hath his course through the countie of Ler, and pas fethby the market towne of Athie onto Carlow, and from thense onto Leighlin, and so to Rolle, a lit. tle aboue which towne it meeteth and toineth with the Coire, and they togither keepe their course about fir miles, bntill they met with the Sure, wich is nere buto the late abbete of Dunbadate : and as they all do lpzing and rile out of one mounteine, lo after thep have taken their feverall courses, they meet togither and take one waie into the feas. They are all name gable, and all a like replentifed with fundate forts and kinds of filhes.

The Conquest of Ireland.

Chap.24,25.

The description of Hugh

Chap.24.

F you will know what manner of man Hugh de Lacte was, you thall understand his etes were blacke and depe, and his note fome what flat, and the right live of his face from the thin opwards by a milchance was threwdis 10 skalled: his necke was short, and his bodie hairic, as allo not flethie but fine with and frong compact, his flature was but small, and his proportion beformed, but in conditions he was veric lober, trustie, and modelf. He was verie carefull in his owne privat matters, but in causes of government and in all pur blike affaires he was most vigilant and carefull. And albeit he were a verie god fouldier, and one of great experience in martiall affaires; pet in his fundrie aduentures wherin he was sometimes rath and 20 verie hastie, he sped not alwaies best not had the best fuccesse. After the death of his wife he was somewhat lofe of life, being much given to women, of whom he made no great choile : he was verie grædie and couctous of wealth and possessions, but overmuch ambitious of honour and reputation. At this time in Leinster flozished Robert Fitzhenrie bzother unto (1) Petterius, who in his youthfull yeares was verte luftie like the flower of the garden, which when the winter draweth and is cold, both vade and wither as 20 waie. Likewife (2) Alexander and Giraldus the two fonnes of Paurice. And albeit Girald were a man but of meane flature, pet verie wife, fober, and ho nest. Also Roger le Powie conestable of Leighlin, Hugh de Lacis, and Milliam le Powis scheschall of Materfood, Kobert Barrie the ponger some of Philip Barrie, and both the Keimonds were of best fame and credit in thele dates. About this time befell and happened the two frange wonders at Fother in Deth, whereof we have spoken in our topogra, 4 thie; namelie, of the woman violentlie and perforce abused in a mill by a souldier, and of the otes there Nolen and caried awaie.

(1) Pesta the daughter of the great Rhefus had the hulvands, by the first named Benrie the had a sonne, who being named after his name, was nat med Kitzhenric, who was father to Henrie, Robert,

and this Meilerius.

(2) This same Pesta had to hir third husband one 50 Gerald of Mindloze, and by him had iffue hir fourth fon named Paurice, who was father to William Gerald and this Alexander. This Gerald was a bas liant and a noble gentleman, and who had wars as gainst Khelus the father of this Pesta, and kept the towns and castell of Penbroke against him and all his force: but in the end after a peace concluded bes twene them, he maried this ladie, and had worthie illue by bir.

How Hugh de Lacie vpon a vaine sufpicion was sent for into England, and of his returne againe from thense.

Chap.25.

De suspicion conceined of Dugh de Laterina de la circulatio increased mare a more and acid cie dailie increased moze t moze, and as is before fato came to the kings eares, tho as princes in luch causes was verie gelous, and could not like thereof, and therefore forthwith fent for Hugh de Lacie by John conclable of The fler and Kichard Pet, whome he appointed to farrie and ferue in his place, a to be the governors or lords

inflices of the land. But before he thould depart and go awaic, it was agreed by a common confent, that there should otherse castels and sundie forts be built ded in Leinder : for Weth was alredie metlie well and indifferentlie fortified incastelled. First there fore they builded two castels in Fotheret of Dnolan, the one for (1) Retmond, and the other for Brif. fith his brother : the third was at (2) Treffeldermont nere to Bozoghs countrie for Walter of Rivens ford: the fourth for John (3) Clauill voon the river of Barrow not far from Leighlin: the fift at Collach for John Herford. And as for kildare, which with the countrie actoining was before by the earle in his life time given to Beilerius, was taken front him; in erchange the countrie of (4) Ler was given to him, which was a wild and fauage countrie, full of woods, palles, and bogs, and in the middle of the entmies, as also from anie succour oz rescue : howbeit not bufit for this such a champion of Wars and so worthie a fouldier.

These things being thus done in the summer time, Hugh de Lacie toke his pallage ouer to England, and made his specie repaire to the kings presence, where he fo wifelie and dutifullie behaued himfelfe, that the king not onelie was resolved of his truth and fivelitie, but also putting especiall confidence in him, he fent him backe againe. And calling home the forefait John de conestable and Richard Wet, made him his generall and deputie of the land, and toke allurance of him for his truth in this behalfe: howbeit he toined in commission with him one Robert of Salisburie, the thoule in the kings behalfe be a councelloz and a trustie assistant onto him in all his omings. Pow Bugh de Lacie being returned backe againe into Ireland, and there fettled and placed, thinketh upon his first deuises, how to fortifle the countrie and to keepe it in god order. And the more castels he builded, and the more Englishmen he did bestow and place therein, the somer and better did he thinke to bring the same to passe and effect. Among manie castels therfore which he builded, he made one at Tachmeho in Ler, which he gaue to Peilerius, as alio gave him his nece to wife; also one calfell nece to Abowie which he gave to Robert Bigaret, and not farre from thense an other castell which he delive: red to Thomas Fleming. And not farre from thense he builded one other cadell at the Pozach on the ris uer of the Barrow, which Robert Fifzeichard had: besides in Peth he builded the castels of Dunach and of Bilaire, as also Adam Auceport and Bilbert Pigents callels, and manie others, which were now tw long to be particularlie repeted and recited.

And about this time was that Arange talke and Calke becommunication in a wood in Deth, betweene a tweene a prest and a wolfe, thereof we have spoken in our priest and topographie: which thing though it may fæme verie a wolle. frange & most incredible, yet the same is not to be discredited. For as S. Jerome faith, you shall find in scripture manie strange things, t which to a mans 60 fungement thall fæme to be nothing true at all : and yet nevertheles they are most true. For nature cannot prevaile nor do anie thing against the Lord of nature: neither ought anie creature to contemne 03 scoone, but rather with great reverence and honour to confider the workes of God his creator. Pot long after this king Henrie the ponger, the fon of king Penrie the elber, being feduced & caried (the moze was the pitie) by lewd and naughtie counfels, rebeli led the fecond time against his father, and had gotten onto him the most part of the best noble men in all Poitiers, the luftieft gentlemen in all France: belides his brother Beffreie the earle of Britaine the chiefe author and cause of this rebellion, and mas nie others of his confederates. But in the end, by

haue bone berie much good, if that he had not bone to worldie, & have fought to have pleased worldie princes, and to have beene in the kings favour.

Gods fuff judgement and bengeance for his buna, furall ingratitude against his father, who though he were a verie valiant and a luftie gentleman, pet as gainft death nothing can belpe, and fo died about Tune at Marels to the great forrow of manie. And berie Choatlie after also the foresato Beffreie, a moble and a valiant gentleman, t who for his worthinelle and prowelle might have beine the some of Alpsies oz Achilles, tho now revolting the third time from his father, and rebelling against him, was by Gods 10 full judgement about the kaleuds of August taken out of his life, and so died.

(1) Petta the daughter of the great Khefus prince of Wales had three hulbands, the third of them was Gerald of Mindloze, and these had to their first sonne William Fitzgerald the father but

to this Keimond, and Briffith.

(2) Treffelbermont is a callell about a fine miles from Catherlough , f fomtimes a berie faire towne and walled round about, and bosdering next to the baronie of Dozone. The English writers do faie that this castell was not builded in this Trestelder. mont, but at Kilken, a castell about theé miles from this, and both now belonging to the earle of Kildare. Wint the Latine bokes, which are of eloca writing and credit, and whom Jow herein follow, do write it by expresse words, Treseldermont.

(3) This castell of Clauill not far from Leighlin, is supposed to be that which is now called Carlough oz Catherlough: howbett the common fame of the countrie both attribute this castell of Carlough to Eua the earls wife, and the ladie and hetre of Leinfer, and that the thould butto the fame. But there appærefy no fuch things of hir doings, for by the course of the hilfoxie it is plaine, that the callels builded in Leinster were done by the Englishmen onelie, and

for their defense and safetie.

(4) The countrie of Ler is parcell of Leinsfer, e lieth in the marches and extreame confines of the fame by the west: it is verie strong and fast, being full of woods and bogs, and therefore a fafe receptacle for revels and outlawes. It is within the diocette of Leighlin, and before now of late no thire ground, but inhabited by the Pozes, who were alwaies rebels and traitors. But in hope to reforme the fame it was made a countie of it felfe, by an act of parte. ment in the third and fourth yeares of Philip and Marie, and named the Aucenes countie.

The death of Laurence archbishop of Dublin, and of Iohn Comin made archbishop in his place.

Chap.26.

Athis meane time Laurence archbithop of Dublin vied at the castell of Ans giers in Pozmandie, about the kalends of December 1 180. He was a (1) full and a 60 god man, but formhat in displeasure with the king, who had him in suspicion bicause he was at the councell of (2) Laterane, and there inveighed much a gainst the king of England and his honour; o for that caule in his returne homewards through Porman die was flaied, and in the end there died, where he was buried in the high church of our ladie. After him John Comin an Englithman borne, and a monke in the abbeie of Evenham, was by the kings means elected orderlie by the clergie of Dublin archbilhop, and afterwards confirmed by pope Lucius at Aiterbe, where he was also made a cardinall. A man be was verie well learned and eloquent, and verie zealous in causes of the church, therein he would

(1) This one thing is and was a common obler, nation in the Komith church, that if anic one hadro ceived the charact thereof, that although he were ne ner fo rebellious, noz fo great a traitoz againti his prince; yet the same was to be interpreted to be in befense of the holie thurth, and such a one was counted a godlie and a holle man, though by the fcrip: tures he who reliteth his prince is faid to relit Bod himselfe.

(2) The councell of Laterane is faid to be one of the greatest lynous or generall councels that bath bin,it was kept at Rome bider pope Innocentifie third An. 1204. Pante decrees were there made for the advancing of the Romith antichzist: but pet the councell could not be brought to his full perfection by reason of the civill wars in Italie. But among o. ther decrees this was concluded, that all controller fies betweene kings and princes, the correction there of thould apperteine to the pope : as also no man thould be counted emperour, except the popehadad mitted him and crowned him.

The comming of Iohn the kings fonne into Ireland.

Chap. 27.

De king to advance his younger some named John had given him the dominion oner Ireland, and he therebpon had taken homage of fundate persons for the same: and now minding to bring the same to a finallend s perfea order, lendeth ouer into Freland before his fonne John the new archbishop of Dublin, who as a forerunner onto his fonne thoulo prepare all things in readinette against his comming, who fouthwith toke his cournie about the kalends of August, and failed over into Ireland. Also in the moneth of Sep tember then nert following, he fent over Philip of Wlozceffer, a valiant fouldier, a fumptuous mos liberall man, with fortie gentlemen, who was com manded to send over (1) Hugh de Lacie, and he to State there as governour of the land butill John his sonne came oner. This Philip being thus placed in authozitie, the first thing he did he resumed and take into the kings ble the lands in Dchatheffe, and bi uerse other parcels which Hugh de Lacie had before fold, and there he amounted to ferue for the kings prouisson and diet. And after the winter was past, he as sembled and mustered all his men and companie, & began to travell from place to place; and in Parch about the middle of Lent he came to (2) Armagh, where when he had extorted and perforce eraced from the cleargie there a great matte of monie and treat fure, he returned buto the citte of Downe, and from thense to Dublin in safetie: being well laven with gold, filuer, and monie, which he had eracted in everte place where he came : for other goo he did none. In who his this fournie there happened two firange miracles, miracles the one at Armach concerning the great anguith and griefe of (3) Philip when he departed and went out of the towne, the other was of a (4) fornace which Hugh Tirell toke away from the pope priess at Armagh, as moze at large is declared in our to

(1) This Hugh de Lacte albett he were thus fent for, pet be went not ouer, as it apperett by the course of the histories of this time: he was about building of a castell at Deruagh, and there being among his what the bt=

hops palles.

Chap. 27, 28, 29. The Conq his worke, taught him what he should do, taking his pickear in both his hands and brake the ground. This wicked Irithman when he faw his load and mafter thus Coping and labouring, suddenlie came behind him, and with his ar or weapon frake him in the head and due him, but his inheritance and poli fellions came a descended to his two sonnes Wal-

ter and Hugh.

(2) In Areland there are foure archbishoppikes, 10 one at Dublin for the province of Leinster, another at Cachill for the province of Pounter, the third at Momand for the province of Connagh, & the fourth at Armagh for the prouince of Holfter. The chiefeft of them is the archbilhop of this Armagh, for although enerie one of the others be named a primat of Ireland, yet this one alone is named primat of all Freland; which title he hath partlie bicause he is fuccessour to S. Patrike, who first converted Ires land to the chailtian faith, and had his fee and church at 20 this Armagh; one other cause is bicause this arcibithop was the first that received a pall from the pope, This pall is a certeine investure of cloth, which the pope haloweth and grueth or fendeth to everie archbillion, who weareth the same oppermost opon his garment . The nature of this pall, of the first invention thereof and the causes whie it is given to everie archbilhop, is not incident not apperteining to the course and nature of this historie, and therfore I will omit it. This Armagh was fointimes a faire towne, 30 and therein a faire cathedrall church, lieng farre and remote from all goo neighbors, and in the middle of the Onels and other lauage people; the lame hath borne and ftill is and lieth wall: and the archbishop remoned to a house of his named Terlækam, with lich nere the towns of Drogheda, being a place of better fafetie.

(3) The historie is, that this Philip of Morcester being well landed with great riches eracted from the cleargie and departed, he was no somer out of the 40 towne, but that he was taken with a sudden pang, which for the time was to vehement, that it was lup-

posed he would never have recovered it.

(4) This Yugh Airell among other the spoiles which he toke, he had a great bruing fornace or pan which served for the whole house, for which his doing the prieces curfled him, and he carried this along with him untill he came to the citie of Downe. And on a night he being in his lodging, the same was entred with fire and the horses which drew the said pan, as 50 also much good thich they brought with them, and a great part of the towne was burned. In the mozning, when he faw the great spoile, and pet the said pan as nothing hurt not perithed, he began to repent and be logie, and lo restored the pan againe.

The comming of Heraclius the patriarch into England.

Chap. 28.

Pile these things were doing in Iveland, Heraclius the reverend patriarch of Zerusalem, having gone a long fournete from the east to the west, came into Eng. land about the beginning of Februarie; who brought with him the keies of the holie citie and sepulthe, with the kings enligne and martiall figne, in the behofe of all the states of the holie land, as well of the brethren of th'order of the temple as hospitall: and with the consent of all the cleargie and laitie, making suplication to king Penrie the second, falling at his feet with teares, and humblie defiring him, that he would be vitifullie moved to the aid of

the holie land, and Spilles patrimonie, desperatlie affliced by the infidels: otherwise affirming (which within two yeares happened) that the whole kings dome would fall Chortlie into the hands of the Soldane of the Saracens and of Egypt. Dh what a glozie was it to this king and kingdome, that he palling lo manie emperours, kings and princes, as though there were no helpe in the middle part of the world, thould come into this corner of the earth, & as it were into an other world to require aid! D how worthie, perpetuall and incomparable had the kings glozie bæne, if he letting alide other bulinelle, and forfaking his kingdoms, had taken without delate (at this calling of Chill) Chilles crolle, and have followed him! Aerelie, he Could have received of him the everlatting kingdome, if he had ferued him in this necessitie of whom he received his kingdome, and fo glozious a grace of government on earth. Th if he would have defended here (for his abilitie) the patrimonie of so worthie a kingdome in this point of necessitie, and this trial of devotion he might have beene worthilie fortified in earth by fuch a patrone and tuto; in all his affaires and necellities what loeuer.

> The answer of the king to the patriarch.

> > Chap. 29.

Date for antwer herof being appointed at last by the king at London, mante as well , knights as of common lost, by the admonithments of the patriarch, as the fermons of Baldwin the archbilhop were croiled to the service of Chill. At the last the patriarch received this an-Iwer of the king, that it was not goo to leave his realme without defense and government, & leave open his lands beyond fea to the rapacitie of the Frenchmen that hated him : but as concerning monie, be would give both that which he fent this ther, to be referued for him, and more also for the defense of the holie land. To whome the patriarch answered by following this adule. Dking you do nothing: and by this meanes you hall neither faue your felfe, not referue Chiffes patrimonie. Me come to læke a pzince, and not monie . Guerie part of the world almost sendeth is monie, but none send beth bs a prince. Therfore we befire a man that may This was want monie, and not monie that may want a man. the fairing of But, then the patriarch could get no other answer Themitoof the king, he taketh an other deuile : he delireth cles. him to give to their aid one of his fonnes, and if none other, yet his yongest sonne John, that the bloud descending from the Antowes might in a new branch raile op the kingdome.

John himselse, albeit he was readie to passe into Treland given him by his father, with a great armie, (proffrating himfelfe at his fathers feet) delired (25 they faie) that he might be fent to Bernfalem, but he obteined it not. So the patriarch fæing he could do nothing, and draw no oile out of the hard frone, hee spake thus against the king, in th'audience of manie, with a threatfull and protheticall spirit. D glorious king, thou half reigned hitherto among the princes of the world with incomparable glorie, and your princelie honour hath hitherto vailie increased to the type of highnette. But now doubtlette is this triall being forfaken of Goo, thom pon forfake, and delife tute of all heavenlie grace. From henseswith shall your gloste be turned into forrow, and your honor to reproch to long as you live. I would to God the king had anothed this threat by penance, like the king of Pininie, and had caused this sentence to be altered!

50

Chap.30,31,32

The holic man frake this thing thate, first at Lonbon, then at Douer, and lautic at Chinon cantell be. pond the lea. And I would to God the patriarch had bone a man without that propheticall spirit, that ras ther spoken a lefting, that we may for more cuidence touch such things beieffie as were before spoken by that true forespeaker, which we saw shortlie to take effec. Whereas the king reigned thirtie and fine yeares, thirtie years were granted him for worldie glorie, expectation of his convertion, triall of his des 10 notion; but the last flue years fell opon him, as opon an ongratefull, reprobate, and abien fernant, in reuengement, forrow, fignominie. For in the two and thirtith peare of his reigne, immediatlie after the comming of the patriarch, his first enterpile of lenbing his sonne John into Ireland, both the labour and coff was fruftrate and loft. The three and thir tith yeare, thereas he never lost land before, he lost to king Philip (being but a chilo) almost all Aniou. The foure and thirtith yeere he loft the castell Kaber, 2 and welneere all Berie. The five and thirtith yeare of his reigne, and the fourth pare after the comming of the patriard, not onelie king Philip of France, but his fon Richard of Poitiers riling against him, he lost the cities of Towics and Paine, with manie castels, and himselfe also; according to that in faint Gregorie: Wole that the Lord hath long forborne, that they might be converted, if they do not convert, he condemneth them the more grauoullie.

The croising of kings.

Chap. 30.

At perchance the king was referred by beauentie disposition to the vidorie of defer. heaventte diponition to the state of the repare ued love. How much greater is it to repare things cast downe, than to underprop things likelie to fall: And who had knowne Head, if Trote had continued in prosperitie: By so much as adverlitie is more instant and breed, by so much the glorie 40 of valiantnesse will thine the brighter. For by the les cretiudgement of God, within two yeares after the victorie was given to the pagans and Parthians, a. gainst the chaistians, either to revenge the cold deuo. tion of the east church, or to trie the deuout obedience of the westerne men; the worthie Richard earle of Politiers hearing this overthrow, toke denoutlie the croffure bpon him at Towes, gluing an example to other princes in that matter. Therbpon the king of England, the earles father, and Philip king of 50 France, who had bin before at variance (with Bods grace, and the archbishop of Towes persuation) in that place and that houre, at their conference at But. fors were croifed with manie other great men of the clergie and laitie. And as kings followed the example of the erle, to after their example the emperour free derike, through the persuation of the duke of Alba, with manie states of Almane were crossed in the lords court at Mentz. So as it is thought, the king of England being reserved moze than all other to 60 some with swoods. And when manie of the beholders the restoring of the occased state of the holie land, if he had finished his life in this bidozie; doubtleffe that famous prophetie of Werlin Ambrotius had beine berefied in him. His beginning (faith he) thall waver ching the king with wild affections, and his end thall mount to beauen.

The discord of the kings.

Chap. 31. Sudden discord role between the kings and that (which was worle) betweene the father and the earle, through the working of the old enimie, their finnes deferuing the fame,

to the great hinderance of their noble enterpife ias though they being built for it, the honor therrof was referred for other; or perchance according to the fentence of Gregorie: Aduerlitie, which is obicarda, gainst good volves, is a triall of vertue, and not a figue of dispasse. Tho is ignorant how hapie a thing it was that Paule was driven into Italie, and pet he luffered thip wacke. But the thip of his heart was fafe among the furges of the fea . Likewife therfore as vertue is perfected in infirmitie, and gold tried in the fire: to the constancie of faith that can not be craised with tribulations, both increase more as finapis; and the courage of the mind is more ba. liant againe than troublous affaults of fortune. D how much rather would I, that these kings accompanied with a few men acceptable to God, had taken bpon them this laborious, but yet a glorious tourneie, than to war proud for the great wealth that thep had gathered of mante people to this end. Read oner the thole bible, and confider these latter times, and you thall find, that bictorie bath beine gained, not with force and humane power, but with Gods grace and froze of vertues. For as Caffiodorus faith: An armed people without the Lord is bnarmed. And as Seneca faith, Not the number of the people, but the bertue of a few get the bidozie. Df the foure before named, the emperour frederike, albeit he was the last crossed, yet in the erecution thereof he was the first : whome therefore I account so much the more 30 lowethie of bidozie in heaven, and glozie in earth, that he forfaking large kingdomes and his empire, delated not out the matter.

A vision and exposition thereos.

Chap.32.

Gerfoze I thought it not inconvenient to let downe a vilion, which he that hideth much from wifemen & reucaleth it to babes visited me withall, being a most simple and vile wretch. In the milerie of this time, in that civil and detestable discord betweene the king and the erle of Pottiers, I being with the king at Thinon castell the secenth ides of Paie: at night in my siepe a bout the cocke crowing, me thought I faw a great multitude of men loking by into heaven, and as it were wondering at somewhat. So Iliting by mine cies to fee what the fame was, I faw a bright I frang light breake out betweene the thickenesse of the vision, clouds, and the clouds being incontinentlie feuered alunder, and the lower heaven as it were being or pened, and the light of mine eies pearling through that window to the empeireall heaven, there appered the court thereof in great multitude, wide open as it were to be spoiled, all kinds of munition being bent against it. Pou might haue feine there a bead cut from one, an arme from another, and some firth ken through with arrowes, some with lances, and either for the brightnes, or terror, or pitie, had fallen flat on their faces : me thought that 3 (to fee the end of the matter) did view it longer than the rell. So they having gotten the victorie over all the other, the bloude slaves fell opon the prince of the heavenlie orders, litting in his throne as he was wont to ba pictured, and drawing him from the throne on the right hand, having his bread naked, they thrut him through the right five with their lances, and immedi atlie there followed a terrible voice in this maner, Woch, woch, Dioli-ghoff! But ichether it came fro heanen, or was ottered by the people beneath, I can not tell; and so the terror of this voice the vision as wakened nie.

Chap. 32, 33:

I call him here to witneste, to whome all things are apparant and manifest, that immediatlie as I fat in my bed, trevolued thefe things in my mind, 3 was in fo great an horror both of bodie and mind, for halfe an houre and more, that I feared leaff I fhould bauc fallen befides my felfe. But recourfing devout. lie to the onlie refuge of humane faluation, theming my forchead with the crofte efflones, toxtifleng my mind thereby, I palled the rest of the night without felfe: yet to this daie I can never remember that bi fion without horror. That may be more terrible to a creature than to fee his creator smitten through with weapons. That man without greefe can abide to le the fernants of God, a patrons of men to be murthe, red: Who can behold the Lord of nature to lufter. \$ Chemicaning both not luffer there with a What this vision posters ethe topefald Deth, without prefudice to ante I will thew brieflie. He that suffered once in his owne person for all, giwith vs to understand, that he now suffereth againe, but that in his flocke. And he that by triumphing o ner the crosse, and ascending to the right hand of his father, hath victozioullie entered his kingdome; his enimics now go about to depatue him of his king. bome, and subuert his church, which he gathered buto him by the theoding of his bloud. Therefore, as I do supose, this passion of not appeare boon the croffe, but his maiestic : as though the croffe now being taken awate, his enimies go about to take else that his faithfull had suffered, not in the croffe, but with weapons in that holie land, which he after so manie miracles had consecrated with his blond. So like wife he declared this his pattion which he for his lufteined, not in the croffe, but in his maie, fie: so he significo, that all the court of heaven suffer red with the like compation, moving his to revenge. ment with the the wing of lo great greefe. As concerning that voice beginning in a barbarous language and ending in Latine, what I thinke I will thew. 4 Woch, woch, in the Germane tong, is a signe of grafe doubled. And where that wofull mourning botce began in the Bermane tong, and ended in Latine, it maie be fignified thereby, that onelie the Al; mans and the Italians take this the affliction of their Loid more gricuoullie than other nations, as their halting declareth. God forbid that the pallion or lamentation be here bnderstood by anie Caughter of the christians and people in this expedition.

> The memorable euents of our time.

> > Chap. 33.

Thinke it not impertinent to let downe here (by occasion) the adventures and notable events in England: and first of all, the ludgen death of the deteiners of the king, plue of Penrie by his daughter Patilo : as well the beath of the two this knight Gulfathius the fon of king Stechan , and son in law to Lewes the French king: as of his mother quiene Patilo the counteffe of Bullogne. Then the concord adoption made be. twone king Stechan , and Denrie duke of Poz mandie. And then after the death of king Stephan, the mariage of quæne Clianoz, and the translation from crowne to crowne. Immediatlie, the advance ment of the onke to the kingdome, and the cozona tion of king Penrie the lecond. The afficge of the castell of Bringenorth opon Severne, and the compullion of the worthie knight Hugh Portimer to dedition, to the terrible example of all. What nixe both manie woods? To confound the mightie, and to make even the rugged, there were prosperous sue celles. And as destruction fell upon the octomers of the kingdome, so like wife it fell opon the peacebacas kers of the same, as well of the brothen, as also of

The subduing of prince Dene at Colshull in Porthwales in a woodie Areia, not without the loffe of manie knights. A fumptuous expedition to fleve, to through Gods grace returned fullie to my 10 Tholouse, albeit it was onprofitable. An altercation & warre betweene the king of England and Lewes of France, through the doting of both parts . The pælding bp of prince Khele by the means of his bncle Dene at Wencador in Southwales, the king of England comming thither. The butwilling a wrested confession onelic by wood thy writing (as some say) of Thomas of Canturburie, and his luffragans at Clarendon, as concerning annates: when that prothefie of Werlin Ambrolius feemed to be fulfilled; o. The buls twigs thall becut out. The inturious cri- A prophetic eng out of all the court at Porthampton against the of Mertinful: father , bearing the croffe, & mainteining the rights filed, of the crucific, and the privile departure of him to erile that night. The ambastage of Reinold archbithop of Tullen, Echancelloz to the emperoz, from the faid emperoz to the king of England: the was an effectuous persuader of mariage to be had betwene Henrie the emperous nethue duke of Saronie and Banier, and Patilo the kings cloeff baughter : he that glozie from him, which he got on the croffe. Dr 30 moued also, but in baine, to let cleare the Almains Schisme. Dot long after the publike persurie through out all the realme, by the kings proclamation as gainst the lie of faint Peter, and the archisthop of Canturburie. And incontinentlie the countie Gunceline, and other states of Saronie came from the duke into England for the kings baughter.

The cozonation of king Henrie the third, fon to king Henrie, folemnized in London by the archbithop of Porke, to the prefudice of the church of Canturburie. Ambastadors came from Spaine, and obteined the kings daughter Elianoz, to be maried buto Anfalfo, king of Toledo and Castile. The comming of Dernicius (being expelled) to the king, and the failing over into Ireland of fitzstephans, t earle Kichard. The expedition of the load of Diwal. "Albimona, fire in Powes, and his returne by occasion of rame: ferij. not without his burtfull difinembring of the please ges, and great flaughter of his enimies. The mare tyzdome of Thomas . The often thining miracles. 50 The departure of the noble Henrie bilhop of Winthester, descended of the kings bloud at Winchester. The biage of the king into Ireland. The conspiracie of the states against their prince, and the chilbren against their father . The comming of two cardinals into Posmandie, to make inquirie of the ocath of the marty. The ludden returns of the king out of Ireland into Wales, and fo into England, thense into Pomanvie; with an appealing of the faid cardinals, and the French king . The first des dome of England against the lawfull heire, the ner 60 parture of the young king with his two beetheen from his father into France. The victorie of the cis uill and two yeares warre, and the kings mercie towards the vanquithed, as we have the wed before. The comming of Huguntio Petie Leon cardinall of the title of faint Angelo into England, and the celebration of a councell bnoer him of all the cleargie of England, at London, as concerning the cons tention of suprematie betweene Richard archbishop of Canturburie, and Roger of Booke : but the alles gations on both fides with fills and flaves brake it off . The bithop of Capua, and Diaferus elect of Croia , and earle florius , came from William hing of Sicill, to have martage betweine him and Joane the kings yonger daughter,

₫. ii.

The amballadors of the kings of Spaine, Ca. file , and Pauar , came into England: who as concerning lands and callels (whereof they contended) promised altogither to Kand unto the king of Eng. lands arbitrement . Therefore the king affembling at London all the lawyers & wife, men in the land of both orders; when the cause was proposed, and the allegations heard on both fides, by famous aduocats ; among thome, Peter of Caroon , that came in the behalfe of the king of Panar, ercelled in 10 be Curcie. eloquence: the king bling wife counfell, and intending to end the contention by transaction, that gining fomethat from one, and keeping fomethat from an other , he would hurt neither partie much . But as he was appointed ludge by both, so he was carefull for the commoditie of both as much as could be. So making a transaction, and ingroffing it in witting, he wait the tuoiciall eramination for a prouilo; That if either part refuled to fland to his arbifrement, the definitive Arise might be dirempted 20 coaded, when the dominion was translated to the by sentence. The comming of Lewes king of France into England, who went on pilgrimage to Canturburte, to the marty, Thomas, to require his helpe devoutlie, whome he in the time of his exile had helped: and offering a cup pretious both for matter fubstance in the place there the holie bodie was buried, when he had declined a while profirat on his face, and had laid his bare head a while in the right Noe hole of the marble from that franceth therby; at laff, riling from his praier (that he might confirme 30 ther.] the memorie of his pilgrimage with everlafting record) in the presence of the king of England, the earle of Flanders, the archbithop of the fa, the prior of the covent, and other men of frate, he gave pearelie buto Canturburie abbeie an hundred tuns of mine.

The fecond defection of king Henrie the third, and earle Beffreie, with the ludden death of the ponger king at Parcels. The comming on pilgrimage of Boofrie archbishop of Cullen, and Philip earle of 40 Flanders onto Canturburie. The death of earle Beffreie. The comming of Peraclius the patriarch, and the failing of earle John into Ireland . Als most all things as they be here fet in order, chanced in our time, in no great distance betwene, in and about the space of these and thirtie yeares. D how glozious had all thefe things beine, if they had for ted to a god end! Which furelle would have hapned, if he fetting other things alide , had followed Chait. then he was called, of thome he received all thefe 50 benefits; and had spent the last five yeares reigne in his feruice . But thefe things being befoze rehearled by the way, let be returne to the hillogie.

The recapitulation of fundrie acts, and of the commming of Iohn the kings fonne to Ireland, with his fuccesse there.

Chap. 34.

Dw omitting the building of three car fels, one at Tipozarie, the other at Archi thin, the third at Lilmore, after the comming of earle John, cipeaking nothing of the enill fortune of three worthie poing men; Robert Barrie at Lilmoze, Keimond Fitzhugh at Dlethan, and Reimond Cantitinentis at Dozona. Df part of the garrifon of Archibin flaine in the wood there, by the prince of Limerike on Midlummer date, t foure knights there killed, not without manfull defente. Df them of Limcrike, and the noble man Dgraine Claine at Tipozarie. Of them of Archibin Claine a, gaine by those of Limerike in taking of a preie.

De Dermucius Bac Arthie prince of Delmond. with others flaine in a parle nære Cooke by them of Cooke, and the garrison of Theobald brother to Malter . Df the flaughter of them of Bencolon, with their paince inuading Deth by the men there, of, & William Litle, and one hundred of their heads fent to Dublin. Df the finding out of the bodies of Patrike, Brigio, & Columbe at Dundalke , & their translation from thense by the procurement of John

Of the heaving of Hugh Lacie at Dognach, through the treason of his owne Irithmen . Of the killing of twelve noble knights onder John de Cur. cie, in the returne from Connagh . Dfthe traitozous and lamentable flaughter of Roger Powie, and manie others in Offerie: and thozough that occafion, the privile conspiracie of all Ireland against the Englichmen , manie callels being therewith de froied. All which things are not bnivosthie to be rekings fon . But affigning thefe dwings to other wife ters, we will proceed to more profitable matters. How and wherefore this first enterprise of the kings fon had no god successe I thought god to declare brieflie: that this finall addition (albeit it can not be a cure to that which is past) yet it may be a caueat for things to come . This recapitulation followeth Botto in a moze absolute forme , pag. 53. With being be linered out of fundate copies, do perfect one and

When all things meete and necessarie for 6 great a fournie or voiage were at the king his com mandement and charges made readie; then John the kings ponger sonne a little before made lord of Ireland, was seut over; and in the Lent time (1) he twice leave of his father, and as he tranelled towards faint Daulds to take hipping, he patted and robe along by the fea coasts of South ivals, and to came to (2) Denbroke. There brought and accompanied him buto the thip a noble and a worthie man named Reinulfe Blanuile, one of the It. his most privite councell in all weightie matters, as also these inflice of England . And on webnel date in the Caster weeke, the wind being at east and blowing a good gale, he toke thip in Milford hanen, but for half he left to do his denotion and oblation at faint Dautos, which was but an euill halfoning : no uerthelesse on the next morrow about nonetide he arrived in lafetie buto Waterfood with all his companie, which were about the hundred gentlemen, and of bowmen, formen, horffemen, and others a great number. Then was fulfilled the baticine of prophetie of old Merlin : A burning globe thall rile prophetie out of the east, * Chall compatte about the land of Fre of April land, and all the foules of that Iland thall the round which about the fire. And having spoken these words of the father, he continueth his speach, and thus speaketh of his fonne : And of this fire thall rife a fparkle, for feare of which all the inhabiters of the land thall tremble and be afraid: and yet he that is ablent thall be moze effemed than he that is prefent, and better shall be the successe of the first than of the second,

John at this his first arrivall into Ireland was of the age of 12 yeres, thich was from the first arth uall of his father thirteene yeares, of the landing of the earle Strangbow fouretene yeares, and from the first entrance of Robert Fitzstemans fificine yeares, and the yeare of our Lord one thouland one hundzed eightie and fine , Lucius then Komane ble thop, Frederike the empero, and Ibilip the French king. There palled over with the king in the fame flet manie goo clerks, among whome (3) one was speciallie commended unto this young load by his far ther, for that he was a viligent fearther of natural

Ebe ancient

histories, as allo had beene before two yeares in the fame land, and there collected fundric notes, and fut. ficient matter as well for his historie, as for his topographie : and thich after that he was returned home, and aftending in the court, did las leifure ferned him) vigett and fet in god order of a boke, the fame being his labor of the peres. A trauell to him painefull, but to his posteritie profitable, although much militheo and enuted at by fuch as then were it ning: the one liked it well, but the other dispraised to it; the one reaped a benefit and commoditie, but the other of a fecret malice maligning the faine, fret. ted in his humo, and was gravelled in his owne follie.

(1) The first votage of the king his somte, being then but a chilo of tivelue peres of age : the Englith channicles bo make finiall mention therof . But luch as do write thereof, do report that the king brought his sonne as farre as Blocetter on this somie : and 20 there oubbing and honozing him with the degree of

knighthod, fent him on his toznie.

(2) Penbroke is an old and an ancient fotone. builded by a noble man named Arnulth Pontgome, riethe ancestor of the Caretus, those names are Pontgomeries, a lieth in Weltwales named De. metia, but now of this fowne is called Penbroke. fhire. It fanoeth bpon a creeke of Wilford hauen. about two miles from the castell Carew : of which taffell the Pontgomeries builded, and there diveling to the name thereof, a were called Careius, thich name that familie doth pet reteine . In this towns of Penbroke Canoch a goodle and a frong castell, which hath beene in times past the feat and house of manie a noble man bearing the name of the earles of Penbooke . In this was king Benrie the feuenth boone. It is now in great ruine and in

(3) This man ment here is Giraldus Cambrenfis the author of this bothe, who (as it appeareth by this and other his works) was learned and much given to fludie. De was archdeacon of faint Dauids, and descended from Biralo of Mindloze, and the ladie Petta his wife, for he was the fon of Paurice, and the some of the foresaid Birald and pesta : and so this Giralo of Mindloze was his Proauus oz great grandfather.

The praise and commendation as also the excuse of Robert Fitzstephans and the earle Strangbow.

Chap. 35.

Dert fitzstephans was the first who taught and the two the wate to the earle, the earle to the king, and the king to his sonne. Great praise-worthie was he that gaue the first adventure, and much was he to be commended tho nert followed and increased the fame: but about 60 all others he deferued best, who fulfilled, absolued, and ended the fame. And here is to be noted, that albeit both Mitstechans and the earle oid helpe Wermon Pac Pozogh to recover his countrie of Leinster, as also befended and kept the same from robbers, theues, senimics: pet they old it in dinerle respects. The one in respect of his faith and promite, the other for love of Eua, nof the (1) inheritance, which by hir hould grow and come buto him. But as concerning the intruding boon Waterford, and the conquelis of lundzie territozies as well in Delmond as in Deth, I can not ercuse them. The earle, who in tight of his wife was lood of Leinster, the fift part opposion of Ireland, furrended and pecided by all

his right and title there onto the king himfelfe, and twke it agains to hold of him. The like also did all the princes of the land. Whereby as also by other old and ancient records it is apparant, that the English na tion entred not into this land by wrong and inturie, (as forme men suppose and dreame) but boon a good ground, right, and title.

(1) The course of this historie in the beginning doth plainelie declare, how that Dermon after his departure from the king came to the citie of Balls tow, and there having conference with Kichard Strangbowerle of Chepitow, ord offer unto him his onelie daughter and heire in marriage, with the inberitance of all Leinster : conditionallie that be would palle over into Ireland, and to helpe him to recover his land, which conditions were accepted and afterwards performed. Afterwards he lieng at faint Daulos for pallage, there he met with Robert fit; flemans, toid condition with him, that if he would palle ouer into Ireland to helpe him, he would give him the folione of Werford with certeine cantreds therebute adjoining, which conditions were then accepted and afterwards performed. Thus it ameareth that the one for love of the gentlewoman, and the o. ther in respect of his promise did palle over into that land and realme.

The causes of lets while this conquest could not nor had his full perfection.

Chap. 36.

Apple and for ever happle had Ireland beene, wich being ballantlie conquered, well replenithed with townes, and fortified with callels from lea to lea of the first (i) adner turers, who were then minded to have established a god order and government, had not they through the fecret malice and treacherie of some men beene called awate and fent from home . Dea hapte had it beene, if the first conquerous (being noble and valiant men) might according to their deferts have had the charge of government committed buto them. For whie, a nation which at the first comming over of our men, when they were galled with our arrows, and as fraid of our force, they were then easie to be reclamed. But partite by meanes of trifling and delati eng of time, which is alwaies dangerous, and partile by reason that the best servitors being called home from thense, new rulers toke to much ease, and lived in to much fecuritie: nothing was done to anie purpole: and thereupon the people of that countrie take hartof grace, and practifed our manners in thoting and the ble of our weapons: and by little and little they became to well expert and thisfull therein, that thereas at the first they were easie to be overcome med, were now frong and hardie, and not onlie able to refiff, but also readie to put be in danger and has sard. And the causes herof wholo lifteth to search, thall eafilie find out the fame : for if you will read over the bokes of the kings & properts, examine the course of the old testament, and well consider the examples of thele our latter baies; you fhall find it most certeine and true, that no nation, no fate, no citié, no; common-wealth was ever over throwne by the entitie, not ouercome by the aduerfarie but onelie for finne Sin the cause and wickednesse. And albett the Arish people and ofouerthouse nation for their finfuli and abhominable life dib beell by the enunte. deferue to be overthrowne and overrun by Aran. gers, pet was if not Gods will and plefure that they Mould otterlie be brought into subjection : neither was it his goo will & pleasure that the Englishmen, though they had brought fome of them into fubleate F. itt.

911,

The foure Friff pzo: phets.

on, yet they thoulo not therefore haue the wole em. pire and entire fouereigntie ouer them: for both were finfull people and merited not ante fauour at Gods hand, but deferued to be fenerelie punished, and ther fore neither the one (albeit he were a conqueror, and had the over hand) could pet obteine a feat(2) in Pallas caffell, noz yet the other be fullte fubdued a broght into perfect lubiection . The Brith people are laid to have the foure men thome they account to be great prothets, and thome they have in great veneration 10 theffers : the one was named Merlinus Calidonius, 02 and credit (3) Merlin, Bracton, Patrike, and Columkill, whose boths and prothesses they have among themselues in their owne language, and all they intreating and speaking of the conquest of this land, do affirme that the fame thall be affailed with offen warres, the strifes shall be continuall, and the saugh ters great. But yet they do not affure no warrant anie perfect of full conquest onto the English nation (4)not much before doms date. And albeit the whole land of Ireland, from lea to lea, have for the most 2 part bene in the power of the Englishmen, and by them fortified and replenished with fundrie and manie castels, though sometimes to their perilles and smarts : yet Bracton faith, that the king who shall make the absolute and finall conquest, shall come from out of the deferts and mounteins of faint Pa. trike, and bpon a fundaie at night thall with force breake into a caffell builded in the fatinette of Diha. lie: and butill that time the English nation shall from time to time be in continuall troubles with the 30 witten, concerning the full conquest of this land: 6 Irithrie, fauing that they thall hold and infoie the thole land bordering byon the east coasts of the feag.

(1) The course of this historie doth at full declare in particulars, how the first adventurers were maligned, as much as might be descredited. first Robert Fitzfechans, whole feruice was counted no table, and his fidelitie to his prince and king truffie and affured : pet fell he into the kings displeasure, 40 was caff into prilon, and albeit delinered out againe, pet the king conceining some gelouse of him, had him ouer into Pormanoie, where he ferued two peares in his warres: and although he were againe afferward fent ouer into Ireland, yet was he not in anie autholitie or office. The earle Strangbow although he came over with the king his special licence, yet his good fucceffe was fo enuted at, that the king made proclamation, that all his subjects being in Treland with the earle, thould returne & come 50 done. First therfore you thall binderstand, that John home; and that no bittels, no munition, noz ante reteefe thould be transported out of anie of his domintons into Ireland . And albeit the earle afterwards were reconciled to the king, yet was he faine to yeld buto him all his land and dominion of Leinster bu. to the kings denotion, a to receive the same againe to be holden of the king. Retmond the could not be charged, not spotted with anie untruth: pet the treat therous Heruie with his falle informations to inueigled and fallelie informed the king against him, that he was fent for home, and not truffed with anis 60 gouernement. Dugh de Lacie, who (as the historie faith) was the first that made wate into Alster, who fortified the pronince of Leinster and Deth with manie frong holds a caffels, and brought all the countrie to a peaceable fate; he was suspected to have meant the impropriation of the thole land to his owne vie, and was dismissed of his charge and go ucrnement, and fent for home : and in place and lieu of thele were fent ouer William Ritzalvelme, Phi lip of Cheffer, and others, in whome was no value at all, but onelie to pill and poll the people, and to heape bp treasure and riches.

(2) Pallas was the daughter of Jupiter, who for

bir ercellent gift in invention, is fato and fained by the poets to be borne of the braine of Jupiter with out anie mother, the invented the order of warres, and denifed the maner of fightings, the maketh men to be bold, and giveth the bidorie. And bicaufe Cing. alithmen coulo not obteine a full and a perfed bido. rie: therefore they were fato not to fit in pallas

(2) There were two Perlins, and both were vio. syluestrin, bicause his divelling and habitation was neere or by a wood called Calidonia, he was borne in the marches of Scotland, but a man berie ercellent lie well learned in philosophie, and in knowledge of all naturali causes; and by diligent observations he would gette maruelloufite at the events of manie things. Therebpon he was taken for a propeller. and reputed for a magician ora diuinor. He was in the time of king Arthur, about the yeare flue bun-Deed and the Cope, and of this Werlin it is spoken in this historie. The other Perlin was before this man and in the time of Mostiger: about the yeare of our Lord foure hundred and threescore, and he was named Ambrofius Merlinus, tho was also ercellentlis well learned, both in thilosophie and the art magitic; but his fentences were fo barkelie couched, that no thing could be conceived not bnderfiod by them be. fore the event.

(4) Puch ado there hath beine, and manie boks manie beads, fo manie reasons. But if men would have the truth plainelie tolo, it is some to be some how the verie cause proceedeth and is continued for want of a generall reformation. But Pluto hath lo blinded mens eies, that feing they can not not will not læ: but hereof I hall moze at large write in an other place.

A breefe repetition of certeine things done within the course of the historie that are omitted.

Chap.37.

r Ereby the waic it were not amille bief lie to touch a declare of certeine things with happened, thich (for certeine causes) are not at full discoursed in this storie, as we wished that we might have had the opostunitie to to have the kings sonne at his first comming over builded three castels, one at Tibrach, an other at Arche thinan, and the third at Lifemoze. Linewife the worthie gentlemen were lost and killed : namelie, Robert Barrie at Lifemoze, Reimond Fitzbughat Dlithan, and Keimond Bantune at Dfogie. Allo how Donald the prince of Limerike secretice fole bpon the earles armie in Diforie, as they were comming from Dublin towards Limerike, and fue foure hundred Difomans, and foure noble gentle men, which were their capteines; among whom was Dgranie an Arithman . And also Dermond Pac Artie prince of Desmond , being at parlæ wish cere teine men of Cooke not farre from the faio tolune, was there let opon by the lato Cockemen & (1) Theor bald fitzwalter, and there was he and the most part of his companie flainc. The like happened in peth; abere they of Bencole & their capteine made a robe, and being let open by one Milliam the inflice of that countrie, they were all flaine and a hundled of their heads fent unto Dublin. Pozeouer John De Courcie found the bodies of faint Patrike, faint Bafgio, and faint Colome at Downe, and remoued them from thense, Yugh de Lacie builded his castell

at Dernach, was there traitoroullie flaine. John de Courcie at his returne from out of Connagh loft Artiene of his bell gentlemen. Roger le Poince a va liant and a luftie pong gentleman, was by treason taken and murthered in Dlogie, therebpon the To rithmen forthwith brake out from their due obet fance to the king of England, and rebelled against the Englishmen, destroied manie castels, and fet the mole realme in a great flutre and buquietneffe, D. ther landie things happened which were to long to 10 recite; and therefore leaving the fame, we will returne to our historie.

(1) This Theobald Fitzwalter, who by his nation was named Becket but by his office Butler , was the some of Walter the some of Wilbert: 5 was the first Butler that came into Ireland, who being a wife and an expert man, was first fent with willis am fitsalvelme. Afterwards he was fent ouer by king John to view and ferch the countrie; and in the 2 end he grew into such credit, that he was infeoffed with great livings there, as also advanced (and his posteritie after him) to great honozs epzomotions, which now are named earles of Demond and De

The causes why England could not make the full and finall conquest of Ireland.

Chap.3&

T were not amille, that we now did confider the causes, and declare the impediate ments, thy the kings some had not the best fuccesse in this his so honourable a fournie. and itherefore his to famous attempt twhe not effect: that albeit the same can not renoke and remedie that which is past and done, yet that it maie be a forewarning to that which mate follow and infue. The 40 principall and thiefe cause I suppose and thinke to be. bicaule that whereas the patriarch of Jerusalem named Heraclius came in an amballage buto him. in the name and behalfe of all the whole land of Da lestine called the holie land, requesting that he would take boon him to be their helpe, and defending the fame against the Saladine then king of Egypt and of Damasco: who having bent his whole force at gainst them, was like within two yeares following otterlie to be overrun, the faid holie land, unlette 50 some rescue in the meane time and with expedition were provided: he otterlie denied and refused the same. And being further brged to send one of his fonnes, although it were the pongets: he denied that allo: making no account neither of the cause it selfe, with was Chaiff; not of the people, which were that Mians : neither yet of the person , which was a renerend and honourable personage.

And pet neverthelelle he fent forth his ponger are nædfull og profitable ? And whether I prafe pou. Was it into the east and against the Saraceus and milcreants: Po, no, it was into the well, a againt his even chillian, nothing leking the abvancing of Bods glorie, nor promoting of his cause, but onelie for his owne privat lucre and fingular commoditie. An other cause was this. At the first landing and entrie of the kings sonne at Watersood, a great ma-nie of the chiefest of the Frishmen in those parties, and who lince their first submission to king Henrie bad continues faithfull and true, they being advertiled of this his arrivall did come and reloct buto him in peaceable maner, and after their best order to falute him, and congratulate his comming. But

our new men & Pozmans, who had not before beene in those parties making small account of them, old not onelie mocke them, and laugh them to score for the manner of their apparell, as also for their long beards and great glibs, which they old then weare and ble according to the blage of their countrie: but also they did hardle deale and ill intreat manie of them. Thele men nothing litting luch interteinment histed themselves out of the towne, a with all hast fped themselves home : everie one into his owne house; from thense they with their wines, chilozen, and bouthold, departed and went forme to the prince of Limerike, some to the prince of Torke, some to Kothozike prince of Connagh, and some to one lord, and some to an other : and to these they occlared or derlie how they had beine at Waterfood, and what they had feene there, and how they were intreated; and how that a poing man was come thither garbed with young men, and guided by the counsels of yong men : in thom there was no ffaie, no fobrietie, no feefall nelle, no allurednelle, whereby they and their countrie might be affured of anie fafetie.

Thele princes and namelie they three of Connagh, Corke, and Limerike, who were the cheefest, and who were then preparing themselves in a readineste to baue come and faluted the kings sonne, and to have pelded vitto him the dutifull obeifance of faithfull subjects: when they heard these newes, they began Areightwates to imagine, that of fuch entil begin. 30 nings world endings would infue: and reasoning the matter among themfelues, old conclude, that if they thus at the first bio beale so discourteouslie with the humble, quiet, and peaceable men: what would they do to fuch as were mightie and front, and who would be loth to receive fuch discourtelies at their hands. Wherefore with one consent they concluded to fand and foine togither against the English nation on, and to their ottermost to adventure their lives, and to Cand to the defense of their countrie and li bertie. And for the performance thereof, they enter into a new league among themselves, and swoze each one to the other, and by that means enimics before are now made freends and reconciled. This ws know to be true, and therefore we speake it, and that which we saw we do bololic witnesse. And for so much as we thus fondlie and in our price of abufe them who in humblenede came buto bs : therefore did we well deferte by Gods tult indgement (who hateth the proud and bigh minded) to lote the others. for by this example they were offerlie discouraged to like of bs. And this people and nation though it be barbarous and rude, not knowing that aperterneth onto honour; pet most and about all others ow thep defire to be exalted and honoured. And although they be not alhamed to be found falle of their word, and buill in their dealings : pet will they greatlie diff commend freng and commend truth, louing that in others, which is not to be found in themselves. But to the matter. What great euils and inconvenient forme in a fournie oxholting, more fumptuous than 60 ces do grow by luch follies and infolencies, a wife man may cone by learne the example of Rehoboam the fonne of Salomon, to by an other mans harme to learne to beware of his owne (2) for he being lead and carried by yoing mens councels, gave a yoing mans answer buto his people, fairing buto them; My finger is greater than was my fathers loins. and thereas he beat you with roos, I will scourge pon with leaspions, by realon whereof ten tribes for. lokehim for euer, and followed after Jeroboam. Another cause is this, then Robert Fitzstemans came first over, and also the earle; there were certeine Frichmen Wichtwas part with them, and faith. fullie ferned buder them : and thele were rewarded and had given buto them for recompense certeine

Ehe inconue=

niences fol=

lowing euill

 $\mathsf{Chap}_{\mathfrak{Z}^{\S}}$

onelie fries byon by but were alloguiders and convouctors of them againg tos: they being so much the more able to burt and annois us, bicause they were before our familiars, and knew all our orders and a fecrets. Belides this, the cities and fownes byon and nere the feacoasts, with all such lands crevenues, tributes, and commodities as to the fange did belong and apperteine, and which before was imploied and spent for the defense of the commonwealth a coun. trie, and in the feruice against the enimies, were now all alligned and bestowed byon such as were given to pilling and polling, and the laie fill with in the townes, spending their whole time, and all that they had in dunkennelle and furfetting, to the lolle 20 and damage of the god citizens and inhabitants, and not to the annotance of the enimies. And belides fundzie other commodities, this was one, and a speciall one: that at the verie first entrie of the king his fonne into this burulie and rebellious land, the peo. ple being barbarous, and not knowing what it was to be a subject, no; what appertemeth to government, fuch men were appointed to have the charge, rule and government, as the were more meet to talke in a parlo; than to fight in the fields, better skill to 30 be clay in a warme gowne than to be theowood in armoz, and tho knew better how to pill and poll the god fubicas than to relift and incounter the enimie: vea for their valiantnelle and prowelle they might well be refembled onto William Sitzaldelme, onder whose governement both Ireland and Wales were almost otterlie destroied a lost . For whie, they were neither faithfull to their owne people no: dread. full to their enimies; yea they were otterlie boid of that affect, which is naturallie ingraffed in man, 4 which is to be pittifull to the humble and profrate. and to relift the proud and oblinat; but rather of the contrarie, they spoiled their owne citizens, and winked at their enimies: for to relift and withstand them nothing was done, no castels not fortrestes builded, no palles for lafetic made, no wates for feruice opened, but althings went to ruine, and the common frate to wacke . Pozeover, the feruingmen and the foldiers which were in garrison, they liking life, gave themselves to the like, spending their whole time in rioting, banketing, whose dome, and all other distolute and wanton orders, tarrieng Still within the townes and places far off from the enimies . For as for the marches (so called bicause the same bordered bpon their entinies ; 02 rather of Wars, bicaule in those places martiall affaires were and are wont to be most exercised) they would not come nieve the fight thereof, and by that means the people there dwelling and feated, the foiles there manured, the 60 caffels there builded, were altogether defroied, wafted, woiled, and burned. And thus the proweffe of the old capteins, the god feruices of the veterans * well experimented foldiers by the infolent, diffem. perat, and lewd life of thefe new comes was difcre. dited : whereof was nothing else to be awaited for but after fuch calmes muft needs infue formes and tempelis. And albeit they thus lieng in the tolones in fecuritie and at reft, wallowing in lofe and wan, ton life, everie daie being a holie date to Bacchus

and Menus : pet the fate of the land at large was most miserable and lamentable. For everie where

was howling and weeping, the manured fields became walte, the callels destroted, and the people

lands, which they quietlie held and infoice, butill this

time of the comming over of the king his forme : for

now the fame were taken from them, and given to

fuch as were new come over, contrarte to the pro-

mile & grant to them before made , Wherebpon they

folloke be and fled to our enimies, and became not

murthered, and no netwes but that the other belliut. tion of the upolitiand was at hand. And in this di-Grede and neceditie it had beine berie traufit and nædfull that the fouldiers thould have taken by their weapons, ferued against the entime, and have define bed the common tate: but it was farre ofherwife, for there was such lawing a veration in the towns, one baile luing and troubling another, that the he terane was more troubled with lawing withir the Lawing towne, than he was in period at large withithe eni, work ha mie. And thus our men gluen over to this trade and kind of life, became faintharted, and afraid to loke boon the enimie : and on the contrarte the enimie most frong , front , and bold . Thus was the land then governed, and thus the fame posted towards the destruction of the English nation and govern ment, which had voubtleffe verie thortie follow, ed and infued, had not the king promoce a speciete medie for the fame. For the king being addertited how difererlie things framed, and confidering with himselfe in what periltibe trate of his realme and people frod, he with all speed sendeth for all these new come fouldiors, in whome (other than the name of a fouldies was nothing of ante value and com. mendation) and commandeth them to repaire and come home, and fendeth ouer in their places thefe old beaten and well fried foldiors, by whose service the land before had beene conquered and kept among thome one and the chefest was John de Courcie, tho was made lood deputie, and had the gouerne ment of the land committed onto him : who accord ding to his office and outie, letteth in hand the refor mation of all things meet and requilit to be redref fed: who the moze valiant and forward he was in his fato affaires and feruices, the moze the land greinto god order, and infoied peace & quietnelle. For thie, he would not be tole himfelfe, neither would be lufter his fouldiers to lie tole like loiterers and auggaros: but was alwaies labouring and travelling abjoad, and marching fill towards the enimies, whome he folloined and purfued even through the whole land, to the ottermost parts thereof, as well in Cooke, Tho mond, Connagh, and elsewhere, and if by any means he could have ante advantage of them, he would fuerlie give the onfet and adventure byon them: which for the most part was to their overthrome, though he and his formetimes were galled, and felt the Imart. And would to God he had beene as privi bent a capteine as he was a valiant fouldio:; and as ivell of their capteins and matters maners and loce 50 provident in the one as skilfull and hardie in the o ther! But to my former purpole. Among the manie and fundic inconveniences happened by evill go, nernment of these new officers (as is before saio) there was none greater, nor more to be lamented than was this: that notwithstanding God of his The State godnesse did give the victorie, and send the happie dustoud successe in this noble conquest: yet was there not considered ther due thanks attributed bnto God, noranie re, andabuli membrance given onto his durch; but to increase a further ingratitude, they toke and spoiled awais from the same their lands and possessions, as also minded to abyloge them of their old and ancient pale uileges a liberties. Togreat a note of ingratifute, and an argument of to much buthankfulnes : there of what buquietnesse and troubles did infue, the fer

> So manie outrages 7 disorders, which diverse in by the disorded government under the king his fonne, were not so much to be imputed to his young and tender yeares, as onto the entil countels and di rections of such as were about him, and had the speciall charge thereof : for such a sauage, rude, and bat barous nation was by god counsels, discret bire,

> quele therof (for the course of sundrie years) did thew

cions and prodent governement to have beine go nerned and reduced to good order and conformitie. For thie, if a realme which by wife and prodent go nernement is brought and reduced to a perfect fate, pet being committed to the government of a child is cursed and brought to manifold diffreffes, troubles and miseries (5) how much moze then is it to be so thought of that land, which of it felse being rude and barbarous, is committed to the government of such as be not onelie rude and barbarous, but also 10 leind and enill disposed. And that this did to hawen and come to palle in Ireland, all wifemen do know tt: and the elder fort do confeste it to be true, although pong men to couer their folies, would reteat it to some other causes e impediments. Foz whie, such of them as had procured buto themselves great liuings, loodifips and territories, they pretended at the first that they would be readie to serve the king his sonne, to defend the countrie, to relift the enimie, and that they would do this and that with manie 20 god mozowes. But when they had gotten what they would, and had that they lought for, then it manifeltlie ameared that it was fingular gaine & privat profit which they that at : for having obteined that, they never remembred their oth to their lord, nor cared for the common state, nor passed for the safetie and defense of the countrie, which in dutie they ought diefelie to haue confidered.

beginning have beene alwates of a hard bringing bp, s are not onelie rude in apparell but also rough s ouglie in their bodies : their beards and heads they neuer walh, clenfe, noz cut, especiallie their heads; the haire whereof they lufter to grow, fauing that some do vie to round it : and by reason the same is never kembed, it groweth fall togither, and in procelle of time it matteth to thicke and fall togither, that it is in stéed of a hat, and képeth the head verie warme, a also will beare off a great blow or froke, 40 whose service, travels and industrie, the fato land and this head of haire they call a glibe, and therein they have a great pleasure.

(2) The historie is written in the first boke of the kings the twelfe chapter, and in the second of the theonicles the tenth chapter : the effect therof, is that after the death of Salomon the people of Iraell requested Rebohoam his sonne, to ease them of the grienous burdens and heavie voke which his father lated byon them, who leaning the counsell of the old

yong heads, as in this place is recited.

(3) What these Irithmen were, there are diverse opinions. Some thinke that they were such as oid inhabit about Werford, some thinke that they were they of Bencelo, for they faithfullie ferued the Englithmen bnoer their capteine named Pozogh at Liv merike, when the earle of Reimond recovered the same. But I find it to be noted of the Drians, who are now dwelling within the baronte of Dozon, and had a feat there by the gift of the Kauenaughs, but 60 Ance relitting against them and benieng to pate there accustomable theuerie, pédded themselues bri to the earle of Dymond, paieng onto him a certeine blacke rent to be their befendor against the fato Bemenaughs, but in right they are tenants to the bar rons of Dozon.

(4) This is meant of that which is before spoken in the twentie chapter in the description of this John de Curcie, where his to much rathues is not

ted to be a great fault in him.

(5) It is written by the preacher or Ecclesiastes; Wo be but o the D thou land whose king is but a wild . Which is not meant absolutlie of a child, but of luch a one who (as a chilo) hath an enill affection, and is bold of that granitie, wifedome, and maiestie as is required in a prince and governour. For Jolias then he was crowned king of Jehuda, was but eight yeares of age; and yet bicause he did that which was right in the fight of God, and ruled the land godlie and byzightlie, he is commended in the fcrip tures for the fame.

Three forts of people which came and served in Ireland.

Chap.39.

Here were three fundrie forts of feruitoes which ferued in the realme of Ireland, (1) Posmans, Englichmen, and the Cambecaus, which were the first conqueroes of the land: the first were in most credit and estimativ on, the second were nert, but the last were not accounted noz regarded of. The Posmans were verie fine in their apparell, and delicate in their diets, they The Mozcould not feed but upon beinties, neither could their their appareil meat picest without wine at each meale; yet would and delicat ut they not serve in the marches, or anie remote place as their dist. gainst the enimie, neither would they lie in garrison to keepe anie remote castell og fort, but would be still about their loads fide to ferme and gard his person; they would be where they might befull and have plentie, they could talke and brag, fweare and fare, (1) The Irish nation and people even from the 30 and standing in their owne reputation, distance all others. They received great interteinement and were liberallie rewarded, and left no meanes but fought how they might rule the rost, beare the swap. and be advanced buto high estate and honour. In these things they were the first and formost, but to ferue in hosting, to incounter with the enimie, to des fend the publike fate, to follow anie martiall affaires, they were the last and furthest off. And for asmuch as those noble and worthie servitors, by was first entred into and conquered, were thus had in contempt, distaine, and suspicion, and onelie the new comes called to counfell, and they onelie credis ted and honozed: it came to palle that in all their dwings they had small successe, a by whole and little their credit decated, and nothing came to effect oz perfection which they take in hand.

(1) This king, befides England and Scotland, counsellors, gaue them answer by the abusse of 50 hab in his rule and gouernement the buchie of Pop. mandle, and the earledomes of Balcoine, Buten, Antou, Poitiers, belive the lotte of that which came to him by the right of his wife. And albeit he trufed the Englishmen well inough, get being bonne on the other live of the leas, he was more affection nated to the people of those provinces there subtect onto him: for of them he chole both them which were of his councell in peaceable government, as also his feruitoes in martiall affaires. And albeit he had of euerie of these proninces some, yet bicause Pozmandie was the chiefest, and he duke thereof, they went all under the name of Pozmans, and lo called Pozmans.

> How or by what manner the land of Ireland is throughlie to be conquered.

> > Chap.40.

Tis anold faleng, that everie man in his owne art is best of credit a most to be belœued: fo in this matter they are specialite to be credited, who have beene the chiefelf travellers and fervitors in and about the first reconerie of this land, do know and can belt discouer the natures, manners, and conditions of these people and nation: for as the matter specialite toucheth them, so none can do it better than they. For thie, by reason of their continuall warres with them being their most mostall entimies, none can better fais than they how then are either to be conquered or banquithed. And he by the wate hapie had Wales bin, I meane that Wales with the English people do inhabit, if the king therof in governing the fame to or then he incountred with his enimies had vied this denile & policie. But to the matter. Thele Pos mans although they were verte god fouldiers and well appointed, yet the manner of the warres in France far differeth from that which is vied in Free land and Males; for the foile & countrie in France ts plaine, open, & champaine; but in thefe parts it is rough, rockie, full of hils, woos, & bogs. In France they weare complet harnelle, and are armed at all points, not onelie for their honor, but especialite for 20 gotten and reconcred, and so by little and little to their defense and safeties; but to these men the same are combersome a great hinderance. In France they have franding fields & trie the battels, but thefe men are light horffemen & range alwaics at large. In France they tiepe their puloners and put them to ransomes, but these thop off their heads and put them to the fword. And therefore when the battell is to be waged in the plaine, open, & champaine coun, trie, it behoueth all men to be armed, some in complet harnelle, fome in tackes, fome in Almaine rie uets, Come in brigandines & thirts of maile, accor 30 ding to their places of fernice. So on the contrarie, where the fight striall is in narow fireids, rockie places, eithere it is full of woods abogs, e in which fortmen are to ferue and not hordemen, there light armor and flender harneffe will best ferue. To fight therefore in fuch places and against fuch men, as be but naked and bnarmed men, and thome at the first pull and adventure, either the victorie mult be had og loff, light and easte armog is best and convenient. And againe these people are verie nimble & quicke of bodie, and light of fot, and for their lafetie and aduantage they feeke wates through fireids and bogs, and therefore it is not for anie man laden with much armorto follow and purfue them . Pozeouer, the Frenchmen and Pomains most commonlie are horffemen, and do ferue on borffebacke, a thefe men have their fadles to great and deepe, that they cannot at case leape by and downe, and being on fot by reason of their armor, they cannot serve nor travell. And you hall further understand, that in all the fer, nices and hollings, both in Ireland in Wales, the Welsh servitors, and especiallie such as do dwell in the marches, by reason of their continuall wars, they are verie valiant, bold, and of great experience ces, they can endure ante paines and travels, they are bled to watchings and wardings, they can abide hunger and thirst, and know how to take advantage of their enimie; and their feruice by horse is such that they are readie to take advantage of the field, be- 60 ing quicke a readie to take and leape to the bootle, as also to leave the same, to folow the enimie at their best aduantage, whether it be on horse or on fot. And fuch kind of feruitoes and fouldiers were they, which first gaue the adventure and first prevailed in Freland; and by such also in the end must the same be fullie conquered, that when the battell is to be fought & waged in the plaine and champaine countrie, and against such as be throughlie armed and appointed for the same, it is reason that the adverse part be like. wife armed and appointed. But when the matter is to be waged in thepe places, rough fields, rockie hils, or in marith and boggie grounds, and against fut as be quicke of fot, and do læke others to

tops of hils, or to bogs, and woods: firm men of the like exercise, and having light armour, are to be allowed. And in the Irith wars this one thing is to be confidered, that you do in everie wing toine your bowmen with your formen and hordemen, that by them they may be defended from the kerns, Ebrame those nature and conditions are to run in and out, blagen be and with their darts are wont thelvolle to annote tall, their enimies, who by the bowmen are to be kept off, And mozeoner, that the hither part of the law lieng on the east five, or part of the Shenin which binideth the these other parts from this, and this being the fourth part must be well fortified with castels and forts : but as for Connagh & Thomond , which lie in the further lide of the Shenin, and all those parties (faving the citie of Limerike which must needs be recovered and kept in the English gonernement) must for a time be borne withall, and by little and little by fortifieng of the frontiers in met places be grow in opon them as occation thall ferue.

How the Irish people being vanquished, are to be governed.

Chap. 41.

Sthere be means and policies to be b fed in conquering this people, tho are now more light in their bodies than inconstant in mino: To when they are banquithed, they mult in an order be ruled and governed. First and princivallie therefore it is to be confidered, that who foener thail be gouernoz over them, that he be wife, con-Stant, discreet, and a Stated man; that in time of peace, and then they are contented to live boder law and in obedience, they maie be governed by law, directed by right, and ruled by inffice; as also to be front and ba. liant, readic and able with force fenerelie to punify all luch as (contrarie to their dutie and allegiance) thall either rebell and breake out, or otherwise live in disordered maner. Dozeouer, when anie have done amille, and contrarie to butic have rebelled, and do pet afterwards knowledge their follie, and palding themselves have obteined pardon; that in no wife you do afferwards entil intreat them, neither yet late their former faults to their charges, neither call them in the teeth of their follies: but having taken fuch affurance of them as you mate, to intreat them with all courtelies and gentlenelle, that by fuch god o means they mate the better be induced and incouras ged to keepe themselves within their outie, for love of their good governement which they lie: and yet be afraid to do euill for feare of punishment, which they are to receive for their entit and lewed dwings. And if they will not thus order and governe them, but confound their dwings, being flacke to punish the e uill, and quicke to oppette the god and obedient, to flatter them in their rebellions and outrages, and to spoile them in peace; to favor them in their treating and treathertes, and to opprette them when they live in lotaltie, as we have feene manie to to have done: furelie these men so disorderedite confounding all things, they in the end thall be confounded them felues. And bicanic harms forefære do leaff annote & burt, let them which be wife loke woll, that in time of peace they do prepare for the warres. For affer the Alcion dates and calme feas dw follow fformes and tempelis : and therefore, when they have vacant times and leffure, let them build and fortifie caffels, cut downe and open the pattes, and do all fuchothet. things as the nature of warres requireth to be pie uented. For this people being bncerteine, craftie, and lubtill, under colour of peace, are wont alwaits to be fludieng and deuiling of mildiefs. And allobi-

Great one hetweine the warres in Preland op ivales.

The Conquest of Ireland.

caule it is goo to be wife by another mans harme, tour is by other mens examples. For nothing ooth better teach a man than examples, and the paterns of things done afore time. Let not them forget that became of these worths men, Piles of Cogan, Rafe Fitzsterhans, Dugh de Lacie, Koger Powie, and others, who when they thought of least danger they were in most perill: and when they thought themselues in most safetie, they were intrapped and destroicd. Foz as we have faid in our Topographie; 1 this people is a craftie and a fubtile people, and more to be feared when it is peace, than when it is open warres: for their peace indeed is but entinitie, their policies but craft, their friendlhips but coloured, and therefore the more to be doubted and feared. And by experience the fame in some part hath beene promed: and therfore, as Euodius faith, Let the fall and ruine of things pall be forewarnings of things to come.

and bicause herein a man can not be to wife no? warie, it were good that an oaver were taken (as it 20 is in Sicilia) that none of them thould weare anie weapon at all, no not so much as a staffe in their hmos to walke by. For even with that weapon, though it be but flender, they will (if they can) take the advantage, and beweethe their malice and can-

kered formachs. Finallic, for formuch as the kings of England have a full title, and a full right to the land of Ireland in fundie and diverte respects; and confivering also that the same is chicdic mainteined by the intercourse and traffike of merchandizes out of England; and without the fame cannot release and helpe it selfe; it were verie expedient that for the acknowledging of the one, and for the inidieng of the other, as also for the supporting of the continuall tharges of the king of England there yearelie be-Somed : that there be a yearclie tribute paied and an. Avered unto the kings of England, either in monie, or in such commodities as that land breedeth, aswell for the continuance of the title in memorie, as also for the auctoing of mante inconveniences. And because time weareth awaic, and men dw dailie perith and die, that this order for the perpetuall honour of the king and of his realme, and the memorial of this conquest, the same be ingrossed and registred in a publike instrument to indure for euer. And thus has uing spoken what we know, and witnessed what we have feene, we do here end this historie, leaving bri to others of better knowledge and learning, to continue the same as to them shall be thought most need full and convenient.

Thus farre Giraldus Cambrensis.



The processe of Irish affaires (beginning where Giraldus did end) vntill this present age, being a witnesse of sundrie things as yet fresh in memorie: which processe from henseforward is intituled the Chronicles of Ireland.



Eauing at the conquest of Ireland penned by Giraldus Cambrensis, we are now to proceed in that which followeth: wherin our authour (as he himselfe writeth) vsed such notes as were written by one Philip Flatsburie, out of a certeine namelesse author, from this place vnto the yeare 1370: and we having none other helpe besides (ex-

cept onelie Henrie of Marleborow) do set downe that which we find in our oft mentioned authour, and in the same Marleborow in all the whole discourse that followeth, except in some certeine particular places, where we shew from whense we have drawne that which we write as occasion serueth.



THE CHRONICLES

of Ireland, &c.



Ugh de Lacie (of whom such me mozable mention is made hertofore) the rather to meet with such hurlie burlies as were like to put the State of the Irish countrie in danger, if to the same were not the soner brought to quiet, ereaed and built a number of castels and forts in places

Tradell built fied with men, munitions, and vittels, as one at at Derwath. Derwath, where diverse of the Irish praied to be fet on worke for wages . Lacie came fundzie times thither to further the worke, full glad to le them fall in bee with anie such exercise, wherein might they 20 once begin to have a delight, and tall the livetnelle of a true mans life, he thought it no small token of reformation : for which cause he visited them the off ner, and merilie would command his gentlemen to give the laborers crample to take their twles in hand, and to worke a featon, whilest the pore foules loking on might reft them . But this pastime grew to a tragicall end. Foz on a time, as each man was bulilie occupied, fome lading, fome heaving, fome plattering, some graving, the general also himselfe 30 digging with a pickare: a desperat villaine among

convenientlie feated, well and fufficientlie garni-

his hands occupied, and his bodie inclining downwards, fill as he froke watched when he fo froped. and with an arc cleff his head in funder, little effe. ming the torments that for this traitorous act infued. This Lacie was reputed to be the conqueror of Deth, for that he was the first that brought it to a: nie que order of obedience buto the English power.

them , whose twie the noble man vied, espieng both

His bodie the two archbishops, John of Dublin, and Matthew of Cashill buried in the monasterie of Bectie, and his head in faint Thomas abbeie at

By occasion of this murther committed on the person of Hugh Lacie, John Curcie, and Hugh La. cie the ponger, with their allifants, did freight er ecution bpon the rebels; and prementing everie mil thiefe per it fell, ffaied the realme from byzozes. 50 Thus they knitting themselves togither in friend, thip continued in wealth and honor butill the first yeare of king Johns reigne, who fucceding his brother king Kichard, toke his nemue Arthur, fonto his brother Deffreie earle of Britaine, and dispat-Ring John Cheb bin (some said) with his owne hands, because princ Orthur. he knew what claime he made to the crowne, as dele

the French king, but also certeine loads of England and Ireland fauozed his title : and when they buder foo that he was made awaie, they toke it in mar Koo that he was made about, and with a long reale to the Curies either of scale to the Curies either of scale to the Curies truth, or parcialitie, abhorring fuch barbarous cruss the long fant was eltie, thereof all mens eares were full, spake blong gundkan a company which his lurking and some die woos against king John, which his lurking ad John, nerfaries (that laie readie to bindermine him) caught by the end, and bled the fame as a meane to lift him out of credit: which they did not onelie bring to palle. but also procured a commission to attach his bodie, heiseun and to fend him ouer into England. Carle Curcie milfruffing his part, and belike getting some inke ling of their driff, kept himfelfe alofe, till Hugh La cie lord inffice was faine to leuie an armie and to inuade Allter, from whenle he was offentimes put backe : wherebpon he proclaimed Curcie traitor, heisputs and hired fundrie gentlemen with promife of great mitotrain, recompense, to bring him in either quicke or dead. They fought once at Downe, in which battell there died no finall number on both parts; but Curciegot the opper hand, and so was the lood fullice foiled at Turcies hands : but pet fo long he continued in practling to have him, that at length Curcies owne capteins were inuethed to betraie their owne mais fer: insomuch that boon God frivaic, willest the earle out of his armour vilited barefoted certeine religious houses for ocnotion sake, they late for him, toke him as a rebell, & thipped him over into Eng. wis ist land the nert wate, where he was adjudged to perpe tuall prison . Dne Seintleger aoveth in his collec-

cended of the elder brother. And therefore not onclie

This Curcie translated the church and prebends desired ries of the trinitie in Downe, to an abbric of blacke rishers monks brought thither from Theffer, and cauled the same to be consecrated buto saint Patrike: for which alteration, taking the name from God to a creature; be demico himfelfe inwithilie punished. Pot long after (as faie the Friff) certeine French knights came to king Johns court, and one among goden them required the combat for triall of the right to acombat the duchie of Poymandie. It was not thought erpe branch dient to isopard the title upon one mans lucke, yet the chalenge they betermined to answer. Some friend put them in mind of the earle impailoned, a warrioz of notable courage, and in pitch of bodielike Courses a grant. King John demanded Eurcie, thether he fortulated could be content to fight in his quarrell. Pot for the 30th faid the erle, whose person I esteme between the dientite of my bloud, but for the crowne a dignitie of the treatment, in which manie a god man fluith against strong and the control of t thy will, I thall be contented to hazard my life.

tions (as Campion faith) that Lacte paied the trab

toes their monte, and foethwith thereupon hanged

them.

9 1 8 6 Macie is trais tozonilie daine.

Marcie and Stant Lacie ege voinger Some the recinc in

These words were not construct in the worst part, aspiocading from an offended mind of him that was therein effemed more plaine than wife. Therefore being chertihed and much made of , he was fed to wonderfullie (now he came to so large allowance in diet after hard keeping) that the French chalen ger toke him for a monifer : and fearing to deale withhim , prinitie fole awaie into Spaine . It is further reported, that the French king, being belirous to lie Curcie , requested king John that he 10 might come before them, and thew of what firength he was by friking a blow at an helmet . Herebp. on forth he was brought, and prefented before the kings, there was an belmet fet opon a blocke. Curcie taking a fwozo in his hand, and with a fferne & frowning countenance caft bpon the kings , gaue fuch a froke to the belinet, that cleaning it in funder, the fwood flicked to fast in the log, that no man there was able to plucke it forth, ercept Curcie hims felfe. Then he therefore had plucked forth the fword, 2 the kings afted him that he meant to loke boon them with such a grim & froward countenance bes fore he gave the blow to the helmet . He answered, that if he had milled in his stroke, he would have killed all the whole companie, as well the kings as others. Then was he released of bonds, and croffing the leas towards Ireland wither he was bound, was littene times beaten backe againe to the Enge lift those, a going into France to change the coals died there. This Curcie was white of colour, migh 30 philistic. tie of lims, with large bones and frong of finews, tall t broad in proportion of bodie, fo as his Grength was thought to erced, of bolomette incomparable, and a warrioz even from his youth; the formost in the front of everte battell where he came, and ever readie to hazard himfelfe in place of most danger, so forward in fight, that offentimes forgetting the of fice of a capteine, he twise in hand the part of a foul. diaz, pressing forth with the formost, so that with his ouer rath violence, and defire of vidorie, he might 40 feme to put all in danger . But although he was thus halfic and hot in the field against his enimies, petidas he in conversation modest and sober, and verie religious, having thurchmen in great rene. rence, afcribing all to the gooneffe of God, when he had atchived ante praise-worthie enterprise, yell ding thankes to his divine maieltie accordinglie. But as feldome times ante one mantisfound perfed in all things, to thefe vertues were spotted with fome vices; namelie, to much nigardnette in lpa- 59 ring, and inconffancie. De maried the daughter of Bodied bing of Dan , and after manie conflicts and battels had against the Jefft, he conquered (as before ye have heard) the countrie of Alffer, and building diverse from castels therin, he established the fame wider his quiet rute and government, till he

and Lacie fell out, as before is expressed. After Curcies deceale, becaule he left no heires, the earledome of Aliter was given buto bugh La. one of the Curcies remaining in Ireland that was lood of Kathermie and Kilbarrocke, whome (as an espiall of all their practices and informer thereof to the king) Walter and Hugh the fons of Hugh La. cie flue, by reason whereof great trouble and disquis etnelle insued : those Lacies bearing themselues (nomatics the decease of their father) for governors out of checke. To fet the realme in quiet, king John was faine to palle thilher himselfe in person with a maine armie, banished the Lacies, subdued the rest due of the countrie pet not conquered, take pleage cs, punithed malefactors, established the erecution of English laives, coined monje of like palue currant Acting in both realmes. The two Lacies repen-

ting their mildemear 023, fled into France difguifed They fled inin pope apparell, and ferued there in an abbeie as to france. gardeners, till the abbat by their countenance and behauloz began to gelle their ellates, and oppoled them to farre that they disclosed what they were; befeething the abbat to keeps their counsels, who commending their repentant humblenes, aduited them pet to make fute for their princes fauor, if it might be had, promiting to do what he could in the matter, and so take boon him to be a suter for them buto the king that was his godcept and well acquainted with him. He travelled to earnefflie herein, that at length he obteined their pardons: but yet they were fined, Malter at foure thousand, and Hugh at flue and putto their twentie hundzed markes : and herebpon Walter ancs. was reffored buto the lordthip of Weth, and Hugh to the earledome of Alffer.

King John appointed his lieutenants in Ires land, and returning home, subcued the Welthmen, o and some after with Pandulsus the legat of pope Innocentius the third, who came to release him of the censure, wherin he flod ercommunicat, to whom as to the popes legat he made a personali surrender of both realmes in wate of fubmillion; and after he was once absolued, he received them againe. Some adde, that he gave awaie his kingdoms to the fee of Kome for him and his fucceffors, recogniting to hold the fame of the popes in fee, paleng yearelie therefore one thousand markes, as feauen hundzed for Eng. Anhundzed land, and thee hundred for Treland . Blondus faith, marke of Centum pro vtroque quei marchias. Sir Thomas Poze(as golo. Campion fatth)a man both in calling coffice likelie Blondus. to found the matter to the depth, writeth precifelie, that neither fuch writing the pope can thew, neither ivere it effectuall if he could. Dow farre forth, and with what limitation a prince may or may not addict bis realme feodarte to another , John Maior a Sco till chronicler, and a Sorbonill not onlearned parts

lie fcanneth, who thinketh thee hundred markes for Ireland no berie bard pentworth . The intrument as Campion thinketh) which our English writers rehearle, might hamilie be motioned and drawen, and pet not confirmed with anie leale, noz ratified : Iohn Bale in but though the copie of this writing remaine in re, his epologie cord, yet certeine it is, king Johns successors never against bows. paid it . After John Comin archbithop of Dublin, and founder of faint Patriks church fucceded Hens rie Landozes in the fe, who builded the kings castell there, being loso cheefe tustice of Ireland, him they nichnamed (as the Frish do commonlie give additte ous in respect of some fact or qualitie) Scorchuillein, that is, Burnebill, because he required to peruse the writings of his fenants, colorablie pretending to learne the kind of admans scuerall tenure, and bur.

neo the same before their faces, causing them either

to renew their takings, or to holo at will. In the years one thousand two hundred and fire tene king John departed this life. In his daies die perfe monaffertes were builded in Freland, as (betie in recompense of his good service. There, was 60 fide those that before are mentioned) in the fourth peare of his reigne the abbeie of Dowill was foun, Ded; in the firt the abbeie of Wetherham in the countie of Limerike, by Theobalo le Butler loed of Cacrachie, and in the twelfe yeare Richard Dute builded the monafferie of Grenard . In the dates Benrie the of Penrie the third that lucceded his father king third. John great warres were raifed in Ireland betwirt warres be-Bugh Lacie & William Parchall , fo that the count tour Lacie and Darthall frie of Peth was greuoullie affliced . In the yeare 1228 of our Lord 1 228, after the death of Londores The Sie archbiffop of Dublin, that was lood thefe fuffice, raidines. king Penrie the third binderiffanding the god fer: uice done by the Gicaldines euer fince their first comming into Ireland, although by wrong re-

girald. Lucas arch:

1220

1334

The load dicffreie Genutil. 1253

The caffell of Scligath.

Donull.

John Fitz= geffrie lozd inftice. Mlaine be la Zouch lozo iuftice. Stephan De long Elpe.

williamDene

Capell lozd tultice.

Lozd John Fitzthomas

The lord in= flice taken.

posts the fame had beene to their prefudice for a time finisterlie misconstrued, so as the gentlemen had fill bene kept backe, and not rewarded according to their defects. The king now informed of the truth Morice Hitz= made Porice Fitzgerald the fonne of Porice afores faid logo cheefe infice of Freland. Lucas fucceeded Londzes in the archbilhops lie, and was confecrated. In the yeare one thousand two hundred and thirtie. Richard Parchall was taken prisoner in battell at kildare. Some write that he was wounded there, 10 and within few dates after died of the hurt at little kennie, and was buried there in the queere of the thurth of the friers preachers, nière to the place where his brother William was interred, who departed this life in the yeare one thouland two hundred thirtie and one.

In the yeare one thouland two hundred fortie and one, Walter Lacie lozd of Weth departed this life in England : he left two daughters behind him that were his hoires, Pargaret married to the lood Mer. 20 Merdon, and John Merdon were flaine, and fulke don, and Patilo the wife of Geffrie Benuill. King Henrie in the fir & thirtith yeare of his reigne, gaue to Coward his elveft fonne, Balcoigne, Ireland, and the countie of Cheffer. In the yeare following, Hugh Lacic earle of Alifer departed this life , and was buried at Cragfergus, in the church of the friers minors, leaving a daughter behind him, that was his heire, whome Walter De Burgho: Bourke married, and in right of hir was created earle of Ali ffer, as affer thall apeare . Porice Fitzgirald lord 30 inffice of Ireland, being requested by this prince to come and affilt him with a power of men against the Welth revels, left a sufficient garrison of men in the castell of Soligath, which he had latelie builded, and then came over with Phelin Dehonher, and a lufie band of fouldiers : & meeting the prince at Chep. flow, behaued themselves so valiantlie, that returning with victorie, they greatlie increased the fauor of the king and prince towards them; and bpon their returne into Ireland, they toined with Comacke 40 Mac Dermot Mac Rogie, and made a notable fournie against Doonill the Frish enimie, that when Las cie was once dead, invaded a fore annoted the Kings fubiects of Alfter. Doonill being vanquiffed, the lord fuffice forced pledges and tribute of Dneale to keepe the kings peace, and diverse other exploits praise-worthie did he, during the time of his government, as Flatsburie bath gatheted in bis notes for the lord Girald Fitzgirald earle of Kildare, in the peare one thouland five hundred and feventiene. Af 50 ter Porice Fitzgirald lucceded inoffice of lord fut ffice, John Fitzgeffrie knight, and after him Alaine de la Zouch, whome the earle of Survie Fitzwarren Que. And after de la Zouch, in the peare one thouland two hundred fiftie and eight, being the two and for tith of Henrie the third his reigne, was Stephan de long Cfpe fent to fuplie that rome, who flue De neale with thee hundred fiftie atwo of his men in the Arets of Downe, and Mostlie after departed this lord instice. Use; then William Dene was made lord instice, and 60 Orene castell Greene castell was destroted. Also Pac Carete plato Mac Carcie. the diuell in Delmond.

In the years one thousand two hundred firtie and one, fir Milliam Dene lood fuffice of Ireland De-Sir Richard cealed, and fir Kichard Kochell (or Capell as some copies haue) was fent to be lozo inffice after him, who greatlie envied the familie of the Giraldins; du ring his governement the lozd John Fitzthomas and the losd Posice his fon were flaine. In the yeare one thousand two hundred firthe and foure. Walter de Burgh was made earle of Allter, and Porice Fitzmozice toke the lood infice of Ireland togither with Theobald Butler, Miles Cogan. and diverse or ther great loods at Triffildermot, on faint Picholas

date. And to was Ireland full of warres, betweet the Barghs and Giraldins. In the years one thouland tivo hundred firtie and fir, there chanced an earth quake in Ireland. In the yeare following, hing Hen, rie twke by the variance that was in Ireland be tivirt the parties, and discharging Dene, appointed Dauld Barrie lood fustice in his place, tho tamed Dang Mailo Batte 1020 that the infolent dealings of Posice Fitzmosice, couling them the infolent dealings of Posice Fitzmosice, couling them the germane to Fitzgiralo.

In the yeare one thouland two hundred firtie and eight, Conhur Dien was flaine by Dermot Bac Monero, and Morice Fitzgirald earle of Defmond was ozowned in the fea , betwirt Wales & Freland. And Robert Uffort was fent over to remaine lood Robert fuffice of Ireland, and Barrie was dicharged, itho for. continued till the years one thousand two hundred firtie and nine, and then was Kichard de Ercester Richard made lood inffice. And in the yeare following, was Excellent the lood James Audleie made lood fustice. Richard archbilhop of Dublin deceased . Also the castels of Aldlecke, Kolcoman, & Scheligagh, were deftroied. The same yeare was a great dearth and mortalitie in Treland. In the yeare one thousand two hundred fenenties two, the load James Andleic was flaine Thein by a fall from his horse in Thomond, and then was 300kg, Morice Aitsmorice made lord inflice of Ireland, and the castell of Kandon was destroied. In the yeare Ranhor one thouland two hundred feauentie and two, king Choud Denrie the third departed this life, and the lood Will of king to ter Benuill latelie returned home from his four, riethe tha nie into the holie land, was fent into Ireland, and walling made load inffice there. In the yeare one thouland will. two hundred fewentie and flue, the castell of Roko. 1111 man was efflores repared and fortified.

In the peare one thouland two hundred feventle 117 and fir, there was an overthrow given at Glenbu Incum rie, there William Fitzroger, p2102 of the knights at Glanke hospitalers, a manie other with him, were taken pil foners, and a great number of other were flaine. The fame yeare, John de Merdon departed this world, and Thomas de Clare maried the daughter of Ho rice Fitzmerice. In the yeare following, Robert Al. fort was appointed to suplie the rome of Benuil, being called home, and fo was this Uffort the fecond time ordelined lord justice of Freland. De having oc cation to patte into England, made his lublitute Fulborne bithop of Materford till his returne, and then relumed the government into his owne hands againe. In the yeare one thousand two hundred lear uentie and feauen, Thomas de Clare flue Direinoth king of Abelethmond: and pet after this the Irilh clofed him op in Slewbant, togither with Paurice Fitzmaurice, to that they gave hollages to elcape, and the castell of Roscoman was twone. In the yere 111 nert infulng, was John de Derlington confecrated archbithop of Dublin. There was allo a councell bolden at Brenoke, and Pac Dermot live Cathgur Deonthic king of Connagh. In the yeare one thou fand two hundred fenentie and nine, Robert Uffort opon occasion of busines came over into England, and left frier Fulboane bilhop of Materfood to lap. plie his rome, and Kafe Piphard and Dhaulan chased Dneale in a battell.

In the yeare one thouland two hundred and foure fcoze , Robert Affort came the third time to occupie the rome of load chiefe inflice in Ireland, relaming that come into his hands againe . In the yeare foli lowing, the bithop of Waterford was established by the king of England load inflice of Ireland. Abam Culacke the yonger flue William Barret, and ma nie other in Connagh. And in the nert yeare, to wit, one thousand two hundred fours score and two, Ben queit flue purertagh, bis bother Art Pac Purgh

of Splott . Alfo the load James de Bhrminghain, and piets de Eute departed file life. Allo the arch and postington deceased. And about the lane tine, the citie of Duolin was defaced by fire, and the unit, we can describe the described and the consistence of Appetition of the consistence pens before they went about to kepare their istone pluat billbings, agrao togither to make a collecti on for reparing the ruines of that ancient building firt began by the Danes, and continued by Citrus prince of Dublin at the inflance of Donat Come inchishop of that citie, and neptentage time biffop of that citie, and De Dicated to the bleffed

Atlength Strangbowearle of Penbroke, Fitze Sepans, Laurence, that for his vertue was called faint Laurence archbiffopol Dublin, and bis fours fucceffors, John of Guefham, Benrie Stortchill, and Lucas, and laft of all John de faint Paule ff. nifed it. This notable builbitig. Ance the time that it was thus defaced by fire, bath beene beautified in of werle Cots by many scalous ettisens. Strangbowes 20 tome defaced, by the fall of the rose of the church, six minimit Henrie Sidneie, aben he was lord deputie, refforen; altheinte die cott opon the earle of lattoares thaps pell for an ornament to the quier, ouer the which he leff allo a monument of capteine Randolfe, late co ronell of the English bands of fotmen in Gliser that vied there valiantite, fighting in his princes fernice, as after hall appeare. In the yeare one thou fand two hundred foure score and three, Farmund this life, and frier Stephan Aulbogne was made logo inffice of Ireland.

In the yeare 1285, the losd Theobald Butler fled from Dubline, and bied thoatlie after , and the load Cheabald Aerdon loss his men and hartes as he went towards Offalte, ethe nert day Berald fit; im gami: maurice was taken, and John Samford was confe, andhiber crated archbishop of Dublin. Pozeouer at Rathod, stables, the loss Ceffrete Genuill fled, and fir Gerard Do. gct, and Kafe Petit were faine, with a great num. 4 range Amoghand ber of others. Ahe Poelwagh and Arbicoll with other adabumt townes and villages were burnt by Philip Stanton the arteanth vate of Pouember, in the yeare 1 286. Allo Calwagh was taken at Bildare. In the yeare 1287, dinerle nobles in Treland Decealed, as Richard Deceter , Berald Fitzmaurice , Thomas De Clare, Kichard Caffie, & Picholas Teling knights. Me yeare nert infuing , deceased frier Fulboanc low inffice of Freland, and John Samford archbithop of Dublin was advanced to the rome of lood 50 achimbon of iulice. Also Richard Burgh carle of Aller belieged Theobalo Aeroon in the castell of Athlon, and came with a great power buto Trim, by the working of Malter Lacie.

1:88

Dibim log d

1190

In the yeare 1290, was the chale or discomuture of Malie, t dinerle Englithmen flaine. Also Pac Coghlan flue Dinolaghelin king of Weth, and William Burgh was discomfited at Deluin by Mamilel- Pac Coghlan. The fame yeare 1 290, William Gel tothat office on S. Partins date. Unto this tuffice, Coward Balioliking of Scotland bid homage for an earledome ichich be belo in Ireland, in like maner as he did to king Coward for the crowne of Scotland. In the yeare 1292, afifteenth was gran, ted to the king, of all the temporall gods in Ireland, wilest Wescie was as yet lood tustice. This Wescie was a sterne man and full of courage, he called John earle of Bildare before him, charging him with foule riots and misoemeanors, for that he ranged abroad, and longht reuenge bpon privat displeasures out of all order, and not for anie advancement of the publike wealth or feruice of his fonereigne. Elecaric of The earle as impatient to heare himselfe toubled

as the futire to fuffer enill doing, answered thus. The your Hono; and mige (my losd) and by king Co, 22 wards hand for that was accompled no small oth in ,, those vales among the sting pen would if you burt speachine in plante wince of treaton of felonie: To there I have the fitte pand you the flece of fitte ? bare, I wote welligend great an eielbre I am in ,, pour light forfat if praghette hanolomie trulles of for a fellon, menantispemp matter pour formette, come a gentleman & Agentlemanquoth the tutice; >> thou proud earle-I tell the the Welcies were greatle men before kildare was an carledanie : and before that Welth bankrupt the rouline fetheren bis ned in Lemffer But fæing thou pareff me, 3 will fuer lie breake thy heart. And ther with he called the earle a notogious thefe and a muchferer. Then followed facing and bracing among the foultiers, with high words, and terrible fluenting on both floes, bittill cli ther part amealed his owne.

The losd tuffice houtlie after leaning his deputie Milliam Paie, toke the lea, and halled over to the king. The earle immediatite followed, and as hel noullie as the losd inffice accused him of felonie, Bildare no lefte appealed him of treaton. For triali hereof, the earle alked the combat, and Hefcie refufed not : but pet then the litts were promoco. Meleto was flipt awate into France, and fo differited of all his lands in the countie of Bilbare, which were bes flowed upon the earle and his heires for ever. The chancellog of Treland, and Richard Tute departed 30 earle waring loffie of mind in such prosperous succelle, squared with dinerse nobles, English and Frish of that land . The fame peare died John Samford or that tand. The tame years occ Bonn Samiora 1294 archbishop of Dublin, and John Fitzthomas earle The reach of of Kildare, and John de la Pare toke prisoners, Ris the archbillion chard Burgh earle of Allter, and Milliam Burgh Samford. within the countrie of Weth , and the castell of Bil Culter taken dare was taken, and all the countrie walted by the puloner. English on the one lide, and the Trith on the other, and Calinagh burnt all the rolles and talies concero ning the records accompts of that countie. Great Great bearth dearth and death reigned in Freland this yeare, and and beath. the two peres next inluing. The earle of Bildare des teined the earle of Alfer prisoner, until by authoris tie of a parlement holden at Bilkennie, he was delte nered out of the castell of Lete, for his two fonnes, and for the invation which the earle of littoare had made into Well, and other his burulle and unilozoco parts, was differsed of the caffell of Sligagh, and of

all bis lands in Connagh. Milliam Dobingfels, being fits peare mabe william Delood infice of Freland, after Tescie vied, in the years made wingsteld lood infice of Freland, after Tescie vied, in the years indices nert following, that is 1295, and the thie and fiven 1295 tith of king Edward the first. After him succeeded in Thomas that rome the lood Thomas Fitzmaurice . In the fitzmaurice peace 1296, fiter William de Bothum was confe. crated archbishop of Dublin. In the yeare 1298, and fix and twentith of Colward the first, the logo Rec. Turris. Thomas fitzmaurice departed this life , and an a: græment was made betwirt the earle of Wiffer and minimitire. cie luis made lood fustice of Freland, and entered in 60 the lood John Fitzthomas earle of Kilvare, by John Mogan that was ordeined lord inflice of Freland. In the pere 1299 William archbilhop of Dublin beparted this life, and Richard De Fringis was confecrated archbifhop in his place. The king went onto John Mogan loed inflice, commanding him to gine fummons onto the nobles of Ireland, to prepare themselues with horse and armor to come in their best arraie for the warre, to scrue him against the Scots: and withall wrote buto the fame nobles, as to Richard de Burgh earle of Allier, Geffreie de Genuill, John Fitzthomas, Thomas Fitzmaurice, Theobald load Butler, Theobald load Clerdon, Piers lozo Birmingham of Thetemoie, Enfface lozo Power, Ingh lord Purcell , John de Cogan , John

Gai.

be Barrie, William be Barrie, Walter de Lastice, Richard de Greefter , John Pipurd , Walter Lenfant, John of Drfoid, Abam de Stanton, Simon de Preibe, Milliam Cavell, John de Male, Maurice De Carre, George De la Roch, Paurica de Rochford, and Daurice Fitzthomas de Merto, commanding them to be with him at Withwelgun the first of March. Such a precept I remember I have read.regiffred in a close roll among the records of the tower. But where Marlburrow faith, that the faid John 10 Mogan losd inflice of Ireland, and the losd John Fitzthomas, with manie others, came to king Co. ivard into Scotland, in the nine and twentith years of king Cowards reigne, Campion noteth it to be in the yere 1 299, which fell in the fenen a twentith of the reigne of king Coward, & if my remembrance faile me not, the close roll aforementioned beareth date of the foure and twentith yeare of king Cowards reigne. All which notes may be true, for it is berie like, that in those warres against the Scots, 2 the king fent diverfe times to the Irith loads to come to serue him, as it behoused them to do by their tenures: and not onelie be fent into Ireland to haue the feruices of men, but also for prouision of vittels, as in close rolles I remember I have also sæne re corded of the leaven and twentith and thirtith yeare of the faid king Coward the first his reigne. Foz this we find in a certeine abstract of the Irish chaoni. cles, which thenid feme to be collected out of Flatfburie, whom Campion so much followed, that in the 3 peare 1301, the load John Wogan load infice, John Fitzthomas, Peter Birmingham, e diuerle others went into Scotland in aid of king Coward, in which veare also a great part of the citie of Dublin, with the church of faint Merburgh was burnt in the night of the featt date of faint Coline . Also the logo Benuill married the daughter of John de Wont fort, and the lord John Portimer married the daugh. ter and heire of Weter Benuill, also the logo Theo. bald de Merdon married the daughter of the load 40 ter fell opon the Englishmen in Connagh by the in Compa Roger Postimer . The same yeare in the winter fealon, the Irith of Leinster raised warre against the townes of Wicklow and Rathdon, dwing much burt by burning in the countrie all about : but they were chastised for their wickednesse, losing the most part of their provision and cattell. And in the Lent scason the moze part of them had beine biterlie des freied, if discord and variance bad not risen among

maiter Dower. fed enterprifes.

Chr. Pembrig.

Friffmenin=

uade Scot:

I 3 0 3 The earle of Miller.

In harvest there were thick hundred theues saine pithe Abelance Alexander by the Phelanes. Also Walter le Power watted a great part of Pounter, burning manie farmes and places in that countrie. In the yeare 1302, pope Boniface demanded a tenth of all the spiritualiliuings in England and Ireland, for the space of thee yeares, to mainteine wars in defense of the church of Rome, against the king of Arragon. In the yeare 1303, the earle of Allter, and Kichard Burgh, and fir Cufface le Power, with a puissant armie entered Scotland. The earle made thee and thirtie knights 60 at Dublin, before he let forwards. The same pere Girald, sonne and heire to the lood John Fitzthomas departed this life, and likewife the counteffe of Allfer. Milliam de Mellifleie, and fir Robert de Perfinall were flaine the two and twentith of Dc tober. In the yeare 1304, a great part of the citie of Dublin was burnt by caluall fire. In the yeare nertinfuing, Joedsine Comin with his complices flue Paritagh Deonhur king of Offalie, and his brother Calwagh, with diverse others within the court of Piers de Birmingham at Carricke in Carbaie. Also fir Gilbert Sutton feward of Wer. ford was flaine by the Triffmen, niere to the farme

the Englishmen, to the impeachment of their purpos

of Deimond de Brace, which Deimond bare him felfe right valiantlie in that fight, and in the end through his great manhod escaped.

In the yeare 1 306 a great flaughter was made in Dffalie nere to the castell of Geschill, she thir 3 billes teenth daie of Aprill opon Decondur and his frends ture the by the Doempftes, in the which place were flaine a faire. great number of men . Alfo Dbzen king of Tho. mond was flaine, Pozeouer, Donald Dge Dac Ar, thie flue Donald Kalle king of Delmond. And by on the twelfe of spate in the confins of speth, a great onertheoto chanced to the fide of the losd piers But, ler, and Balimoze in Leinster was burnt by the F. Balung rift, there Benrie Celle was flaine at that prefent burn, time. Hereof followed great wars betwirt the Eng. lift and Irif in Leinter, fo that a great armie warreig ivas called togither footh of diverte parts of Ire, Luntin, land, to restreine the malice of the Irish in Lein, Cer, in which tournie fir Thomas Pandeuill knight entred into a conflict with the Irifh nere to Blen. fell, in the which he bare himfelfe right manfullie, till his boote was flaine bider him, and yet then to his great praise and high commendation he fauch both himselfe and manie of his companie. The lood chan Thelong cellog of Ireland, Thomas Caucocke, was confecta cellog confe ted bithop of Imaleie within the Trinitie church at crated billy Dublin, and kept such a feast as the like had not of Imake liabilie bæne læne noz heard of befoze that time in Ireland, firft to the rich & after to the pope. Richard Chemin o Flerings archbishop of Dublin deceased on the e. flood Do uen of faint Luke the enangelist, to whom succeeded blin build Richard be Hauerings, who after he had continued in that le about a fine yeares, religned it over by difventation obteined from Kome, and then his nemue John Lech was admitted archbilhop there.

In the years 1307 the first of Aprill, Murcon Ballaah was beheaded neere to Perton by fir Dauid Caunton knight, and Choetlie after was Adam Daune flaine. Alfo, a great discomfiture and flangh, 3 bilionni Dicheles the first date of Paie, and the robbers that dwelt in the parties of Affalie raties the castell of Belichell, and in the bigill of the translation of Thomas Becket, being the firt of Julie, they burnt the towne of Leie and besieged the castell: but thep were constrained to depart from thense shortlie af ter, by John Fitzthomas and Comund Butler that came to remove that siege. In the yeare 1308 king Coward the first departed this life the seventh of

Edward the second.

A Ichard archbishop of Du blin, after that he had gouer. ned that le the space of fine Deares, by reason of a vision that he faw in his flepe, fer ling himselfe troubled in conthat ozeame, religned the nert

morrow all his title to the arthbilhops dignitie (as before ye have heard) and contented himselfe with other ecclesiasticall benefices as sæmed convenient to his estate. This yeare by vertue of letters directly ted from the pope to the king of England, becaused the Cipara all the Templers as well in England as Ircland to suppetion be awzehended, and committed to fafe keeping. The profesion of these Templers began at Jerusalem, by certeine gentlemen that remained in an hosfell nere to the temple, who till the councell of Trois in France were not increased about the number of nine, but from that time forth in little more than fiftie yeares, by the zealous contribution of all dist

1301

dian realines, they had houles erected eneric tipere, with livings bountifullie affigned to the fame for their maintenance, in to much as they were auge mented but o the number of the hundred, that were buights of that order, belive infectious bacthaen innumetable; but now with wealth they to forgot theme felies, that they nothing leffe regarded, than the purpole of their foundation : and withall being accused of harible herefies (whether in all things inclie or otherwise, the Lood knoweth) they were in the couns cell at Lions in France condemned, and their lie ningstrampoled to the knights Holpitalers, other, wife called the knights of the lahodes, and natural Malta. The manner of their apprehention and committing was fuoden, and fo generall in all places byon one date, that they had no time to thist for

demfelues. forficit, the king fent fouth a precept to enerie hiriffe within the realing of England, commands ing them within each of their romes to cause a pres 20 feribed number of knights, or rather fuch men of cres dit, on whose fivelities he might affure himselfe to assemble at a certeine towne named in the same wit, the lundate nert after the Cpupanie, that ech of the same Chiriffes sailed not to be there the same date, to erecute all that thould be inivined them by a nie other wait, then and there to be oclinered. The this rife of Porke was commanded to give fummons to foure and twentie fuch knights, or other fufficient men to meet him at Porke. The thiriffe of Port 30 friers at his olune coffs. folke and Suffolke, to fummon twentie to met him at Thetford. The other thiriffs were amointed to call to them some ten, some twelue, or some fourteene, to met them at such townes as in their writs were named. The date of this writ was from Meliminfier the fifteenth of December, in the first peace of this king Coward the seconds reigne. The other wit was fent by a chapleine anthoxized both to deliver the same witt, and to take an oth of the Chiriste. that he should not disclose the contents, till he had 4 put the fame in execution, which was to attach by ab liftance of those aforementioned knights, or as manie of them as he thought expedient to vie, all the Templers within the precinct of his rome, and to leize all their lands, goods, and cattels into the kings hands, and to cause an inventarie of the same indented be made in presence of the warden of the place, whether he were knight of the order or anie other, and in the presence of other honest men neigh. bours thereabouts, keeping the one counterpane 50 with himselfe, scaled with his seale that made the scizure, and leaving the other in the hands of the faid warden : and further to fe the faine gods and cattels to be put in safe keeping, and to provide that the onicke goos might be well kept and loked buto, and the grounds manured to the most profit, and to cause the bodies of the Templers attached, to be so deteined in all safetie, as that they be not yet committed to from not to firefit prison, but to res maine in some connentent, place other than their 60 owne houses, and to be found of the gods so seized accordinglie as falleth for their estates, till he have otherwise in commandement from the king: and what is done herein, to certific into the ercheker the morrow after the purification. The date of this les cond wit was from Billet the twentith of December. There was likewise a writ directed to John Mogan load inflice of Ireland, lignifieng but ohim that thould be done in England, touching the apper bention of the Templers, and feigure of their lands and goos, commanding him to proced in fembla ble manner against them in Freland: but the date and place when the Wirisses should there assemble, was left to the discretion of the said inflice and trea

furns of the archeker there, but to as the fame might. de done before anie rumour of this thing could be brought over out of England thither. Also a like commandement was fent buto John de Bittaine earle of Kichmond, load marden of Scotland, and to-Cufface Totelbach chamberleine of Scotlans, allo to Walter de Pederton logo infice of west Wales, to Hugh Aldighleigh alias Auderleie lood instice of north Males, and to Robert Holland lord inflice of Cheffer . Thus much for the Temples. But now to

other doings in Ireland. In the yeare 1 3 0 8, the tipalfe of Aprill peccased Peter de Birmingham a noble warriour, and one that had beene no small sequege to the Arish. The eleventh of Mate the castell of Bennun was burnt, and divers of them that had it in keeping were flaine. by Milliam Pachalther, and other of the Irith, and balther was like wife the towne of Courcoulie was burnt by the after hanged fame maletadors. And the firt of June, John lord at Dubitn. Mogan load infice was discomfitted nere to Gline The load indelozie, there John de S. Hogelin, John Pozton, fice dicom-John Bzeton, and manie other were flaine. The fix 1,08 tænth of June, Dunlouan, Tobic, and mante other tolones were burnt by the Irith rebels. About this John Decer feafon, John Decer maioz of Dublin builded the maioz of Dus high pipe there, othe brings over the Little towards blin. S. Alftons, and a chamell of our ladie at the friers minors, where he was buried, repared the church of the friers preachers, and everie fridaic tabled the

John Mogan having occation to palle into England, William Burgh did suplie his rome, buto Burgh. thom king Coward recommended Piers de Ca. neston, when (contrarie to the kings mind) he was Piers Gauss banithed by the loods of England, and about the na. Ireland, tiuttie of our ladie he came over into Ireland, being fent thither by the king with manie iewels: and beside the letters which he brought of recommenda. tion from the king, he had affigued to him the como. dities roiall of that realme, which bred some trouble and bickerings there, betwirt Kichard Burgh carle of Allter, and the faid Gauelion, who not with frans ding bought the god willes of the fouldiers with his liberalitie, flue Dermot Doempfie, faboued Dbien, edified fundzie castels, causeies, and bridges, but the nert yeare he was renoked home by the king, as in the historie of England it maie appeare.

In the bigill of Simon and Jude, the load Ro. ger Portimer landed in Ireland with his wife, right Lord Roger heire to the leigniozie of Peth, as daughter to Piers Moztimer. Bennill, that was sonne to the load Deffrete Benuill, which Geffreie became a frier at Trim of the order of the preachers: by reason whereof, the lord Mostimer and his wife entered into possession of the lands of Deth. In the yeare 1309, on Candlemas day, the lord John Bonneuill was flaine niers to the Lord John towne of Aroscoll, by the load Arnold Powee and his Bonneuil same. complices, his bodie was buried at Athie in the thurth of the friers preachers. In the yere following, at a parlement holden at Bildare, the load Arnold Power was acquit of that flaughter, for that it was promed it was done in his owne defense. In the peare 1311,02 (as some bokes have) the peare 1309, A parlement Mogan load iuffice summoned a parlement at Campion. Bilbennie, where diverse wholesome lawes were ordemed but never executed. There fell the bilhops in contention about thef: turifoidions, namelie the bis thop of Dublin forbad the primat of Armagh to raise his croifer within the pronince of Leinster.

Shoztlie after, Rowland Joice the primat fale by night (in his pontificals) from Howth to the priorie of Grace Dien , where the bilhops fernants met bim. with force chaled him out of the diocelle. This bilhop was named John a Leekes, and was confecrated

Bir Michard De Clare.

John Lacie flaine.

notlong before he kept this finte. Aichard earle of Mifter with a great armie tame to Bonrath in Ahomond, whereas fir Robert orrather fir Richard De Clare discomfited bis power , toke It William de Burgh palloner,oa (as lome bokes have) the earle himfelfe. John Lacie the fonne of Malter Lacie, and diverle others were flaine. The twelle of Pouember this pere, Alcharo de Clare flue fir funbied Balloglalles, and John Porgoghedan was flaine by Dmolmote. Allo Donat Dbzen was murthered 10 by his owne men in Thomond.

r 3 1 2 Robert Mer= hon raifeth a riotone tu= mult. John wogan lozd tultice.

Mie one and twentith of Februarie began ariot in Argile by Robert Merdon, for the appealing there of an armie was lead thither by John Wogan load chiefe tuffice in the beginning of Julie, but the fame was discomfited, and diverse men of account flaine, as fir Picholas Auenen, Patrike de Roch, cothers. At length yet the fails fir Robert Merdon, and many of his complices came and submitted theniselues to prison within the castell of Dublin, abloing there the 20 kings mercie. The load Comund Butler was made deputie tuffice bider the lord John Magan, tho in the Lent nert inluing belieged the Dbrens in Bline below, and compelled them to peeld themselves to the kings peace. Also in the peace abouefaid 1312, Paurice Fitzthomas maried the ladie Batharine, baughter to the earle of Allfer at Brene callell, and Thomas Fitziohn maried an other of the faid earles baughters in the same place, but not on the same Daie : for the first of those two mariages was ce. 20 lebiated the morrow after faint Dominikes daie, and this fecond mariage was kept the morrow af. ter the feast of the assumption of our ladie. Also Robert de Brufe ouerthrew the castell of Man, and toke the lord Donegan Doowill on faint Barna-In the yeare 1313, John a Lækes archbishop

1113 Campion.

The earle of

and heire de:

1314

cca feth.

of Dublin departed this life : after whose becease were elected in schisme and division of sides two succestors, Walter Thornebutie lord chancellor, and A. 40 lexander Bignoz treasuroz of Freland. The chancel loz to Arengthen his election, halfilie went to lea, and togither with an hundred and fiftie and fir persons pertified by Chipwiacke. The other submitting his cause to the processe of law, taried at home and sped. Abozeoner, the lord John de Burgh, sonne and beire Tutters fonne to the earle of Alfter, deceafed at Balbie on the feat daie of faint Parcell & Parcelline. Alfo the load Co. mund Butler created thirtie knights in the callle of Dublin on faint Dichaels date being fundate. The 50 knights hospitalers or of faint Johns (as they were called) were invested in the lands of the Templers in Ireland. The fame yeare was the lood Theobald Merdon fent lord fuffice into Freland.

1315 Edward 282ufe inua= deth Ireland.

Capteins of name with Bzule.

Edmund Butler lord euftice.

In the ninth yeare of king Cowards reigne. Coward Brule, brother to Robert Brule king of Scots, entered the north part of Ireland with fir thousand men. Were were with him diverse caps teins of high renowme among the Scotilly nation, of thome the chicfe were these: the earles of Hurris 60 lord of Malie, Richard de Clare, Porice Fitztho uenbris and Dentith, the load John Steward, the load John Campbell, the lord Thomas Kandolfe, Fergus de Andzelfan, John Moo, and John Billet. They landed neere to Cragfergus in Alffer the fine & twen. tith of Paie, and loining with the Irifh, conquered the earledome of Miffer, and gave the English there Dundalke ta: diverfe great overthowes, twke the towne of Dun. hen and burnt balke fvoiled & burnt it, with a great part of Argile: they burnt thurthes a abbeies, with the people whom they found in the fame, sparing neither man, woman nor child. Then was the lord Comund Butler chofen leed tuffice, who made the earle of Wiffer and the Gi raldines friends, and reconciled himselfe with sir John Pandeuill, thus læking to piclerue the relidue

of the realme which Coward Brule meant wholte to conquer, having caused bimfelfe to be crowned king of Freland. The lood inffice affembled a great power out of Wounder, and Leinster, and other parts there abouts, and the earle of Willer with another armie came buto him nære buto Dundalke, there thep confulted togither how to deale in defending the countrie against the entimes but hearing the Scots inere withdrawne backe, the earle of Wilter folomen them, and fighting with them at Coiners, be lost

There were manie flaine on both parts, and William De Burgh the earls brother, fir John Dan. pentil . and fir Alane Fitzalane were taken prifaners. Derewith the Arith of Connagh and Deth be. gan forthwith to rebell against the Englishmen, and burnt the castell of Athlon and Kandon. And the Brufe comming forward burnt Benlis in Deth. and Granard, alfo Finnagh, and Pewcaltell, and kept his Challmas at Loghludie. From thenle he ment through the countrie buto Kathimegan and Kilvare, and to the parties about Triffeldermot and Athie, then to Kaban Sketlier and neere to Arolkoll in Leinster: where the load fustice Butler, the load John Fitzthomas, the loed Arnold Powe, and o ther the loads and gentlemen of Leinster and Mount Her came to incounter the Bruse: but through oil cord that role among them, they left the field but to the enimes, fir William Dendergalt knight, and Deimond le Grace a right vallant esquier wers flaine there. And on the Scotilh fide fir fergus Anpressan and fir Walter Purreie, with dinerse other that were buried in the church of the friers pread thers at Athie.

After this the Brule in his returne towards Weh burnt the castell of Leie, and so passed forth till he came to Kenlis in Deth. In which meane time Ko ger load Moatimer, trufting to win himfelfe fame if he might overthrow the enimies, called forth fiffene thousand men , and binder fanding that the Scots Che lub mere come to Benlis, made thitherwards, and there wonting incountering with them, was put to the worle, his bilcomfin men(as was supoled) wilfullie thanking from him, byth bus as those that bare him bollow hearts. With the newes of this overtheow, optart the Irith of Pounfter;the Dtolles, Dbzens, Omozes, and with fire and fwoed waffed all from Arclow to Leir. With them coped the load fulfice, and made of them a great flaughter, fourescoze of their heads were fent to the caffell of Dublin.

In time of these troubles and warres in Ireland by the inualion thus of the Scots, certeine Irilh loads, faithfull men and true subjects to the king of England, did not onelie promile to continue in their locall obetfance towards him, being their fourrigns prince; but also for more affurance delivered hosta ges to be kept within the castell of Dublin . The names of which loods that were so contented to ale fure their allegiance were thefe, John Fitzshomas Marant? mas, Thomas Attifohn le Polver baron of Do lopasoffer noille, Arnold le Power, Porice de Rochford, Dat landistat uid de la Roch, and Piles de la Roch. Thele and ioialis. diverse other relited with all their might and maine the injurious attempts of the Scots, although the Scots had drawne to their live the most part of the wild Brith, and no Imall number also of the English Irity, as well loods, as others of meaner calling: lo that the countrie was milerablie afflicted, what by the Scots on the one part, and the Iriff rebels on the other, which rebels not with fanding were overtheowne in dinerte particular conflias. But pet to the further scattering of the English forces in Ires land , there role foure princes of Connagh , but the

Burghes

thiow. Etyching of Connaga Capit.

Burghes and Birminghams discomfited them, and Agral ouer flue cleuen thousand of them bestoe Aspentie. As mongst other were slaine in this battell fedelmicus, Doonbur king of Connagh, Dkellie, and of uerle other great loads and capteins of Connagh and Deth . The lood Richard Birmingham had an elquier that belonged to him called John Hulleis . the by the commandement of his maister went fouth to take view of the dead bodies, and to bying him word whether Dkellie his mortall fo were 10 flaine among the relidue. Huffete comming into the field with one man to turne bp and furueie the bead carcales, was Areight elpied by Dkellie, that late larking in a brake buth thereby, who having bad and profe of Hulleie his valiancie before that time, longed foze to traine him from his capteine a and prefuming now bpon his god oportunitie, dife couered himselfe , not doubting , but either to win him with courteous persuastions, or by force to worke his will of him, and fo comming to him faid: Huffeie, thou feelt that I am at all points armed, & to have mante equire here likewife furnished with ar mour & weapon readie at mine elbow; thou art na ked with thy page, a youngling, a not to be accounted ce of : so that if I loucd the not , and meant to spare the for thine owne fake, I might now do with the ce that I would, and fleather for thy maifters take. But come & serue me bpon this request here made tothe, and I promise the by faint Patrikes Staffe to make thee a load in Connagh, of more possessions than the mailler bath in Ireland. When thele woods 30 might nothing weie him, his owne man (a great fout lubber) began to reprove him of follie, for not consenting to so large an offer, which was affored with an oth, therebpon be ourl gage his foule for

Pow had Hulleie thee enimies, and first therefore turning to his kname, he dispatched him . Pert he Obilia liaine, raught buto Dhebies esquier such a knocke buder the pit of the eare, that downe he came to the ground and there he laie. Thirdlie, he laid to about him, that per ante helpe could be loked for, he had also flatne Dkellie, and percening the elquire to be but allow nied he recouered him, and holpe him bp againe, and after he was somewhat come to himselfe, he for ced him opon a trunchion, to beare his loads head into the high towne before him, who did to; and Hulfeie presented it to Brimingham, who after the circumstances occiared, he dubbed Husseie knight, aduancing him to manie preferments . The fuccel 50 628 of that familie afterwards were barons of Galtrim . Sir Thomas Mandeuill and others in this meane while made offentimes enterprises against the Scots, and fine diverse of them in fundite conflias. But howfoever it chanced, we find recorded In Thomas by Henrie Marleburgh, that either the faid fir Tho mas Pandenill (that thus valiantlie behaued himfelie against the Scots) or some other bearing the fame name, and his brother also called John Wanon their comming fouth of England, by the Scots that were readie there to allaile them.

Thus may we fee, that those loods and knights, which had given pledges for their localtie to the king of England, fought by all wates and meanes how to beat backe the enimies: which they might have done with moze case, if the Irish had not assisted the Scots, and prefuming of their aid, revelled in fundieparts of the countrie; who neverthelesse were oftentimes well chaffiled for their diflotall dealings, as partlie we have touched; although we omit diverse small overthrowes and other particular matters, fith otherwise we thould increase this booke further than our first purposed intent would permit.

Whilest the Scots were thus holden by in Ireland, Campion. that they could not in all things worke their wils, The bing of Robert le Bruse king of Scots came ouer him Scots in felfe, landed at Tragfergus to the aid of his brother, Ireland, those fouldiers most wickedlie entred into durches, spoiling and defacing the same of all such tomes, monuments, plate, copes, & other ornaments with they found, and might late hands opon.

The castell of Cragfergus, after it had beene Cragfergus Articlie belieged a long time, was furrendeed to the believed by Scots, by them that had kept it, till they for want to the Scots. of other bittels were ditten to eate leather, and eight Scots (as some write) which they had taken priso, Mencaten. ners. The lood Thomas, sonne to the earle of Al Ker departed this life. And on the fundaie nert af ter the nativitie of our ladie, the load John Fitztho, thomas the mas decealed at Laragh Brine niere to Patnoth, first earle of and was buried at kildare, in the thurth of the frie kildare deers preachers. This John Kitzthomas, a little be, cealleth. fore his death, was created earle of Bildare; after ahome succeded his sonne Thomas Fitziohn a right wife and prudent personage. The fourteenth of September, Conho: Wac kele, & fine hundzed J. rithmn were flaine by the load William de Burgh, and lood Richard Birmingham in Connagh . Alfo on the mondaie after the fealt of All faints , John Loggan and fir Hugh Bistet sue a great number Scors on throwns. of Scots, among the which were one hundzed with double armors, and two hundred with fingle armozs: fo that of their men of armes there died thee bundzed belide fotemen.

The fifteenth of Pouember chanced a great tem pell of wind and raine, which threw downe manie pell. houses, with the steeple of the Trinitie durch in Dublin, and did much other burt both by land and water . On the fift of December , fir Alane Ste ward that had beene taken puloner in Allfer by John Loggan, and ar John Sandale, was brought to the callell of Dublin . After Canlemas , the Lacies came to Dublin, procured an inquell to be impanelled to inquire of their demeanoz, for that they were accused to have procured the Scots to come into Ireland: but by that inquest they were discharged, and there with take an oth to keepe the kings peace, and to defirote the Scots to the ottermost of their power. In the beginning of Lent, the Scots came in fecret wife unto Slane, with twentie thou fand armed men: and with them came the armie of Alfter, bestroieng all the countrie before them. Mozeouer, on mondate before the feall of S. Patthias the apostle, the earle of Alser lieng in the abbete of S. Parte nere to Dublin, Robert Potinge bam majoz of that citie, with the communaltie of The earle of the same went thither, toke the earle, and put him Wilter appres in palon within the callell of Dublin, flue feuen of bended. his men, and spoiled the abbeic.

The same weeke, Coward Bruse marched towards Dublin, but herewith, turning to the castell of Unoke, he entred the fame, and toke Hugh Tir. Dugh Tirs deuill were both saine Chartlie after at Downe, op. 60 rest the losd thereof, togisher with his wife, and ran, the Scots. formed them for a fumme of monie. The citizens of Dublin burnt all their luburbs for feare of a liege, and made the best purvetance they could to defend their citie, if the Bruse had come to have belieged them: but he turning another waie, went buto the towne of Paas, and was guided thither by the Lacies, contrarie to their oth . From thense he passed buto Triffeloermot, and fo to Baliganam, and to Callan , at length he came to Limerike , and there remained till after Cafter. They of Alfter fent to the load fullice lamentable informations of fuch crus eltie as the enimies practiled in those parts, belee thing him to take some order for their reliefe in that their fo miserable estate. The logo tustice delivered

Socots oners

1317

Ehe kings ftancaro be= liuercd to there of all= ftcr.

to them the kings power with his Candard, there, with under pretente to expell the Scots, they got op in armoz, and ranging through the countrie, bio more were and molest the subleas, than old the frangers . The Scots procedoro and spoiled Cathels , therefoeuer they lighted boon the Butlers lands, they burnt and spoiled them binmercifullie.

In this meane while had the lood tulice and Alos mas fitziohn earle of Bildare, Richard de Clare, and Arnold le Potoze baron of Donnoill leuted an armie of thirtie thouland men, readie to go againt the enimics, and to give them battell, but no god was done. For about the fame time the load Roger Mortimer was cent into Freland as lood inflice, and 1Roger 9902= landing at Poghall, wrote his letters with the lord Butler, 4 to the other capteins, willing them not to fight till he came with fuch power as he had brought ouer with him. Whereof the Brule being warned, retired first tolvards tilldare. But pet affer this he came within foure miles of Trim, where he late in a 20 wood, and lost manic of his men through famine, and fo at length about the beginning of Paie he returned into Alffer.

The lood Comund Butler made great flaughter

of the Triff nere to Triffledermot, and likewise at

Balithan he had a good hand of Dmozch, and flue manie of his men . The load Portimer pacified the

displeasure and variance betwirt Richard earle of

Willer, and the nobles that had put the faid earle bn:

fing him of certeme riots committed to the prefudice

and loffe of the kings fubicats, whereby the Scots in.

creased in Arength and courage, whose spoiling of

the countrie canfed fuch hoartble fcarfitie in Alfter,

that the foldious which the yeare before abused the

kings authoritie, to purueie themsclues of over fine

diet, sursetted with flesh and Aqua vita all the Lent

long, profied and pilled infatiablie therefoener thep

came without need, and without regard of the pope

people now living in Cauerie binder the Bzule, Car.

ued for hunger , having firft experienced manie la-

mentable thiffs, even to the cating of dead careal

people, whose anclie proussion they denoured. These 40

Blanghter of Briffmen.

ti ner inftice of Ireland.

The earle of Milfter Deliue= red out of pri=

Scarfitte of nittels in Milter.

The earle of Mifter Deliuc=

The earle of Allter was delivered by maine. prise and upon his oth, by the which he undertwhe nes uer to læke renenge of his apprehention otherwise than by order of law, and so had daic given him buto the feath of the nativitie of faint John baptiff: but he kept not his baie, thether for that he milirufted to 50 worthie fame, namelie fir Richard Tute, fir Piles Boots fano in triall of his caule, or through some other rea, Great dearth. Conable let, Jeannot tell . A great dearth this yere affliced the Irith people : for a measure of theat called a chronicke was fold at soure and twentie hillings, & a chronecke of otes at firtæne hillings. and all other vittels likewise were sold according to the same rate; for all the whole countrie was soze was fed by the Scots and them of Allter, infomuch that no small number of people perished through famine.

About the feat of Pentecost the logo instice Dogs 60 timer toke his toznie towards Drogheda, and fent to the Lacies, commanding them to come onto him, but they refused to to do. Wher bon he fent fir Bugh Crofts buto them, to talke with them about some a. Crofts flaine, græment of peace: but they flue the mellenger, for whome great lamentation was made, for that he was reputed a knowne to be a right worthie knight. The lord inffice fore offended herewith, gathereth an armie, & goeth against the Lacies, whome he chased out of Connagh, so that Hugh Lacie withorew to Allter, there isined himfelfe with Coward Brufe. Thereupon, on the thursdate next before the feast of faint Margaret, the faid Hugh Lacie and also Walter Lacie were proclamed traitors. This yeare pal-

fed perie troublesome wato the whole realme of Ire, land, as well through flaughter betwirt the parties entimies one to another, as by dearth and other mil fortunes. Dugh Canon the kings inflice of his bench was flaine by Andzew Birmingham betwirt the towne of Paas and callell Parten. Also in the Bighon ton the towne of Paas and cauch species were publif ferrate arch feast of the purification, the popes bulles were publif ferrate arch bulley of Da. shed, thereby Alexander Bignoz was consecrated blin. archbishop of Dublin. About the same time was great flaughter made of Irifmen, through a quari rell betwirt two great loads in Connagh : fo that there vied in fight to the number of foure thousand

men on both parties. After Galler Malter Idep treasuroz of Ireland water In was fent ouer into that realme, tho brought let treasuroje ters to the load Mostimer, commanding him tore, Irland turne into England buto the king: which he did, and departing forth of Ireland, remained indebted to the citizens of Dublin for his provision of vittels in the fumme of a thousand pounds, wherof he paid not one farthing, fo that manie a bitter curffe he carried with him to the fea, leaving William archbishop of Cathell lozo chancelloz governoz of the lano in his place: and so by this meane was the said archbishop both chancellog and fuffice, and fo continued till the feaft of faint Dichaell. At what time Alexander Big noz archbichop of Dublin arrived at Poghall, being conflituted load inflice, and came to Dublin on faint Denile daie, being the seauenth of Daober . But ber fafe lieping within the castell of Dublin, accu 30 here is to be remembred, that a little before the de Chelop & parture of the load Moatimer fourth of Ireland, to characte init, the fift of Paie, the lood Richard de Clare with Clare fann, foure knights, fir Penrie Capell, fir Thomas de Paas, fir James Caunton, and fir John Caunton; also Adam Apilgard and others (to the number of foure (coze persons) were flaine by Dbien and Pac Arthie. It was fato that the enimies in despite caufed the load Michards bodie to be cut in pieces, lo to fatilfte their malicious fomachs; but the fame pee, ces were yet afterwards buried in the church of the friers minors at Limerike. Also before the low spor timers returne into England, John Lacie was had forth of the castell of Dublin, and carried to Arim, where he was arreigned and adjudged to be preffed to beath, and so he died in passon.

But now to returne unto the dwings in time of Thelop Bignors gouernnenent . Immediatlie bpon bis ar, Bitmingha Bignozs government. Immediate opinios and other rivail, the lood John Birmingham being generall of captings the field, and having with himdinerlecapteins of Merdon, fir Hugh Trippetton, fir Perbert Sutton, fir John Cufacke, fir Comund Birmingham, fir William Birmingham, Walter Birmingham the primat of Armagh , fir Walter de la Pulle, and John Daupas led forth the kings power, to the num, ber of one thousand these hundred foure and twentie able men against Coward Bruse, who being accompanted with the lood Philip Mowbrate, the lood Wal ter de Soules, the lood Alaine Steward, with his thie biethien, fir Malter, and fir Bugh, fir Kobert, and fir Aimerie Lacies, and others, was incamped not past two miles from Dundalke with the thou fand men, there abiding the Englishmen, to fight with them if they came forward: which they did with all convenient speed, being as deficous to give bat tell as the Scots were to receive it.

The primat of Armagh personallie accompant, Choping eng the English power, & blesting their enterprise, of Amegic gave them such comfortable erhortation, as he thought ferued the time yer they began to incount Chebutal ter. And herewith buckling togisher, at length the Schedulie and cholie were danquished, and five should be desired the surface of them state, togisher with their capteins course them. Coward Brule . Paupas that pressed into the Brate throng

The Lacies renolt to the ತಿಂಚ⊈.

thing to incounter with Brule hand to hand. mas found in the fearth veat aloft byon the flaine bodie of Bruse. The victorie thus obteined vpon faint Calirtus daie, made an end of the Scotilb hingdome in Areland, e loed Birmingham fending the head of Beule into England, og as Marlburrow hath, being the medenger himfelfe, prefented it to hing Coward, who in recompense gaue to him and Birmingham his heires males the earledome of Louth, and the baronic of Ardich and Athenrie to him and his heirs 1 on Richard generall for euer. Shortlie after fir Kichard de Clare with foure other knights of name, and manie other men of warre were flaine in Thomond. The load Roger Postimer came againe into Ireland to gouerne as losd inflice there now the fecond time, and the townes of Athelfell and Plebs were burned by the loed fittsthomas brother to the loed Paurice fits. thomas . And about this feafon the bridge of Bilco. lin was bufloed by Paurice Jakis.

In the yeare following, to wit, one thousand 20 the hundred and twentie, which was the source enth yeare of king Cowards reigne, Thomas Fitziohn earle of Mildare was made lood tuffice of Ireland. Here is to be remembred, that about this time also Alexander Bignoz archbilhop of Dublin Cent to pope John the two and twentith, for a privilege to initi tute an univerlitie within the citie of Dublin, and his lute twhe effect: and the first three doctors of divinitic did the faid archbishop himselfe creat, William Haroitie a frier preacher, Henrie Cogie a frier mis 3 noz, and frier Comund Bernerden; and belide thefe one doctor of canonlaw, to wit, Richard archdeacon of faint Patrikes that was chancellog of the same univerlitie, tho kept their terms and commences ments folemnlie: neither was this butuerlitie at a. nie time fince diffranchiled, but onlie through change of times discontinued, and now since the dissoluting of monasteries biterlie decaied.

A motion was made (as Campion hath noted) in aparlement holden there, thilet fir Benrie Sio, 40 Burgh earle of Alfrer departed this life. neiewas the quænes lieutenant, to have it againe ereacd, by waie of contributions to be late togither: the fato fir Henrie offering twentie pounds lands, and an hundred pounds in monie. Other there were allo, that according to their abilities and benotions followed with their offers. The name was deutled; A worthie plantation of Plantagenet & Bullogne. But while they disputed of a convenient place for it, and of other circumstances, they let fall the prin-

In the yeare one thousand the hundred twentie and one, there was a great flaughter made of the Oconhurs at Balibagan, by the English of Leinffer and Deth. And John Birmingham earle of Louth was lood inflice of Ireland. Anto this man, wiles he was lood inflice, the king woote, comman ding him to be with him at Carleill in the octaves of the Trinitie, in the fift onth yeare of his reigne, with the hundred men of armes, one thouland hobellars, and fir thousand fotmen, ech of them armed with an 60 aketon, a fallet, and gloves of maill, which number was to be leufed in that land: befides their hundred men of armes which the earle of Allter was appointed to serve within that sournie, which the king at that time intended to make against the Scots. The date of the letter was the third of Appill. In the peare one thousand thie hundred twentie and two, diverse nobles in Ireland departed this life, as the lood Richard Birmingham, the lood Comund Butler, and the lood Ahomas Perfinall. Poseover, the loed Andrew Birmingham, and fir Kichard de la Lond were flaine by Dnolan. In the eighteenth yeere of king Coward the fecond his reigne, the loed John Darcie came into Trol and to be loed fulfice. and the Parcie came into Areland to be lozd inflice, and the

kings lieutenant there. In these bates lived in the Thelable #= Diocelle of Dlogie the ladie Alice Bettle, whome the lice Bettle acsenfelden of Cole of logice: bilhop alcited to purge hir felfe of the fame of in ric. chantment and witchcraft imposed buto hir, and to one Wetronill and Balil hir complices. She was charged to have nightlie conference with a spirit called Robin Artiston, to whome the facrificed in the high waie nine red cocks, and nine peacocks eies. Also that the Swept the Creets of Bilkennie betwene compleine and twilight, raking all the filth towards the dozes of hir fonne Milliam Dutlaw, murmu: ring & muttering fecretlie with hir felfe thefe wozds:

To the house of William my sonne, Hie all the wealth of Kilkennie towne.

At the first conviction they absured 4 did penance, but Choatlie after they were found in relaple, 4 then was Pentrouill burnt at Bilkennie, the other twaine inight not be heard of . She at the houre of hir death acculed the laid William as privile to their lorceries, whome the bilhop held in durance nine weeks, forbidding his keepers to eat or to drinke with him, or to speake to him moze than once in the daie. But at length, thorough the lute and instance of Arnold le Powe then fenefchall of Bilkennie, he was beliuce red, and after corrupted with bribes the fenefchall to perfecute the bilhop; to that he thrust him into prison for the moneths. In rilling the closet of the ladie, they found a wafer of facramentall bread, having the divels name Camped thereon in Cheed of Jelus Chaiff, and a pipe of ointment, wherewith the great fed a ffaffe, byon the which the ambled and gallomed thozough thicke and thin, then and in that maner the litted. This butinette about thefe witches troubled all the fate of Ireland, the more; for that the ladie was supported by certeine of the nobilitie, and lafflie conneied ouer into England, fince with time it could never be understood what became of hir. In the peare one thousand thee hundred twentie and fir. claff of king Cowards the feconds reigne, Kichard

Edward the third.

Aneth was the bulinesse a bout the witches at an end, when it was lignified, that a gentleman of the familie of the Dtolles in Leinster, na denied obstinatelie the incar nation of our fauloz, the trinitie of persons in the b. nitie of the Godhead, the refurrection of the flesh; as for the holie scripture, he said it was but a fable: the virgin Parie he affirmed to be a from an of dif Boam Duffe folute life, and the apostolike feerronious. For fuch an heretike. affertions he was burnt in Hogging græne belide Dublin. About the same time, Fitzarke Pacmozch, and fir Henrie Traherne were taken pisoners. In the yeare following, the logo Thomas Fitziohn erle of Kildare, and the lord Arnold Powe & William earle of Alffer were fent over into Freland, & Roger Dutlaw prior of faint Johns of Jerufalem in Ireland , commonlie called the paios of Bilmainan, was made lood inflice. This man by reason of bart The prior of ance that chanced to rife betwirt the Giraldins , the Rilmainan Butlers, and Birminghams, on the one lide; and the lord inflice. Powes & Burghs on the other, for terming the earle of kilvare a rimer, to pacific the parties called a parlement, wherein he himselse was saine to make his purgation of a flander impoled to him, as fulpeded of herefte.

The bilhop of Miorie had given an information Power accus against Arnold le Poteze, convented & convicted in fedor berefic.

med Adam Duffe, possessed by some wicked spirit of erroz,

his

The earle of

his confifratie of certaine hereticall opinions, but bis caufe the beginning of Polus acculation converned the fullices kinfman, and the bilhop was millruffed to profecute his owne wrong, and the person of the man rather than the fault : a date was limited for the tuffifieng of the bill, the partie being apprehend ded and respited therebuto. This dealing the bithop (who durif not firre out of Bilkennie to profecute his acculation) was reputed parciall: and when by meanes hereof the matter hanged in fulpente, be 10 infance the fate prior as an abbettor and fauourer of Arnolos herefie. The prior fubmitted himfelfe to the triall, and thereupon were fenerall proclamas tions made in court, that it thoulo be lawfull to anie man to come into the court, and to inferre, accule, and declare what eutdence he could, against the load fuffice: but none came. Then palled a decree by the councell, commanding all bilhops, abbats, priors, and the maiors of Dublin, Corke, Limerike, Wiaferford, and Doghedagh, the thirifs, knights, & fer 20 Marlburtow affirmeth that he came thither to beare nelchals of everte thire, to appeare at Dublin. From amongst all these, they appointed fir inquisitors, which examining the bilhops and other persons a forefato fingularlie one by one, found that with an butuerfall confent they depoted for the prior, aftirming that (to their fudgements)he was a zelous and a faithfull child of the catholike church. In the meane time, Arnold le Powe the prisoner deceased in the cattell, a bicaufe he frod bupurged, long he late but buried.

The earle of Louth flaine.

In the yeare one thousand the bundeed twentie and nine, John de Birmingham earle of Louth, and his brother Peter, with many other of that furname, and Kichard Talbot of Malabive were flaine on Whitson even at Balibragan by men of the countrie. Also the losd Thomas Butler, and diverse other Butter flaine. noblemen were flaine by Dac Bogoghdan & other Briffmen nære to Molinger. For the Friff as well in Leinster as in Weth made insurrections in that featon, and to like wife of they in Pounter under 40 and Pac Arthie in Pounter, by the English of that the leading of Dbzen, whom William earle of Alfer and James earle of Dymond banquithed. So outragious were the Leinster Irish , that in one thurth they burnt foure score innocent foules, alking no more but the life of their priest then at malle, inhome they not with francing ficked with their laue, ling, fourned the hoff, and wafted all with fire : netther forced they of the popes interdiction, nor anie ec. clesiasticall censures denounced against them (matters of no small confideration among them namelie in those dates) but maliciousie perseuered in the course of their furious rage, till the citizens of Werford formethat tamed them, and flue foure hundred of them in one fkirmith, the rest stieng were all drenthed in the water of Slane. In the yeare one thou fand these hundled and thirtie, the earle of Aliter with a great armie made a fournie against Dbzen, and the prior of Bilmainan lord inffice put Maurice Fitzthomas earle of Defmond in prison in the mare loed Hugh Lacie returned into Ireland, and obtei. ned the kings peace and fauour.

In the yeare one thouland their hundred thirtie and one, the earle of Alfter paffed over into Encland, and great flaughter was made byon the Brith in Dkenilie. Also the castell of Arclo was taken by the Irilhmen, and great flaughter made of the Eng. lift in the Cowlagh by Otothell and others. Also the lozd Anthonie Lucie was fent ouer lozd tuffice into Ireland, and great flaughter was made of the Irish at Thurlis by the knights of the countrie, fat Fin nath in Deth, there were manie of them Caine by the English; but pet was the castell of Fernis taken and burnt by the Irify. On the feat daie of the ab

fumption of our ladie, while talleth on the fiff while of August , Paurice Kitzthomas carle of Definond Checaled was appehended at Limerike by the lood infice, Delined and fent onto the callell of Dublin . However, the public . lord fuffice toke fir William Birmingham at Clo. mell by a wile, whileft he was fiche in his bed, a fent him (togither with his fonne Walter Birmingham) buto the castell of Dublin, the thirtith of Aprill. In the peare one thouland the hundred thirtie and two william Bu the fare fie William was hanged at Dublin, but minghange Walter was velinered by reason he was within or cutch bers. 1860

Campion following such notes as he hath seene, Campion witeth that the death of this William Birming. ham chanced in time of the government of will liam Dutlaw polos of Bilmainan, being lieutenant buto John lood Darcie, that was made lood inflice (as the Tato Campion hath noted) in the yeare one thouland thee hundred twentie and nine. Although that office, in the peare one thousand the hundred thirtie and tivo, after the load Lucie was discharged, as hereafter thall be recited. But whenfoeuer, or buder whome loeuer Birmingham was erecuted, he was accounted an ob knight, and fuch a one as for his valiancie, his match was not lightlie to be anie there found. The castell of Clonmoze was taken the fame yeare by the Englishmen, and the castell of Bonrath was bettroto by the Irith of Thomond. Ale fo Benrie de Mandeuill was taken and fent pillo ner to be fafelie kept in Dublin. Likewife Malter Burgh with two of his bretheren were taken in Connach by the earle of Allter, and fent to the car ffell of Porburgh.

This peare the lord Antonie Lucie was blichar. ged of his rome by the king, and so returned with his wife thildren into England, and the lood John Che lood Darcie was fent over lood instice in Lucies place, Darchud and areat flaughter was made bpon Been Dbien, countrie. This John Barcie (as thould appeare by gifts bestowed byon him by the king) was in fingu lar fauour with him. Among tother things which he had of the kings gift, we find that he had the manois of Louth, and Baliogarte, and other lands in Ires The enter land which belonged to the earle of Ew. And for that of Ew. the faid earle was a Frenchman, and toke part with Philip de Malois the kings enimie, they were feized into the kings hand. The earle of Delmond point furties was let at libertie, and by the parle. ment holden at Dublin in this yeare 1333, was fent ouer into England buto the king; and William erls of Miffera young gentleman of twentie yeares of age, in going towards knockfergus the featenth of June, was flaine nere to the fords in Alffer, by his owne people, but his wife and daughter escaped into England : and the daughter was after maried onto the load Lionell the kings sonne . She deceased afterwards at Dublin, and left a daughter behind Challete, out of the which he freile escaped, and the 60 bir that was his heire, marted to Roger Postimer earle of March, and lord of Arim.

This murther was procured by Robert Fitz martine Pandeuill, tho was the first that prelumed to give to the earle anie wound . To revenge the death of this earle of Alfter (flatne as yee have heard befine & processes befide knockfergus) the lood fuffice Parcie with a great power went into Alfter, to purfue those that through Pandeuils scottious tumults had so traito roullie murthered their lozd. At his letting forward, the laid inflice Darcie appointed fir Thomas Burgh treasuroz, to gouerne as lieutenant to him in his absence. Then the lood suffice had punished the trafe The look toes in Alfer, he paffed ouer into Scotland, there to the most make warre against the Scots that were enimies some

Anthonic Lu= cie lozd ius Bice.

1330

The prior of

1331

logd fuffice.

at that present to the king of England, and on the at mar perfe faint Pargaret , great flanghter was made of the Scots by the Irishmen: and so what by the king in one part, and the lood fustice of Ireland manother, Scotland was in maner wolle conque red, and Coward Balioll was established king of Scotland. The lozd tuffice might haue pollelled the Fles if they had beene worth the keeping: into the which Mes, ercept the faid Parcie and the earle of Suffer late lieutenant of Ireland, no governor at 10 anie time yet aduentured . At Darcies comming backe into Freland, and exercifing the office of load fullice, he beliuered Walter Birmingham out of the castell of Dublin.

In the yeare 13 3 6, and tenth of Coward the thirds reigne,on S. Laurence Date , the Frift of Connagh were discomfited and put to flight by the English men of the countrie there, with the loffe of one Eng. liftman, and ten thousand of the enimies. The lost John Charleton baron came into Freland to be logo 20 inflice, and with him his brother Thomas bishop of Pereford lord chancellor, and John Rice lord freaturozzano tivo hundzed Wielihmen fouldiozs. The bithinhop of hop was ordeined afterward lord tuffice, in whose hindul iop time all the Irith of Ireland were at defiance with the Englith, and Chortlie brought againe into quiet by the earles of littoare and Delmond . The lood 134° John Darcie by the kings letters patents was (dus ring life)ordeined lord inflice of Ireland, in the fourwhich king abused by entil counsell and finister info; mers, called in boder his fignet rotall, the franchiles, liberties and grants , ichatfoeuer had beene deuifed, made and ratified to the realme of Ireland, and to enerie each person thereof . This renoking of liber. ties was displeasantlie taken. The English of birth and the English of blood falling at words, were divided into factions about it, for which contention the Brith Will waited, so as the realme was even boon the point to give over all, and to rebell. For redrelle 40 thereof, the lood tuffice called a parlement at Dus blin, to the which the nobles refuled to come, and in quiet wife affembled themfelues togither at Aflken. nie, where they with the commons agreed byon certeine questions to be bemanded of the king by wate of luplication, lignifieng in the fame partile their grafes. Which questions were in effect as followeth.

How a realme of warre might be gouerned 1 by one both unskilfull and unable in all warlike fer, 50

2 How an officer bnder the hing, that entered berie pore, might in one yeare grow to more ercel. five wealth, than men of great patrimonie and live. lihod in manie veares?

How it chanced, that fifth they were all called loads of their owne, that the fourreigne load of them all was not a pennie the rither for them?

The cheefe of them that thus fæmed to repine with the prefent government, was Thomas Fitz 60 maurice earle of Delmond, through whole mainter nance and bearing out of the matter, the countrie was in great trouble; so as it had not lightlie beene fiene, that fuch contrarietie in minds and diliking had appeared amongst those of the English race, in that realme at anie time before. Herewith Kafe Uffort was fent over loss inflice, the bringing his wife with him, the counteste of Alster arrived about the thirteenth of Julie. This man was berie rigo, rous, and through perfuation (as was faid) of his wife, he was more extreame and couetous than of Execunting ther wife he would have beine, a matter not to be forgotten. For if this ladie had bene as readie to mour hir hulband to have thewed himfelfe gentle

and mild in his governement, as the was bent to pricke him forward buto tharpe dealings and rigo. rous procedings the had bene now afwell reported of as the is infamed by their pens that have regiffred the dwings of those times. But to the purpose. This Uffort lord inflice, in paine of forfeiture of all his lands, commanded the earle of Delmond to Delmond. make his personall appearance at a parlement, which he called to be holden at Dublin, there to begin the feuenth of June. And bicause the earle refufed to come acording to the fummons, he raised the kings fandard, and with an armie marched into Mounter, and there leized the earles pottettions into the kings hands, letting them forth to farme for an annuall rent bnto other persons.

And whilest he yet remained in Mounter, be des utled wates how to have the earle of Delmond ap. prehended: which being brought to passe, he afters ward delivered him opon mainpaile of thefe luerties those names infue . William de Burgh earle of Suerties fen Miller, James Butler earle of Dymond, Richard the carle of Que, Picholas Merdon, Pozice Rochford, Cultace le Powe, Gerald de Rochfoed, John Kitzrobert Powe Robert Barrie, Paurice Fitzgiralo, John Melledete , Malter le Fant, Richard Rokellete, Benrie Traherne, Roger Powie, John Lenfant, Roger Powze, Patthew Fitzhenrie, Richard Walleis, Comund Burgh fonne to the earle of Als fer, anights : Dauld Barrie, William Fitzgiralo, tenth yeare of king Coward the thirds reigne, 30 Foulke de Fraxinus, Robert Fitzmaurice, Henrie Fitzberkleie, John Fitzgeorge de Roch , Thomas de Læs de Burgh. These (as ye have heard) were bound for the earle. And bicause he made default, the loed fuffice verelie toke the advantage of the bond as

gainst the mainpernours, foure of them onelie er, cepted, the two earles and two knights.

The load inffice is charged with first dealing by atfort cats writers in this behalfe, for that the fame persons had spoken ob alliffed him in his warres against Delmond. But trulte if we chall confider the matter with indiffes rencie, he did no more than law and reason required. For if everie fuertie bpon forfeiture of his bond Gould be forborne, that otherwise doth his duette, wat care would men have either to procure fuerties 02 to become suerties themselves . But such is the affection of writers, speciallie when they have conceived anie milithing towards those of whome they take occasion to speake, so as manie a worthie man hath beene defamed, and with flander greatlie defa. ced in things therein he rather hath deferued lingu. lar commendation. But how loever this matter was handled touching the earle of Delmond , bpon the Jote concets beath of the load fulfice, which infued the next yeare, ned for the bonfiers were made , and great top thewed through beath of the bonfiers were made, and great toy agree the day for indice all the relime of Ireland. His ladie verelie (as hould affort ameare) was but a miferable woman, procuring him to ertortion and betberie. Puth he abringed the prerogatives of the church, and was to hated, that euen in the fight of the countrie he was robbed without refcue by Pac Cartie, notwithflanding be gathered power, and dispersed those rebels of Wister. Robert Darcie was ordeined fuffice by the councell till the kings letters came to fir John Fitzmaurice, Robert Dars tho released fitzthomas earle of Bilbare left in on cie lozo inflice rance by Affort at his death. Fitzmaurice continue John Fitzed not long, but was discharged, and the load Wals mounte inflice. ter Birminghamelenco to fucced in that rome, tho L. Birminge procured a fafe conduct for Desmond to plead his hamiutice, cause before the king, by whom he was liberallie in, treated, and allowed towards his expenses there twentie Hillings a day at the princes charge. In conliveration of which courteffe the wed to his kiniman, the earle of littoare, accompanied with diverte loads, anights, and cholen horftemen, ferued the king at Calis.

The earle of

Irticles of

cuctions.

1337 Air John Charleton

nåice.

72

r 3 4 7 Record. Tur.

T 3 4 8 The prior of kalmainan. 2Baron €a= rem iufrice. Dir Thomas Rokef= bte tuffice . Record. Tur.

1349

John de S. Daule archhilhop of Dublin.

1350 Kemwzike Shereinan.

Bir Robert 🖒 anage.

Calis, a fowne thought impregnable, 4 returned ab ter the winning thereof in great pompe and follitie.

Wile find that Thomas Berkeleie, and Keinold loed Cobham, and fir Bosice Berkleie became mainpernours for the law earle of Delmond, that he should come into England, and abide such triall as the law would award. John Archer prior of Bil. mainan was substituted lieutenant to the lood in Aice. To whom lucceded Baron Carew, and after Carew followed fir Thomas Rokelbie knight, buto 10 whom was alligned aboue his ordinarie retinue of twentie men of armes, a supplie of ten men of armes, and twentie archers on horfebacke, fo long as it thould be thought needfull. Great mortalitie chanced this yeare, as in other parts of the woild, fo especialite in places about the seacoasts of England and Ireland. In the yeare following departed this life Alexander Bignoz archbishop of Dublin. And the same yeare was John oc saint Paule consecrated archbithop of that fee. This peare decealed them, 20 withe Shereman fomtime mator of Dublin, a great benefactor to everie thurth and religious house within twentie miles round about the citie. Dis legacies to the poze and others, befive his liberalitie thewed in his life time, amounted to the thousand marks.

In this feafon divelled in Alfter a welthic knight one fir Robert Sauage, tho the rather topielerue his owne, began to wall and fortific his manor houfes with cattels and piles against the Irish enimie, erhozting his heire Benrie Sauage to amlie that 30 worke to beneficiall for himfelte this posteritie. Far ther (quoth poing Sauage) I remember the proverbe Better a castell of bones than of stones. Where firength a courage of valiant men are preff to belpe bs, never will 3 (by the grace of God) cumber my felfe with dead walles. Py fort thall be where focuer poing blouds be firring, & there I find rome to fight. The father in a fume let lie the building, and for Aware to go anie further forward in it. But pet the want therof and such like hath beine the decate as 40 well of the Savages, as of all the Englith gentle men in Alfer: as the lacke also of walled townes is one of the principall occasions of the rude wildnelle in other parts of Ireland.

This Sauage, having prepared an armie againft the Irish, allowed to cuerie souldier before they thould buckle with the entimie, a mightie draught of Aqua vita, wine, or old ale, and killed in profition for their returne, befe, benison, and foldle great plentie : which doings diverse of his capteins millihed, 50 bicause they considered the successe of warre to be uncerteine, and therefore estemed it better policie to potion the cates, or to do them awaie, than to kæpethe fame, and hamilie to fed a foat of roges withfuch princelie fod, if ought thould happen to themselves in this adventure of to fein against fo comanie. Derat smiled the gentleman and faio, Tufh ec pe are to full of enuie : this world is but an in to the which pe have no speciall interest, but are onclie tec nants at will of the Loop. If it please him to come 60 ce mand be from it as it were from our longing, and to fet other god fellowes in our comes, what hurt Chall it be for os to leave them force meat for their co superse Let them hardle win it a weare it. If they cc enter our dwellings, god maner would no leffe but co to welcome them with find fare as the countrie biese deth, and with all my heart much god may it do ce them. Potwithstanding I presume to far boon your co moble courages, that verclie my mind giveth me we thall returne at night, a banket our felues with our

owne flore. And fo did, having flain 3000 Triffmen. In the years 1 3 5 5 deceased Paurice Fitztho. mas earle of Defmond lood infice of Ireland, who had that office of the kings grant for terms of life.

Affer him succeded in that rame Momas de Ro lord when ued in trene cups, ar swered: These home lie cups a which kn diffes pate trulie for that they conteine: I hadra, laing, ther dainke out of treene cups a paie gold and filmer, ther danke out of gold a make wooden paiment. Diffining Man opinios our de Angel bariance betwirt Richard between the Rafe primat of Armagh, & foure orders of begging primat ef friers, which ended at length by the deaths of the faid armagh, Kichard Rafe, and Richard Kilminton, in the years the fource. 1 3 60: Kafe deceasing in the popes court, and fall, Charles minton in England. Almerike de S. Amand, John waites, 02(as other haue) James Butler carle of Damond, and Daurice fitzthomas earle of Hildare, were ap pointed losd tuffices of Ireland by turnes . In Dy Record In. monds time, and in the thee and twentith years of king Coward the thirds reigne, order was taken that the Irith loods thould remaine and divell in their houses on the marches, to defend the subjects from inualions of enimies. And further, proclamation went forth, that no mere Irifh borne Choulo be made maioz, bailiffe, porter, officer, or miniffer in anie towne or place within the English dominions: noz that anie archbishop, abbat, prioz, or anie other being of the kings allegiance, bpon forfeiture of all that he might forfeit, should advance anie that was mere Irith borne to the rome of a canon, or to have anie other ecclefiafficall benefice that late among

the English lubieas. To Paurice Thomas earle of Bildare, ithen he The carled was ordefred lord fulfice, the kings letters alligned Bilbare lon in yearelie fæ for his office 500 pourros, with condition, that the faid governour should find twentie great bootles to ferue in the field, he himfelfe to be the twentith man in going against the enimie: which allowance and conditions in those daies (fo farre as Lionell bots I can geffe (thould feeme to be ordinarie to the office. Lionell dake of Clarence sonne to king Coward the third, came ouer into Ireland to be lood inflice there, and was in right of his wife earle of Allter. De published an indibition to all of the Trish birth not once to approch his armie, nor to be in anie wife imploied in feruice of the wars. De vanquished De been, but pet sudenlie (no man under standing bow) an hundred of his fouldiers were wanting as they late in garrifon, the loffe of whom was thought to be occasioned by that displeasant decree afore reheard fed. Where byon he toke better applie, and received the Irill into like fauour, as other lieutenants had them in before that prefent, thewing a tender love towards them all, and fo ever after prospered in his affaires. De created diverle knights, as Preffen, now knowne by the name of the familie of Gozo maniton, Holiewoo, Talbot, Cufac, de la Hide, Patrike, Robert and John de Frarinis: all these being gentlemen of worthie fame in chivalrie. The

furnifying that towne five hundred pounds. In the yeare 1 3 6 2 John de S. Paule archiffique of Dublin departed this life the fift ides of Sep tember. And in the yeare following was Thomas Minot confecrated archbiftop of that place. Girald Che lopo Kitzmaurice earle of Defmond was appointed load windlog land fulfice, butil the comming of the load Windloz, the tenant. first lieutenant in Treland, tho came over in the peare 1369. This Windloze called a parlement at Billicente, in the which was granted to the king a Record and Configuration of the configurat subsidie of thee thousand pounds to be lensed of the Alubian. people, subjects to the king in that land. And in an other parlement holoen by him at Balidoill they granted two thousand rounds to be likewise lent ed. Which faid fums were granted of the mare and fre god wils of the nobles and communaltie of the

ercheker he remoued to Catherlagh, theffowed in

land, towards the maintenance of the kings erpenles in his warres. Pet the king in the three and for tith peare of his reigne, directing his letters but othe faid lord Windloz, comanded him to furceale from leuring the forefato monte, although afterwards he commanded againe that the arrerages Chould be les vied and paid to his lieutenant the faid Mindloz.

The third pelitience in Ireland made awaie a great number of people. In the yeare 1370 the load Berald fitymozice earle of Belmond, and the load to John Kitzrichard, and the load John Kitzsohn, and manie other noble men were flaine by Digen, and Mac Conmard of Thomand in the moneth of Julie. In the yeare 1372 fir Kichard Alhton was fent by ficherd over to be lozed fustice in Ireland. In the yeare following great warre was raifed betwirt the Eng. lift of Peth, and Offeroll, in the which manie byon both fides were flaine. In Paie, the load John Bul. feie baron of Baltrim, John Fitzrichard Miriffe of Beth, and William Dalton were Claine in Kina. 20 leigh. In the yeare 1 3 7 5 Momas archbithop of Dublin departed this life, and the fame yeare was Robert de Wikeford confecrated archbifhop there

Richard the second.

PSIDmund Boztimer earle of Parch & Allier was made the kings lioutenants the kings lieutenant in Fredam. In the yeare 1383 a great mostalitie reigned in 30 that countrie This was a second that countrie. This was cal-led the fourth pelfilence. In

The pare 1385 Dublin brioge fell. Belide Comund Portimer earle of Parch, Campion affirmeth, that in this Kichard the leconds daies, there are tuffices and lieutenants of Freland speciallie recorded; Roger Portimer sonne to the faid Comund, Ihilip Courtneie the kings couline, James earle of Damond, and Robert Mere earle of tho was also created duke of Ireland by parlement, and was credited with the whole dominion of the realme by grant for tearme of life, without pateng anie thing therefore, patting all writs, and placing all officers, as chancelloz, treaturoz, chiefe tuffice, admerall, his owne lieutenant, and other inferiour tharges under his owne Teste. In the yeare 1390, Robert de Mikeford archbithop of Dublin departed this life, and the same yeare was Robert Waldebie translated onto the archbishop of Dublin an 50 Augustine frier.

In the yeare 1294, king Kichard loze afflicted and anglichard troubled in mind with forcow for the decease of his wife quene Anne, that departed this life at Whit, funtide last past, not able without teares to behold his palaces and chambers of estate, that represented buto him the folace past, a boubled his forrow, lought fome occasion of businesse: and now about Michael. mas palled over into Ireland, where diverse loods and princes of Alifer renewed their homages, eplas 60 cing Roger Portimer erle of Parchhis lieutenant, returned about Showetide. In the yeare 1397, Iti thard de Posthalis archbithop of Dublin departed this life, that was the same yeare from another ses remoued thither: he was a frier of the order of the Carmelites.

The same yeare Thomas de Craulie was chosen and confecrated archbifhop of Dublin. Also fir Tho. mas de Burgh , and fir Walter de Birmingham, Que fir hundzed Frishmen, with their capteine Mac. downe. Poseover, Comund earle of Parchlosd des putie of Ireland, with the aid of the erle of Demond, walted the countrie of an Irith load called Dbzen, and at the winning of his chiefe house he made see

uen knights, to wit, ar Chillogier Phelion, fir John Bedlow, fir Comund Londozes, fir John Lonbozes, fir Militam Pingent, Malter de la Bibe, and Robert Cavell. But after this it chanced, that on the Alcention daie, certeine Trilbmen flue fortie Eng. liffmen: and among them these were accounted as principall, John fitzwilliams, Thomas Calbot, and Thomas Cambrie. But Mortlie after Roger Portis mer earle of Parch and Alffer the kings lieutenant was flaine, with dinerfe other, by Dbzen and other Frishmen of Leinster at Benlis. Then was koger Koger Grete Greie elected Lord fustice of Ireland.

The same yeare on the feat date of faint Marke the pope, the duke of Sourceie landed in Ireland, and with him came fir Thomas Traulie the archbishop of Dublin. Bing Kichard informed of the burulie parts and rebellious flurres of the Irilhmen, min. King Richard bed to appeale the fame, and speciallie to revenge the posseth the see beath of the earle of Warch : therebyon with a nar conditine onie of two hundred fails he palled ouer into Ireland, ner into Ireland, and landed at Materford on a sundaie, bring the land. morrow after faint Petronilla the virgins day. The fridaie after his arrivall at Food in Kenlis within the towne of kildars, there were flaine two hundred Irithmen by Jenicho de Artois a Galcoigne, and fuch Englishmen as he had with him: and the mozrow after, the citizens of Dublin brake into the countrie of Dbzen, Que thirtie & thie of the enimies, and toke fourescore men with chilozen.

The fourth kalends of Julie, king Kichard came The king to Dublin, and remained there for a time; during the commech to which diverle loads and princes of the countrie came Dublin. in and submitted themselves buto him, by whome they were courteoullie bled, and trained to honoura, ble demeanoz and civilitie, as much as the Chortnes & more of time would permit, as in the English historie you England. mate find let footh moze at large. Whilest king Mi thard thus laie in Dublin to reduce Freland into due subjection, he was advertised that Penrie duke of Orford, marquelle of Bublin lord chamberleine, 40 Lancalter, that latelie before had beene banished, was returned, a ment to bereaue him of the crowne. The some of which duke, together with the duke of Bloceffers fonne, the king that op within the caffell of Arim, and then taking the feas, he returned and landed in Males , where he found his defense so weake, and bufure, that finallie he came into his aduerfaries hands, and was depoted by authoritie of parlement, and then was the faid duke of Lancaffer admitted to reigne in his place.

Henrie the fourth.

TO Whitfuntive in the yeare 1400, which was the first yeare of the reigne of 1 Henrie the fourth, the cone, frable of Dublin castell, and diverse other at Stanford in Willier, fought by sea with Scots, where manie Eng.

lishmen were saine and drowned. In the second peare of king Henrie the fourth, fir John Stanleie Sir John the kings lieutenant in Ireland returned into Eng. lieutenant. land , leaving his binder lieutenant there fir Milliam Stanleie. The fame yeare on Bartholomein Bir Stepha euen, fir Stechan Scrope, Deputte bnto the lord Scrope. Thomas of Lancacter the kings brother, and lood lieutenant of Ireland, arrived there to suplie the rome of Alexander bithop of Weth, that exercised the same office under the sato logo Thomas of Lancaffer, before the comming of this fir Stephan Scrape; which fir Stephan for his violence and ertor, tion before time vied in the same office buder king Richard, was fore cried out opon by the voices of the

Dirhandsed

Boger 93902=

Thom Walf.

1397

blaughter.

1375

Chi taric of

Merch the bugs licu: trant

1383

1385

19.1.

pole

pore people, infomuch that the ladie his wife hearing of such exclamations, would in no wife continue with him there, except he would receive a solemne oth on the bible, that wittinglie he should wrong no chaiffian creature in that land, but bulie and trulie he thould se paiment made for all expenses: and hereof (the faid) the had made a volv to This to des terminatlie, that unlesse it were on his part firmelie promifed, the could not without perill of foule go promited, the could not compare perturble to the government of the fame author) afficed bofe Hen. Mail. hir request effectuallie, recouered a good opinion for his bright beling, reformed his caters & purueiors, inriched the countrie, mainteined a plentifull house, remillion of great offenles, remedies for persons indangered to the prince, pardons of lands and lines he granted to charitablie and to discrettie, that his name was never recited among them without mas nic bleffings and praiers, and to therefullie they were readie to ferue him against the Frish opon all necellarie occasions. The lozd Thomas of Lancaster the kings sonne, and lood lieutenant of Ireland, are rived the same yeare at Dublin, bpon faint Bices daie.

The maioz of Dublin John Dzake, with a band

of his citizens nære to Bze, Que foure thousand of

Whe Triffia: uerthzowne by the matoz of Dublin.

the Irith outlawes (as Campion noteth out of the records of Christs church) but Marlburrow speaketh onelie of 493, and these being all men of warre. The verte same date that this bistorie was atchined, to wit, the elementh day of Julie, the church of the friers prechers of Dublin was dedicated by the archbishop of that citte. The fame peare in September a parle ment was holden at Dublin, during the which in Argile fir Bartholomew Merdon knight, James White, Stephan Bernon, and other their complices, flue the Chiriffe of Louth John Dowdall. In the yere 1403, in Paie, fir Malter Betterleie feinard of Tillier, a right valiant knight was flaine, and to the number of thirtie other with him. The same yeare about the feath of faint Partin, the load Thomas of Lancaffer the kings sonne returned into England 40 leaving the lood Stechan Scrope his deputie there: who also in the beginning of Lent sailed over into

England, and then the loves of the land those the earle

Stephan Socrave. The carle of Damono lozd tuitice. Che archbis magh des

1403

1405

ccaled.

The citizens of Dublin in: unde Sorot: land. Chep inuade walcs.

The carle of Dimond des sealed.

of Demond to be loed inffice. In the fix yere of Henrie the fourth, John Colton archbishop of Armagh the seuen & twentith of Aprill Departed this life, buto thom Picholas Stoning fucemded. The fame peare on the daie of faint Mitale the marty2, the parlement of Dublin began before so the earle of Damond then load fuffice of Ireland, where the statutes of Bilkennie and Dublin were confirmed, and like wife the charter of Ireland. In the firt yeare of Henrie the fourth, in the moneth of Maie, thiế Scotish barks were taken, two at Græn castell, and one at Alkeie, with capteine Macgolagh. The fame yeare the merchants of Bzodagh entered Scotland, and twice prefes and pledges. Also on the eruen of the featt day of the feuen brethren, Dghgard was burnt by the Trift. And in June fir Stethan 60 Scrope that was come againe into Ireland, returned effiones into England, leaving the earle of Dymond lood tuffice of Ireland. About the faine time they of Dublin entered Scotland at faint Di nian, and valiantlie behaved themselves against the enimies, and after croffing the leas, directed their course into Wales, and did much hurt to the Welsh, men, bringing from thense the thrine of faint Cubins, & placed it in the church of the Trinitie in Dub lin. James Butler earle of Damond died at Ball. gam, whilest he was lood suffice, onto whom success ded Gerald carle of Bildare.

In the fcuenth years of king Penrie on Coppus Christiday, the citizens of Dublin with the countrie

people about them, manfullie banquither the Tilly entimies, and flue diverte of them, and take two cut Agnes of Aandards, bringing with them to Dublin the heads of those whom they had daine. The same peare the prior of Conall, in the plaine of Bilbare, fought manfullie with the Frith, & vanquithed two hundled that were well armed, dateng part of them, and chaling the relidue out of the field, and the pilo; had not with him past the number of twentie Eng. that put their truft in him. The fame yeare after Di. chaelmas, Stephan Scrope Deputie fuffice to the logo Thomas of Lancaster the kings sonne, and his lood Anomas or A annual eagaine over into Ire-lieutenant of Areland, came againe over into Ire-faint lailaric mas a parle, Apallond land. And in the feath of faint Hilaric was a parle, at Dubia, ment holden at Dublin , which in Lent after was ended at Erim. And Beiler de Birmingham flue Cathole Dconhur about the end of Februarie. In the yere 1407, a certeine falle and heathcuill wieth an Frithman, named Dac Adam Dac Gilmoze, that had caused fortie thurthes to be defiroich, as he that was never theffened, and therefore called Cost Cophibing bi , chanced to take prifoner one Patrike Sauage, figuitig, and received for his ranfome two thousand markes, though afterwards he flue him, togither with his brother Richard.

1409

The same yeare in the feast of the evaltation of the croffe, Stephan Scrope deputie to the load Thomas of Lancaffer, with the earles of Damond and Defe mond, and the prior of Bilmainan, and diverse other capteins and men of warre of Deth, let from Dub lin, and inuaded the land of Dac Durch, where the Irith came into the field and fkirmifhed with them, to as in the former part of the date they put the English power to the worle; but at length the Irish were banquifted and chafed, fo that Dnolan with his fon and diverse others were taken prisoners. But the English capteins advertised here, that the Burkens and Dkeroll in the countie of talkennie, had for the space of two daies togither done much milchief, they rode with all speed buto the towne of Callan, and there incountering with the adverfaries, manfullie put them to flight, Que Dheroll, and eight hundzed flaue. others. There went a tale, and belowed of manie, that the funne food fill for a space that date, till the Englishmen had ridden sir miles: so much was it thought that God favoured the English part in this enterpile, if we thall belieue it.

The same yeare the lood Stephan Scrope passed once againe ouer into England, and James Butler earle of Demond was elected by the countrie load inflice of Ireland. In the dats of this th. Henrie the fourth, the inhabitants of Cooke being fore afflice ted with perpetuall oppellions of their Triff neighboss, complained themselues in a generall writing directed to the load Rutland and Coake, the kings deputie there, and to the councell of the realme then assembled at Dublin: which letter because it oper neth a window to behold the fate of those parties, and of the whole realme of Ireland in those dates, we have thought good to let downe here, as it hath bone enterd by Campion, according to the copie de livered to him by Francis Agard elquire, one of the quænes maiefties prinie councell in Ireland.

A letter from Corke out of an old record that beareth no date.



T may please your wisedomes to have pittie on be the kings poze subteas within the countie of Coike, or elfe we are cast awaie for ouer . For where there are in this countie thefe losos by name, before

knights,

knights, elquiers, gentlemen, and yeomen to a great number that might dilpend pearelie eight bundjed pounds, fire hundjed pounds, foure hun-Died pounds, two hundred pounds, one hundred pounds, an hundred markes, twentie markes, twentie pounds, ten pounds, some moze, some leste, to a great numbers, befides thefe loads . First the load marques Caro, his yearelie reuenues was belibe Dogleic hauen and other crekes, two thouland two hundled pounds fferling. The load Barnevale of 10 Berhauen, his pearelie reuenue was belioc Bo. Die hauen and other creekes, one thousand fir hunded pounds Cerling. The losd Mogan of the great castell, his yearelie reuenue bestoe his hauens and crebes, thirtene thousand pounds. The load Bal-, ram of Enfort, bis yearelie reuenue belioe hauens and creekes, one thousand thee hundred pounds ferling . The load Curcie of Belbaetton, his yeare. lie revenue beside havens and crækes, one thoubeuile of Barenstellie, his yearelie revenue beside bauens and crækes, one thousand two hundzed pounds serling. The lozd Arundell of the Strand, his pearelie revenue beside havens and crækes, one thousand five hundred pounds feerling. The lord Barod of the gard, his yearelie revenues belide bauens & crekes one thouland one hundred pounds fierling . The losd Steineie of Waltmose , his pearelie reuenue beside hauens and creekes, eight hundred pounds feetling. The load Roch of Pole callell, his yearelie reuenues belides hauens and crokes, ten thousand pounds ferling. The kings maiestie hath the lands of the late young Barrie by forfeiture, the pearelie revenue whereof, belives two rivers and creekes, and all other calualties, is one thousand eight hundred pounds ferling.

And that at the end of this parlement, your load. thip, with the kings most noble councell mar come to Cooke, a call before you all thefe loads, and other Irifhmen , and bind them in paine of loffe of life , 4 lands and gods, that never one of them do make warre byon an other , without licence oz comman. dement of you my lord deputie, and the kings councell; for the otter destruction of these parts is that onelie cause. And once all the Irishmen, and the kings enimies were dziuen into a great ballie called Clane onight, betwirt two great mounteines called Paccost, of the lepsons Iland: and there they lived long and manie peares with their white meat, mong themselves, and then the weakest part toke certeine Friffmen to take their part, and to banquis thed their enimies . And thus fell the English lords at warre among themselves, till the Irishmen were fronger than they, and draue them awate, and now have the countrie woole bnoor them; but that the lord Roch, the lord Barrie, and the lord Curcle one. lie remaine with the least part of their ancestors polfellions: and poing Barrie is there byon the kings portion, paieng his grace neuer a pennie rent. 60 Therefore we the kings pore subjects of the citie of Corke, Minfale, and Doghall, Defire your lordfhip to fend hither two god inflices to fæ this matter oz dred, and some English capteins with twentie Eng. lithmen that may be capteins over be all: and we will rife with them to reducte these enormities all at our owne coffs. And if you will not come noz fend, we will fend over to our liege lood the king, and complaine on you all. Thus far that letter.

And as faith Campion, at this date the citie of Corke is to incombred with unquiet neighbors of great power, that they are forced to gard their gates continuallie, 4 to keepe them that at feruice times,

at meales, and from fun fetting to fun rifing, not luffering anie Aranger to enter the towne with his weapon, but to leave the same at a lodge appointed. They dare bruneth at anie time walke abroad far from the towne for their recreation, ercept at leas fons; and then with firength of men farnithed with armozand weapon for their lalegard . They match in wedlocke among themselves, so that welnere the whole citie is alicd and joined togither in confanguinitie. But now to returne buto the dwings of the earle of Dymond that was placed load fulfice in Scrops rome. The do find that in the yeare 1408 1408
Spariement be called a parlement at Dublin, in which the flat at Dublin. tutes of Kilkennie and Dublin were efflones reuinod, and certeine ordinances effablifhed binder the great feale of England against puruefors. The fame The lord yeare, the morroto after Lammas daie, the load Chomas of Thomas of Lancaster some to king Henrie the Lancaster fourth, losd leutenant of Ireland, landed at Care into Ireland, lingual and in Ireland, lingual and into Ireland. fand two hundred pounds feetling. The lord Pan- 20 lingford, and in the tweke following he came buto Dublin , and put the earle of Bildare bnder arreft . comming to him with thee of his familie. He lost all his goos, being spoiled & rifled by the load lieute. nant his feruants, thimfelfe kept ftill in pallon in the caffell of Dablin, till he had paid 300 marks fine .

Dn the daie of faint Parcell the marty, occear The load led the lood Stephan Scrope at Triffeldermot. Scrope Des The same yeare also was the logo Thomas of Lan. ceaseth. caffer at Kilmainan wounded (3 kncw not how) 30 and brineth escaped with life, and after caused summons to be given by proclamation, that all fuch as ought by their tenures to ferue the king, thould ale femble at Rolle. And after the fealt of faint Hila. rie, he belo a parlement at Kilkennie for a tallage Chomas reto be granted . And after the thirteenth of Parch, he turneth into returned into England, leaving the prior of Kilmais England. nan for his deputie in Ireland . This yeare also Hugh Bacgilmoze was daine in Cragfergus with in the church of the friers minors, which church he had before destroied, and broken downe the glatte windowes to have the iron bars , thorough which his enimies the Sausges entred voon him. This yeare being in the tenth of Henrie the fourth, in June, Janico de Artois with the Englithmen James de flue foure scoze of the Brith in Alffer . This yeare artois. king Henrie gaue the fwozo to the citie of Dublin, The fwort which citie was first governed (as appeareth by their given to the ancient sealed signum propositions) by a provided line and in the thirteenth of Henrie the third by a major Ballistes till at the last these English lords fell at variance a 50 and two bailifes, thich were changed into Chiriffes, changed into

by charter granted by Coward the firt, 1547.

This maiotalitie, both for flate and charge of Chiriffes. office, and for bountifull hospitalitie, ercadeth anie citie in England , London ercepted. In the yeare following, the one and twentith date of Paie, a parlement began at Dublin , which latted thac wekes, the prior of Bilmainan fitting as lord inflice. The fame yeare, the two and twentith of June, the fame tuffice toke the caffels of Dibraclide, Dieroll, and de la Mare. Ireland this peare was loze affliced for want of come. The losd fuffice entred into the land of Dbzen with 1500 Kernes, of which number eight hundred revolted to the Irift, fo that if the power of hundred revolted to the Irith, to that it the power or made by the Dublin had not beene there, it had gon entil with the look nutice. losd fustice: and pet he escaped not without losse, for John Derpatrike was flaine there. In the yeare 1 4 1 1 , martages were celebrated among the nobilitie in Ireland . William Presson maried the daughter of Coward Paris, and John Wogan Pariages. matched with the eldest daughter of Christopher Pace. Con; and Walter De la Dive with the fecond baugh ter of the fame Christopher. In the yeare 1 412, 80 bout the feaft of Tibertius and Malerianus, wich 1412 fallety on the tenth of Aprill, Doonthir bid much mil Doonthir.

19.11.

Epi citic of

Zehinkords ther Greens cultil

76

ABeth deceas foch. The benth of Bing Genrie the tourth.

chiefe in Peth, and take 160 Englithmen . The fame yeare Dooles a knight , and Thomas Fitz The billiop of morice fought togither, and either due other. The foure a twentith of Paie, Robert Pounteine bi-thop of Peth departed this life, to whome inceded Coward de Audiscie sometime archdecon of Comwall. This yeare on faint Cutberts daic king Benrie the fourth departed this life .

Henrie the fift.

John Stan= lete the kings licutenant in Treland.

Thomas Craulete archbishop of

Englishmen

John lord Calbot of Sherfielo. 1 4 1 5 Robert Eal=

1 4 1 6 The archbi: Dop of 30r= magh deceas

Che parte= ment remm= ned to Erim.

A lublidie.

An the first yeare of this king, the five and twentith of September, landed in Fres Cland at Clawcarfe, John Stanlie the kings lieutenant of that land. He departed this life the 18 of Januarie next insuing at Athird, in Las 20

tine called Atrium Dei . After his decease, Thomas Crauleie archbishop of Dublin was chosen loed inffice of Ireland . Janico de Artois led forth a power against Paginozs, a great lord of Ireland, but niere to a place called Inoz manie Englithmen were flaine. The morrowafter faint Patthias baie, a parlement began againe at Dublin , with conti nued for the space of fifteene dates, in which meane time the Irith old much hart by inualions made into the English pale, and burning op all the houses 3 afore them that frod in their wate, as their bluall cufrome was in times of other parlements : where bpon a tallage was demanded, but not granted. In the yeare 1 4 1 4, the Englishmen fought with the Triff neere to kilka, and Que an hundred of the enimies, whilest the archbishop being lood instice in Triffeldermot , went in procession with his cleargie; praieng for the good speed of his men and other of the countrie that were gone fouth to fight with the adversaries. In the feath of faint Bozdian and 40 Epimachus, to wit the tenth of Paie, were the Englith of Weth discomfitted by Doonthir and his Brith, where they fine Thomas Paureuar baron of Serin: and there were taken prisoners Christopher fles ming , John Dardis , and diverle others, befice manie that were name.

On faint Partins euen fir John Talbot of Ho. lomfhire, lozo Furniuale landed at Dalkeie, the kings lieutenant in Ireland, a man of great honoz. In the pære one thousand foure hundred and fiftene 50 in Rouember, Robert Talbot, a right noble man bot deceaseth, that walled the suburbs of Bilkennie, departed this life. Also Patrike Baret bishop of Fernis deceafed, and was buried among the canons at Benlis. This peare on the feast date of Gernalius and 1020: thalius which falleth on the nineteenth of June, the lood lieutenants wife the ladie Furnicall was brought to bed at finglaffe of a fonne named Thomas. About the same time also Stechan Fleming archbilhop of Armagh departed this life, after 60 leuenthof June. In the meane while he fetcht great whome fucceded John Suanig . On the daie of faint Laurence the lood Furnicals sonne Thomas Talbot that was borne at Finglasse in Pouember last past, departed this life, and was buried in the quere of the friers preachers church in Dublin . A. bout the same time the Irish fell upon the English men, and flue manie of them, among other Thomas Balimore of Baliquelan was one. The varlement which the last peace had beene called and holden at Dublin, was this yeare removed to Trim, & there began the eleventh of Paie, where it continued for the frace of eleven daies, in the which was granted to the lord lieutenant a subsidie in monie.

In the yeare following, the archbiftop of Da

blin patted over into England, and deceated at Ha. The moth ringdon, but his bodie was buried in the new col. hopofon lege at Drford. This man is greatlic praised for his bun diese. liveralitie, de tras a god almelman, a great clerke, hispac a doctor of diminitie, an ercellent preacher, a great builder, beautifull, tall of trature, and fanguine of completion . De was foure score and ten peares of age when he died, and had governed the church of Du blin in god quiet by the space of twentie yerres. This 10 peare Mortlie after Caffer, the lord deputie spoiled the tenants of Henrie Crus, and Henrie Bethat. Alfo at Dlane on the featt date of faint John and faint Baule, the erle of Bildare, fir Chistopher Die, fron, and fir John Bedlow were arrefted and committed to ward within the calfell of Erim, because they fought to commune with the prior of kilmai:

The nine and twentith of June Watthew Hul, feie baron of Baltrim Deceased, & was buried at the friers preachers of Trim. In the yeare one thou fand foure bundeed a nineteene a rotall councell was a councell holden at Paas, where was granted to the load lien, parlement holden. tenant a sublivie in monie. The same yeare buon Cenethursdaie Dthoell toke foure hundzed kine that belonged buto Balimore, to breaking the peace confrarie to his oth . The fourth toes of Paie, Pac Mat Much Durch cheefe capteine of his nation, and of all the takengula Brith in Leinfter was taken palloner, and the fame ner. daie was fir Hugh Cokefeie made knight. The last of Date the lood lieutenant, and the archbishop of Dublin with the maior rated the castell of Benje nie. The morrow after the feast date of Processus and Partinianus, that is the twentith of June, the loed William de Burgh and other Englishmen flue Otellite fine hundred Friffmen, toke Dkellie. Dn the fealt ben. daie of Marte Magdalen the losd lieutenant Talbot returned into England, leaving his deputie there the archbishop of Dublin. This yeare about faint Laurence date, diverte went forth of Ireland Che pilot to scrue the king in his warres of Pozmandie, as kimana Thomas Butler that was prioz of kilmainan, and the king u manie others . John fitzbenrie succeeded the fait france. Butler in government of the priorie of Bilmainan. The archbiftop of Dublin that remained as lood der putie Que thirtie Triffmen nære bnto Kodiffen. Al to the thirteenth of Februarie John Fitzbenrie prior of Bilmainan departed this life, and William Fitzthomas was cholen to fucceed in his place, and was confirmed the morrow after faint Talentines daie.

James Butler earle of Dymond appointed the kings lieutenant in Ireland, in place of John lood James Ba Ealbot and Furniuall, landed at Waterford as irreladily bout the fourth foes of Aprill: and Chortie after his mond in comming over, he caused a combat to be fought be twirt two of his coulins, of whom the one was flaine in that place, and the other carried awate fore wound ded. On faint Beorges daie, he held a councell in Aparlimit Dublin, flummoned a parlement to begin there the fummoned. boties out of the countries of the Irith lords, Dialle, Pac Pahun, and Paginois. But first per we go fur ther to their what Marlburrow hath noted of the dos ings, whilest this earle of Demond governed as the kings lieutenant in Ireland, we have thought god to let downe what Campion also writeth thereof, as

In the red more of Athie (the funne almost lod lames for ged in the west, and miraculousie standing still in anathy the specicle by the space of these hours, till the feat Campion was accomplished. was accomplified, and no hole not quakenire in all Che long that bog annoieng either horffe or man of his part) daethis he banquilhed Dmoze and his terrible armie with a coule few of his owne meinie, and with the like number

The Chronicles of Ireland.

heonercame Arfhur Mac Worogh, at whose might & pullance all Leinster trembled. Lo the instruction of his mans worthinesse, the compiler of certeine precepts touching the rule of a common-wealth excite th his load the faid earle in dineric places of that worke incidentlie, ealons putting him in mind that the I. rith are falle by kind, that it were expedient, and a worke of charitie to execute byon them wilfall and malicious transgressors the kings lawes somewhat harplie, that Doempfie being winked at a wile, abulco that small time of sufferance to the insurie of the estle of Bildare, intruding bniustlie opon the castell of Leie, from whense the said deputie had inst. lie expelled him, and put the earle in polletton there. of, that notwith francing their oths and pleages, they are yet no longer true than they fiele themselues the weaker. This deputie tamed the Brens, the Burghs, Hac Banons, Dghaghucaght, Popis Pac Pahun, all the capteins of Thomond: all this he did in the months; the clergie twise euerie weke in solemne 20 procession prateing for his god succes against those dilogocred persons, thich now in everte part of Free land organizated from the English civilitie, to their old trade of life vied in that countrie, repined at the English maner of gouernment. So far Campion.]

Dinerse parlements opon prozogations were bolden in time that this earle of Demond was gouernoz. The first began at Dublin the feauenth of June in this yeare one thouland foure hundred and twentie, which continued about firteen daies. At this parlement was granted to the lood lieutenant a fub. 30 lidie of featien hundred marks . At the firteene dates end this parlement was adjourned till the mondate after faint Andzeins daie. In the fame parlement the debts of the load John Talbot, which were due to certeine persons for vittels and other things, taken by whilest he was lood lieutenant there, were recko. ned up, which load Talbot verelie, for that he faw not the creditors satisfied before his comming awaie, was partite cuill spoken of in the countrie. The moze rowafter the feath of Simon and Jude, the callell of Canalil of Colmolin was taken by Thomas Fitzgirald . And chain. on faint Katharins even, the sonne and heire of the earle of Damond load lieutenant was boane, for the Denoads for which there was great reiotling. In the parlement begun againe at Dublin the mondate after faint Andzelus vaie, another lublivie of thee hundzed marks was granted onto the lood lieutenant. And after they had fat thirteene dates, it was efflons ad-Menrumorswere spred abrode, that Thomas Fitz, John earle of Defmond was departed this life at Paris opon faint Laurence daie, after wome fucexdeahis uncle James Kitzgirald, whome he had the fenerall times renounced, as one that was a waster of his patrimonie both in England and Ires land, and not like to come to anie good profe.

In the years one thousand sours hundred timens tie and one; the parlement began agains boon the falment, last prozogation, the mondais after spint Ambrole 60 daie in which parlement it was ordeined that certeine persons should be fent to the king, to fue that a reformation might be had in matters touching the flate of the land. The cheefe of those that were thus this of introduction but the architists of Armagh, and the Chailes the architists of Armagh, and the Chailes the architists of Armagh, and the Chailes of Ar per Piedon knight. Pozeoner Richard Dhedian bilhop of Cathill was accused by John Belevithop of Lismore and Waterford, the late thinkie articles unto his charge. Amongst other, one was for that beloned none of the English nation, and that be bestowed not one benefice boon anie Englichman, and counfelled other bishops that they should not be flow anie within their diocesse opon anie Euglish man. Pozeover, another article was for counter

feting the kings leale. And another, for that he work about to make himfelfe king of Mountler, and had taken a ring from the image of faint Patrike, which the earle of Delmond had offered and given it to his lemman. Danie other crimes were laid to him by the faid bishop of Lismoze and Waterfood, which he erhibited in witting . Allo in the fame parlement there rose contention betwirt Adam Paine bilhop of Clone, and another prelat, whose church he would have annered buto his fee . At length, after the parle ment had continued for the space of eightænc daies, Clarence it brake by. Derewith came news of the flaughter flaine in of the logo Thomas of Lancaster onke of Clarence, France. that had beene load lieutenant of Ireland. And boon the fenenth of Paie certeine of the erle of Damonds men were overthowen by the Irith, neere to the abbeie of Leis, and fenen and twentie Englithmen were flaine there: of whom the cheefe were two gen. tlemen, the one named Burcell , & the other Brant. Alfo ten were taken priloners, and two hundred el caped to the forelaid abbete, lo fauing themselues. About the fame time Pac Pahun an Irith lord did Mac Dohim much hart within the countrie of Argile, by burn ing & wasting all afore him. Also bpon the morrow after Midlummer date, the earle of Dymond load lieutenant entred into the countrie about Leis bp. on Dimordies, and for the space of soure dates togither did much hurt, in flateng and spoiling the peaple, till the Brith were glad to fue for peace.

The buke of

Henrie the fixt.

Jeutenants to Penrie the lirt over the reline of Ireland were these, Comund earle of **Esparch**, and James earle of Demond his deputie; John Sutton low Dudleie, and fir Thomas Strange knight his deputie; fir Thomas Stand lete, and fir Chiffother Plun-

ket his deputie . This fir Momas Stanlete on Die the lirt, with all the knights of Weth F Irrell, fought Marlburrow, againg the Frift, flue a great number, toke Peill followethis Donnell pulloner.

Lion lord Wels, and the earle of Demond his Campion. deputie. James earle of Damono by himfelfe, John earle of Shewesburie, and the archbishop of Dublin fonco untill the mondate after faint Ambrofe Daie. 50 lood tuffice in his absence . Richard Plantagenet duke of Poske, father to king Coward the fourth & earle of Alfrer, had the office of lieutenant by the hings letters patents during the terme of tenne yeares, who amointed to rule under him as his des puties at lundate times the baron of Deluin, Kir chard fitzeuffaceknight, James earle of Damono, and Thomas Fitzmozice earle of Bildare. To this Campion out and Ahomas Arizmonice early in allular. Lough of the records Richard duke of Popks and Allier then resident in of Christs of Christs Dublin, was borne within the castell there his see thurch. cond sonne the load Beorge that was after duke of Beorge duke Clarence. His goofathers at the fontitione were the of Clarence earles of Dimond and Delmond. Whether the combonic at Dumotion of Jacke Cade an Irifhman bozne, naming Jacke Cade himselfe Portimer, and to prefending confinage to dinerse noble houses in this land, proceeded from some intelligence with the oukes freends here in Freland, it is uncerteine: but furelie the buke was behementlie Calpected, and immediatlie after began the troubles, which through him were railed . Which biviles being couched for a time, the duke held him felfe in Ireland, being latelte by parlement ogdeinet protector of the realme of England: he left his agent in the court, his brother the earle of Sakiburie, 1820 chancellos, to whom he veclared the truth of the from H.cy.

bles then toward in Ireland : which letter exemplified br fir Benrie Sioneie lozd deputie, a great feat ther and preferuer of antiquities, as it came to Campions hands, and by him let downe we have thought god likewife to prefent it here to your view.

To the right worshipfull, and with all mine heart entierelie beloued brother, the earle of Salisburie.

The copic of a letter.

Joht worthipfull, a with all my hart. entierelie belowed brother, I recommend me buto pou as heartilie as I can . And like it you to wit, lith I wrote last onto the king our fouereigne loso his highnelle, the Irith enimie, that is to faie Pagoghigam, and with him thee or foure griff capteins, affociat with a great fellowthip of Englith rebels, not with francing that they were within the king our souereigne lood his peace, of great malice, and against all truth have mar ligned against their legiance, and bengeablie baue brent a great towne of mine inheritance in Deth. called Kamore, and other billages thereabouts, and murthered and beent both men, women, and children. withouten mercie : the which enimies be pet alleme bled in woos and forts, awaighting to do the burt and greenance to the kings subjects, that they can thinke of imagine. For which cause I write at this time but the kings highmeste, and beseeth his god grace for to haften my paiment for this land, accor. 30 ding buto his letters of warrant now late directed buto the treasuros of England, to the intent I may wage men in sufficient number for to relist the malice of the same enimies, 4 punish them in such wife, that other which would do the same for lacke of rest fance, in time maie take example. For doubtleffe, but if mp paiment be had in all haft, for to have men of warre in defense and safegard of this land; my power can not fretch to keepe it in the kings obei. fance: and verie necessitie will compell me to come 4 into England to live there boon my poze livelibod. For I had leaver be dead than anie inconvenience thould fall therbuto by my default : for it thall never be chronicled nor remaine in scripture (by the grace of God) that Freland was lost by my negligence. And therefore I beliech you right worthipfull bear ther , that you will hold to your hands instantlie, that my valment maie be had at this time in elchew ing all inconveniences. For I have erample in or ther places (more pitie it is) for to dread thame, and 50 for to acquit my troth buto the kings highnesse, as mry dutie is. And this I praie and erhort you good brow ther, to thew but his god grace, and that you will be lo goo, that this language male be inaced at this present parlement for mine excuse in time to come; and that you will be good to my fernant Koger Ko the bearer of thefe, and to my other fernants, in fuch things as they thall purfue buto the kings highnes, and to give full faith and credence buto the report of the faid Roger, touching the faid matters. Right 60 worthipfull, and with all my heart intierlie beloued brother, our bleffed Lord Bod preferue and kæpe pou in all honour, prosperous estate, and felicitie, a grant you right goo life and long. Waritten at Dublin the fillenth date of June.

Tour faithfull true brother Richard Yorke.

Magoghis power.

Mager Ro.

Dfluch power was Pagoghigam in those vales, tho as he wan and kept it by the swood, so now his inccellors in that fate line but as meane capteins, pelving their winnings to the ffronger. This is the milerie of lawleffe people, refembling the rubeneffe of the rude world, therein enerie man was richer

and pozer than other, as he was in might and blo lonce moze oz leffe inabled. Bere began factions of the nobilitie in Freland, favouring diverse lides that Aroue for the crowne of England. For the duke of Poste, in those ten yeares of his gouernement, cr. cedinglie wan the hearts of the noblemen and gen, tlemen of that land, of the which diverte were flaine with him at Wakefield; as the contrarie part was the next years by his sonns Coward earle of Parch at Doztimers croffe in Wales. In which meane time the Irith grew hardie, & blurped the Englith countries in sufficientlie defended, as they had done by like opostunitie in the latter end of Richard the fecond . Thefe two featons fet them fo affote, that henseforward they could never be cast out from their forcible possessions, holding by plaine wrong all call fer, and by certeine Irith tenures no imali portions of Pounter and Connagh, least in Pethand Lein, fer, there the civill fabieas of the English bloud did euer most prenaile.

Edward the fourth and Edward the fift.

ace Homas Fitzmozice earle Limina of Mildare, load inflice till the and depun third years of Coward the in bing e fourth, after which time the ward the Duke of Clarence, brother to batts, the king, had the office of lieutenant wile he lined, &

made his deputies by funder turnes. Thomas earle of Delmond, John Tiptoli earle of Morceffer the kings couline, Thomas earle of Kildate, and Henrie load Breie of Kuthin, Great was the credit of the Giraldins ever when the house of Poske prospered, and like totle the Butlers that The Bu ued under the bloud of the Lancasters : for which less, cause the earle of Desmond remained manie veres deputie to George duke of Clarence his goodho ther: but when he had spoken certeine distainefull woods against the late marriage of king Edward with the ladie Elizabeth Greie, the faid ladie being now quene, caused his trade of life affer the Irish maner, contrarie to fundzie old fratutes inadedin that behalfe, to be lifted and examined by John erle of Mosceller his luccellos for that he was atteined The central of freaton, condemned, and for the fame beheaded at 1481 Droghedagh.

James the father of this Thomas earle of Del Campions mond; being luftered and not controlled, during the of bentug gouterment of Richardouke of Pooke his godcept, tions. and of Thomas earle of Kildare his kiniman., pul bpon the kings subteas within the countries of Wlaterford, Corkey Berrie, and Limerike, the 3: 3116 1119 riff impositions of quinto and linerie a cartings, tions. carriages, lodgings, cocherings, bonnaght, and luch like, which culomes are the berie beeders; maintel ners, and opholoeus of all grith enormities, wring ing from the pope tenants everlafting felle, allow ance of meat and monit, thereby their bodies and gods were brought irretuice and theatmone, to that the med of warre, horses, and their Balloglasses lie Aill operate farmers, entitlemont, begger the cour trie, foller a logt of tole vagabonds, readie to rebell if their loss command them, ever nusled in fealth and robberies.

no robberies: 63.43.3.3.4.
The fee will prelidents given by the father, the fon did exercise, being toto deputie, to whome the refor mation of that disorder specialife belonged . Pot withstanding the same sault being winked at in o ther, and with fuch tigot quenged in him, was may nisestile taken for a quarrell lought and procured. Two yeares after, the laid earle of Mocceller

loft his head, while the mrie the firt taken out of the tower was fet bp againe, and king @dward proclamed blurper, and then was laildare inlarged, whom likewife atteinted, they thought also to have rio, and gistation to Charlie both the earles of Kildare & Desmond were reflazed to their bloud by parlement. Sir Kowland Gufface, fometime treasuroz and lozd chancelloz, mas lafflie alfo load deputie of Freland. De founded faint francis abbeis belide Bilcollen brioge. Bing Coward a yeare before his death honozed his young. er fonne (Richard duke of Porke) with the title of lieutenant over this tand, which he intoice till his bra naturall uncle bereft both him and his brother king Coward the fift of their naturall lives.

Richard the third.

Richard the third.

Den this monster of na-ture a cruell typant Kichard the third had killed his two your nethues, and taken by on him the crowne a gouerne, ment of England, he prefer to the dignitie of losd liente

nautof Ireland, whole deputie was Birald earle of kildare that bare that office all the reigne of king Richard, and a while in Henrie the feuenth his dales.

Denricthe Ce= gu Richard puelt. Lambert bethe earle of D which earle came the will lie priest he Kichard, Simon, bringing with him a lao that bert, indone he feined to be the forme of George earle of Classer conce, latelie escaped forth of the tower of London. And the

lightlie moned the faid earle, and mante others the nobles of Ireland (tendering as well the linage role! all of Richard Plantagenet buke of Poste, and his fonne Beorge their countrieman borne, as alfo maligning the advancement of the house of Lancatter in Denrie the fewenth) either to thinke or to faine, that the world intight believe they thought verelie o this child to be Coward earle of Marwike, the duke of Clarence bis lawfull fonne.

And although king Benrie moze than halfe mate? [1] of Burgongne, fifter to Colvard the fourth, birne Broughton knight, and divers other capteins of this or conspiracie, denised to abuse the colour of this young earles name, for preferring their purpole: which if it? came to goo, they agreed to bepole Lambert, and to erea the verie earle indeed, not prisoner in the town ... escaped the smoot were pursued fleeing for the space er, so, whose quarrell had they pretended to fight, 60 they deined it likelie he Would have beine made awale. Wherefore it was blazed in Areland, that the co- Englishman . The earle of kildare at his reinche king to mocke his subjects, had scholed a boie to take byon him the earle of Warwikes name, and had

the awd duke of Clarence their countriman and protedo; during his life, buto whole linage they also derived title in right to the crowne.

In all haft they affembled at Dublin , and there Lambert in Chills durch they crowned this idoll, honozing crowned. him with titles imperiall, feating and triumping, railing mightie thouts and cries, carrieng him from thense to the cattell boon tall mens thoulders, that he might be feene and noted, as he was fure an honozable chilo to loke opon. Derewith allembling their forces togither, their provides themselves of thips, and imbarking therein, they toke the sea, and landing in Lancathire, palled forwards, till they came to Pewarke voon Trent. Therebyon infued the battell of Stoke, commonlie called Partin Swarts field, therein Lambert and his maisser were taken, but yet pardoned of life, and were not erecuted The eric of Lincolne, the lood Louell, Par-tin Swart, the Almaine Capteine, and Paurice Fitzthomas capteine of the Arith, were flaine, and all their power discomfited, as in the English histor rie it may further appeare. Jafper duke of Beoford, and earle of Wenbroke lieutenant, and Walter arth of ABcoford bilhop of Dublin his deputie. lieutenant.

In this time befell another like Irith illusion, procured by the duchelle aforefaid, and certeine nobles in England obereby was exalted as rightfull king of England, and undoubted earle of Wifter, the counterfeit Michard duke of Borke, preferued from king Kichards crueltie (as the adherents faced the matter downe) and with this margame lood, named inded Deter (in fcome Berkin) Warbecke, they perkin warflattered themselves manie peares after. Then was becke. fir Coward Pointings knight fent ouer lozd beputie, with committion to apprehend Marbeths printi.

pall parteners in Ireland: among thom was nashir Comard
med Girald Fitzgirald, whole purgation the king lood deputie. (notwith Canding diverte farmiling and adouting boie could reckon up his pedegre fo readilie, that is the contratie dis accept. After much ado, Parkin the Perkin war-learned of the priest luch princelie behautour, that he poing taken, confessed by his owne writing the caurte becke taken. of his inhole life, and all his proceedings in this en-

ferville, whereof in the English historie, as we have

bosowed the fame forth of Halles thonicles, per may

read more, and therefore beere we have omiffed to speake further of that matter. In the Peare 130 i hing Penrie made lienterant 1501 benrie duke of Ireland his fecond Conne Benrie, as then duke of yorke, after Booke the affer reigned by the name of Penrie the king henrie eight. A bim was appointed deputie the foretaid the eight, lood Biraldecte of Advance into accompanies with John lieutenant. and authough uning Gentle moze than have there will be Blake malik of Bublin, warred very malikam le tred their foot, in he wing the ladie Pargatet ducked and burgh, Obsen, and Ha Pemarre, Acatropil, of Burgonane, litter to Edward the fourth, birner and fought with the greatest power of Irithmen or Chomas thue John de la Pole; the logo Louell, fir Thomas 110: that had beine togither lines the conquest, binder the Ete field of bill of Anochtow, in Conclin the bill of the Ares, Anochtow. for miles from Galowale, and two miles from Bel. Itclare Burghes manour towne. Pac Willam and his complices were there taken, his fonthisis that

of five miles: great flanghter was made of them, and manie capteins caught, without the tolle of dire ivas made knight of the noble order of the garter. The earle of and lived in worthe estimation all his life long, as knight of the

Jafper buite

open him the earle of Warwikes name, and had the work the earle of Warwikes name, and had the best of the work to be the standard of the stand

näud tuisi i



O THE RIGHT HO

norable sir Henrie Sidneie

knight, lord deputie of Ireland, lord prefident of Wales, knight of the most noble order of the garter, and one of hir maiesties privie councell within hir realme of England.



Ow cumbersome (right honorable) and dangerous a taske it is, to ingrosse & divulge the doings of others, especiallie when the parties registred or their issue are living: both common reason sufficientlie acknowledgeth, and dailie experience infalliblie proueth. For man by course of nature is so parciallie affected to himselfe and his bloud, as he will be more agreeued with the chronicler for recording a peeuish trespasse, than he will be offended with his friend for committing an heinous treason. Ouer this, if the historian be

long, he is accompted a trifler: if he be short, he is taken for a summister: if he commend, he is twighted for a flatterer: if he reprodue, he is holden for a carper: if he be pleasant, he is noted for a jester: if he be graue, he is reckoned for a droper: if he misdate, he is named a falsistier: if he once buttrip, he is tearmed a stumbler: so that let him beare himselse in his chronicle as vprightlie and as conscionablie as he may possible, yet he shall be sure to find them that will be more prest to blab foorth his pelfish faults, than they will be readie to blaze out his good deserts. Others there be, that although they are not able to reprodue what is written, yet they will be sure to cast in his dish what is forgotten . Heere, saie they, this exploit is omitted : there that policie is not detected; heere this faieng would have beene interlaced there that trecherie should have beene displaied. These & the like discommodities, with which historiographers are vsuallie cloid, haue borne backe divers and fundrie willing minds, who taking the waie to be thornie, the credit slipperie, the carpers to be manie, would in no case be medlers, choosing rather to sit by their owne fire obscurelie at home, than to be baited with envious toongs openlie abroad.

Others on the contrarie fide, being resolute sellowes, and trampling under for these curious faultfinders, would not sticke to put themselves foorth in presses and maugre all their hearts, to buskle forward, and rush through the pikes of their quipping nips, and biting frumps. But I taking the meane betweene both these extremities, held it for better, not to be so fairle and pecuish a meacocke, as to shrinke and couch mine head for euerie mizeling shoure, nor yet to beare my selfe so high

inheart, as to pranse and iet like a proud gennet through the street, not weighing the barking of currish bandogs. And therefore, if Ishall be found in mine historie fometime too tedious, sometime too spare, sometime too sawning in commending the liuing, sometime too flat in reproving the dead: I take God to witnesse, that mine offense therein proceedeth of ignorance, and not of set wilfulnesse. But as for the passing ouer in silence of diuerse euents (albeit the law or rather the libertic of an historic requireth that all should be related, and nothing whusted) yet I must confesse, that as I was not able, vpon so little leasure, to know all that was said ordone; fo I was not willing for fundrie respects, to write euerie trim tram that I knew to be faid or doone. And if anie be ouerthwartlie waiwarded, as he will fooner long for that I have omittted, than he will be contented with that I have chronicledi, I cannot deuise in my iudgement a better waie to satisfie his appetite, than with one Dolie, a peintor of Oxford, his answer: who being appointed to tricke out the ten commandements, omitted one, and pourtraied but nine. Which fault espied by his maister that hired him, Dolie answered, that in verie deed he peinted but nine: howbeit, when he vnderstood that his master had well observed and kept the nine commandements that alreadie were drawne, he gaue his word at better leisure throughlie to finish the tenth. And truelie so must I saie: I haue laid downe heere to the reader his view, a breefe discourse, wherof I trust he shall take no great furfet. And when I am aduertised, that he will digest the thin fare that heere is disht before him: it may be (God willing) heereafter, that he shall find my booke with store of more licorous deinties farsed and furnished; leaving to his choise, either nicelie to pickle, or greedilie to swallow, as much as to his contentation shall best beseeme him. Wherefore my good lord, sith I may not denie, but that the worke is painfull, and I do forecast that the misconstruction may be perilous: the toilesomnesse of the paine I refer to my privat knowledge, the abandoning of the perill, I commit to your honorable patronage, not doubting thereby to be sheelded against the sinister glosing of malicious interpretors. Thus betaking your lordship to God, I craue your attentiuenes, in perusing a cantell or parcell of the Irish historie that heere infueth.

RICHARD STANIHVRST.



A continuation of the Chronicles

of Ireland, comprising the reigne of

king Henrie the eight.



Irald Fitze Bildare, fon to Thomas Fitze girald, of tho mention bath beene made in the latter end of the former Corie, a migh , I tie man of Aature.full of bo noz & courage, tho had béene

veputte a logo inflice of Areland first a last 33 percs, deceased at Bildare the thico of September, a lieth intomed in the quære of Chilles church at Dublin, in a chamell by him founded. Between him & James Butler earle of Demond (their owne gelousies fed with envie sambition, kindled with certeine lewd 20 factious abettoes of either fide) as generallie to all noblemen, to especiallis to both these bouses verie incident, ever fince the ninth years of Henrie the The occasion fenenth, beed some trouble in Ireland. The plot of which mutuali grudge was grounded bpon the factions diffention, that was raifed in England be-Wherebyon Demond addressed his letters to the deputie, specifieng a Cander raised on him and his. that he purposed to deface his gouernement, and to withstand his authoritie. And for the cleering of himfelse and of his adherents, so it stod with the deputie his pleasure, he would make his specie repaire to Dublin, there in an open audience would purge himselfe of all such odious crimes, of which he was weongfullie fulpeded.

To this reasonable request had the lood deputie no loner condescended, than Damond with a putle of the citizens suspected, and also of Listoures court

celloss greatlie diliked, lastile the extostion that the lawlesse souldiers vied in the pale by severall complaints detected: thefe thee points, with diverse o ther fulvicious circumstances laid and put togither, did minister occasion rather of further discord, than of anie prefent agræment. Demond perlifting fill in his humble late, fent his mellenger to the lord de putie, declaring that he was prest and readie to accomplify the tenour of his letters, and there bid at. tend (as became him) his loodhip his pleasure. And as for the companie, he brought with him from Mouniter, albeit suspicious braines div rather of a malicious craftinelle furmile the work, than of that ritable wifedome oid indge the best; yet not with san ding, byon conference had with his loodhip, he would not doubt to fatiffie him at full in all points, there with he could be with anie colour charged, and fo to frop up the spring, from whense all the envious fulpicions guihed. Lildare with this milo mellage intreated, appointed the meeting to be at faint Par trike his church: where they were ripping op one to another their mutuall quarrels, rather recounting the damages they susteined, than acknowledging the infuries they offered: the citizens and Damond Checitica his armie fell at some far, for the oppession and er, an bytop. action with which the fouldiers furtharged them. With whom as part of the citizens bickered, lo a round knot of archers rushed into the church, mean ning to have murthered Demond, as the capteine and belivedoer of all these lawlesse rabble. The earle of Demond suspecting that be had beene betraied, fled to the chapiter house, put to the doze, sparring it with might and maine. The citizens in their rage, imagining that everie post in the church had beene one of the fouldiers, that hab or nab at randon op to the rodloft and to the chancell, leaving some of their arrowes flicking in the images.

Kildare pursuing Damond to the chapiter house doze, undertoke on his honor that he thoulo receive no villanie. Ther bpon the reclufe crauing his lood thips hand to affure him his life, there was a cliff in the chapiter house doze, pearled at a trise, to the end both the earles Chould have Chaken hands and be reconciled. But Damond furmifing that this diff was intended for some further treatherie, that if he would fretch out his hand, it had beine percale chopt off, refused that proffer; ontill lafloare fretcht in his Checarits hand to him, and so the doze was opened, they both reconcide imbraced the forme appealed, and all their quarrels for that prefent rather discontinued than ended. In Blanchard this garbotle, one of the citizens, furnamed Blanch anne. field was flaine. This latter quarrell being like a græne wound, rather bungerlie botcht than foundlie cured, in that lailoare suspected that so great an armic (which the other alledged to be brought for the

twome the houses of Dorke & Lancaster, kildare cleaning to Docke, and Demond relieng to Lanca, fer. To the upholoing of which discord, both these no. ble men laboured with toth and naile to overcrow, 30 and confequentlie to overthrow one the other. And for fomuch as they were in honour pæres, they wrought by hoke and by croke to be in authoritie fuveriours. The douernement therfore in the reigne of Henrie the fewenth, being caft on the house of Bil. dare; James earle of Dimond a dæpe and a farre reaching man, gluing backe like a butting ram to Arike the harder pulh, oculled to inveigle his adverfarie by fubmiffion & courteffe, being not then able to overmatch him with Coutnelle or preheminence.

fant armie marched towards Dublin, incamping in an abbeie in the fuburbs of the citie, named faint Thomas court. The approching of fo great an armic

marcheth to Dublin.

tion betweene

gard of his person) to have beene of purpose allemi bled, to outface him & his power in his owne countrie. And Damond miltruffed, that this treacherous practice of the Dublinians was by kildare deutled. These and the like furmises lightlie by both the noble men misocemed, and by the continual twatling of fliring clawbacks in their eares whilpered, beed and fostered a malice betwirt them and their posteri. tie, manie pæres incurable, which caused much ffur and unquietnesse in the realme, butill the confusion 10 of the one house and the nonage of the other ended and buried their mutuall quarrels.

Dimond was nothing inferiour to the other in flomach, and in reach of policie far beyond him. Kildare was in governement mild, to his enimics The deleties forme, to the Irish such a scourge, that rather so, des fpite of him than for fauor of anie part, thep relied for a time to Damond, came bnoer his protection, ferued at his call, performed by farts (as their manner is) the outie of good lubiects. Damond was le- 2 cret and of great forecast, verie flated in fpech, dans gerous of everie trifle that touched his reputation. Bildare was open and plaine, hardlie able to rule himselfe when he were moued to anger, not so tharpe as thoat, being easilie displeased and soner appealed. Being in a rage with certeine of his fernants for faults they committed, one of his horffemen offered mafter Boice (a gentleman that reteined to him) an Brith hobbie, on condition, that he would plucke an haire from the earle his beard. Boice taking the 30 proffer at rebound, frept to the earle (with whole god nature he was throughlie acquainted) parching in ce the heat of his choler, and faid: So it is, and if it like your goo loodhip, one of your hordemen promiled me a choise horse, if I snip one haire from your ce beard. Well quoth the earle, Jagree thereto, but if thou plucke anie moze than one, I promife thee to

ce bring my fift from thine eare. The branch of this god nature hath beene derived from him to an earle of his posteritie, who being in 40 a chafe for the luxong fawcing of a patrioge, arose suddenlie from the table, meaning to have reasoned the matter with his coke. Having entred the kitch en, drowning in oblition his chalenge, he began to commend the building of the come, wherein he was at notime before, & so leaning the coke vincontrolo, he returned to his gheffs merilie. This old earle being (as is aforefaid) some hot and some cold, was of the English well beloued, a goo tuiticter, a suppellog of the revels, a warriour incomparable, towards the 50 nobles that he fantied not somewhat headlong and burnlic. Being charged before Penrie the feuenth, for burning the thurth of Cathell, and manie with nedes prepared to advouch against him the truth of that article, he suddenlie confessed the fact, to the great wondering and detestation of the councell. When it was loked how he wold incifie the matter; By Jelus (quoth he) I would never have done it, had it not beine tolo me that the archbilhop was within. And bicause the same archbishop was one of his but 60 liest accusers there present, the king merilie laughed at the plainnesse of the noble man, to sæhim alledge that thing for ercnic, which most of all did aggrauate his oftenie.

The last article against him they conceined in thefe tearmes; Finallie all Ireland can not rule this earle. Po : quoth the king: then in god faith thall his earle rule all Ireland. Thus was that acculation turned to a least. The earle returned to his countrie loed deputie, who (not with Canding his Complication in peace) was of that valour and policie in war, as his name beed a greater terror to the Irish, than other mensarmes. In his warres he vico for policie a balance reichese kind of diligence, og a headie carelesnesse,

to the end his fouldiors fould not faint in their attempts, were th'enimie of neuer fo great power. Wee ing generall in the field of knocktow, where in effect all the Irith rebels of Ireland were gathered again & the English pale, one of the earle his capteins prefented him a band of therns, even as they were reas die to foine battell, and withall demanded of the erle in what fernice he would have them imploied. Paris (quoth he) let them stand by and give us the gaze. Such was his courage, that not with landing his enimies were two to one: yet would be fet fo god a face on the matter, as his fouldtoes thould not once fuspea, that he either needed, or longed for anie fur ther belve.

Daning triumpantlie vanquiffico the Iriff in that conflice, he was thoutlie after, as well for that, as other his valiant exploits, made knight of the garter: and in the fift yeare of Henrie the eight in that renowme thonour he died, wherein for the space of manie yeares he lived. Po maruell if this fucceffe were a coeffe to the adverse part, which the longer it held alofe, and bit the bridle, the more egerlie it follo, wed the course, having once got scope and rome at will, as thall be hereafter at full declared. Demond bearing in mind the treacherie of the Dublinians, The Dublis procured such as were the gravest prelats of his cler, mans accused, gie, to intimate to the court of Kome the heathenith riot of the citizens of Dublin, in rulhing into the thurth armed, polluting with flaughter the confecrated place, defacing the images, profirating the resliks, rating downe altars, with barbarous outcres, moze like milcreant Saracens, than chillian catho, likes. Therebpon a legat was posted to Ireland, Alegat fent bending his course to Dublin , where some after ine from Kome. was folemnelie received by Malter Fitzstmons, archbishop of Dublin, a grave pielat, for his lerning finons. and wifedome chosen to be one of king Henrie the fewenth his chapleins, in which vocation he continued tivelue yeares, and after was advanced to be archbis Mop of Dublin.

The legat upon his arrivall indicted the citie for his exectable offense: but at length, by the procure, ment as well of the archbilhop as of all the cleargie, he was weighed to give the citizens absolution with this caucat, that in veteffation of fo hogrible a fact, and Ad perpetuam reimemoriam, the maior of Dublin Dublin. should go barefoted thoroughout the citie in open procession before the facrament, on Corpus Chiffi date: which penitent fatifiaction was after in everte fuch procession bulie accomplished. Girald Fitigi' The carle of rald, some and heire to the aforesaid orle of laibare, intherelosd was Chootlie after his fathers becease constituted beputie. loss deputte of Ireland, before thome in the feuenth peare of Benrie the eight, there was a parlement A parlement holden at Dublin, therein it was established, that Dublin. all such as bring out of England the kings letters of prinat feale, for particular causes against anie of the king his lubicas in Ireland, Chould find lufficient fuerties in the king his chancerie in Ireland; to bee bound by recognifiance, that the plaintife thall fatil, fie the defendant, that purgeth or acquiteth himfelfe of the matter to him alledged, for his colfs and das mages suffeined by such wrongfull veration. Ahis noble man being valiant and well fpoken, was no, thing inferior to his father in martiall prowelle, that fing in the time of his government the familie of the Doles, battering Dearrell his caffels, and bringing in awe all the Irith of the land.

Mis earle of goo meaning, to bnite the houses Diers Butler in frienothip, matched his fiffer Bargaret fitigt and Darga rald with Piers Butter earle of Dforte, thoma be ret fuggirald allo helped to recouer the earlbome of Dymond, into espouled. the which, affer the decease of the earle James, a bas faro Butler had by abatement intruded. Great and

maiter fitz

Denance in-

manifold were the miseries the ladie Margaret Su Ceined, bir hufband Piers Butler being fo egerlie purface by the viurper, as he durit not beare up hed, but was forced to house and lurke in woos and for refis. The noble woman being great with chilo, and boon necessitie constreined to ble a spare diet (for hir onelie sustenance was milke) the longed fore for wine, and calling bir lost, and a truffie fernant of James white his, James White buto bir, the requelled them both to helpe hir to some wine, for the was not able anie longer to induce so trice a life. Erulie Pargaret, quoth the earle of Difone, thou thalt have fore of wine within this foure and twentie houres, or elic

thou thalt feed alone on milke for me.

The Pert date following, Piers having intelligence that his entinie the bale Butler would have travelled from Donmoze to Kilkennie, notwithfan: ding he were accompanied with fir hollemen: yet Diers hauing none but his lackte, did foreffall him in the wate, and with a couragious tharge gozed the bassaro through with his speare. This prosperous calme fucceding the former boilferous frome, the lavie Margaret began to take heart, hir naturall Soutnesse floted, as well by the remembrance of hir noble birth, as by the intelligence of hir honozable match. Bildare all this while kept in authoritie, not, withstanding the puthes given against him by fecret heavers that envied his fortune, and fought to nourith the old grudge, was at length by their privie packing fetched by to the court of England by commillion, and caused him to be eramined bpon of nerse interrogatories touching the affaires of Ire.

He left in his rome Paurice Fitzthomas of Lackranh lord inffice : and shortlie after came over lord lieutenant Thomas Howard earle of Surreie, who was after duke of Postfolke, grandfather to the last buke, accompanied with two hundred peomen of the crowne : before whome, Mortlie after his repaire thither, there was a parlement holden at Dublin, in 4 which there past an act, that all wilfull burning of come, as well in reckes in the fields, as also in villages and townes, thould be high treason. Item, an an against loding of wolles & flor, bpon paine of for feiture of the bouble value of the same, the one halfe to the king, and the other halfe to him that will fue therefore. Item, that anie person seized of lands, rents.02 tenements in pollellion 02 in ble, buto the pearelie value of ten markes about the charges, in fæsimple, fæstalle, og fog terme of life, copie hold, og 50 ancient demeane, thall patte in everie atteint. While the losd lieutenant fat at dinner in the castell, of Dublin, he heard news that the Hozs with a maine armie were even at the entrie of the borders, readie to inuade the English pale. Immediatlie men were leuied by John Fitzlimons then maioz of Dublin, and the nert morrow foining them but his band, the lieutenant marched towards the frontiers of

The Mozes boon the lieutenant his award, seue 60 red themselues into fundzie companies, and buderstanding that the cariage was dragging after the armie, and flenderlie manned, certeine of them that ged the lieutenant his fervants, and fuch of the citis zens as were appointed to gard the cartage. Patrike Fitzlimons, a Arong Aurdie ponker, kept the ente mies such tacke, as he chased part of them awaie, rescued the carrage, flue two of the revels, and brought the heads with him to mailter maioz his tent. The nert morning, two of the lieutenant his men, that flunke awaie from Fitzsimons, thinking that the cariage had beene lott, advertised their lood that fitts amons fled awaie; and the Dozes were to mante in companic, as it had beene but follie for two to bicker

with fo great a number. The licutenant polled in a rage to the mator his paullion, telling him that his man fitstimons was a cowardie traiter in run. ning awate, when he thould have defended the ca. riage.

uge. That am I,my lood (quoth Patrike Fitzamons) fkipping in his thirt out of the tent, with both the heads in his hand: Dy loed, I am no coward, I and to my facklings when your men gave me the flip, a rescued the carriage, and have here sufficient tokens >> of my manhod, tumbling downe both the heads. Saile thou fo fitzlimons, quoth the lieutenant ? 3 > crie the mercte, and by this Beorge, I would to God Abalian it had beene my good hap to have beene in thy compa, with. nie in that fkirmilly. So drinking to Fitzsimons in a boll of wine, and honourablie rewarding him for his and fervice, he returned to his pavillion, where having knowledge of Dmoze his recule, he purfued bim with a trope of hostmen. The lieutenant thus Cheented palling forwards, was elpted a gunner of Dmors, Durrent tho lodged close in a wood side, and watching his bangerto time, he discharged his peece at the verie face of the dain. lieutenant, Arake the biloz off his helmet, and year. fed no further, as God would.

This did he (retchlette in maner what became of himselfe, so he might amage the armie for a time) and furelie hereby he brake the swiffnesse of their following, advantaged the flight of his capteine, which thing he wan with the price of his owne blond. For the fouldiors would no further, till they had rand facked all the nokes of this woo, verelie suspening some ambulh thereabout, and in severall knots for retted out this gunner, whome fitzwilliams and fitzwille Beolow of the Roch were faine to mangle and to Bedlow. hew in peces, because the wretch would never yeld. In the meane wille, defiance was proclamed with burnely France and Scotland both at once, which mound for home. the king to call home Surreie out of Ireland, that he might implote him in thole wars . His prowelle, integritie, god nature, and course of gouernment, the countrie much commended . Piers Butler pins 50 carle of Mazie was appointed lozd deputie. In the lerented meane time, kildare attending the king his pleas former for his diffraction reconserve former than the fure for his dispatch, recovered favour through the instance of the marques Dorset, whose baughter Dame Clizabeth Breie he elpouled, and lo beparted home. Pow was partaker of all the deputies counsell one Robert Talbot of Belgard, whome the Robert Ed Biralvines deadlie bated thim they procured to bot of bot képe a kalendar of all their dwings, tho incented gard brother against brother. In which rage, James Rity Girald meeting the fato gentleman befice Balli

the deputie to keepe his Chillmas with him. Math this despitefull murther both lides bake ganget out into open enimitie, and especiallie the countesse of the countries. of Mozie, Bildare his fifter, a rate woman, and a. Office ble for wisebome to rule a realme, hav not hir for mach ouerruled hir knowledge. Here began infor mations of new treatons, palling to and fro, with complaints and replies . But the marques Dorfet had wrought to for his forme in law, that he was full fered to reft at home, and onelie commillioners di rected into Ireland, with authoritie to cramine the rot of their griefes: therein if they found kiloare anie thing at all purged, their instructions were to depole the plaintiffe, and to liveare the other load de putie . Commissioners were these , sir Kafe Eger, Commissioners lace . ton, a knight of Chelhire, Anthonie Fitzherbert, nirgient fecond inflice of the common plas, and James Proposers, Rome of African plass, and James Denton , deane of Litchfield ; who hauing erami ned these acculations, suddenlie twhe the swood from kilbare the earle of Marie, Aware Kiloare lood deputie, be footstill foze thome Con Dneale bare the Twood that Daie . bepatit

moze, flue him even then bpon his tourneie foward

The baltard Wutler flaine.

Lilldare fent toz into Eng-

Maurice Fitzthomas iord iultice. Burrie lozd licutenant of Freland. A parlement holden at

Dublin.

EThe MAnzest in rebellion.

John filt ũmons.

13atribe Fitzlimons.

Con

Concerning the murtherer whom they might have hanged , they brought him pailoner into England, prefentes him to the cardinall Wolfete, tho was faio to hate kiloare his bloud; and the cardinall intending to have put him to execution, with moze res Curdinall Vallete ent: proch and diffenor to the name, caused him to be led est to the Giraldines. about the firets of London haltered, and having a taper in his band : thich alked to long time , that the beane of Lichfield Reped to the king, and begged his pardon. The cardinall was fore inflamed here, 10 with, the malice not hitherto foranke, was through lie ripened, & therfore henleforward Diforte brought fouth diverse profes of the deputie his disorder, for that (as he alledged) the deputie Hould winke at the articles, the earle of Delmond, whome by vertue of the king his letters he ought to have attached. Also, that he bught for acquaintance and affinitie with meere J. rith enimies, that he had armed them against him. then being the king bis deputie ; he hanged and headed god lubiects, whome he milfruffed to leane 20 to the Butlers friendthip. Kildare was therfore prefentlie commanded to appeare, which he bid, leaving in his rome his brother fitzgirald of Lerlip, whom they thoulie depoted, and choic the baron of Dela uin, whome Doonos toke prifoner, then the earle of Officie (to thew his abilitie of teruice) brought to inlipo depu- Dublin an armie of Trithmen ,hauing capteins o. uer them Dconoz, Dmoze, & Dcarroll, & at S. Parie abbete was chosen deputie by the kings councell.

In which office, being himfelfe (faue onelie in 2 feats of armes) a simple gentleman, he bare out his honoz, and the charge of governement verie worthis lie, through the fingular wifedome of his countelle, aladie of luch a post, that all estates of the realme cronched unto hir; to politike, that nothing was thought lubstantiallie debated without hir aduile : manlike and tall of Cature, verie liberall and bouns tifull; a fure friend, a bitter enimie, hardlie billiking where the fantied, not easilie fantieng where the difhulband his countrie was reclamed from fluttiff nelle and Couentie, to cleane bedding and civilitie. But to these vertues was linked such a selfe liking, luch an overweening, and fuch a matelite above the tenure of a lubied, that for affurance thereof, the ficked not to abule hir hulbands bonor against hir brothers follie. Potwithstanding, I learne not that the practice his knowing (which infued, and was to hir bnoonbtedlie great heavineffe, as boon whome both the blemith thereof, and the substance of the 50 greater part of that familie bepended after) but that the by indired meanes litted hir brother out of credit to advance hir hulband, the common voice, and the thing it felfe speaketh. All this while above the earle of kildare at the court, and with much ado found thist to be called before the loods to answer suddens lie. They fat boon him divertite affected, and name unid before lie the cardinali lost chancellos milithing the earle his cause, comforted his accusers, and inforced the articles objected, in these words.

The cardinall lord chancellor chargeth Kildare. Mwot well (my load) that I am not the meetelf at this bood to charge you with these treasons, because it hach plesed some of your pusellows to report that I am a professed enimie to all nobili-" tie, 4 namelie to the Giraldines : but fæing euerie a curl boy can fay as much when he is controlled, and feing these points are so weightie, that they should " not be diffembled of us; and to apparant, that they " can not be denied of pou ; I mult baue leave (notce withflanding your fale flander) to be the mouth of these honozable at this present, and to trumpe your training in your wate, bowloeuer you take me.

First pon remember, how the lews carle of Del. mono your kiniman (who patteth not whome he fer > ueth, might he change his maifter) fent his confe, derats with letters of credence buto Francis the French king: and having but cold comfort there, " went to Charles the emperoz, proffering the helpe of >> Pounter and Connagh towards the conquest of ,, Arcland, if either of them would helpe to win it from our king. How manie letters, what precepts, what " messages, what threats have bin sent you to appres >> hend him, and yet not done? Thy lo ? Forloth I could not catch him. Pay nay earle, forfoth you " would not watch him. If he be fulfile inspeaced, why "> are you parciall in fo great a charge? If not, thy are you fearefull to have him tried ? Dea, for it will be fwoone and deposed to your face, that for feare of >> mæting him , you have winked wilfulie , thunned >> his light, altered your course, warned his friends, ,, Nowed both eares and eies against his betedoes, and then soener you take voon you to hunt him out, " then was he fure afore hand to be out of your walke. >>

Surelie, this jugling and falle plaie little became either an boneff man called to fuch honoz, oz a noble man put in fo great truft. Had you loft but a " com or a horde of your owne, two hundred of your >> reteiners would have come at your whille to rescue the prete from the bitermost edge of Aller : all the Brith in Freland must have given you the way. But >> in purfuing to needfull a matter as this was, mercio, full God , how nice , how bangerous , how waice ,, ward haue pou beene . Dne while he is from home, another thile he keepeth home , fometimes fled, fometimes in the borders, there you dare not benture . Iwith my load, there be threwd bugs in the borders for the earle of lailbare to feare: the earle may the king of Milbare ; for then you are difpoled, ,, poureigne moze like than rule in the land : where you are malicious, the true finbieds fand for Frish enimies : where you are pleased, the Irish foe franliked : the onelie meane at those baies thereby hir 40 beth for a tult subied : hearts & hands liucs & lands are all at your courtelie: who fauneth not thereon cannot red within your fmell, and your fmell is fo ranke that you trake them out at pleasure. Thisleft the cardinall was speaking, the earle chased and changed colour, and at last brake out, and interrup-

ted him thus. My lozo chancelloz, I belech you parbon me, I Aitoareintere am thost wifted, and you I perceive intend a long carbinals tale: If you proceed in this order , halfe my purga tale. tion will be loft for lacke of carriage. I have no ,, Chole trickes, not art of memorie: except you heare me thile I remember your words , your fecond procelle will hammer out the former. The lords ale The lords loctat, the for the most part tenderlie loued him, tender laus and knew the cardinall his manner of tawnts to bare. lothfome, as therewith they were inured manie yeares ago , humblie belought his grace to charge him directie with particulars, and to dwell in some one matter, butill it were eramined throughlie. 60 That granted, it is god reason (quoth the earle)that Be answereth your grace beare the mouth of this boot; but my the carbinals loed, those mouths that put these things into your mouth, are verie wide mouths, such in ded as have " gaped long for my wacke, and now at length , for 39 want of better finde, are faine to fill their months 33 with lmoke. What my couline Delmond hath com, " palled, as I know not, fo I betheel his naked heart 39 for holding out fo long, If he can be taken by mine 8, 39 gents that prefentite wait for him , then baue-mine 39 aduerfaries bewrated their malice; and this beape " of heinous words thall resemble a scarecrow, or a 39 man of train that læmeth at a bluth to carrie fome 39 proportion, but when it is felt and pelled disconcreth so a vanitie, feruing onelie to feare crowes cano 3 " perelie 3.1.

berelie truff, your honors thall fie the profe by the " thing it felfe, within thefe few baies . But go to: " fumpose he neuer be had? What is kildare to blame " for it, more than my good brother of Marie, who co nor with francing his high promiles, having also the bings power, is pet content to bring him in at lea-" fure: Can not the erle of Delmond hift but I mut be of counfell: Cannot he hide him ercept I winke: ce If he be clofe am I his mate ? If he be frænded am « Jatrattor: This is a doubtie kind of aecusation, 1 " which they vige against me, wherein they are Cabled co and mired at my fird ventall. Dou would not le him c. (faie they.) Tho made them fo familiar with mine ce cielight: De then was the erle within my biele: De c who floo by when I let him flip ? D? where are the ce tokens of my wilfull hudwinke . But you fent him co wood to beware of you. Tho was the mellenger? Conuince my negatiors ? Conuince my negatiors, ce fie how lofe this ible geare hangeth togither . Defe comond is not taken. Well, you are in fault. Whise 2 Becanfe you are . Tho prometh it . Po bodie. What confederes : Soit femeth. To thome : To pour cc enimics. Tho toloit them . They will flueare it. cc That other ground? Rone. Will they sweare it in losd? This then of like they know it, either they ce have milite hand to thele, or can bring forth the mel cc fenger , or were prefent at a conference, or printe to Defmond,og fome boote betogated it to them, og thep themselnes were my carriers or vicegerents therece in : which of these parts will they chose, for I know 3 them to well . To reckon my felfe comma by their bare woods or headlesse fatengs, or frantike othes, ce were but mere ntockerie. Dy letter were fone read, ce were any luch writing ertant, my feruants & freends are readie to be fifted : of my coufine of Delmond ce they may lie lowely, fince no man here can well conce trarte them. Touching my felfe, I neuer noted in them much wit, 02 fo fait faith, that I would have gace ged on their Clence the life of a good hound, much leffe comine owne. I bombt not, may it like your honozs to 40 apole them, how they came to the knowlege of thole matters, which they are fo readie to vepole : but von ce thall find their tongs chaffied to another man his ce trendjer, and as it were unights of the post, subo, ned to fate, fiveare and ffare the bittermost they can , as those that passe not what they saic, not with what face ce they faie it, fo they fate no truth . Wut of another fie fie it græneth me that your goo grace thom I take co to be totle and tharpe, and the of pour bleffed disposico tion witheth me well, thould be fo farre gone in cre- 50 of diting thefe corrupt informers that abufe the igno. co rance of your flate and countrie to my werill . Little know you (my load) how necessarie it is, not onelie to the governoz, but also for everie noble man in ateland to hamper his oncivill neighbors at difcres ce tion, wherein if they waited for procedle of law, and ce had not those lines and lands you speake of within ce their reach, they might hap to lofe their owne lines co and lands without law. Pour beare of a case as it co were in a dieame, and fiele not the limart that bereth us. In England there is not a meane finbled that 60 examined before the councell, there he preffed him fo or dare extend his hand to fiftip a piere of the realme. ce In Ireland except the losd have cunning to his frength, and frength to lave his crowne, and fuffi-In what cafe cient authoritie to take theues a variets then they ftand the nos Air, he thall find them Awarine to fail, that it will be Ireland with to late to call for inflice. If you will have our fervice ce take effect, you must not tie be altonies to these fuofciall proceedings, where with your realine (thance ked be God) is innred . Conching my kingdome, I know not what your logothip thould meane thereby. ce If your grace imagine that a kingbome conflicth ce in ferning Goo, in obeleng the prince, in gouerning with love the common-wealth, in thouldering fub-

teas, in suppelling rebels, in executing tuffice, in , bancling blind affections, I would be willing to be inclined with so verticus and rotall a name. But if " therefore you terme me a king, in that you are per, fuaded that I repine at the government of my four. reigne, or winke at malefactors, or opposite civilili, uers, I otterlie bisclame in that odious terme, mar, ucling greatlie that one of your grace his profound wisebome, would seeme to appropriat so sacred a " name to fo wicked athing . But howfocuer it be " (my loed) I would you and I had thanged kingdoins ", but for one moneth, I would trust to gather by more crummes in that space, than twife the revenues of my poze earledome: but you are well and warme, and to hold you, and upbate not me with fuch an ook, ous terme . I flumber in an hard cabin , when you ,, neve in a loft bed of downe: I ferue boder the king ,, bis cope of heaven, then you are ferued buder acanopie: 3 deinke water out of my skull, when you drinke wine out of golden cups: my courfor is trafned to the field, when your genet is taught to amble: " ithen you are begraced and belozded, a crouched and knéled buto, then find I small grace with our Irish " borderers , ercept I cut them off by the knes.

At these girosthe councell would have smiled, if they durif: but ech man bit his lip, theld his counter nance, for howfoener fome of them leaned to the erle of Difozie, they all hated the cardinall, who percel The carb uing that kildare was no babe, role in a fume from nal note the councell table, committed the erle, & deferred the matter till more vired probations came out of Ire: land. The buke of Portfolke, who was late lieutenant in Freland, perceining the carbinall to be foze bent Thebated against the nobleman, rather for the deadlie hatred Populate he bare his house, than for anie great matter he had bounding he there with to charge his person, Hept to the king, and craued Bildare to be bis prifoner, offering to be bound for his forth comming, over and above all his lands, bobie for bodie. Wherebpon, to the cardinal his great griefe, the prisoner was bailed, and hono rablie by the duke interteined. During his above in the buke his house, Dreale and Dconoz, and all their freends and alies, watching their time to an rebellon noie the pale, make open infurrection against the earle of Mazie then losd deputie of Ireland, info much that the noble man millruffing the ficklenelle of Delmond on the one live, the force of these new fart by rebels on the other five floo halfe amaged, as it were betweene fire a water. For remedie where, of, letters thicke and therefold were addressed to the councell of England, purposting that all thele late killand hurlie burlies were of purpose raised by the meanes frehimps of Midare, to the blemilhing and flaining of his high ther Mazie his government . And to put the mat. ter out of boubt, it was further added, that kildare commanded his daughter Glice Fitzgirald, wife to the baron of Slane, to ercite in his name the afore fain traitors to this open rebellion.

The cardinal hereupon caused kildare to be Depelie with this late diffofaltie, that the melampth the freends frint (which were fufficient grounds to 0) mittel northrow an unident person) the earle was reput ned to the tower. The nobleman betoke himfelfe to Boo a the king, he was hactilie beloued of the lieutenant, pitted in all the court, and transing in fohard a cale, altered liftle of his accultomed hue, comfor feo other noblemen palloners with him, villembling his owner to took . On a night when the lieutenant a manage and he for the fe disport were plateing at alvegrote of content (holleboot), luddenlie commeth from the cardinall a killand mandatum

maidatum toerecute fullbare on heniorow. The earlemarking the lieutenants despetigh : By faint Buie lieutenant (quoth he)there is folle mad gaine mhat feroll; but fall how it will, this thew is for in thoole. When the world to as told hun i from I praiethx (quoth he) od no mote but learnoutluced lie from the king his owire month, thether his high nelle be wirting diereto of not e bote boubred the lientenant to displease the carounal spect of verte pare loue to his treent, he polleth to the thing at mis ! night, and delivered his errand : for at all boures of the night the lieutenant hath accesse to the prince Compinal Chin Scattons. The Ming controlling the laucine Ce examination of the priest (for those were his termes) believes to in the lientenant his figure in token of countermand, the third when the carolinal had fone, he began to breath out bile aloried language, abich the lieutenant was loth to heare, to lest him pattring t chanting the dinolihis Fator noster . Thus bratto op the Corms sulangon of factour, and within few yeares for addition Shell fington was fent ouer lozo deputie; and brought with him the erle pardoned and rio from all his troubles. Then it was bruted, that Skeffington, the earle

and be of latibare, and Coward Staples bilhop of Deth wallen landed niere Dublin, the maior and citizens met him with a folemnte procedion on faint Parie abi beis griene, ichere mellter Thomas Fitzumons res corber of Dublin made a pithie ozation to congratue late the governor and the earle his prosperous arri nall, to thome Sheffington Chaped an answere in bullington his wife: Pailter maioz and mailter recorder pour bullett, have at length this noble man here prefent, for whom you fore longed , thiled he was abfent . And after a manie Cornies by him litteined, he hath now to the cc comfort of his frænds, to the confulier of his foes, laboued violence with patience, in wites with fuffers ance, and malice with obedience t and fuch butchers nhands as of hatred thir Red after his blome, are now taken edutobes for outcast massives, littered in cutrish bloud. How 40 well my matter the king bath bæne of his gratious inclination affected to the earle of Bilbare his backe to frend, being by his full befort from his maielite week co dedithe credit wherein this noble man at this prefent abideth, manifestice verlareth. Wherefore it resteth, ce that you thanke God and the king for his fale arri nall. As for his welcome, maifter recorder his cours « teous discourse, your great ailemblies, your chere. full countenances, your willing meetings, your for ce lemne processions ow to far thew it, as you minister 50 ce me occasion on his loodhip his behalfe, rather to

a nie further ccremonie. Having enverhis mation, they rove all into the citic, where Mostlie after the earle of Offosie furrendied the fwood to fir Milliam Sheffington . During the time that Bilbare was in England, the lept of the Toles making his absence their harucle, cear fed not to molest and spoile his tenants, and therefore the crie meaning not to wap up to lightlie their mae 60 nifold injuries, was octermined prefentlic opon his arrivall to crie them quittance : to the freedinelle of which fernice he requested the aid of the citizens of Dublin: Ferpeding in Chaifes church their answere touching this motion, the mator this brethren promis feoto affif him with two hundred archers . The late come bishop of Weth being then present, moued question, whether the citizens were pardoned for crowning Lambert contrarie to their outie of alles giance; and if they were not pardoned, he thought they might advantage the king thereby. Whereat one of their lagest and expertest albertien, named John Fitzsimons, flept forth and faid : Dy lord of Deth, may I be to bold as to crave what countries

thanke you for your courteffe, than to erhort you to as

man you men Parie lie (quoth the bithop) I would pouthoutoknowit, Jama gentiemen and an Englilliman : Op lood (quoth Altesimons) and means ing is tolearns, in what thise of England von were borne & Int Bacoliuhire good fir (quoth Staples.) This then my wir (quoth Kitsft inons) we are no traitors, bedanceit was the earlesof Lincolne and the losd Lokelithal commentations and therefore if poliborgentiemaliof Lincolnibite, fee that you be pardoned, for God alto our Bing de thanked we have nied of none. At this an liver Wells was let, and link and were prefered were forced to finde; to lie athat a round fall he raught in his owner in me.

angn the fecond peare of Sheffington his gouernes hehrle white ment lithappened that one Henrie White, ferdant railed an bys to Benet amerchant of Dublin, was pitching of a roze in Dus cart of hate in the high firet; and having offered botes plate to pattengers that walked to and fro , he tet a bottle of his hate fall on a fouldious bonet, as he or that time, the nert years anolisis was call out 30 palled by his cart. The bulblos taking this knamly knacke in budgeon, hurled his bagger at him, and having narrowlie milt the princocks, he flicked it in a poll not farre off. White leapt bowne from the cart, and thrust the fouldier through the shoulder with his pike. Wherebpon there was a great oproze in the citie betweene the fouldiors and the appentifes, in formuch as Thomas Barbie being the matoz, hauing Chomas the king his fwood opatone, was hardlie able to ap: Barbic mas peale the frais, in which diverte were wounded, and io, none flaine. The losd deputie illued out of the callell, and came as facre as the pillorie, to whome the maio; potted thosough the preate with the fwood naked wir der his arme, a presented White that was the brewer white parteof all this garboile to his loodhip, whome the gamer, ned. nour pardoned, as well for his courage in bichoring as for his retchielle limplicitie and pleasaninelle in telling the whole bilcourle. Whereby a man maie le bow manie blondie quarels a bealing fwathbuch ler mate picke out of a bottle of hate, namelie when his braines are forebitten with a bottle of namic

About this time there was a great forreralled in England, about the king his omagfe, who thinks ing it expedient in so fickle a woods to have a fure poll in Freland, made Bilbare lord beputte. Cromer Bilbare 1020 the primat of Armagh lord chancellor, and fir James Deputie. Butler lozo treasuroz. Abheffington, supposing that Cromer. he was put beside the cothin by the secret cannal Butter. fing of kilbare his friends, concelued therof agreat affenden ort gelousie, being therein the deeper ozenched, bicaufe mudare. that kildare having received the fword, would permit Skeffington, who was late gouernour, now like a meane prinat person, to banle attendance among other luters in his houle at Dublin, named the Carbrie. Steffington plateng thus on the bit, Be faileth ins Mottlie after failed into England, bpon ichofe de to England, parture the loso deputie summoned a parlement at Dublin, where there pall an ad against leafers of Aparlim n corne : also for the buiting and appropriation of the fundament at parsonage of Galtrinto the privile of faint Beters Bublin. by Trim. In the parlement time, Dieale ona full oco by De den inuaded the countrie of Ariell, rifting and foot neale. ling the king his fubicas, at which time also was the earle of Officie greatite veren by the Giraldina; by reason of the old quarrels of either five aftelbrond

The next yeare, the loss deputie going against kiloarchurt; Dearroll , was pitifullie burt in the fine with a guin, at the castell of Birre; so that he never after intoice his lims, not belinered his woods in god plight, otherwife like inough to have beene longer forbonne in confideration of his manie noble qualities great god fertices, and the frate of thole times. Diralgho wais complaints were addressed to the king of tiefs encomities, **3.4.**

gregion.

Fril hare aca sufed.

to England.

Thomas

Fitzgirald.

enormities, and that in most beinous maner that could be deviced, boulting out his durings as it were to the last brake of linister furmiles, turning currie privat infurie to be the king his quarrell, emaking euerie puddings packe as huge in thew as Samthe is fent for fon his piller. Where bon kildare was commanded by tharpe letters to repaire into England , leauing fuch a person for the furniture of that realme, and the gouernance of the land in his ablence, for whole doings he would answer. Being bpon the light of this letter prepared to faile into England, he fat in councellat Dublin, and having fent for his fonne & befre the load Thomas Fitzgirald (a yong fripling of one and twentie yeares of age, borne in England, fonne to the load Zouch his daughter, the earle of kildare his first wife) in the hearing of the whole bord thus be spake.

> The earle of Kildare his exhortation to his sonne the lord Thomas.

Onne Chomas, I doubt not, but you know that my lovereigne lood the king hath fent for me into England, and what thall betide me God knoweth, for 3

know not. But howfoener it falleth, both you and I know that I am well flept in yeares : and as I maic Choetlie die, for that I am mortall, lo I must in half deceale, bicaule 3 am old. Wherefore infomuch as my winter is welnere ended, and the spring of your age now buddeth, my will is that you behave pour felfe fo wifelie in thefe pour greene yeares, as that to the comfort of your friends you maie infoie the pleasure of summer, gleane and reape the fruits of your haruest, that with honour you maie grow to the catching of that hoarie winter, on which you fee me your father fail pricking. And wheras it pleas foth the king his maiellie, that boon my beparture here hence, I Chould Cubstitute in my rome luch one. for whose government I would answer: albeit I know, that your yeares are tender, your wit not let. led, pour judgement not fullie rediffed, and therefore I might be with goo cause reclamed from putting a naked fwood in a young mans hand : yet not with standing, forsomuch as I am your father, and you my sonne, I am well asured to beare that froke with you in feering your thip, as that byon ante information I maie command you as your father.and correct you as my sonne for the wrong handling of

There be here that fit at this bood, far moze fufficient personages for so great charge than you are. But that then ? If I should cast this burthen on their Moulders, it might be that hereafter they would be so farre with envie carried, as they would percase hazzaro the loffe of one of their owne etes, to be alfured that I Chould be deprived of both mine eies. But for formuch as the case toucheth your skin as niere as mine, and in one respect nigher than mine, bicause (as I faid before) I rest in the winter, and you in the 60 lpzing of your yeares, and now I am resolued date by date to learne rather how to die in the feare of Bod, than to live in the pompe of the world, I thinke you will not be so brainesicke, as to stab your selfe thozough the bodie, onelie to fcarifie my fkin with the point of your blade. Therefore (my fonne) confider, that it is easie to raze, and hard to build, and in all your affaires be scholed by this bood, that for wifedome is able, and for the entier affection it beareth your house, will be found willing, to lesson you with found and fage adulle. For albeit in authoritie you rule them, yet in councell they must rule you. My fonne, you know that my late maimes Aifleth my talke : otherwise I would have grated longer

on this matter. For a good tale maie be tivife told, and a found adule (efflones iterated) taketh the box per impression in the attentine bearer bis mind. But although my fatherlie affection requireth my bis scourfe to be langer, yet I trust your god inclination on askethit to be hoster; and boon that asurance, here in the presence of this honourable assemble, 3 beliner you this fwood. Thus he spake for his last kultule farewell with trickling teares, and having ended, he inhing and find the councell, committed them to God. England and immediative after he was imbarked.

But although with his grave erhortation the frofen hearts of his adust faries for a thort frit thatwed vet not with framing they turned some after all this gaie Glosapatri unto a further fetch; faieng that this bus ome was nothing afe but to dayell their ries with fome militalian fualing knacke, to the end they fould advertise the king of his lotall speches : adding further, that he 20 was to to enill that could not speake well . And to force the prepented treatons they lated to his charge, with further furmiles they certified the councell of England, that the earle before his departure furni. Det unte theo his owne piles and forts with the king his artile for taking his owne piles and forts with the king his artile for taking his lerie and munition taken footh of the affell of Due tillent. blin. The earle being examined bpon that article be. fore the councell, although he answered that the few potguns and chambers he toke from thense, were placed in his castell to strengthen the borders a gainst the incodes of the Frish enimie; and that if he intended anie treason, he was not to folish, as to fortifie walles and fromes, and to commit his naked bones into their bands : vet not with francing he delie uered his speeches by reason of his pallete, in such Raggering and making wife, that fuch of the count cell as were not his friends, persuading the resithat he had sunke in his owne tale, by imputing his li fping and dragging answer rather to the gilt of con-Icience, than to the infirmitie of his late maine, had him committed, butill the king his pleasure were killen in further knowne.

But before we wave anie further in this matter, for the better opening of the thole ground, it would be noted, that the earle of Kildare, among diverle hidden adversaries, had in these his later troubles foure principall enimies that were the chiefe means katomita caules of his overthrow, as in those daics it was think me commonlie bruted. The first was John Alen archiv Age In in Suppose Dublin, a gentleman of a good house, that archive leine to cardinall Wolfeie, a after by the cardinall Dubin. his means constituted archistop of Dublin, a lear ned prelat, a good houtholder, of the people indiffer rentlie beloued, and moze would have beene, had he not overbulied himselfe in supplanting the house of Biloare. And although it were knowne, that his first grudge towards the Biraldins proceeded from the great affection be bare his load and mafter the cardi nall, infomuch as he would not ficke, were he able, for the pleasuring of the one to bnow the other; yet fuch occasions of greater hatred after insued (name, lie for that he was displaced from being lord chancel log, 7 Cromer the primat of Armagh by Kildare his drifts fetled in the office) as notivith francing the cardinallhis combe was cut in England, yet did he per, fill in pursuing his wonted malice toward that le.

The fecond that was linked to this confederacie, bir 74 was fir John Alen knight, firft fecrefarie to fijis 3im bright archbilhop, after became maifter of the rolles, laffie load chancellog. And although fir John Alen were not of kin to the archbithop, but onelie of the name; yet notwithstanding the archbishop made so great rec koning of him, as well for his forecast in matters of weight, as for his faithfulnette in affaires of truti, as that soener exploit were executed by the one, was

forthwith diemed to have beene deutled by the other. the third of this crew was Thomas Canon, secreta. rie to Sheffington, tho thinking to be revenged on Biloace for putting his losd and matter beside the cuhin, as he furmiled, was verie willing to have an or in that bote . The fourth that was suspected to Bin Com: make the mufter, was Kobert Cowlie, first bailiffe in Dublin,after feruant to the ladie Pargaret Fit; giralo, countelle of Damond and Dilogie, lafilie mas Aer of the colles in Freland, and finallie he deceased

(himas

at London. This gentleman for his wiftome and policie was well esteemed of the ladie Pargaret countesse of Morie, as one by whole adulle the was in all hir af. faires directed. Therebpon fome fulpicious perlons were persuaded and brought in mind, that he was the lower of all the viscoed that rested betweene the two brethren Bildare and Dlorie : as though he could not be rated in the favour of the one, but that hemust haue professed open hatred buto the ofher. 2 Thele foure, as birds of one feather , were lumoled to be open entimies to the house of kiloare, bearing that swate in the commonwealth, as they were not occasioned (as they thought) either to crave freend, thip of the Giraldines , 02 greatlie to feare their has tred and enimitie. There were belide them diverle o. ther fecret unverminers, the impought fo cunning. lie bnoor the thumbe, by holding with the hare, and running with the bound, as if taileare had profpe, red, they were affured, their malice would not have 3 bene in manner suspected: but if he had beine in his affaires fabled, then their fine devices for their further credit thould have beene awarented. Wherefore the heaning of his backe frænds not onelie furmis fed, but also manifested by Kilvare, the lood Thomas being inflice or vicedeputie in his fathers ab. lence, fetcht both the Alens fo roundlie ouer the hips, mounting as well by fecret drifts as open taunts, as they were the more egerlie spurd to compasse his confusion. For the lord infrice and the councell, with diverse of 40 the nobilitie, at a folemne banket discourling of the anciencie of houses, and of their armes, fir John A. len spake to the load instice these woods.

My love, your house giveth the marmolet, whose propertie is to eat his owne taile. Peaning thereby (as the 1020 Ahomas supposed) that Kildare old vie to pill and poll his frænds, tenants & reteiners. Thefe words were no somer spoken, than the load Thomas firiting the ball to Alen againe, answered, as one ce that was somewhat slipper tonged, in this wife. you 5 faie truth fir, indeed I heard some faie, that the marcomolet eateth his owne taile. But although you have to bene fed by your taile, yet I would abuife you to be, ware, that your taile cat not you. Shortlie affer this quiping gamegall, the load inflice and the councell rode to Deogheda, where having for the space of the or foure daies fotourned, it happened that the councelloss awaited in the councell chamber the go. vernour his comming, butill it was hard boon the Aroke of twelve. The archbilhop of Dublin raivlie 60 digesting the vicedeputie his long absence, salo: My lords, is it not a prettie matter, that all we thall faie thus long for a boic . As he ottered thefe speeches, the lord inflice unluckilie was comming up the fraires, and at his entrie taking the words hot from the bithop his mouth, and iterating them verte cololie, he Executed faid: My lozos, I am heartilie fozie, that you faied thus long for a bote. Thereat the prelat was apal led, to lee how buhamilie he was gald with his owne caltrop. These the like cutting speches inkindled luch coles in both their fromachs, as the flame couls not anie longer be smoulocred, but at one clift 020, arthow of ther must have fumed. The enimies therefore having Moradins welnigh kneeded the dough that should have beine

baked for the Biraldines bane, beuifed that fecret rumous thould foundle to and fro, that the earle of The occasion Mildare his erecution was intended in England; fitzgirald and that boon his death the Lord Chomas and all his his rebellion. bloud thould have beene apprehended in Freland. As this falle muttering fine abroad, it was holpen for ward by Thomas Canon, and others of Skeffing. ton his fernants, who flicked not to write to certeine of their frænds, as it were, berie secret letters, how that the earle of Bildare their mailter his fecret env mie (fo they toke him , bicaufe he got the gourries ment ouer his head) was alreadie cut Chorter, as his tifue presentlie should be: and now they trusted to se their mailter in his government, after which they fore longed, as for a preferment that would in thort space aduantage them. Such a letter came buto the hands of a timple prieft, no perfea Englithman, who for half burled it amonged other papers in the chimnies end of his chamber, meaning to perule it bet. ter at more lessure. The same verienight, a gentle, man reteining to the lozd Thomas, the lozd tullice oz vicedeputie, as is before specified, twhe by his lodg. ing with the priest, and sought in the morning when he role for some paper, to draw on his trait focks ings; and as the dinell would, he hit bpon the letter, bare it awaie in the heele of his Nocke, no earthlie thing mildeming . At night againe he found the paper bufretted, and muling thereat he began to poze on the writing, which notified the earle his death, and o the awzevention of the lozd Thomas. To hortle go, eth he in all hall, brought the letter to James de la bein bider Dide, who was principall councellor to the lord Tho. mas in all his dwings. De la Pide having fcantlie ouerread the letter, making more hast than god fred, poffed to the load Thomas, imparted him that letter, and withall putting fire to flar, before he dived to the bottome of this trecherie, he was contented to fwim on the fram and froth thereof, as well by for thing up the tenoz of the letter, as by inciting the lord Thomas to open rebellion, cloking the odious name of treason with the zealous reucngement of his fathers wrongfull erecution, and with the warte defente of his owne perfon.

The load Thomas being pouthfull, rath, and head. long, and affuring himfelfe that the knot of all the force of Ireland was twiffed buder his girdle, was by de la Pide his counsell so far carted, as he was resolued to cast all on six and seaven. Wherefore has uing confedered with Dneale, Dconoz, and other Arich potentats, be rode on faint Barnabies baie, accompanied with feauen score horstemen in their Wirts of maile, through the citie of Dublin, to the Dam his gate, croft over the water to faint Parie abbeie, where the councell according to amountment waited his comming, not being privite to his intent: onelie Cromer the lozd chancellour excepted, tho was focretlie advertised of his revolt, and there, fore was verie well provided for him, as hæreafter thall be declared. This Cromer was a grave Cromer prelat, and a learned, well spoken, mild of nature, no lozo chana thing wedded to factions, yet a welwiller of the cettor, Giraldines, as those by whose means he was aduanced to dianitie. Then the load Thomas was fet in councell, his hoofemen and fernants rutht into the councell chamber armed and weaponed, turning their fecret conference to an open parle. The coun. cell hereat amazed, and silence with securitie com-

Thomas Fitzgirald his rebellious oration.

manded, the load Thomas in this wife fpake.



Owfoever inturiouslie we behandled, and forced to befond our felues in armes, then neither our fernice not our god meaning towards our prince his crowns I.iti.

crowne analleth: pet fair net hæreafter, but in this open hoffilitie which here we profette and proclame, we have thewed our felues no villaines not durles, but warriours and gentlemen. This fwood of effats is yours, and not mine; I received it with an off, and have veed it to your benefit. I should staine mine ho. mour, if I turned the fame to your annotance . Pow baue I need of mine owne fwoed, which I dare truff. As for the common fword, it flattereth me with a painted fcabberd, but hath inded a peffilent edae, al. 1 readie bathed in the Giraldines bloud, and now is newlie whetted in hope of a further destruction. Therefore faue your felues from bs, as from open enimies, Jam none of Penrie his deputie, Jam his fo. I have more mind to conquer than to governe, to meet him in the field than to ferue him in office. It all the hearts of England and Ireland, that have cause thereto, would some in this quarrell (as I bove they will) then thould be some abie (as I trust be thall) for his criteltie and tyrannie, for which the age 2 to come may lawfullie score him by among the ancient tyzants of most abbominable and hatefull memorie.

Having added to this Chamefull oration manie other flanderous and foule tearmes, which for diverte respects I spare to pen, he would have surrendered tipe finore to the lord chancellor, who (as I faid before) being armed for the lord Thomas his comming, and also being loath that his Cacknelle Chould seme oil: 30 to your owne undoing both the hoose and the saddle. lotall in refuting the two20,02 his frowardnesse over cruell in inatching it boon the first proffer, toke the loed Thomas by the will of the hand, and requested him for the love of God, the teares trilling downe his chédies, to give him for two or three words the bearing, which granted, the reverend father spake as infuctb.

The chancellor his oration.

Ploed, although hatred be commonitie the handmaiden of truth, bicause we for him that plainelic expecteth his mind, to be for the more part of most men diflibeo: pet notwithstanding Jam fo well affured of pour loodhip his good inclination towards me, and your loading to certeine of mine entire affection to. wards you, as I am imboloned, notwithstanding this companie of armed men, freelie and frankelie to other that, which by me declared, and by your loads so from you, and percale will ducke you over head and they followed, will turne (God willing) to the analle of you, your friends, alles, and this countrie. I doubt not (my loso) but you know, that it is wifedome for ante man to loke before he leave, and to sowne the water before his thip hull thereon, a namelie Where the matter is of weight, there it behoueth to follow found, fage, and mature aduife. Wherefore (my lozd) fith it is no maigame for a subject to leuie an armie against his prince: it lieth your loroship in hand to breath longer on the matter, as well by forecasting 60 the burt whereby you may fall, as by revoluing the hope ither with you are fed. What thould move your loodly to this ludden attempt, I know not. If it be the death of your father, it is as yet but secretlie muttered, not manifellie published. And if I should grant you, that your seale in renenging your father his execution were in some respect to be commended: pet reason would you should suspend the reuenge until the certeintie were knowne. And were it, that the report were true, yet it franceth with the dutic and allegiance of a good subject (from whom I hope in God you meane not to diffeuer your felfe) not to spurne and kicke against his prince, but contraviwile, if his louereigne be mightie, to feare him:

if he be profitable to his subjects, to honour him; if he command, to obeie him : if he be kind, to lone bim : if he be vicious, to pitie him : if he be a tyrant, to beare with him : confidering that in fuch cafe it is better with patience to bow, than with Aubburnnesset with patients. For lacred is the name of a king, Themand and odious is the name of a rebellion: the one from a king lim beauen deriued, and by God Chielded; the other in bell forged, and by the divell executed. And therefore Rebellen o who to will observe the course of histories, ar weigh from where the inflice of God in punithing malefactors, thall ca, utpungen filie fee, that albeit the funne thineth for a time on them that are in rebellion : pet fuch fivet begin nings are at length clasped by with tharpe t fowie ends.

Pow that it appeareth, that you ought not to beare armour against pour king, it resteth to bil cuffe whether you be able (though you were willing) to annote your king. For if among meane and pile uat foes it be reckoned for folie, in a fecret grudge to professe open hatred, and where he is not able to hinder, there to thew a willing mind to hurt: much more ought your lorothip in fo generall aquarell as this, that concerneth the king, that toucheff the nobilitie, that appeateineth to the whole commonwelth, to forele the king his power on the one lide, & your force on the other, and then to sudge if you be able to cocke with him, and to put him belive the cultion; and not whilest you firme to lit in the faoole, to lose

King Denrie is knowne to be in thefe our dates fo pullant a prince, and fo vidorious a worthic, that he is able to conquer forren dominions; and thinke you that he cannot defend his owne . He tainch kings, and judge you that he may not rule his owne subjects? Suppose you conquer the land, do you imagine that he will not recover it . Therefore (my lozd) flatter not your felfe ouermuch, repole not lo great affiance either in your trope of hollemen, or 4° in your band of formen, or in the multitude of your partakers. What face soener they put now on the matter, or what successe soever for a season they have, bicaule it is easie for an armie to vanquish them that do not relift: yet hereafter when the king thall fend his power into this countrie, you thall fa your adherents like flipper changelings plucke in their hornes, and such as were content to beare you by by the chin as long as you could from, when they espie you linke, they will by little and little thinke eares. As long as the gale puffeth full in your failes, doubt not but diverse will anerte buto you and fied on you as crowes on carion: but if anie frome hap pen to blufter, then will they be fure to leave you post alone fricking in the mire or lands, having least helpe then you have most need. And what will then infue of this. The branches will be pardoned, the rot appehended, your honour diffained, your house atteinted, your armes reverled, your manours raged, pour doings examined; at which time God knoweth what an hartburning it will be, when that with no colour may be denied, which without thame cannot be confested. Dy load, I power not out oracles as a lothlater, for I am neither a prothet, nor the fonne of a prothet . But it may be, that Jam Come frantike Callandra being partener of hir fpirit in fortelling Canadia the truth, and partaker of hir missortune in that 3 prophiles amunet (when 3 tell the truth) belieued of your loid thip, thom God defend from being Paiamus.

Wieigh therefore (my lood) the novilitie of your ancestors, remember your father his late erhorta tion, forget not your dutie unto your prince, confor the effate of this poze countrie, with what beaps of curles you hall be loven, when your foul

The lublects datie to: wards his

viers thall ride the pose subjects, to far indamage the implerelme, as they are not yet borne that thail hereafter fæle the smart of this opzoze. Pou hane not gone to far but you may turne home, the king is mercifull, your offente as pet not ouer heinous, cleane to his clemencie, abandon this headlong follie. Thich I crave in most humble wife of pour loads thip, for the love of God, for the dutie you ome your prince, for the affection you beare the countrie, and for the respect you have to your owne safetie, whom God Defend from all traitozous & wicked attempts.

Hauing ended his ozation, which he let forth with luch a lamentable action, as his chekes were all beblubbered with teares, the horffemen, namelie luch as understoonot English, began to dinine what the losd chancellos ment with all this long circumffance; fome of them reporting that he was preaching a fermon, others fato that he ftwo making of fome herots thus as enerie total that his folish bolt at the wife councellor his discourse, who in effect old nought else but dop pretious foncs before hogs, one Bard de Pelan, an Friff rithmour, and a rotten thepe able to infect an whole flocke, was chatting of Friff verles, as though his twng had run on pattens, in commendation of the load Thomas, inuefting him with the title of Silken Domas, bicaule his hoalemens tacks were gozgeouste imbrodered with filke: and in the end he told him that he lingred there over, 30 long. Thereat the lood Thomas being quickned, did call his cie towards the lood chancellog, & fato thus.

The replic of Silken Thomas.

Ploed chancellos, I come not his

fore had fmarted you as much as it feffereth me, you would be percase as impatient as Jam. As you would with me to honour my prince, so dutie willethme to reverence my father. Therefore he that will with fuch typannie execute mine innocent parent, and withall threaten my destruction, I may Amic lood of not, not will not hold him for my king. And yet in truth he was never our king, but our lood, as his progenitors haue beene before him. But if it be my hap to miscarie, as you sæme to prognosticat, catch that catch may, I will take the market as it rifeth, and will chose rather to die with valiantnette and libertie, than to live bnder king Benrie in bondage and villanie. And pet it may be, that as firong as heis, and as weake as Jam, I thall be able like a flethingonic to itch the bodie of his kingdome, and force him to scratch deepelie before he be able to pike me out of my feame. Wherefore my lord, I thanke you for your good counfell, and were it not that Jam tw crabbed a note in descant to be now tuned, it 60 might be that I would have warbled sweeter harmonie than at this instant I meane to sing. Touth these words he rendered by the sword, and flung a wate like a bedlem, being garded with his brutify brone of brainefiche rebels.

> The councell fent fecretlie opon his departure to master maior and his brethren, to apprehend (if they convenientlie might) Thomas Fitzgiralo and his confederats. But the warning was fo Skarborrow, the enimie to Arong, the citie (by reason of the plage that ranged in towne and in countrie) to dispeopled, as their attempt therein would sæme but vaine and frivolous. Duer this, the weaker part of the revels

mould not very by themselves within the citie wals. but food houering alofe off toward Difmantowne greene, on the top of the hill where the gallolves flod (a fit centre for fuch a circle) till time they were aduertised of their capteine Thomas his returne. This open rebellion in this wife denounced, part of the councell, namelte Alen archbithop of Dublin & Fin Alen. glaffe thiefe baron hied with bag and baggage to the finglaffe. castell of Dublin, whereof John White was constar John walk ble, tho after was dubbed knight by the king in ter. England, for his worthie feruice done in that by:

Thomas & his crew, suppling that in sucreming the thole land, they thould find no blocke to flumble at fauing the earle of Dliozie, agreed to trie if by a nie allurements he could be traind to their confede, racie. And forfomuch as the lord James Butler was linked with Thomas fitzgirald in great amitie and frienothip, it was thought belt to give him the onfet, call poetrie in the praise of the lord Thomas. And 20 tho if he were won to swaie with them, they would not weigh two chips the force of his father the earle of Magie. Thomas forthwith fent his mellengers and letters to his confine the losd Butler, couenans ting to divide with him haife the kingdome, would he affociat him in this enterpaise. Wherebpon the loed Butler returned Thomas his brokers with this letter .

> The lord Butler his letter to Thomas Fitzgirald.

Aking pen in hand to write you my resolute answer, I muse in the verie first line by what name to call you, my low, or my cousine: sking your notostous resolute answer, I muse in the berie firth

treason hath distained your honour, and your despethere to take adulte uhat I hoold the to take adulte uhat I hoold to w, but to give you to understand what I mind to do. It is easie for the sound to counsel the sicke: but if the to make the county of the county rate lewonelle chamed your kindged. Don are fo lis fuade me to hang with you for good fellowship. Do you thinke that James was to mad, as to gape for gogions, 03 lo ingratious, as to fell his truth for a pece of Freland. Were it fo (as it cannot be) that the chickens you reckon, were both hatched and feas thered : yet be thousare, I had rather in this quarell die thine enimie, than live thy partener. For the kind. nelle you proffer me, and good love in the end of your letter, the belt waie I can I purpole to requite, that is, in adulting you, though you have fetcht your fease, pet to lake well per pe leape. Ignozance and errour, with a certeine opinion of outie, have caried you on. awares to this follie, not yet for ranke but if maie be cured. The king is a vestell of bountie & mercie, your words against his maiestic shall not be accounted malicious, but rather believe out for heat and impotencie, ercept your felfe by heaping offenfes disconce a mildeefous and wilfull meaning. Farewell,

> Thomas Fitzgirald netted with this round and fwer, was determined to inuade the countrie of Bulkennie, first forcing an oth opon the gentlemen of the pale: and luch as would not agree thereto he twke pilloners . Fingall, which was not before acquainted with the recourse of the Irish enimie, was fingal left open to be prefoed and woiled by the Toles, who were therein alliffed by John Burnell of Balgriffin, John Burnel a gentleman of a faire liuing , fetled in a good battle of Belgriffin foile of Fingall, taken for one not benofoof wit, were it not that he was overtaken with this treafon. The Dublinians having notice that the enimie made hanocke of their neighbors of Fingall, iffued out of the citie, meaning to have intercepted them at the bringe of Lilmainan. And having incounter

ffingall

15110 00

Calan.

bilken

92

Mellengers feut from Thomas to Dublin.

Francis Der: bert fent into Guitace of Walicutlan.

The archbi= fhop of Dub: lin meaneth to faile in o 4Bartholmem fitzgirald.

1534 Teling. Waffer.

The Dublis red with the Iriff nière the wood Salcocke, what for mans discome the number of the revels, and the lacke of an expert capteine to lead the armie of Dublin in battell raie, there were fourelesse of the citizens flaine, and the Patrike fitz. picibe not refcued . In this conflict , Patrike fitz. timons flaine. fimons , with biuerle other god houlholders, mil-

Mis vidozie bzed fo great an insolencie in Mos mas fitzgiralo, as he fent his mellengers to the citie, occlaring that albeit they offred him that inturie, 10 as that he could not have free pallage with his companie to a fro in the pale, therefore would be vie the benefit of his late fkirmith, og be antwerable in tuft reuenge to their due defert , he might by law of armes put their citie to fire and fwood : pet this not. withflanding, if they would but permit his men to late fiege to the castell of Dublin, he would enter in league with them, and would budertake to backe them in such fauourable wife, as the Contest chams pion in his armie thoulo not be to hardie, as to offer 20 the baself in their citie so much as a fillip. The citizens confidering that the towne by reason of the fickeneffe was weakened, and by this late ouer, throw greatlie discouraged, were forced to make a pertue of necessitie, by lighting a canole before the biuell, till time the kings pleasure were knowne; to thom with letters they police one of their aldermen named Francis Berbert, whom Gottlie after, the king for his feruice oubbed knight, infeoffing him with part of Christopher Gustace of Balicutlan his 30 lands, the had braduicolie a fot in this rebellion. But before the citizens would returne answer to Thomas as touching this mestage, they secretic aduertifed maiffer John White conestable of the castell of this bulawfull demand.

The cone Cable weighing the fecuritie of the citie, little regarding the force of the enimie, agreed willinglie therto, to that he might be lufficientlie frozed with men and vittels. John Alen archbishop of Dub. lin, fearing that all would have gone to wracke in 40 Ireland, being then in the castell, baske his mind touching his failing into England, to one of his fer. uants named Bartholomew Fitzgirald, thom notwith amoing he were a Giraloine, he held for his truffieff and inwardeft councellog. Bartholomew bndertaking to be the archbishop his pilot, butill be were past the barre, incouraged his mailler to imbarke himfelfe hard by the Dams gate. And as they were hulling in the channell that evening, they were not warte, butill the barke frake on the funds nere 50 Clontarfe.

The archbishop with his man stale secretice to Tartaine, there meaning to lurke untill the wind had ferued to faile into England, where he fcarfelie fir houres solourned, when Thomas Kitzgirald knew of his arrivall, and accompanied with James de la Bide, fir John Fitzgirald, Dliver Fitzgirald his bucles, timelie in the morning, being the eight and twentith of Julie, he posted to Cartaine, beset Maffer to appehend the archbishop, thome they haled out of his bed, brought him naked in his thirt, barefored, and bareheaded, to their capteine. Whom when the archbilhop espied, incontinentlie he knæled and with a pitifull countenance & lamentable boice, he belought him for the love of God not to remember former injuries, but to weigh his prefent calamitie, and that malice foeuer he bare his perfon, yet to re. specifies calling and vocation, in that his ensmie was a chaffian, and he among it chaffians an archbi-

As he spake thus, bequeathing his soule to Bod, his bodie to the entinics mercie, Thomas being Arts ken with some compassion, & withall instamed with belire of renenge, turned his boille allde, faieng in Brith (Bir wem'e boddeugh) which is as much to faie in English, as Away with the churle, or Take the churle from me : which boubtles he fpake, as after he decla red, meaning the archbishop should be deteined as prisoner. But the catties that were present, rather of priloner. But the cause was some freshort words, malice than of ignorance, milconstruing his words, almosty. murthered the archbilhop without further delate, brained and hacked him in gobbets, his blow with him murhan Abell crieng to Bod for revenge, which after befell to at Cartain all fuch as were principals in this horrible murther. The place is ever fince hedged and imbaied on ever rie floe, overgrowne and unfrequented for beteffa. tion of the fact . This Alen (as before is declared) was in feruice with cardinall Wolfeie, of Depe fugement in the law canon, the onelie match of Ste than Bardiner, an other of Wolfetes chapleins, for auciding of thich emulation he was preferred in Ireland, rough and rigozous in iuffice, deadlie hated of the Biraloines for his mailters lake & his owne. as he that croffed them diucrfe times, and much befoeled both father and fon in their governments, not bulike to have promoted their acculations, and to haue beine a forger of the letter before mentioned, which turned to his finall destruction.

The rebels having in this execuable wife imbaned their hands in the archbithop his bloud, they rode to Cheby d Bouth . toke fir Christopher load of Bouth parfoner, Bonthiaka & boon their returne from thense, they apprehended pulora. maister Luttrell chiese instice of the common plas, Juliu Lub conveieng him with them as their prisoner. The Dublinians ouring this space, having respit to paule fent into the castell by night fusticient store of bittels, John file at which time, John Fitzsimons, one of their alber, smong men, fent to maffer conestable twentie tun of wine, foure & twentie tun of beere, two thousand drie ling, firtiens hogsheads of poudered bæfe, and twentie chambers, with an iron chaine for the draw bridge of the castell that was neivlie forged in his owne house for the austoing of all suspicion. The castell being with men, munition, and vittels abundantlie furnt Challe thed, answer was returned to Thomas Kitzgirald, et Dadin purpositing a consent for the receiving of his builds. ors. Which granted, he fent thither James field of fitte Lufte, Picholas Maffer, John Teling, Coward wafer's Kouks (who was like wife a pirat feowaing the coaft, Taing, and greatlie annoting all pattengers) Broad and Banks Purfell, with an hundred fouldiors attendant on them, as on their capteins. Thele baliant Kutter, kins planted nære Preffon his innes, right ourt a gainst the castell gate two or three falcons, having with fuch firong rampiers intrended their companic, as they little weighed the thot of the castle. And to withdraw the conestable from discharging the ordis nance, they threatened to take the youth of the citie, and place them on the top of their trenches for mate fer conestable to thot at, as at a marke he would be loth to hit.

The Englith pale in this wife weakened, the ci the house, commanded John Celing and Ascholas 60 thensappeated, and the castell besieged, Chomas Chomis Fitzgirald and his confederats were refolued to trie Fitzgiral to if the load Butler would fand to his doughtie letter; uabethite and fifth he mould not by faire means be allured, he continued thould be (mangre his head) by foule means compel bulleting led to allist them in this their generall attempt. Thos mas bponthis determination, being accompanied with Dneale, diverse Scots, James de la Hibe, his principall councellour, John de la Pide, Coward Fitzgirald his bucle, fir Richard Walth parlon of Loughlewdie, John Burnell of Balgriffin, James Gernon, Walter Walth, Robert Walth, Paurice Walth, with a maine armie, invaded the erle of Do force and the lord Butler his lands, burnt and wasted the countrie of Bilkennie to Thomas towne, the

pare inhabitants being constrained to thunnehis force, rather than to with and his power.

Fitzgicalo his approch towards these confines buted, the earle of Diorie, and his fon the lord But ler, with all the gentlemen of the countrie of Bilker nie, affembled neere Jeripon, to determine what oz. per they might take, in with amoing the inuation of the rebels. And as they were thus in parle, a gentleman of the Butlers accompanied with firteene book men, reparter fecretlie from the folkemote, e made 1 towards Thomas Fitzgicald and his armie, who was then readie to incampe himfelfe at Chomas towns. Then the chalenger was elected, and the certeine number knowne , Arteene of Fitzgirald his hordemen die charge him, and prefentite followed them seven score bootsemen, with two or three banners displaced, pursuing them butill they came to the hill there all the gentlemen were attembled, who odnie dath, being to suppendie taken, could not stand to bicker; was feattered from his companie, and the load But ler inwares was burt: whom when such of the rebels knew as favoured him, they purfued him but coldie, and let him escape on horfebacke, taking his wate to Downemoze (nære kilkennie) where he late at furgerie.

During the time that Thomas with his armie was ranfacking the erle of Officie his lands, Frans cis Perebert teturned from England to Dublin with the king and councels letters to maiffer Shil 30 lingforth then maior, and his brethren, with letters likewise to maister White the constable, to with stand (as their outie of allegiance bound them) the traitozous practifes of Thomas and his complices, and that with all speed they should be successed byon the fight of these letters. Paister Thomas Fitze limons recorder of the citie, a gentleman that thewedhimfelfe a politike and a comfortable councellor in these troubles, paraphrasing the king his gratious imboloened the citizens to breake their new made league, which with no traitor was to be kept . The aloermen and communaltie, with this pithie perfuasion easilie weighed, game forthwith order, that the gates thould be that, their perculices dilmounted, the traitous that belieged the castell apprehended. flags of defiance byon their wals placed, and an o

pen breach of truce proclamed.

Field and his companies (who did not all this that was bozed through the gate with a pellet, which lighted in the mouth of a demie canon, planted with in the castell) understanding that they were betrated, began to thinke their heads, truffing more to their fiction by bales than to their weapons: some ran one way, impanietas fome another, diverse thought to have beene housed and to to lurke in Lozels den, who were thrust out by the head and Moulders: few of them Iwam over the Lime, the greater number taken and impalloned. giralo, the then was rifling the countrie of kilkennie, certifieng him that all was mard, the fat was in the fire, he brought an old house about his owne eares, the Paltocks of Dublin kept not touch with him, the English armie was readie to be thipt, herebert with the king his letters returned; now it foo him boon to thew himfelfe a man or a moule. Thomas with these tivings amazer, made specie repaire to Dublin, sending his purseuants before him, to command the gentlemen of the English pale to mete him with all their power nere Dub. intaken lin. And in his wate towards the citie, his compas the twke diverse children of the Dublinians, that kept in the countrie (by reason of the contagion that then was in the towne) namelie Michaell fitzil. mons, Patrike fit; amons, William fit; amons. all fons to Walter Fitzlimons late mator, at with time was allo taken James Stanthurft , with biuerle other ponglings of the citie.

Hauing marched neere Dublin , he fent bocto: Mellengers Trauerle , Peter Lince of the Anoke , and Dliver fent to Dablin Brace, as mellengers (fo) I maie not rightlie Lince. tearme them amballadors) to the citizens, tho crof Grace. fing the Liffie from the blacke friers to the kefe, er planed to the majo; and albermen their errand, the effect whereof was , either to frand to their former promile, or elle to reffore to their capteine his men, thom they wrongfullie deteined in goale. The first and last point of this request flatlie by the citizens denied, the mellengers returned, declaring what cold interteinment they had in Dublin . Momas Dublin belles herewith frieng in his greafe, caused part of his are geb. mie to burne the barke wherin Herebert failed from but some fled this wate, some that wate, the earle 20 England: which done without resistance, the vestell road at anchoz neere faint Parie abbeie, they indenozed to fop all the springs that flowed buto the towne, and to cut the pipes of the conduits, where by they should be destitute of fresh water. Shortie after , they late flege to the castell in the Shipstreet , The thip from whenle they were hastilie by the ordinance street fired. feazed, and all the thatcht houses of the street were burnt with wild fire, which maifter White deniled,

because the enimie should not be there rescued. When no butter could flicke on their bread, in in that part of the citie, the greater number of the rebels attembled to Thomas his court, and marched to faint Thomas his firet, raling downe the partitions of the row of houses before them on both lives of the firet, finding none to with frand them: for the inhabitants fled into the citie, to that they made a long lane on both the lives like a gallerie, couered all over head, to thield as well their horsemen as their formen from gunlhot. This done they burnt letters, with viverle god and found constructions, 40 the new street, planted a falcon right against the new gate, and it discharged, pearled the gate, and kild an appentife of Thomas Stephans alderman, as he went to bring a bason of water from the high pipe, which by reason the springs were damd by, was Michard at that time brie. Richard Stanton , commonlie Stanton. called Dicke Stanton, then gailor of the new gate, a god feruito; an ercellent markeman, as his bas liant fernice that time bid appoue. For befides that he galo ofners of the rebels as they would fkip from thile batter aught of the caffell, but onelie one hole 50 houle to house, by causing some of them with his pece to carrie their errands in their buttocks; to he perceived one of the enimies, leveling at the window or spike at which he food : but whether it were, that the rebell his pouder failed him, or some gimboll oz other was out of frame , Stanton toke him fo trulie for his marke, as he Arake him with his bullet full in the forehead buder the brim of his scull,

and withall turned by his heles . Stanton not fatilited with his death, iffued out Forthwith post opon post rode to Thomas Fity 60 at the wicket, stript the variot mother-naked, and brought in his piece and his attire . The desperate neve of this fact diliked of the citizens, and greatlie Comached by the revels, before Stanton returned to his fanding, the enimies brought faggots ? fiers to the new gate, and incontinentlie fired them. Faggots late The townelmen perceiuing that if the gate were new gate, burnt, the enimics would be incouraged bpon Jope of the spoile, to venter more fiercelie, than if they were incountred without the wals, thought it erpe-Dient presentlie to charge them . To this exploit they were the more egerlie moned, because that not with Canding Thomas his fouldiors were manie in number; yet they knew that the better part of his companie bare but hollow hearts to the quarrell:

grancis Des

mbert retura

leith.

Chomas .

fusumons.

Avleague to

nas fitzgt:

Whe citizens

bicker with

the rebels.

Thomas

fletin.

Fitzgirald

Dela bibe.

Trauerle.

Lime.

215ath

ficlo.

for the number of the wife gentlemen of the pale did little or nothing incline to his purpole ... And there; fore then be befreged the citie, the most part of those arraines, which were that over the walles, were but headed, and nothing annoted them; some that in letr ters 1 and foretold them of all the treacherous aras

tagems that were in hammering and That espied the citizens, and gathering, the faint

neffe of his fouldiess thereby, blazed abroad byon the walles triumpant newes, that the king his are de mie mas arrived : and as it had beene lo in deed, luddenlie to the number of foure hundred ruthed out at the new gate, through flame and fire opon there, bels, who at the first sight of armed men) weening no leffe but the truth was to, other wife affured,

that the citie would never dore to reincounter them, gaue ground, forfoke their capteins , difperled uns scattered into diverse corners, theinfalcon taken, an

hundled of their Coutest Balloglasses Claine. Thor mas fitzgiralofled to the graie friers in S. frene cis his firet, there coucht that night, buknowen to

the citie, butill the next morning he Cale privilie to his armie not far off , who frod in wonderfull feare that he was appehended. Thomas his courage by this late overtheoly somethat coled, and also being affureblie tolo, that a flete was espied a farre off, bearing full faile towards the coast of Ireland, he was some intreated, having so manie irons in the fire, to take egs for his monie: t withall, having no

forren succoz, either from Paulus terrius, or Charles 30 the fift, which vailie he expected, he was fore qualled, being of himselfe, though strong in number of soul-Dio28, pet bufarnilbed of fufficient munition and artillerie, to Cano & with Cano the king his armie in a pitcht field, or a maine battell. Apon this & other confiderations, to make as faite weather as he could,

he sent James de la Pide, Lime of the knocke, William Bath of Dollarstowne, doctor Traverse, Thomas field of Painstowne, as mestengers to

ing let in at the new gate, repaired to William Relie his house, where mailler major and his brethren were attembled . The articles propounded by propounced to them to the citizens, were thefe. the citizens. I That Thomas 1 That Thomas Fitzgirald his men, who were

deteined in pailon, Mondo be redelivered. 2 Item, that the citizens thould incontinentlis beliver him at one paiment, a thouland pounds in monie.

3 Item, that they Could deliver him fine hum 30 died pounds in wares.

4 Item, to furnify him with munifion and artill lerie.

5 Item, to nodzelle their fauozable letters to the king for their capteine his parbon, and all his confederats.

The citizens articles.

The maioz and aldermen, having ripelie debated the tenour of thefe articles, agreed, that maifter Fitzlimons their recorder thould antiper buto the first, that they would not sticke to let his feruants at 60 libertie, so he would redeliner them the pouth of the citie, which was nothing else in effect, but tit for tat. As for the second and the third demand, they were so greatlie by his warres impowerished, as they might hardlie spare monie og wares. And as tom thing implements for warre, they were never such fond middicoches, as to offer anie man a roo to beat their owne talles, 03 to betake their mallines buto the cultodie of the twolnes, maruelling much that their capteine would to farre overfoot himfelfe, as to be taken with such apparant repugnancie. Foz if he intended to lubmit himselfe to the king his mere rie, and to make them humble meanes to his highnelle for the obteining of his pardon, be oughtra-

ther to make fitte following god bellam pard ment for the ingralling thereof, than for mulition are tilletie to with Cana his prince . Wher fore, that the inlamfill bemands rejerted, they would willing tie condescend to the first and lastras well requesting him to beliver them the youth of the citie , and to fabe mithimfelfe and his companie to the king his men cie automiling not onclie with their fauontable let ters, but allowith their performit prefences to fin ther, as, far as iff them late, his humble fute to the king and councell. Googgaing armon I

as the practice thus to and fro . William Bath william of Wollarstowne's fludengioff the common lawes Bath, spake: Dy maillers, what medeth all this long circumstances that is all brinke of one cop. Which woods were Gottlie after wood Sheffingtonbis ar. rinall to crokedic gloten, as by drinking of a forme cur he loss the bost joint of his boote. Hoz albeit by on his triall he construed his words to import an w niforme confent towards the obteining of Ritigi rald his pardon; yet all this could not colour his mate ter in fuch wife, but that he and Gulface of Balicut. Cultural lan were executed at the castell of Dublin. The med Baluntan fengers knowing their capteine to be at a loweb, ivere agreed to take the offers of the first & last con ditions, and that to the accomplishing of these artic cles hostages should be given of either part. The

bpon the certaine rumo; of Sheffington his repaire. Berne. Thomas growne to this point with the Dubli ton, nians raised his liege, caused his artillerie to be conucted to Houth, marching after with his armie, to the end he might as well builth the English thips if they durff anerre the coaff, as to bicker with the foldioes byon their arrivall. But before he toke his the citizens, to treat with them of a truce, who bes 40 forncie buto Houth, he rove to Mainoth, to lachat the calle a Chould be of all fives fortified, where being The with done to bider dano, that a companie of white cotes cotes land with red crosses landed at Dublin secretlie in the at Dublin bead of the night, and also that another band arrived at Bouth, and were readie to march towards Du blin, he posted incontinentlie with two hundred horstemen towards the water lide, incountred nere Clonfarfe, the Pamertons, two valiant ano cours. The sand gious gentlemen , hauing in their companie foure tous lamb score souldiors, where they fought so valiantlie so their lines was to few formen could have done a gainst so great a trope of horstemen : for they bid not onlie manule and hacke diverte of the rebels, but also one of the Pamertons wounded Thomas Fifty Chantel giralo in the fosehead. Some report that one of the formen Hulgranes, who was of kin to Fitzgirald, was music Claime in this conflict, whose death he is said to have taken greatlin to hart. The rebelles fle thed with the flaughter of the English is bied with all speed to Bouth, therat the thips that robe at anchoz, cauled them to fle from thenle, e to make towards Sker rift, therelanded both the Eglebes, and the Da Datts. cres, with their hordemen. Kouks, fitzgirald his pirat, was fent to frome the coall, who toke an Engi enginging barke laden with verie faire geldings, and fent ongs was them to his capteine. After that Thomas had retur ned with this botte, and the spoile of such as were flaine to Painoth, fir William Bereton hnight, Annie with his fonce John Bereston , was inflored at Ichn From Houth with two hundred & fiftie foldiors verie well ion appointed, and mailler Salifbarie with two hundied Salhaik archers.

Lastlie landed at the stip, neare the bridge of his political Dublin, six smilliam Shessington knight lovoc. Sullings.

mellengers delivered to the citizens dodo: Travers holique a others, the citizens belivered them Richard Talbot, taken Alogeman, Rochford, & Kerrte. Thefe twere commit, werte

ted to the cultodie of David Sutton of Kabitde, who Tabot, redelinered them to the citizens immediatlie after Bochlop

Letters of menks from me Dublint Che lord of

frame fur:

(2010.

cendreth the

putie, whome the Trith call the gunner, because he waspieferred from that office of the king his mas for gunner to governe them, and that they can evill hinke to be ruled of anie that is but meanlie borne. The major and albermen received the governor with foot, and great folemnitie, who perloing them hartie thanks for their true and locall feruice, belinered them the king and councell his letters, purporting the fame effect in writing that he before expressed in woods. Barnivell.lood of Trimlestowne, tho had 1 the cultodie of the fwood, did furrender it to fir Willliam Sheffington, according to the meaning of the king his letters patents on that behalfe. Thomas Fitzgiralo having intelligence that the

thole armie was arrived, warded the castell of Paf. noth fo fironglie, as he toke it to be impregnable. And to the end he might give the governo; battell, he rode towards Connagh, to leute all luch power of the Irifh, as either for wages, or for goodwill he fugitald could win to a Mit him. The load deputie foreware 2 comagn. ned of his drift, marched with the English armie, and the voiner of the nale to market the power of the pale to Painoth, and laid fiege to the castell on the north side towards the parke. But before anie peece was discharged, fir William hundiam Breteton, by the deputie his appointment, oto lums mon the castell, offering such as kept it to bepart with bag and baggage, and belides their pardon to be liberallie rewarded for their god and lofall fernice. But luch as warded the castell, scoznefullie froffing the knight his offer, gane him hartie thanks for his kindnesse which they said proceeded rather of bis gentlenede than of their deferuing, withing him to hape up in Boze such liberall offers for a dere peare, and to write his commendations home to his frends, and withall, to keepe his head warme, for at their hands he was like to have but a cold lute. His nallie norto take such keepe of their safetie, in that they were aftered, that he and his fellowes thould be foner from the fiege railed, than they from the hold

Apon this round answere the ordinances were planted on the north five of the callell, which made no great batterie for the space of a fortnight : pet the ca. fell to wartlie on ech five inutroned, as the revelles were imbard from all egrelle and regrelle. Chillo her Parele follerbiother to Thomas Fitzgiralo, to thome of speciall trust the charge of the castell was thiellie committed, profering his boluntarie feruics thomas fer: (which for the more part is so thanklesse and busano, we dinketh, tie as it Clinketh) determined to go an ale beyond 50 his fellows, in betrateng the castell to the gonernoz. In this resolution be that a letter indoxsed to the load deputie, the effect whereof was, that he would deutle means the castell should be taken, so that be might have a fumme of monie for his paines, and a comper tent fraie during his life. This motion by letters to and fro agreed upon, Parele cauled luch as kept the ward, to fwill and boll formuch, as they fnorted all the night like grunting bogs, litle mildeming that wit left they flept, anie Judas had beene waking within 60

The occasion of this extraordinarie exceeding was colored, for inatching into the castell a field peece the daie before from the armie, for which they kept fuch pot-rewis, and triumphant caronfing, as none of thom could differ ne bis beds head from the beds fret: Parele, taking his tide and time, made ligne to the armic, betweene the twilight and dawning of the date, who having feating landers in a readineffe, would not overflip the oportunitie offered. Holland, than petit petit capteine to Sollsburic, was one of the forwardest in this exploit into leapung notone from the wall, fell by mithap into a pipe of feathers, where he was by to the arme pits, to Kiffelie Micking therein,

and also unwealdie in his armoz, as there could not helpe hinfelfe neither in noz out. The William 1520, 182creton feareton and his band having scaled the wals cried on a ludden, faint Beorge, faint Beorge. Ehre Drunken fluads that kept the castell thought that this showt was nought elfe but a decame, till time they espied the walles full of armed men, and one of them with. all perceining Holland thus intangled in the pipe, befowed an arrow boon him, which by good hap old mille him. Holland forthwith referred by his fellows, thot at the other, and strake him so fall budge the skull, as he lest him spealling. The resistance was faint, when the fouldiors entered, some polling themfelues, others that withfrod them flaine. Sir Berreton ab-William Becreton can by to the highest turret of uanceth his the castell, a advanced his fandard on the top there standard. of notifieng to the deputie, that the fort was ivone. Oceat and rich was the spoile, such store of beds, so manie godie hangings, so rich a wardzobe, such braue furniture, as trulie it was accounted (for boul hold finffe and brenfiles) one of the richest earle his houses buter the crowne of England. The lost des The losd bea putie entred the castell in the after none, upon whose putie enterer repaire, James de la Pide, and Paiward, two fing. James de la ing men of the earle his chamell, that were taken ince. pilloners, profrated themselves on the ground, pl. harward

tifullie warbling a fong, named Dulcu amica. The governour ravilhed with the sweet and delicat voices, at the instance of Girald Ailmer chiefe Girald Ail fulfice, and others of the councell pardoned them. Chillother Parele not milooubting but that he Mould have beene dubo knight for his fernice done that date, prefented himfelfe before the gouernour, with a cheerefull and familiar countenance : as who Parele comhould fate, Here is he that did the deed. The deputic the governor. berie cololie i halfe ffernelie casting an cie towards him falo: Parcle, Jam to thanke the on my mainter the king his behalfe, for this thy proffered fernice which I must acknowledge to have beine a sparing ?? of great charges, and a fauing of manie valiant foly diors lines to his highnesse: and when his maiestie " thall be thereof aduertifed. I dare be bold to fate that he will not fee the lacke during thy life. And bicaufe I maie be the better infruded how to reward the >> during my governement, I would gladie learne, that thy lost and mafter bestowed on the. Parele ?? fet a gog with these mild speches, and suppling the more he rectted, the better he Gould be remaroed, left not butolo the meanest god turne that ever he received at his loods hands. Why Parele (quoth the ,, deputie) coulded thou find in thine heart to betrate his caffell, that hath beene fo good load to the a True >> lie thou that art to bollow to him, wilt never be true to bs. And therewithall, turning his talke to his of >> ficers, he gave them commandement to deliver Warefethe fumme of monie that was promised him byon the forcember of the castell, and after to thop off a notable his head. Parele at this cold faintation of Farewell indgement. s be hanged, turning his ampering to wimpering faid : Dy loed, had I wiff that you would have dealt ,, to Arciatic with me, your loss this thould must have wone this fast with falittle blandshed as you did. >:

Whereat matter Boile, a gentleman of worthip, Boile and one that reteined to that old earle of fail dare Canbingin the preace, laid in Arith, Antrogh, thich Antragh, is as much in English, as Ewlate, theraf grew the Frish proverbe, to this date in the language viet, Cheproverbe Do latequale Boile ras me faie, Belvare of had I will, or After meat mullard, or Mou come adale after the fatre, or Wetter bone than falo. The deputie alked them that flood by what was that he spake? Maffer. Wolfe willing to cryound his owne words, frept forthandantwered; My lord, I faid nothing, but that Parele is leized of a towne neere the water

96

Ba tra.

Deb.

The named Balten, and I would glablic know how be will dispose it before he be executed. The governour not millrufting that mafter Boile had gloled (fo) if he understood the true signification of the terme, it was verie like that to late had not beene fo Charpe to Parele, but to lone had beene as lowe to him) willed the monie to be told to Parele, and pres fentlie caused him to be cut Chorter by the head : be-Darefe beheas claring thereby, that although for the time he imbas cco the benefit of the treason, yet after he could not 10 digest the treatherie of the traitor.

Che Deputie returneth to Dublin. Thomas fitzgirald marcheth to= wards Mat-

Gailogleffes Maine.

Thomas and

fitzgirald his frata= aems.

The deputie having left a garrison in the castell, returned with the armie triumpantlie to Dublin. Thomas Fitzgiralo not mildoubting but luch as he left in the castell were able to Cano to their tackle, lenied a huge armie in Doonbur his countrie, and in Connagh, to the number of leven thouland, march ing with them towards Painoth, minding to have removed the king his armie from the fiege: but be ing certified, that Parele his fosterbaother pelded up the castell to the deputie, the better part of his companie gave him the flip. All this notwithfrancing he made with fuch as would flicke to him Biereton left to Clane The lord Deputie hauing intelligence of his to befend Du- approch, left fir William Brereton at Dublin to befind the citie, a marched with the armie to the Paas, there he toke feuen score of Ahomas his Gallogias. fes, and lead them all bnarmed toward Johnstowne. The fourtwatch espieng Thomas to march neere, imparted it to the gonernour, the presentlie comman. ded each man to kill his prisoner before the charge, 30 which was dispatcht; only Comund Dleine escaping leine escapeth. mother naked by flight to Thomas his companie, leaning his thirt in his keepers hands. Both the armies advanced themselves one against the other, but the horffemen of either five could not charge, bp reason of a marity or quakentire that parted them. Therfore the deputie caused two or three field peces to be discharged, which scattered Thomas and his rahis companie blement, insomuch as he neuer in such open wife burff after beare op head in the English pale, but rather by frarts and sudden stratagems would now and then gall the English. As when the castell of Mar thimgan was wone, with was some after the furrender of Dainoth, he cauled a droue of cattell to ap. peare timelie in the morning hard by the towne.

> Another time he fired a village hard by Arim, and deutled luch of his horflemen that could fpeake English, being clad and horsed like northerne men. to ride to Trim, where a garrison late with hue and crie, fairing that they were capteine Salifburie his fouldiors, and that the traitor Thomas Fitzgiralo was burning a village hard by . The fouldiors falpeating no confinage issued out of the towne, who were by his men charged, a a great number of them flame, some chased to the towne, and forced to take 60 fanduatie in the churchyard, which in those dates was highlie renerenced. Thefe and the like knacks vied Thomas, being for his owne person so well gar. ded, and for defect of a maine armie fo naked, as net. ther he was occasioned to feare the English, not the Englith forces to weigh him . During this time, there arrived with a frelly luplie of bottlemen s archers, fir William Sentlo knight i bis fon, fir Mice Paniwell knight, fir Coward Briffith knight, tho were differled to lundate parts of the pale to defend the countrie from the enimies invalion. When the heat of this rebellion was in this wife all waged, the losd deputie finding out no denife to appehend the capteine, imploied his industrie to intraphis confe-

Such as kept the fort, inspecting it to be a botie, were

trained for the more part out of the castell, the were furpaled by Thomas, that late hard by in ambuth,

and the greater number of them flaine.

berats. Burnell of Palgriffin percefuing all goto Tounda weache fled to Pounder, where he was taken by the Balanta load Butler vicount Aburles, and bring conucied to taken ach lood Butler vicoum Lyucies, and thing condition thank Congland was erecuted at Ciburne. Dodo: Crac Crang vers, who was left as hostage with the citizens, was secued, by them delivered to the load deputie, and after with Rouks the pirat executed at the gallows on Di, kooks m mantowne græne.

Sir Walter de la Hide knight and his wife the waltrul ladie Bennet Gufface were amzehended, a brought birtable as prioners by matter Brablon vicetreafuror from landom their towns of Poiclare to the eastell of Dublin, by perform, cause their sonne and heire James de la Hide was the onelie bouer of all this rebellion: who as the go uernoz fulpedeo, was let on by his parents, & name. lie by his mother. The knight a his wife, lieng in du refle for the space of twelve moneths, were at seue. rall times examined, enotivith francing all prefump tions and furmiles that could be gathered, they were in the end found giltlette of their sonne his follie, But the ladie was had in eramination apart, and in tifed by meanes to charge hir hulband with hir fonne his revellion, who being not wone thereto with all the meanes that could be wought, was menaced to be put to death, or to be rackt; and fo with extremitie to be compelled, whereas with gentlenesse the could not be allured to acknowledge these apparent trea fons, that neither hir bulband not the could without

great thew of impudencie benie.

The gentlewoman with these continual forms Gemeter heartbroken, deceased in the castell : from thense flaceduth, hir bodie was removed buto the greie friers with the deputie his commandement, that it should not be interred, butill his plefure were further knowne; adding withall, that the carcale of one tho was the mother of to arrant an archtraitoz, ought rather to be cast out on a dungbill to be carrion for ravens and logs to grate byon, than to be late in anie the Mian grave . The copps lieng foure of fine bales in this plight, at the request of the ladie Gennet Gol. bing, wife to fir John White knight, the gouerno, licenced that it should be buried. Sir William Shef fington a fewere and oppight governour died thost bestign lie after at Bilmainan : to whome fucceded lood do putie the lood Leonard Greic, the immediatlic by Long on the taking of his oth marched with his power to. Greek wards the confines of Hounster, where Thomas beputts. Fitzgiralo at that time remained. With Fitzgiralo Burton fir William Beereton fkirmifed to fiercelie, as both fhirmited to the lives were rather for the great flaughter disad with fine uantaged, than either part by antegreat vidozic fur girala thered . Matter Brerefon therefore perceining that rough nets were not the fittest to take such peart birds, gave his admife to the los deputie to grow with Fitzgiralo by faire means to fome reasonable composition. The veputie liking of the motion, craued a parle, sending certeine of the English as ho stages to Thomas his campe with a protection direct ted buto him, to come and go at will and pleasure. Being bpon this securitie in conserence with the Chams lood Greie, he was persuaded to submit himselfe to finguid the king his mercie, with the governours fathfull himselfe and bindoubted promife that he hould be pardoned beputte opon his repaire into England. And to the end that no trecherie might have beene mildeined of either five, they both received the factament openite in the The land campe, as an infallible feate of the covenants and wantame conditions of either part agreed.

Hérevon Abomás Fifgirals for agains de Chauste willes of his concellors, officially is armie, i 1000 feb mo with the deputite to Dablin i discre he made hort a Ergant bove when he father to England with the favourable letters of the governour and the councel. And as he would have taken his tournete to Timologe, there

William Bentlo. Rice Manl well. Edward Griffith.

.

the court laie, he was intercepted contrarie to his erpectation in London waie, and conneied with hat to the tower . And before his imprisonment was buted, letters were posted into Ireland, streialie comminding the deputie opon light of them, to ap. prehend Ahomas Kitzgirald his bucles, and to læ them with all speed concenient shipt into England. Which the load deputie of o not flacke . For having feasted the of the gentlemen at Kilmainan, imme. who diathe after their banket (as it is now and then feer, 10 total pau laken. that swéet meat will have sowre sauce) he caused them to be manacled, and led as paloners to the cafell of Dublin: and the other two were fo roundlie fnatcht up in villages bard by , as they somer felt their owne captiuitie, than they had notice of their brethrens calamitie. The nert wind that ferued into England, thefe fine brethren were imbarked , to wit James fitzgiralo , Malter Fitzgiralo , Dliuer Fitigicald, John Fitigirald , and Richard Fitigie Michard, were knowne to have croffed their nethue Thomas to their power in his rebellion, and therfore were not occasioned to misooubt anie danger . But lud as in those dates were enimies to the house, in. censed the king so soze against it, persuading him, that he thould never conquer Freland, as long as anie Giraldine breathed in the countrie : as for mas king the pathwate smoth, he was resolved to lop off as well the god and found grapes, as the wild and it is to be a rub, then a king is dispoled to fweepe an alleie.

Thus were the fine brethren failing into England among thom Richard Fitzgirald being moze bokish than the rest of his brethren, & one that was much given to the Audies of antiquitie, walling his inward griefe, with outward mirth comfoited them with therefulnede of countenance, as well perfua, ding them that offended to repole affiance in God, and the king his mercie, and fuch as were not of that 40 imminde a conspiracie, to relie to their innocencie, which they hould hold for a more lafe and Grong barbican, than anteramptre or castell of brase. Thus folacing the fillie mourners sometime with finding, sometime with finging, sometime with grane and pithie as posithegmes, he craved of the owner the name of the barke; who having answered, that it was called them the Cow, the gentleman fore appalled thereat, fait : Pow god brethren I am in otter despaire of our " returne to Areland, for I beare in mind an old pro- 50 pelie, that five earles brethren Coulo be carried in a Cowes bellie to England, and from thense never to returne.

Thereat the rest began askesh to howle and lament, which doubtlesse was pitifull, to behold five valiant gentlemen, that durit meet in the field five as flurdie champions as could be picked out in a realme, to be so suddenlie terrissed with the bare name of a wooden cow, or to feare like lions a fillie cocke his combe, being moved (as commonlie the 68 wole countrie is) with a vaine and fabulous old wines dreame. But what blind prochesie soener he read, 02 heard of anie superstitions beldame touche ing a cow his bellie, that which he foretold them was found true. For Thomas Fitzgirald the third of Fee buarie, and these five brethren his oncles, were diawne, hanged, and quartered at Tiburne, which was incontinentlie bruted as well in England and Ireland, as in foren foiles. For Dominicke Powie, hat was lent from Thomas to Charles the fift, to crave his aid towards the conquest of Ireland (like Calls Res as Chale in Granill, otherwise called Charles Rei nold, was directed to Paulus terrius) presenting the emperour with twelve great hankes and foureteens

faire hobbies, was amertifed by his maiestie that he came to late for his lord and mafter and fine of his bucles were executed at London the third of Februarie : howbeit the emperour procured king Hen. rie to pardon Dominiche Power. Thich notwith Standing he obteined, yet would he not returne to Ireland, but continued in Postingale, hauing a Duchet a date of the emperour during his life, which he ended at Lifborne.

James de la Ploe the chiefe councellog of Tho James bets mas Fitzgirald, fled into Scotland and there des Dide. ceased. To this miscrable eno grew this lewo rebel. lion, which turned to the otter bindwing of divers are cient gentlemen, who trained with faire woods into a foles paradife, were not onelie dispossessed of their lands, but also deprined of their lines, or else forced to forfake their countries. As for Thomas Fitzgt Chomas rald, the (as I wrote before) was executed at Tie was not caric burne. I would with the carefull reader to buder of kildare. rald Thie of thele gentlemen, James, Walter, and 20 fand that he was neuer earle of kiloare, although some writers, rather of errour than of malice, terme LSt.pag.434. bim by that name. For it is knowne that his father lined in the tower, when he was in open rebellion. where for thought of the young man his follic he vied; and therefore Thomas was attainted in a parlement holden at Dublin, as one that was demed. reputed, and taken for a traitour before his fathers decease, by the bare name of Thomas Fitzgirald. For this hath beene observed by the Irish historio. Do earle of fruitlelle beries. Thereby appeareth how dangerous 30 graphers euer fince the conquest, that not with frands kildac. bare ing all the prefumptions of treafon, where with anie armour at as earle of Bildare could either faintlie be fuspected 02 me time as gains him behementlie charged; pet there was neuer ante erle pance. of that house read or heard of, that bare armour in the field against his prince. Which I write not as a barrifter hired to plead their caufe, but as a chronis cler moned to declare the truth.

This Thomas Fitzgirald (as befoze is specified) The bescrips was borne in England, opon whom nature powered tion of Thobeautie, and fortune by birth bestowed nobilitie: mas fitzgis which has it beene well emploied, swere it not that raid. his rare gifts had beine blemifhed by his later euill qualities, he would have proved an impe worthie to be ingraffed in fo honozable a focke. De was of flas ture tall and personable, in countenance amiable, a white face, and withall somewhat ruddie, delicatlie in each lim featured, a rolling tong a rich biterance, of nature flerible and kind, verie some caried where he fanfied, eafilie with fubmiffion appealed, hardlie with flubboannelle weied, in matters of importance an headlong hotfpur: pet neuertheleffe taken for a pong man not benote of wit, were it not (as it fell out in the end) that a fole had the keeping thereof.

But to returne to the course of the historie. When The aduction Thomas and his buckes were taken, his fecond bio- tures of the ther on the father his fide, named Girald Fitzgirald girald for to (the was after in the reigne of queene Parie refles the lable Grep red to the earledome of kildare, in which honour as counteste of yet he liucth) being at that time somewhat past kildare. twelve, and not full thirteene yeares of age, laie licke of the small pocks in the countie of kiloare, at a towne named Donoare, then in the occupation of Donoare. Birald Fitzgirald. Thomas Leuronie, itho was the Chomas dild his fcholematter, and after became bishop of Kildare, miffruffing open the apprehention of Thos mas & his bucles, that all went not current, wapt the poing patient as tenderlie as he could, and had him conucied in a clefe with all speed to Dinalie, where lotourning for a thort wace with his lifter the ladie Marie Fitzgiralo, butill he had recouered his perfect health, bis Cholemafter caried him to Doon his countrie, where making his aboad for a quarter of a yeare, he travelled to Dbren his countrie in Pounter, and having there remained for halfe a

Leuroule.

reare.

Elenor fitz= yeare, he repaired to his aunt the ladie Clenor fitz girald, who then kept in Pac Cartie Reagh bir late hulband his territozies.

This noble woman was at that time a widow, alwaies knowne and accounted of each man, that was acquainted with hir convertation of life, for a paragon of liberalitie and kindnelle, in all hir acti ons vertuous and godlie, and also in a god quarell rather fout than fiffe. To hir was Dooneil an im portunate luiter. And although at lundrie times bes 1 fore the famed to thake him off, yet confidering the diffreste of hir young innocent nemue, how he was forced to wander in pilgrimwife from house to house, eschuing the punishment that others beserved, fmarted in his tender yeares with advertitie, before he was of discretion to inivie ante prosperitie, the began to incline to hir tower his request, to the end hir nephue thould have beene the better by his countenance (houldered, and in fine indented to espouse him; with this caucat or provide, that he thould fafe, 20 lie thield and protect the fato young gentleman in this calamitie. This condition agreed opon, the rode with hir nemue to Dooneil his countrie, and there had him fafelie kept for the space of a yeare. But thostlie after the gentlewoman either by

Fiztgirald faileth to France.

fome fecret friend informed, or of wifedome gathe. ring that hir late maried hulband intended some treacherie, had hir nethue disquised, stozing him like The ladie @= a liberall and bountifull aunt with feuen fcoze poster lenois libera guses, not onelie in valour, but also in the selse same coine, incontinentlie thipped him fecretlie in a Bat tons beffell of faint Maloule, betaking him to Bod, and to their charge that accompanied him, to wit, matter Leuronce, and Robert Walth Cometime fernant to his father the earle. The ladie Clenoz hav uing thus to hir contentation bestowed hir nephue, the expostulated verie tharpelie with Dooneil as touching his villanie, protesting that the onlie cause of bir match with him proceeded of an especial care to have hir nephue countenanced: and now that he was out of his lash that minded to have betrated 4 him, he thould well understand, that as the feare of his danger moved hir to annere to fuch a clownith curmudgen: so the assurance of his safetie should cause hir to sequester hirselse from so butcherlie a cutth:ote, that would be like a pelting mercenarie patch hired, to fell or betrate the innocent blond of his nethue by affinitie, and hirs by confanguinitie. And in this wife truffing by bag and baggage, the forfoke Dooneil and returned to hir countrie. The pastengers with a prosperous gale arrived 50

Chafteau Brian.

Sir John Wallop dem = deth fitzgi=

at faint Paloufe, which notified to the governour of Britaine, named monfieur de Chasteau Brian, be fent for the rong Fitzgicald, gave him berie hartie interteinement during one moneths space. In the meane feafon the governour posted a messenger to the court of France, advertifing the king of the arrinall of this gentleman, who prefentlie caused him to be fent for, and had him put to the Dolphin named Denrie, who after became king of France. Sir 60 John Wallop (tho was then the English ambastadour) binderstanding the cause of the Irish fugitive his repaire to France, demanded him of the French king, according to the new made league betweene both the princes: which was, that none thould keeps the other his subject within his dominion, contrarie to either of their willes; adding further, that the boic was brother to one, tho of late notorious for his rebellion in Treland was executed at London.

The king de= meth hun.

To this answered the king, first that the amballar dozhad no commission from his Prince to demand him, & bpon his maiestie his letter he should know more of his mind: feconolie that he did not deteine him, but the Dolphin Cated him : lactie, that how grienouflie wener his brother offended, he was well assured, that the silte boy neither mas not could be a traitor, and therefore there rester in cause while the amballadoz thould in luch wife crave him; not doub ting that although he were delivered to his king, pet he would not fo far fwartie from the extreame rigor of inflice, as to imbrue his hands in the innocent his bloud, for the offense that his brother had perper trated. Paiffer Wallop herebpon addzelled his let. ters to England, specificing buto the councel the French kings answer . And in the meane time the French kings amove. 2000 inkling of the amballa, fingus young Fitzgirald having an inkling of the amballa, fingus young fitzgirald having a fingus fixed for the first fixed for the first fixed for the fixed for the fixed fixed for the fixed fixed for the fixed fixed fixed fixed for the fixed f poing Frequence potenties to Flanders, scantlie birs, bothis motion, were received a mes sherelocke, one James the reaching to Italencie, when James sherelocke, one James to not another than the same than the s of maifter Mallophis men, dio not onelie purlue locking him, but also did ouertake him as he solourned in Angua the faid towne.

Wherebpon maifter Leurouse, and such as ac. companied the chilo, frept to the governoz of Walen. cie, complaining that one Sherelocke a Incaking fpie, like a pikethanke promoting varlet, did dog their mafter from place to place, and presentlie pur. fued him to the towne : and therefore they be lought the governour, not to leave such apparant villante bupunished, in that he was willing to betraie not onelie a guiltlesse chilo, but also his owne countriman, who rather ought for his innocencie to be pf: tied, than for the defert of others fo egerlie to be pur fued. The governor opon this complaint fore incen. fed fent in all haft for Sherelocke, had him fuodenlie eramined, and finding him bnable to color his lebo practile with anie warrantable defenfe, he laid him Shoning bp by the heles, rewarding his hot purfute with cold unpilmo interteinment, and so remained in gaole, until the yong Fitzgiralo requiting the prisoner his bonatu rall crueltie with ondeferued courtelie, humblie ber countil fought the governoz to let him at libertie. This bount escaped, Fitzgirald travelled to Brurels, where the emperour kept his court.

Docto2 Pates being amballado2 in the low count Docto tries, demanded fitzgirald of the emperour on his matter the king of Englands behalfe. The empero; bauing answered that he had not to deale with the boy, and for ought that he knew was not minded to make ante grout above in that countrie, fent him to the bilbon of thege; allowing him for his pention an Theman hundzed crownes monethlie. The bilhop interteined before bim berie honozablie, had him placed in an abbeie of pention a monks, twas to carefull of his lafette, that if anie August person suspected had travelled within the circuit of bis glebe, he should be stresalie eramined whither he would, or from whenle he came, or bpon what occafron he travelled that wate. Having in this wife remained at Liege for halfe a pere, the cardinal Pole Control mained at Liege for halfe a pere, the cardinal Pole Politics (Fitzgicald his kiniman) fent for him to Kome, for him Wher boon the gentleman as well with the emperor rail. his licence, as with furrending his pension, travelled to Italie, where the cardinall would not admit him to his companie, untill he had attemed to some knowledge in the Italian tong. Therfore allowing him an annuitie of the bundeed crownes, he placed him with the billyop of Terona, and the carbinall of Pantua, and after with the duke of Pantua. Leu Larod roule in the meane while was admitted through the countries that Poule his procurement, to be one of the engight house in Rome, called faint Thomas his bospitall.

Robert Walsh, opon his maissers repaire to good a Italie, returned to Ireland. Fitzgirald haning con returning tinued with the cardinall, and the buke of Pantua, a Inch. peare and an halfe, was fent for by the cardinall Pole to Rome, at which time the ouke of Pantua gaue him for an annuall pension 300 crownes. The cardinall greatlie reioised in his kiniman , baohim

Auples.

Eripolie.

carefullie trained by in his house, interlacing with lud discretion his learning and Audies with exerciles of activitie, as he thould not be after accounted of the learned for an ignorant totot, nor taken of actine gentlemen for a bead and dumpidy meacocke. Ille gentlemmitted anie fault, the cardinall would fecretie command his tutoes to correct him, and all that notwith tranding, he would in prefere bandle the boie, as though he were not privile to his punish. ment, & upon his complaint made, he vied to checke fitigitald his mailter openlie to, chaltiling to le.

nerelie bis prette Darling.

In this wife he refted thee yeares togither in the cardinall his house, and by that time having frept fo far in yers (for he was pricking fall boon nintene) as he began to know himfelfe, the cardinall put him to his dolle, either to continue bis learning, or by travelling to lete his adventures abzode. The pong fripling(as bluallie kind both crepe) rather of narure addicted to baliantnes, than wedded to bokilb. nelle, choled to be a traneller: and presentlie with the cardinal his licence repaired to Paples: where fal ling in acquaintance with knights of the Khodes, he accompanied them to Palta, from thenle be late led to Aripolie (a fort apperteining to the aforefath order, coalling opon Barbarie) and there he above fir wekes with Pounbulon, a commander of the Rhodes, who had the charge of that hold.

At that time the knights ferued valiantlie againt the Turks and miscreants, spotled and facked their billages and townes that late nere the water five, 30 twhe diverte of them puloners, and after fold them to the chiffians for bondilaues. The young fitigie figuil to raid returned with a rich botie to Palta, from thence to Rome, bauing spent in this botage not fullte one mon. Grandinall peace. Poond was the cardinall to heare of his profperous exploits: and for his further advancement be inhanted his pention of the hundred crownes, to thice hundred pounds, over and above three hundred crownes that the duke of Pantus allowed him. 40 Shortlie after the preferred him to the feruice of the duke of flozence, named Colmo, with whom he continued mailter of his horle three yeares, having also inchossite of the duke the hundled duckets for a yearelie pens son during life, or butill he were restored; in like maner as the carolinall Pole and the duke of Pane tua in their annuities had granted him.

During the time that he was in feruice with the duke of flozence, he travelled to Kome a Cyzoning, of let purpole to be merrie : and as be rode on bun. 50 ting with carolnall Fernelle the pope his nemue, it bamened that in chaling the bucke he fell into a pit nine and twentie fatham deepe, and in the fall forfa-hing his horfe within two fathams of the bottom, he toke hold by two or three rots, griping them fall, but till his armes were to wearte, as he could hang no longer in that paine. Wherefore betaking himfelfe to God, he let go his gripe by little and little, and fell fofflie on his horfe, that in the bottom of the pit laie starke bead, and there he stod by to the ancles in 60 water for the space of three boures. When the chase was ended, an erceding good greihound of his named Brifhound, not finding his mailler in the com. Nagrit med Griffound, not known you make to the pit, bas from pante, followed his track untill he came to the pit, and from thense would not depart, but food at the baimincellantlie howling. The cardinall Ferneile and his traine milling fitzgirald, made towards the dog, and furueieng the place, they were berelie persuaded that the gentleman was squised to death

> Having therefore police his lervants in hall to a village hard by Kome (named Trecappan) for ropes and other necessaries, he caused one of the companie to glive in a balket downe to the bottome

of the hole. Fitzgirald revived with his prefence, and willing to be removed from to darkefome a bongeon to the open aire, belought the other to lend bim his rome, inherebpon he was haled op in the basket: as well to the general admiration of the thole companie, as to the fingular gratulation of the cardinall and all his friends, rendering most bartie thankes buto God his diutne maiellie, for proteating the gentleman with his gratious guerdon. And thus furceasting to treat anie further of his aduentures, butill the bate of time traine my pen to a longer discourse, I will returne to the inhabitants of the English pale, who after the death of Thomas Fitzgirald, through rigor of instice and the due erecution of lawes were greatlie moleffed . Fozoner this, that fuch as were knowne for open and appar rant traitors in the commotion, were for the more part erecuted, 02 with round fums fined, 02 from the realme eriled : certeine gentlemen of worthip were Commission fent from England , with commillion to eramine ners fent to each person suspected with Thomas his treason, and Ireland: lo according to their discretion, either with equitie to erecute . 02 with clemencie to pardon all fuch as they could proue to have furthered him in his dillotall commotion . Commissioners were these : Ar Anthonie Sentleger knight , fir George Paulet Cheir names knight , mailter Moile, and maifter Barnes . Duch about this time was there a parlement holden at Aparlement. Bublin before the lord Leonard Greie lord deputie, beginning the first of Paie, in the eight and twen tith yeare of the reigne of king Henrie the eight.

In this parlement there past these acts following.

> Foz the attaindoz of the earle of kildare, and Thomas fitz= girald, with others.

For the fuccession of the king a

quæne Anne. Of ablenties, wherein was granted to the king the inhes ritance of such lands in Tre-land, wherof the duke of Pozffolke & George Talbot earle of waterfoid & Salop were feized, with the inheritances of diverse other corporations and couents demurrant in

Enaland. For the repeale of Poinings act. Authoriting the king his heirs and fuccessors to be supreame head of the church of Ireland.

That no subjects of restants of Ireland thall purfue or commenle, ble of execute anie maner of provocations, appeales or other processe from the sæ of Rome, byon paine of incur-

ring the premunire. Against such as slander the king, othis heires apparant.

or the first fruits. Of fir Walter de la Dide knight his lands in Carbeire granted to the king.

Dow persons robbed thall be restored to their gods.

Restreining tributs to be granted to Irithmen.

Against

In act

Against proctors to be any mems ber of the parlement. Against marieng or fostering with orto Irithmen. Against the authoritie of the see of Rome. for the twentith part. For the English order, habit, and lanquage. for the suppressing of abbeis.

An act.

ាងនេះ

for the lading of woll a flockes, for the profe of testaments. Dffaculties. Declaring th'effect of Poinings art. Of penall statutes. For the weres boon Barou, and other waters in the countrie of kilkennie. for the personage of Donga-

ran. For leasers of come.

The old earle of Kilbare bis South before his ocath.

Dis feruice.

teis holpita: litic and ac-

As for the old earle of Kildare, who in this parle ment was atteinted for diverse presumptions, in the preamble of the faid act rehearled, certeine it is, that the revolt of his sonne Thomas fitzgirald fmot him so depelie to the heart, as opon the report 20 thereof he deceased in the tower, wishing in his beath-bed that either he had died before he had beard of the rebellion, or that his brainelesse boy had never lived to raise the like commotion . This earle, of fuch as did not flomach his proceedings, was taken for one that bare himfelfe in all his affaires verie honozablie, a wife, deepe, and far reaching man: in war valiant without rallynelle, and politike with out treacherie. Such a lupzellox of rebels in his government, as they durif not beare armo; to the 40 annotance of anie fubied, thereby be heaped no fmall revenues to the crowne, inriched the king his treasure, garded with securitie the pale, continued the honor of his house, and purchased enuie to his person. Dis great hospitalitie is to this daie rather of each man commended, than of anie one follow. ed. De was to religiouslie addicted buto the feruing of God, as what time foeuer he travelled to a. nie part of the countrie, such as were of his chappell thould be fare to accompanie him. Among o ther rare giffs, he was with one fingular qualitie induce, which were it put in practile by fuch as are of his calling, might minister great occasion as well to the abandoning of flattering carrie tales, as to the flated quietnelle of noble potentates.

For if anie thispered, onder Benedicite, a finifier report or fecret practile, that tended to the distaining of his honoz, or to the perill of his person, he would Arialie eramine the informer, thether the matter he reported were past, or to come . If it were faid or 60 shortlie after (according to his promise) bestowed two done he was accultomed to late fore to his charge, where, and of whome he heard it, or how he could fullifie it. If he found him to half in the profe, he fronto punish him as a pikethanke makebate, for being fo malicioudie carted, as for currieng fauour to himfelfe, he would labor to putthale hatred to and other . But if the practife were future, and hereaf ter to be put in execution, then would be suspend the credit, bling withall such warie ferrecie, as butill the matter came to the pinch, the abuerfarte thould thinke that he was most ignozant, when he was best prouided . As being in Dublin forewarned , that John Dlurkan with certeins desperate parlets confolied his destruction, & that they were determined

to affault him byon his returne to spainos, he had his brain one of his fernants named James Grant, that was confine much of his pitch, and at a bluth die somewhat refemble him, attired in his riding aparell, and name, John Clar. lie in a fearlet cloake, where with he vied to be clad. 3ams Beant in this wife malking in his lozos attire, robe biant. as he was commanded in the beaten high wate to wards Painoth, with fir of the earle his fernants attending opon him . The conspirators awaiting towards Lucan the comming of the earle, incomp tered the disguised load, and not doubting but it had bene kiloare , they began to charge him : but the o ther amazed therewith, cried that they twhetheir marke amille; for the earle rove to Painoth on the further lide of Little . Wherewith the murtherers amalled, fled awaie, but incontinentlie were by the earle apprehended , full eining the punishment that fuch cattifes beferueb.

This noble man was to well affected to his wife the ladie Gzeie, as he would not at anie time bup a fute of awarell for himfelfe, but he would fute hir with the fame fruste. Which gentlenesse the recompensed with equall kindnette. For after that he beceased in the former, the albinot onelie euer after Chelan deceased in the rouse, and honogable widow; but also night negative lie before the went to bed, the would refort to his hulband, vidure, 4 there with a folemne congé the would bid hir load goonight. Whereby may be gathered with how great love the affected his person, that had in fuch price his bare picture. An other act that did valle in this parlement touching ablenties, proceeded of this occasion . Maister Giralo Ailmer , who first Giraldin was chiefe baron of the ercheker, after chiefe tuflice mit. of the common ples, was occasioned, for certeins his affaires, to repaire onto the court of England. Where being for his god feruice greatlie counter nanced by luch as were in those dates taken for the pillers of the weale publike, namelie of the look Cromwell; it hamened that through his lording his earnest meanes, the king made maister Ailemer chiefe inflice of his bench in Ireland . This advance ment diffiked by certeine of Waterford and Weil ford, that were not friended to the gentleman, they debaled him in such despitefull wife, as the earle of Shewelburie who then was likewife earle of Was terford, was by their letod reports caried to chalenge the king, so far as with his outie of allegiance he barft, for bestowing so weightie an office boon so light a person, being such a simple John at Stile as he tearmed him, no wifer than Patch the late lood cardinall his fole.

The king herebpon exposfulated with the load Cromwell, who being throughlie acquainted with the gentleman his rare wifedome, answered: that if it would frand with his matefres pleasure to ene ter into conference with him, he thould be fure to find him no babe, not with francing the wrong infor mations of fuch as labored to thwart or croffe him. Withereto the king opon further leadure agreed, and or the houres with mailler Ailmer : who boon the load Cromwell his forewarning, was to well armed for his highneste, as he thewed himselse in his dif course, by answering Adomnia quare, to be a man worthie to suplie an office of so great credit. In this conference the king demanded him, what he take to be the chiefe occasion of disorder in Ireland, and how he thought it might best be reformed . Trulie and it like your mateffie (quoth Ailmer) among fundate reasons that might be probablie alleged for the becaie of that your kingdome, one chiefe occa-Con is, that certeine of your nobilitie of this your realme of England are feized of the better part of your dominion in Ireland, thereof they have folit

The oin earle of Rilbare his

the hope, as for lacke of their prefence, they fuffer the faid amos to be overrun by rebels and traitors. Therefore if your highnesse would prouide by ac of parlement, that all such lands, which by reason of their absence may not be desended, thould be to your dighnesse by the consent of the nobilitie and commus nalite granted, you might thereby inrich your crowne, represe revels, and desend your subieces from all traitozous inuation.

bed maifter Ailmer hartie thanks for his good counfell, and in this parlement had the tenure thereof put in effect . Which redounded cheffie to the load of Shewelburte his disaduantage, as one that was possessed of otherse ancient loadships and manoas in that countrie. Some after this parlement, Ducale imagining that he was able to make his partie god against the English pale, conspired with Dooneale Maggabneth, Deaghan, Bac lawilen, Dhanlan, and other Irifh loads, and on a fudden innaded the pale, came to the Pauan, burnt all the townes of ech five confining, after marched to Taragh, muffe. ring with great pitoe his armie upon the top of the bill: and having gathered togither the spoile of the pale without reliffance, he began to recule northwards, making his full account to have gone his inate (cotfrée.

The logo Leonard Greie being then logo beput tie, forecasting the worst, certified the king & counfought a fresh supplie of fouldiors to affift the pale in refifting the enimie, and that fir William Biereton, (tho was discharged freturned to England) should m william be sent into Ireland, as one that for his late ser uice was highlie commended of the countrie. The king and councell condescending to the deputie his requell, appointed fir William Bereton to hie this ther with speed, baning the charge of two hundred and fiftie fouldiors of Chethiremen . In which fermind In uice the gentleman was found to preff and readic, 40 of the pale were confirmed to bicker in the water. that notwith Canding in muffering his band he fell by his milhap off his hortle, and therewithall brake his thigh in tivo places, yet rather than he would retire homewards, he amointed the mariners to hale him op to their barke by pullies, and in lach impotent wife arrived in Ireland, suppetting the feblenette of his bodie with the contagious valor of his mind.

The load deputie in the meane wille marched with the force of the pale, the maior & the citizens of Du blin to Drogheda: from thense likewise accompanied with the maioz a townelmen, he marched north, ward to Bellahoa, where Dneale & his companie on the further live of the water late incamped with the spoile of the pale. The occutie by spies and secret mes lengers hereof certified, caused the armie to travell the better part of the night, infomuch as by the date. ning of the date they were neere to the rivers lide: where having elevied the enimies, namlie Paggad. neth, and the Balloglattes that were placed there to képethe Arcids (for Oncale with a maine armie 60 lurked not farre off) they began to fet themselves in battell arrate, as men that were resolved with all half and good speed to supplie the entimie with a sud-

At which time James Fleming baron of Slane (commonlie called Blacke James) garbed with a round companie, as well of hortemen as of fots men, humblie besought the veputie to grant him that daie the honor of the onset. Whereto when the low Greie had agried, the baron of Slane with therefull countenance imparted the obteining of his lute, as plefant tidings to Robert Halfepennie, han halfe who with his ancestors was standardbearer to the boule of Slane. But Halfepennie læing the fur.

ther live of the water to belet with armed Ballogial. fes as he twheit, as likelie an attempt to rafe down the Arongell fort in Areland with a fillip, as to rulh through such quicke fron walles , flatlie answered the baron, that he would rather disclame in his of fice, than there to give the onlet where there reffed mohope of life, but an affured certeintie of death. And therefore he was not as yet to wearie of the world, as like an headlong hotipur, voluntarilie to The king tickled with this plaulible deutle, yeal 10 run to his bitter and budoubled destruction. Where, fore he belought his lordinip to fet his heart at relt, and not to impute his denial to balenelle of corage, but to warinelle of fafetie, although he knew none of staied mind, but would soner chose to slepe in an whole there his pelt, than to walke in a tornelion bis fkin, namelie when all hope of life was abando: med, and the certeintie of death affuredie promised.

The baron with this answer at his wits end rode Robert 256to Robert Betoa of Dolonoze, brake with him as toa. touching Walfepennie his determination, & withall requested him (as he did tender his hono;) noto at a pinch to suplie the rome of that datarolie coward, as he did terme him . Wetoa to this answered, that though it flod with god reason, that such as her to fore taffed the fluct in peace, thould now be contented to fip of the fowe in war : yet not withfranding, rather than the matter thould to his bonoz lie in the ouff, he promited to breake through them, or elle to lie in the water: with all being furpallinglie mounted (for the cell of Dneale his rebellion, and withall humblie be. 30 baron gaue him a choife houle) he twise the Randard, 4 with a funden thotot, having with him in the fore: Matte of ranke Dabe of Pabellowne (tho at the first brunt flatte. was flaine) he flong into the water, and charged the Brith that it wo on the further those . After followed the gentlemen and peomen of the pale, that with as great manhod charged the enimies, as the enimics with cozage relifted their affault. To this foutnelle were the entmies more boldlie pricked, in that they had the advantage of the those, and the gentlemen

But the longer the Irith continued, the moze they were disabuantaged; by reason that the English inere to affifted with freth luplies, as their enimics could not anie longer withfrand them, but were compelled to beare backe, to forfake the banke, and to give the armie fre paffage . The English taking bart opon their faintnelle,brake through the Gallo, Che Brith glaffes, flue Pagoanneth their capteine, purfued bifcomfited. Dneale with the remnant of his logos, leaving be. Oncate put to hino them for lacke of fafe carriage the spolle of the fight, pale, scantlie able to escape with his owne life, be ing egerlie purfued by the armie butill it was funne fet. In this hote conflict Pattheto Bing, Patrike Barnewall of Bilmallocke, fir Coward Bainet Barnewall prieff, tho after became deane of faint Patriks in Boinet. Dublin, and was fwozne one of the printe councell, fitifimons. and Thomas Kitzlimons of Curduffe, were repoze ted to have served verie valiantlie. Pozeover, James Sitzumons maior of Dublin , Dichaell Che maiors James Auzumons mator of Subitity, souther of Dublin and Curfeie major of Brogheda, Girald Ailmer chafe Brogheda tuffice, and Thomas Talbot of Palahide, were dub, Dubbed bed knights in the field.

But of all others, the load Grele then load depu. tie, as he was in authoritie superior to them all, so The valiants in courage and manlinede he was inferior to none. nede of the He was noted by the armie to have indured great logo Greie. toile and paine before the fairmilh, by polling bare. headed from one band to an other, debaling the enimies inhanting the power of the pale, Depret, fing the revolt of rebellious traitors , criviling the goo quarell of lotall lubicas, offring large rewards, which with as great constancie he performed, as with liberalitic he promised. Duer this, he bare himfelfe to affable to his fouldtors, in bling them like

ti, fri.

anaonada din

frænds

frends and fellows, and terming them with courter ous names, and mouing laughter with pleasant conceipts, as they were incensed as well for the loue of the person, as for the hatred of the enimie, with resolute minds to bicker with the Irith. In which conflict the deputie was as forward as the moli, and bequit himselse as valiant a servitoz as the bell.

The governoz, turning the opostunitie of this fairmish to his advantage, shortlie affer rode to the north, preiding a spoiling Dreale with his confeder 10 ged, sir William Breveton was constituted lord in Si rats, tho by reason of the late overthrow were able to make but little reliffance. In this iomie he ra-feo faint Patrike his church in Powne, an olo ancient citie of Allter, and burnt the monuments of Patitike, Bzigioc, and Colme, tho are faid to have beene there intomed, as before is expressed in the description of Ireland. This fact lost him sundzie barts in that countrie, alwaics after detelling and abhoring his prophane tyrannie, as they did name it. Wherevpon conspiring with such of Mounter 20 as were enimies to his government, they boked bp diverse complaints against him, which they did erhibit to the king and councell. The articles of greatest importance lato to his charge were thefe.

I Inprimis, that not with standing he were strict. The articles that were laid lie commanded by the king his maiestie, to appearance to his charge. hend his kinsman the yong Fitzgicald, yet old he not onlie disobete the kings letters as touching that point by plateng bopepe, but allo had printe confe, rence with the faid Fitzgiralo, and late with him 30 after lubmitted himfelfe, & fent bis sonne Comad mi tivo or the feuerall nights before he departed into

France.

2 Item, that the cheefe cause that moved him to inuegle Domas Fitzgiralo with luch faire promiles,proceded of let purpole to have him cut off, to the end there thould be a gap let open for the young fitze girald to afpire to the earlebome of Milbare.

Item, that he was so grædilie addicted to the pilling and polling of the king his lubicats, namelie of fuch as were reliant in Mounter, as the beds he 40 noz, ended his life in that fournie, and lieth intomed belief late in, the cups he dranke in, the plate with which he was ferued in anie gentlemans house, were by his fernants against right and reason packt bp, and care ried with great ertoztion awaie.

Item, that without ante warrant from the king or councell, he prophaned the church of faint Patrikes in Downe , turning it to a Cable , after plucked it downe, and thirt the notable ring of bels that did hang in the Ceple, meaning to have fent them to England : had not God of his tuffice pres 50 nented his iniquitie, by linking the belleft and palsengers wherein the said belles should have bene

conneted.

These and the like articles, were with such odious prefumptions coloured by his acculers, as the king and councell remembring his late faults, and forget. ting his former feruices (for commonlie all men are of so hard hap , that they thall be somer for one trespalle condemned, than for a thouland god deferts commended) gave commandement that the load 60 Breie hould not onelie be remoued from the go. uernment of the countrie, but also had him beheaded on the tower hill the eight and twentith of June. But as touching the first article, that brought him most of all out of conceipt with the king, I moved question to the erle of Bildare, whether the teno; there of were true or falle. His lordiff thereto answered Bona fide, that he never spake with the load Breie, nes uer font mellenger to him , nor receiued mellage or The dangers letter from him. Whereby maie be gathered, with that happen to how mante bangers they are inwapped that go. uerne prouinces, wherein diligence is twackt with hatred, negligence is loden with tawnts, feueritie with perils menaced, liberalitie with thanklette bu-

hindnelle contemned , conference to bindermining framed, flatterie to befrudion forged, each in countenance fmiling, ofucrie in heart pouting, open faluning,fecret grudging, gaping for fuch as thall fuc, coo in gouernment , honouring magifirates with cap and knee as long as they are prefent, and carping them with tong and pen as some as they are ab

nt. Alse lood Leonard Greie (as is aforefaid)difthat, Sirvely ffice, whole thost government was intangled with lost with the no little trouble. For albeit he and Dneale fell to a reasonable composition, yet other of the Irishlog bings, namelie Dconhur and his adherents, that are content to live as fubieds, as long as they are not able to hold out as rebels, conspired togither, and determined to affemble their power at the hill of Howze in well Deth, and fo on a sudden to ranfacke the pale. The load inffice forthwith accompanied with the armie, and with two thousand of the pale, of which no small number were ecclesiastical persons, made towards the rebels, who bpon the approch of fo great an armie gave ground, and differ, fed themselves in woods and marishes. The load in fice this notwithstanding innaded Dconbur his countrie, burnt his tenements, e made all his tren. thes with the multitude of pioners to pallable, as foure hundred carts, befide light carriage, were led without let thosough the countrie. Deonhur some Occamination and localitie to the king his highnelle. After this four, do and nie was ended, fir Authonie Scotleger knight of niedning the order was constituted lord deputie, and six Will lookupte liam Breeton lord bigh marthall, who within one for the lord marthall breeton lord by the marthall be the mart halfe yeare after he was preferred to be marthall, highmand travelling by the load deputie his amointment to Limerike to bying in James earle of Delmond, who flod byon certeine tickle points with the goverat Bilkennie in the quier of faint Bennie his durch. In the these and thirtith years of the reigns of Henrie the eight, there was a parlement holden at Du blin before fir Anthonie Sentleger, in wich there

palled thele flatutes following; namelie. That the king and his luccellogs to be kings of Ireland.

Fozgraie merchants. That the plantife maie absidge his plaint in allile.

That consanguinity or affinitie, being not within the fift des græ, thall be no principalichas

That maketh it felonie to anie man to run awaie with his malter his calket.

For the administrance of precontracts inmarriage.

Anact

For all lords to distreme bp on the lands of them holden, A to make their auowrie, not naming the tenant, but their

land. for capacities. Foz seruants wages. Fozioint-tenants. For recoverie in auoiding leales. Foztithes.

For atturnements. This parlement was prozoged until the fiftenth of Februarie, and after was continued at Linerike

The load

Greie accu=

The load Greie be= beabed. I 54 I

Thelc2d leffe of the firft article.

gouernozs of prouinces.

before the fato deputte, at which time there patted for the adjournment of the parlement, and the place to hold the same, and what persons thall be chosen knights and buraeles.

Anact

1543

For the election of the lord iu-Stice.

Touching mispleding and ieop- 10 faileg.

For lands given by the king. for the suppression of kilmais nan and other religious hous

This parlement was likewife prozoged, and af ter was continued and holden before the faid governour at Dublin, the firt date of Pouember, in the foure and thirtith yeare of the reigne of king Benrie

> For the division of Meth into two thires.

Anact / For persons standing bound in a= in court for their appærance; and being in feruice, to be difcharged by writ.

This parlement was further proroged butill the fewenteenth of Appill, and at that time before the fato fed an act touching the manour and castell of Dongaruan to be buited and annered to the crowne for ener. To this parlement resorted diverse of the 3. rith loods, who lab mitting them lelues to the deputie his mercie, returned peaceablie to their countries. But James earle of Delmond lailed into England, and before the king and councell purged him, felfe of all such articles of treason as were falselie lato to his charge: those cleare purgation and humble submission the king accepted verie gratefullie. 40 dunktarie Shortlie after Delmond his returne homeward, the great Dneale was created earle of Tiron, and his balc fonne Patthew Dneale baron of Dongaruan. For in those daies John Dneale, commonlie called Shane Dneale, the onclie sonne lawfullie of his bodie begotten, was little oz nothing estemed.

Dneale haning returned to Ireland with this honour, and the king his fauoz, Dbzen with certeine other griff loads failed into England, submitting their lives and lands to the king his mercie. This 50 Dbzen was at that time created earle of Clencare, in which honour his posteritie hitherto resteth. Short. lie after the returne of thefe loads to their countrie, king Penrie being fullie resolued to besiege Bulto the longne, gave commandement to fir Anthonie Sent leger deputie, to lente an armie of Irishmen, and with all expedition to send them to England. To thele were appointed capteins the load Powze, who after was bubo knight, Surlocke & Finglalle, with parke seven hundged. In the siege of Bullongne they floo the armie in berie god fled. For they were not onelie contented to burne and spoile all the villar ges thereto adioining, but also they would range twentie or thirtie miles into the maine land, and hav twente or with the miles into the him to a take, and the ming taken a buil, they view to the him to a take, and leasthing him with faggots, they would force him to roze, so as all the cattell in the countrie would make towards the bull, all which they would lightlie lead awaie, and furnith the campe with Aoze of biefe.

If they toke anie Frenchman prisoner, lest they thould be accounted couetous, in Inatching with them his entier boote, his onelie ransome should be no moze but his head. The French with this Arange

kind of warfaring allonithd, fent an amballados to king Penrie, to learne whether he brought men with him or divels, that could neither be twone with rewards, not pacified by pitie: which when the king had turned to a teaft, the frenchmen cuer after, if they could take anie of the Irith leatering from the companie, bled first to cut off their genitals, and after to toment them with as great and as lingering paine as they could beuile.

After that Bullongne was furrended to the king, a french there incamped on the well live of the towne be chalenge yond the hauen an armie of Frenchmen, among t banquithed. thome there was a Thatonicall Bolias that departed from the armie, and came to the brinke of the bauen, and there in letting and daring wife chalen. ged anie one of the English armie that ourst be fo hardie, as to bicker with him hand to hand. And als best the distance of the place, the depth of the bauen. the nærnelle of his companie imboldened him to the eight, therein there patted these acts; namelie: 20 this chalenge, more than anie great valour or with Nichous that rested in him to induce a combat; yet all this weith notwichstanding, an Irithman named Picholl Welth', who after reteined to the earle of kilvare, loathing and disoaining his proud brags, flung into the water, and fivam over the river, fought with the chalenger, Arake him for dead, and returned backe to Bullongne with the Frenchman his head in his mouth, before the armie could ouertake him . For which exploit, as he was of all his companie highlie governor it was holden and ended, in which there pale 30 commended, to by the lieutenant he was bountiful lie rewarded.

Much about this time the earle of Lennor, berie lozongfullie inquieted in Scotland, and forced to for. The earle of fake his countrie, became humble petitioner to Lennor afking Penrie, as well to releque him in his distressed henrie. calamitie, as to compatte the means how he might be reflozed to his lands & living. The king his highnesse mouse with compassion, posted the earle over to Ireland, with letters of especiall trust, command. ing fir Anthonie Sentleger then deputie , to affict and further the Scotift outcast, with as puillant an armie as to his contentation thould feme god. The James But-Deputie, bpon the receipt of these letters , sent for Damond. James Butler earle of Demond and Offerie, a no. ble man no lelle politike in peace, than valiant in warres, made him privile to the king his pleasure; and withall in his mateffies name did caft the charge hereof bpon the fair earle, as one that for his tried lotaltie was willing, and for his honour and valour able to attempt and atchive for are and famous an exploit. The load of Damond as willing to obete, as the governour was to command, leuted of his tenants and reteiners fir hundzed Ballowglaffes, foure bundeed Bearnes, thee score borsemen, and foure hundred and fortie that: lo in the whole he muffered on Dimantowne græne nære Bublin, fil tene bundted fouldiours.

The load deputie yelding his honour luch thanks in words, as he deferued indeed, leuted in the pale diverte others. They must red in faint James his 60 fifteene hundred fouldiours more, to be annexed to Sir John the earle his companie. Duer them he constituted Crauers fir John Trauers capteine, but the erle of Damond knight. was made generall of the whole armie . When the fouldfours were with munition and victuals aboundantlie furnished, the earle of Damond and the earle of Lennor toke thipping at Sherife, having in their companie twentie and eight thips well rigged, fuffi cientlie manned, and fronglie appointed . From thense they sailed northwards, and rode at anchor without the haven of Dloffet beyond Karregfer. Cheente of gus. Where having remained hulling without the Omond and mouth of the haven, contrarie to the adulte of the mar the earle of Lennor in fers of their thips (who prognosticated the specie ap, dangertobe proch of a storme, and therefore did with them to drowned.

take

take a good harbrough) it hapned that the fato night there arose so boisterous a tempest, that the whole flet was like to have beine overwelmed. The mariners betaking their pallengers and themsclues to the mercie of God, old cut their maine malts, let alip their anchors, and were weather driven to the haven of Dunbittaine in Scotland, whereas they were like to run their thips on ground, and confequent, lie they all thoulo either have beine plunged in the water, ozelle have beine flaine on the land by a great to Carregfergus, there they bake companie. For the land by a great to Carregfergus, there they bake companie. For the land by Lennor and fir John Aravers taking as he thought flamming lie they all thould either have beine plunged in the with his gratious clemencie preventing their imminent calamitie, sent them not onelie a wished calme, but also a prosperous gale of wind, that blew them backe in lafetie to the grilly coall , from whenle they mere scattered.

The earle of Lennor advertised by certeine of his freends that met with him on the lea, that the Scots (contrarie to their promise) dealt berie doublie with him(for although they gave their word to furrender 2 by to him the callell of Dunbaitaine, yet they did not onelie fortifie that hold, but also were readie to incounter with his fouldiors open their arrivals) he concluded to returne to Ireland . The earle of De mond berie loath that to great an attempt thould take folittle effect, dealt withhim verie earnealie, notwithstanding his counsell were bewrated to inuade his enimies, and his loodhip thould be fure to find the armie to forward in affilting him in to famous an enterpile, as they would them themselves 30 more willing to bicker with his foes in Scotland, than without (kirmilbing to returne to Ireland. Foz the earle of Demond was of this nature, that as he mould not begin anie martiall broile rathlie or but adulledlie, so he would not fæme to put it op lightlie oz eatilie.

Further thereas the earle of Lennor food in hope, that the load of the out Iles would ato him, it was thought by Demond not to be amille, to expect his comming; and fo foining his companie to the are 40 mie, there reffed no doubt, but that the Scotish ent. mies would be forced to plucke in their hornes, although at the first blush they feems to fet a good face on the matter. Lennor somewhat with this persualion carried gave his confent to expect the load of the out Ties betermination, who notwithstanding all the fetth of the enterpaile were descried, would not Alp from his word, but personallie sailed to the Frish fleet, with thee gallies well appointed. The noble man with fuch martiall triumps was received, as 50 earle of Demond kept his Chiffmalle, requelling warlike fouldiers could on the fea aford him. But of all others, both the earls gave him heartie intertein ment for his true thonorable dealing, that to be as god as his word, would not feme to thrinke from his frænd in this his aduerlitte. And shortlie after as they craved his adule what were best to be done, et. ther to land in Scotland, or elle to returne home. ward, his flat resolution was at that time to retire, bicaule their drift was detected, their feined friends fainted, the caltels were fortified, and the shoares on 60 councell: and if their honours would allow anie suball parts with Iwarms of Scots peopled. Wherefore he thought it better policie to give out in open rumoss, that they meant not at anie hand to invade Scotland, but to retire to their countrie.

And after that the Scotish fouldies should be oil milf, which would be incontinent opon their returne, by reason of the excelline charges: then might the earle of Lennor with leffe preparation, and more fer crecie give a fresh onset, that the enimies should so ner fæle his force, than heare of his arrivall . D20 mond and Lennor boon this determination landed Lennor land. with the greater part of the armie, and appointed the thips to bend their course to Dublin. The lood of the out Ales and his the gallies failed with the flet,

for he was not able by reason of the feblenesse of his bodie to travell by land, or feantlie further to pro-Thelopol long his life, which he ended at Houth presentlie them 348 epon his arrivall, and was with great folemnitie bith burted in faint Patrike bis durch at Dublin, bpon whole beath this epitath following was framed:

pique manuque mea patria dum redditur exful.

Exsul in externa cogor or ipse mori. Both the earles marched with the armic on sotto Digeptloph, the Chorter but not the fafer wate, travelled through the cast of the Ardes with the number of five hundred foulds. Emms. ers, where the Frish inhabitants skirmished with them, and put them to fuch fireft plunges (for they would gladie have fæne what a clocke it was in their budgets) as they withed they had not parted from the rest of the armie. The earle of Dimond with his fouldiers (which were a thousand fine him, Died as before is expressed) marched on fot to Beles falt, which is an arme of the les, a quarter of a mile broad or little leffe. And albeit their wether were hit. ter and overnipping, and no small parcell of the was ter were congeled with froit, pet the earle and his ar, The until mie waded ouer on fot, to the great danger as well Dimonths tollow in of his person, as of the those companie, which doubt well, leffe was a valiant enterprise of so honorable a perlonage. From thenle he palled to Strangford, and through Lecale to Dondalke, where he discharged his fouldiers, and having presented himselfe to the governour at Dublin, he rode homewards to the countie of Bilkennie.

Shootlie after fir Anthonie Sentleger lood deput Che beputit tie and the earle of Demond fell at debate, infomuch and Dinate as either of them laid articles of treason one to the at behild others charge. The chiefe occasion of their mutuall grudge proceded of certeine new and extraordina rie impolitions, where with the deputie would have charged the lublects. Thereat the earle of Dimond as a zelous defendor of his countrie began to hicke, s in no fort could be wone to agree to ante fuch but reasonable demand. Herebpon Demond, percel uing that the governour perlifted in his purpole, ad Omounhis dreffed letters of complaint to such as were of the letters mitted prinie councell in England: which letters were by capto. one of fir Anthonie his friends intercepted at lea, and presented to him to be perused. Sir Anthonie having over read the writings, fent matter Bainet in post hast with the packet to Kilkennie, where the his loodhip to take in god part the opening of his letters. Which was done rather to learne the effect of his complaint, than in anie fort to imbar his wife tings from comming to the councels hands.

The earle answered that his quarell was logod, his dealing to open, as he little weighed who twice a view of his letters. And for his part what he wrote he meant not to buwite; but in such fort as they came from the governour, they thould be fent to the ied to be so hardie, as to intercept and open letters that were to them indopled, he could not but digelf anic such insurie that they would some to beare With this answer Balnet returned, and the earle Thelophic performed his promile. Wherebpon the gonernour puticantal and he were commanded to appeare before the pile month find nte councell in England, ithere they were fundite in England times eramined, and their acculations ripelie debated . In fine, the councell equallie to both parts in their complaints affected, and weighing withall rather the due defert of both their lotall fernices, than the vaine prefumption of their mutuall acculations, wapped op their quarels a made them both freends, Three with such indifferencie, as neither part thould be made thinks

The load of the out Fles faileth to the earle of Len=

The earle of

Damond his propertie.

Mamond and

either with ante conquett eralted, do with ante totle a mi inne

And for fo much as fir John Alen knight there said these loss chancellos of Irelanc, was found to limps in an one of secontrolering by plateng (as it was supplies) more craffilie than wifelie, will both the hands, in that he farmed to be rather a fofferer of their matice, han an appealer of their quarels, he was likewife fent for into England; and being teipt by the count cell in his tale, was committed to the Fleet, Werin 10 heremained along time. In this frouble the earle of Dimond was greatlie aideb by fir William Wille knight a woodhipfull gentlemail, borne in the or william title of Materford, tho deferuing in beed the pialle of that vertue, whereof he bare the name, grew to be of great credit in the court, and theb bighlie in king Pienrie his grace, which he wholie vied to the further rance of his friends, and never abuled to the annotance of his foes . This gentleman was verie well fooken, mild of nature, with discretion fout, as one that in an oppight quarell would beare no coles, leb Bome in an intricate matter grauelled being found at all affairs to be of a pleafant and prefent wit. Has ning lent the king his fignet to feale a letter, who has ning powdied erimites ingrailed in the feale; Why how now Wife (quoth the king) what, haft thou lice bere : And if it like your maieffie, quoth fir Willis am, a loufe is a rich cote, for by giving the loufe, 3 partarmes with the French king, in that he glueth the floure de lice. Thereat the thing hartilie laughe 30. ed, to beare hold pretilie to biting a taunt (namelie ... And though the foile here throwds the harry proceding from a prince) was luddenlie turned to

lo pleafant a concerpt. Anon affer the agrament made bettpene Dung mond and Sentleger, the earle bis fernants (which he kept at that time in his linerie to the number of fiftie belought his losofhip to take at the Lime house his part of a lumer, which they proutded for him: The noble man with honour accepting their outifull of, tation at the place appointed. For thether it were that one cattife or other old poilon the meat, or that Omond Des forme other falle meafures were tofen (the certeintie with the revenge thereof to Godis to be referred) the noble man with thirtie and five of his fernants presentlie that night feliened : one James White the earle his flewart, with firewer of his fellowes died, the remnant of the fermants reconered. But their lord, whose health was chieflie to be wished, in the floure of his age decealed of that flekenelle at so Clie boule in Holborne, much about the eight and twentith of Daober, and was burted in faint Tho. mas of Acres his church, whole beath bred forcow to his friends, little comfort to his adversaries, great losse to his countrie, and no small griefe to all god

> This earle was a goodie and personable noble man, full of honour, which was not onelie lodged inwardlie in his mind, but also he bare it outwardlie in countenance : as franke t as liberall as his calling required, a deepe and a farre reaching head. In a goo quarell rather fout than flubborne, bearing himselse with no lette courage when he relited, than with honozable discretion where he yelded. A fauou. rer of peace, no furtherer of warre, as one that procured bulawfull quietneffe before bpzight troubles, being not with Canding of as great wifedome in the one, as of valour in the other. An earnest and a zeas lous opholoer of his countrie, in all attempts rather respecting the publike weale than his privat game. Thereby he bound his countrie so greatlie buto him, that Freland might with good cause with, that either he had never bæne bozne, oz eile that he had neuer deceased; so it were lawfull to crave him to be

himiografi, dia by confletof nature was france mischill And to give falliclent profe of the entire affection he bare his confittie, and of the realous care he divoral moreon, hoverake in his beath bed his fouleto Bod, his cartaleto chillian buttati and his hart to his countrie; beclaring therby that where his mind was letted in his life, his hart thouto be there intenfed after his beath. Thich was acrosding to his will accomplished Hot his hart was com ueied to Ireland, and liething raued in the quere of the cathediall church in Afficante, where his fince. Ross for the more part are but ied. Upon whith aind louing legacie this epitath following was deutled:

Corpatria fixhm videns, iam redditur illi 134 1151 116 1918 epitaph, Post mortem, patria que peracerla venit. Non fine corde valet mortala vinere qui quam, vix tua gens vita permanes absque tia. Qualicet infalix extincto corde fruitur, Attumen optato vivere corde nequit.

Ergo quid hat faciat? Quem re non possit amorems 3500 Cordi ve tam charo reddere corde velit? The effect of which fato epitach is thus Englished:

The living hart where laieingrauen the care of countrie deere, To countrie liuelesse is restord and lies ingrauen here.

None hartleffe liues, his countrie then alas what ioie is left, Whole hope, whole hap, whole hart he was

a till death his life bereft. Same timo a supp which most it with the nine.
Yet of the change from hobler leat,

the cause dooth it annois. What honour then is due to him,

for him what worthie rite? But that ech hart with hartieft loue, his worthieft hart may quite?

Mis earle was of fo noble a disposition, as be The kindnes noble man with honour accepting weir each of a measure was of the induced and import his pose well of a measure fer, suped at their request, but not to their content 40 would some countenance and support his pose well of a measure fer, suped at their request, but not to their content 40 would some countenance and support his pose well of a measure with a measure well and a measure with a measure well and their content and willer in his advertitie, than he would make or his friends. fawne opon his wealthie friend in prosperitie. Has uing bio at London (not long before his death) the Ladie Grete counterie of that ware to dinner, it happes ned that a lighter, furnamed Powe, the latelie re-tuened fieth from the emperour his warres, came to take his repair with the earle before the mellens ger. When the earle and the countelle were fet, this foilting Antterkin wolle then flanding on the folbadocholgy, placed himselfe right over against the countests of this over hard settle earle of Demond his elbow, as though he were hatle fellow well met. The noble man amalled at the impudent faucinelle of the malapert foldier (who not with framoing might be borne withall, bicause an unbioden ghest knows eth not where to lit) belought him courteoullie to gine place. The earle, when the other arole, taking bpon him the office of a gentleman ofher, placed in Powie bis feat, bis confine Coward fitigirald, now lieutenant of hir maiesties pensioners, who at that time being a yong fripling, attended boon his mother the counteste, and so in order he set eucris gentleman in his begræ, to the number of fiffæne or firteene : and last of all the companie, he licenced Bowse if he would, to fit at the lower end of the tas ble, where he had fcantlie elbow rome.

The counteste of kildare, perceiving the noble man greatlie to fomach the foulding his prefumptu ous bolonedle, nipt him at the elbow, and whilpering lottlie, belought his lorothip not to take the matter fo hot , bicause the gentleman (the ment Poinze) knew that the house of kiloare was of late attein. ted, and that hir children were not in this their cala, mitte in such wise to be regarded. Po ladie (quoth the

ា ស្នារាការការក្នុ

@Dwarb fitzgirald,

The carrie of

hig deferin=

earle with a lowd boice, and the tears trilling bowne his leres, faie not fo, I truft to fe the baie, when my gong coulin Coward, and the remnant of your chil bren (as little reckoning as he maketh of them)thall difains the companie of ante fuch fkipiacke. Which prophette fell out as truite as he foretoloit, onelie fauing that it floo with Goo bis pleasure to call bim to his mercie before be could fee that Daie after which doubtleffe he longed and laked, I meane the relitue

Dir Inthonie entleger res Deputie.

no<mark>se se</mark>jo. Bilginis (1900)

ห์ สุดเลว

tion of the house of ikildare.

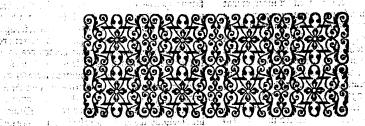
be answered merilie, that he was tesoined not to commit simonie : pet notwithstanding be had a mag in his Cable that was worth fortie hillings, am he in his Asble may war worker pounds to, the nag, hould be that would give him fortie pounds to, the nag, thould be taken in the house we would be taken in the constitution of the constitu be preferred to the benefice. Withich be rather of pleas immin fure ottered, than of anie biconicionable meaning purpoled to have dome. Dis governement had bene of the countrie be

After this noble earls his butimelie deceale, fir Anthonie Sentleger was returned to Freland lozd deputte, who was a wife and a warie gentleman, & baliant feruito; in war, and a god inficer in peace, properlie learned, a good maker in the Englifh, hauing grauitie lo interlaced with plealantnelle, as with an erceeding god grace he would atteine the one without pouting dumpithnette, and exercise the other without loathsome lightneste. There fell in his time a fat benefice, of which he as lood deputie had 20 the presentation. Then diverse made fult to him for the benefice, and offered with dishonestie to buis that which with latetie of confcience be could not fell.

rie well liked, were it not that in his time be began 10 to affelle the pale with certains new impolitions, not to profitable (as it was thought) to the governors, as it was notiome to the inbiects. The bebating of which I purpole to referre to them, who are discouriers of publike effates, and the reformers of the common ivealth, praising to God, that he with his grace direct them to faithfullie to accomplish the buties of god magistrates, that they governe that pope battered Fland to his digine honour, to hir materies contentation, to the suppressing of rebels, to the upholoing of subjects, and rather to the publike wealc of the phole countrie, than to the privat gaine of a few persons, thich oftentimes falleth out in profe to the ruine and budoing of the leeker.

Thus farre (gentle reader) as mine instructions directed me, and my leasure serued me, have I continued a parcell of the Irish historie, and have streetched it to the reigne of Edward the fixt. Wherevoon fan forced to crave at thine hands pardon and tollerance: pardon for anie error I shall be found to have committed, which vpon friendlie admonition I am readie to reforme: tollerance, for that part of the historie which is not continued, till time I be so furnished and fraught with matter, as that I maie emploie my travell to feruethy contentation.

FINIS.



A COSA CONTROL OF THE STORY OF

gija Vinitagogo (Vilene 1888)

网络美国大学工作



THESVPPLIEOFTHIS

Irish Chronicle, continued from the

death of king Henrie the eight, 1546, vntill this

present yeare 1586, in the 28 yeare of hir maiesties reigne, sir Iohn Perot residing deputie in Ireland.

By Iohn Vowell alias Hooker of the citie of Excesser, gentleman.



gouernement in time of peace, or of the troublesome state in times of warres and rebellions; but that which is collected either out of the records, which were verie stenderlie of disorderlie kept, or out of some privat mens collections and pamphlets, remaining in some od and obscure places: even so the like from that time unto these presents hath happened and is fallen out, everie governour neglecting, and verie sew others for want of due observations willing, to commit unto writing what was doone, and woorthie the memoriall; saving the things so latelie doone are not altogither out of remembrance, and some yet living that can remember some things doone in their times. And yet that is so uncerteine, and everie man so varieth one from the others reports, that no man can well thereupon set downe a perfect and so exact a course as the nature of an historie requireth, and as it ought to be doone. He therefore that upon such uncerteinties shall intermedle

The Preface.

and undertake the penning, much more the printing of such an uncertaine. confused, and intricate discourse, must looke and be assured to be subject to manie cauils and reproches: which thing discouraged me the writer hereof to intermedle at all in this historie. Neuerthelesse, this worke requiring a supplie, and my selfe being earnest lie required to doo something herein, have adventured the matter, and by all the meanes I could, have searched and collected to set downe in this short discourse and rhapsodie. what by writings or reports I could learne and find to be true, and worthie the memoriall: which albeit, it be not so full as the worke requireth, nor so sufficient as to the satisfaction of the reader, nor yet so answerable to the nature of an historie as is necessarie and requisit: yet let the good will of the writer be his discharge from reproch, and be an occasion to the learned to amend the thing thus in a good affection begun, and to reduce it to a more full measure in matter and truth: that this historie may have his perfection, the reader satisfied, and this writer acquited.

Iohn Hooker, aliâs Vowell.



set exectiones, that no acts can well the explaint in the proof of a conference of an bission in explaints the manuse of an bission in explaints that there is no the manuse of an bission in the conference of the proof of the conference of the con



THE SVPPLIE OF THE

Irish Chronicles extended to

this present yeare of our Lord

1586, and the 28 of the reigne of queene Elisabeth.

fiter the death of king Henrie the eight, ür Anthonie Sentleger knight, was reuokeo; wo deliue, red by the swood at his departure onto ar William Brabston knight; 10 and he was lood iuffice, butill luch

e Coward time as fir Edward Bellingham was fent over to be deputie. This man was fernant to king Co ward the firt, and of his printe chamber: a man verte well learned, grave and wife, and therewith front to ballant, and did berie worthille direct his government. In his time there was a mint kept in the ca-fiell of Dublin, which being at his commandement, he was the better able to do god feruice to the king 20 his materie, and to the benefit of that realme. In the civill government he was carefull to place learen Company ned and wife magistrats, unto thome he had a specification ciall eie so, the doing of their offices; as he had the confidence in the state of the stat subministent like care for god and expert capteins, to serve in the martiall affaires. And for the more specie feruice to be done therein at all times nædfull, he kept fun ondit far die fables of horfies : one at Leighlin, one at Ler, thathous and some in one place and some in another, as he had to do, or that service. And that some had to do, or that service some he meant to take inhand, he was to fecret, and kept the fame to privile, abstrace, as none thould have anie understanding thereof, before the verie infrant of the fertice to be done; and for the most part, whensoever he toke anie tournie inhand, his owne men knew not whither, or to what place he would rive, or what he would do. It happened that upon some occasion he fent for the earle of Delmond, who refused to come onto him. Where, bpoin calling buto him his companie as he thought god, and without making them acquainted what he minded to dw, twke horffe & rove to Leighlin bridge. The abbeie there (being supressed) he caused to be inclosed with a wall, and made there a fort. In that boule he had a flable of twentie or thirtie horles, and there he furnished himselfe and all his men with hoeses and other farniture, and foothwith rove into Hounfier, but o the house of the earle, being then

Chilstmas; and being imloked and unthought of, Thecarle of he went in to the earle, whome he found litting by Definion bear the fire, and there toke him, and carred him with ken in his

him to Dublin .

This earle was verte rude both in gesture and Thecarle is in apparell, having for want of god nurture as much trade without god maners as his kerns and his followers could harture. teach him. The deputie hauing him at Dublin , Did Che carle infoinstruct, schole, and informe him , that he made a fructoin cia new man of him, and reduced him to a conformitie utitic. in maners, apparell, and behaufours apperteining to his estate and degræ; as allo to the knowledge of his dutie and obedience to his foucreigne & prince; and made him to kneele topon his knees fometimes an houre togither , before he knew his dutie . This though it were verie frange to the earle, who has uing not bene trained by in anie civilific, knew not what apperteined to his butie and calling: neis ther yet of what authoritie and mateffic the king his souereigne was; pet when he had well digested and confidered of the matter, he thought himfelfe most happie that cuer he was acquainted with the fato deputie, and bio for ever after fo much honor The carle him, as that continuallie all his life time at everie praiech for fie dinner and lumer, he would praie for the good fir Coward Wels Coward Bellingham : and at all callings he was lingham. so obedient and dutifull, as none more in that land.

This fir Coward loed deputie, when and where soeuer he travelled, he would be chargeable to no man; but would be at his owne charge. It hames ned that frauelling the countrie , he was lodged on Che lord de neo mat traveum in countre, he was togged of putie would a night in vicount Baltinglasses house, there all be chargeable things were verie plentifullie pronided for him: to none, which the vicount thought to have given and befowe ed bpon his loodthip: but at his veparture, he commanded his feward to paie & discharge all things, thanking the vicount for his courtelie, but refused his interteinement ; faieng : The king my maifter bath placed me here to forue him , and alloweth me therein for my charges and expenses : wherefore, I neither maie nog will be burdenous nog chargable to anie other man. He was beric erquilit & carefull in the government, as few before him the like; af vernment of well in matters martiall, as politike, magnants this deputies mous and couragious: in the one, to the amalling of the enimie; and as feuere & buight in the other, to the benefit of the commonwelth. For neither by flat-terie could be be gained, nor by briberie be corrup-

Sir Coward his integritie; and no gouerno; for the most untuer. well beloued.

Bir Francis

and was bu=

ried at water=

T 5 4 9

gir william

13 tabiton

log Diuftice.

Bentleger

lozd deputie

the fecond

time.

tune.

fozo.

25zian lozd

iultice.

fallie better reported of than was he. But as vertue hath the contrarie to enimie, to be found it true: for he was so enuted at, and that rebellious nation not broking to worthie a man, who travelled all the wates be could to reduce them to the knowledge of themselves, and of their duties; and also to reforms that corrupt flate of government, that great prace tiles and deutles were made for his renocation; and 10 matters of great importance informed and inforced against him. Therebpon, before two yeares en ded of his gouernement , he was renoked, and fir Francis Bitan made load tuffice. At his comming into England, great matters were lato buto his charge: but he fo effectuallie viv answer the same, that his maiesties doubtfulnesse was resolued; f he not onelie clered, but also better liked than ever he mas before, a thoulo have beene fent bache againe, had he not alleged his infirmitie; the which was a 20 fiffula, and other good reasons, which were accepted hir Francis for his ercule. Sir Francis Brian had maried the Brianmaried countelle of Demond, and by that meanes he was the counter of a dweller in that land : where he died & was burfed in Damond, died the citie of Wlaterford. His time of tufficeffip was but thost, eno great matters could in to thost a time be done by him. After his death, fir Milliam Brabfrom had the flword delinered buto him, and he continued loed tuffice, butill that fir Anthonie Sentleger came oner, tho was now losd deputie the fecond ? time: who notwithstanding by his knowledge & er-Sir Inthonie perience he had good fkill and ofd well gouerne : yet there remained form coles of the fire in his first go. uernement unquenched; and within a thorter time

than thought of , he was renoked: and fir James

Crofts was fent ouer to suplie the place ; his enil fuccesses in god attempts div not answerhis ba-Sir Tames Crofts 1020 lour and good deferts . deputie.

Bir Intho: nic Dentle= fic the third

Alfatall Defti= nie to euerie to be flandes rcb.

Che lord fit3waters made logo be mutic.

Sir Denrie Didnete and Cozwen lozds tuffices.

And albeit the time of his government were not long, yet it continued butill the death of king 4 Coward the firt, and then he was called home, and fir Thomas Cufacke and fir Gerard Elmer were appointed loods tustices, tho fointlie governed the effate , untill quene Parte fent ouer fir Anthonie Sentleger; who now the third time was lood depur tic. This man ruled and governed verie fulflie and bpzightlie in a good conscience, and being well acquainted in the courses of that land, knew how to mæte with the enimies, and how to faie all magte frates and others in their duties and offices: for 5 which though he deferued well, and ought to be beloued and commended: yet the old practices were renewed, and manie flanderous informations were made and inveighed against him: which is a fatall destinte, and ineuitable to everie god governoz in that land . For the more paines they take in tillage, the mode is their harvest; and the betterbe their feruices, the greater is the malice and envie again & them; being not wilke to a fruitefull apple træ, which the more apples he beareth, the more cudgels be hur. 60 led at him. Well, this man is called home, and the loed Thomas Fitzwaters was made loed deputie. At fir Anthonies comming over , great matters were late to his charge, and manie heavie adverla. ries he had, which verie eagerlie pursued the same as gainst him: wherein he so answered, that he was not onelie acquited; but also gained his bischarge for ever to palle over ante more into to buthankefull a land.

The lood Fitzwaters being lood beputie, after a thort time of his being there, was fent for into England. And in in his ablence, fir Henrie Sioneis then trealuroz at warres, and docto? Cozwen, were for a time tomit logistinifices : but verte sportlie af

ter, a commission was sent to it henrie Sioneic to be fole logo justice, and so continued alone until the lood fitzwaters, now earle of Suller, came againe and resumed his former office of deputie . After that he was come over, he had somewhat to do with that he was come over, he had somewhat to do with that he was const the whole north part of Iroland be about about about gan to be briquieted, and for preventing of fundic norther incontieniences, which might grow by the Scotish quar. Alanders in alding the fato Dneile, the load deput tie made a tourneie and votage into the faid 3les, to foine them into his friendlhip. In his abience, he constituted fir Denrie Sionete load infice; but after that he had done his bulinelle, he returned a gaine to Dublin , where he remained and continued in his office butill the death of queene Parie, and then he patted ouer into England, and lett fir Ben, rie Sionete to be lood instice now the fourth time. Sir him rte Sidnete to be 1020 inuite inw ipe inuity time. Sidneth And after some time spent there, and quene Clife intirche beth now fetled in the imperial crowne of Eng. fourthtum land, the fent over the faid earle as lieutenant of land, the fent over the faid earle as lieutenant of 1951 Ireland to performe those services, which before he Sustain had taken in hand: who did verie great god ser lieutenan uice against the Irishaie, and by meanes he toke The Ont the Dneile, and kept him prisoner in the castell of taken and Dublin : but yet before he could or did bring the heptingship fame to perfection , he was renoked into England . and left the land in a verie broken fate; which was committed to fir Picholas Arnold, the was made bu fich lozd tustice. But his gouernement being not well is 3 mai liked, choice was made by hir maiectie and the lopo infing councell of ar Henrie Sioneic, now knight of the Sirbin honozable order of the garter, to suplie that place, Sidniching who then was losd president of Males.

This man had bene befoze a long feruitour in that realme, having for fundrie yeares beine treafuroz at warres, which is the fecond office boder the lord deputie in that land; as also had beene lord in fice folie and fointlie foure times. Great was his knowledge, wifedome, and experience both of that o land, and of the nature, manners, and disposition of the people: wherein the more he excelled anie others in those dates, the more apt and fit was he to have the government of them . We was therefore called from out of Wales, there he then reflect in his go of her nernement but o the court: and there after confessional rence had with hir highnesse, and with the councell; pushed be was appointed to be lood deputte of Ireland, be cales. ing the feuenth yeare of hir matelities reigne, in the peare of our Lodo 1565. And then he received of his maiestie a boke of instructions signed with his tidistance band, dated the sist of Datober 1565, the reductions fenenthycare of hir reigne aforefaid, concerning resimu the principall articles for his gouernement & direct forhist tion, which chieflie confifted in these points.

First, that there should be a bodie of a councel grounds effablifhed, to affif him being lood beputie, in the beilbulia gouernement of the same realme in times of peace and of warre; and whole names were then particular larlie fet downe : and order given , that everie of Continue them Chaulo befoze their admillion be swarne by the celloptin fait load deputie, according to the accustomed man footist ner: with an erhostation, that for fomuch as hit maieffie had repoled a speciall truff and confidence in their wifedomes, admites, god counfels, and fer nices: he the load deputie should vie their aduites, allifance, and counfels in all matters of treatie und consultation, concerning the state of that realme.

And they likewise, considering the place and any thoritie wherebuto hir maiestie had called the fald fir Denrie Sioneie, to hold hir place in that realme: they thould you to that obedience and reverence buto bim, as to luch a principall officer doth apperteine. And then they both togither, to have a special care and regard to the government, which was compile

fed in foure articles that do orderlie hereafter fol-

The said soure articles were these.

6:05 lawes b: hept, and hiuftian reit= on to be

Chechurch

und not to

The lawes to

xonine admit=

The garifons

grat, that they chould faithfullie and earncillie regard the due and reuc-rend observation of all Gods lawes Dand ozdinances, made and established

for the maintenance of the true christian faith and should be vied, aswell by doctrine and by teaching, as by good cramples, that denotion and goodineffe might increase, and contempt of religion might be terming of restreined, punished, and suppessed. That learning in the feriptures might be mainteined and increased among the cleargie, and that for the reliefe of the eco clesialicalistate, no alienations no wasts of the lands perteining to anie church or college, Chould be alienated: neither anie impropriations of beneficident to this effect.

2 The fecond was, that the administration of law and fuffice fould oulis and oppightlie be executed, without respect of persons : that inquirie be made what notable faults are in anie of the indges, or o ther ministers of the law: that bufft persons mate be comoued from their places, and some sufficient persons of English birth be chosen to suplie the apointed in same. That thiriffes be appointed and renewed in euerie countie, and to erecute their offices bpzight, 3

lie, according to the lawes of England. 3 The third, that the garrifons and men of warre be well ordered to the benefit of the realine, and reprelling of disordered subteats and rebels: that thep do line according to the orders appointed, without oppession of the good and true subteds. That there Inaftertobe thall be once within a moneth at the least a muster made either by the load deputie, or by such commis Coners as he Chall appoint meete and indifferent for that purpose; tho thall make inquirie of the num; 40 and gouerned. ber of the fouldtoes under everte capteine; for the lufficiencie of their persons, their horlies, armors, and weapons, and other their necessaries: and how they were paied of their wages, and whether they were Englishmen og not .

4 The fourth article was, whether there had beene had a due care a regard to the prefernation of the revenues of the crowne, & for the recoverie of that faid revenues, as namelie the receivers of rents, thiriffes , erchetoes , collectoes of the fublidies , cue lattic make Cromo2s, clerks of the crowne, of the hamper, and of the first fruits, and the farmers of customes and fuch others, did yearelie make and answer their ac counts; and belides fundrie other articles incident to enerie of these principals.

After that he had received this boke, and his combinhis leave he could, to follow the great charge committed with him: which being done, he repaired to hir maies fic and toke his leave: and to his farewell, the gave him most comfortable speches and god counsels, promiting hir fauor and countenance to all his well doings, and a confideration for the fame when time thould ferme. The like leave he take also of the loods of the councell, who in like order gave him the like farewell: and thefe things bone, be departed towards the fea five, where after he had taried a long time for a good wind and passage, he toke thip, and arrived in Ireland the thirtienth of Januarie, about five miles from Dublin, and from thense he travel adductions led to Dublin; where he was most honogablic receive

ned by fir picholas Arnold then losd inffice, and the fullic receined thole councell ; togither with the maio: and his bic, into Dublin. thren of that citie. And the people in great trops came and faluted him, clapping and thoting with all the foie that they could deutle.

The next fundate then next following, being the fenenth date of his arrivall, and the twentith of the moneth, he accompanied with the loss inflice and councell, repaired to the high thurth in the citie nareligion among hir people; and that all meanes to med Chaiftes church; where affer that the divine for uice was done, he take his oth, received the fluoid, and assumed opon him the government : and there with he made a most pithie, wife, and eloquent ozas tion. which consisted byon these speciall points. The The benefit of first, what a pretious thing is good government, good governs= and how all realmes, commonwealths, cities, and ment. countries do flourish and prosper, where the same is orderlie, in equitie, fuffice, and wifedoine, directed & gouerned. Seconolie, what a continual care the ces be put in vee: bestoes sundzie other articles in for the god guilbing t ruling of the realme of Engmaichtes continual care for land, but allo of Freland; with the foestnetflie de greland. fireth, and witheth to be preferued, as well in prace as in warre: that the bath made great choile from time to time of the most grave, wife, and expert councelloss for the one; and the most valiant, skilfull and expert men of armes for the other : that both in peace and warres, the publike fate of the commonwealth, and euerie particular member therein might be conferued, defended, and kept in fafetie binder hir gouernement. And for the performance thereof, hir maieffie oner and belides the The quens renenues of the crowns of Ireland, did yearelie matefricerfar aboue anie of hir progenitors, erpend of hir pendeth owne cofers out of England, great malles of mo pear-ite out of nie , amounting to manie thousand pounds . All fers for Frewhich hir excelline expenses and continuall cares land fundance the made the lette account of; to that hir realme and thousands of subiects of Ireland might be preserved, defended, pounds.

Lafflie, not with francing hir maieffie might haue made better choise of mante others, who were bets ter able to holo hir place in this realme, both for honoz, wifedome, and experience: yet hir pleasure was now to call this heavie charge and burden opon him. Which he was the moze buwilling to take bpon him , becanse the greater the charge was , the more bnable & weake he was to fasteine the same . Deverthelele, being in good hope, and well promifed cers apointed for the recetning of anie part of the nelle councelloss affociated buto him, to toine, aid, and affid him in this governement : he was and is the more readie to take the fword in hand; in hope that this his gourrnement thall be to the glozie of Bod the honor of hir maiellie, the benefit of the com monwelth, and the prefernation of the whole realme and people of the fame. And fo making his earnest request to the said logos present, for their contoining million, he prepared himselse with all the expedition 60 withhim, and the aiding and affilting of him in this hir maieffies feruice , he made an end of his Ingerhes.

The fair councelloss, having well confidered the great value and weight of this his grave and wife o. ration, bid most humblie thanke his loadship for the fame, and promifed in all outifulnette, faith, and o. bedience to performe and attend what focuer to them in anie wife hould apperteine. Thefe things done, they all conducted the faid load deputie in all honora, The congress ble manner onto the castell of Dublin: the common people. people in everie fræt and comer mæting him, and with great acclamations and tote did congratulat buto his loodhip his comming among them in that office . Immediatlie after the performance of all

bu Denrie

hi maichtieg

Ebet enerie

Die faemrie

The broken face of Fres land.

pale walted and fpoiled.

out of order.

Othe mifera: Leinfter.

The fertile foile of the Kilkennie made walt.

Mounfter by ciutil war de=

uill marres.

Connagh de= uill warres.

The gentle= men all impo: uerifhed.

Milter foral= thic and rich.

the folemnities, perteining to these actions, he called and affembled all those persons which hir highnesse had amounted, admitted, and allowed to be of hir mateffies privie councell for that realme, and did fiveare them according to the accustomed manner. Then from time to time they affembled and met, confulting and deliberating what wate and order were best to be taken for reparing of that broken common, weale and ruinous flate, being as if were a man alrogither infected with fores and biles, and in whose to bodic from the crowne of the head to the tole of the for there is no health. And furelie if the Cate of that land was ever miserable and in perill to be over, theowne: it was never more like than at these pre-The English fents; for as for the English pale, it was overthel med with infinite numbers of caterpillers, tho dais lie by spoiles and robberies have devoured and was fred the same: whereby the people universallie were to por, eand the commons in luchertreame penurie, that they had not horfes, armor nor weapons to des 20 fend them, not apparell, vittels, not ante other necel The foldiers faries to relieve them, the foldiers to beggerlie that beggerite and they were most intolerable to the people, and form ted in insolencie, losenesse and idlenesse, that unlesse the remedie were the moze spædie, they would be past correction : and so much the worste, bicause mas nie of them were alied in martage, and companies of the Frift: tho the moze they were affected to them, their truth and feruice moze doubtfull to hir maies ffie . The province of Leinster and they altogither 30 moli miserable, the Tols, Dbaines, kinshelaghes, Dooiles, Din ozoughs, Carenaughs, the Pozes, and the relique in their accustomable manners who lie bent to spoiles and all mischiefs, no place of anie fafetie remaining for the good subject; especiallie in the countie of Lilkennie, which being sometimes a fertile rich foile, and well manured and inhabited, be. came of all others most defart and beggerlie, berie few being left to inhabit the same.

moff part being followers to the earle of Delmond, and following his wars against the erle of Dymond, made that province, and especiallie the counties of Tipozarie and Mirrie, being wealthie and rich, to become bare and beggerlie; and verie few of whom hir maiellie was or could be affured. Potwithfand ing experience had taught them, and they affured, that no waie was for their reconerie and fafetie fo god and affored, as to humble themselves, and to beas Twine delighting in their dirt and puddles, contented themselues rather with a beggerlie life to be miserable, than in dutifull obedience to be at peace Thomond all and affured . The provinces also of Thomond altogic ther almost wasted by the warres betweene the earle there and fir Donell Obzien . Damond likewise by reason of disention betwene the earles of Des. mond and Demond, and by the dailie inuations and precies of Piers Grace was almost wasted and but

> Connagh, one of the godlieft, pleasantest, and most fertile foiles of that land, in times past berie rich and wealthie, and well inhabited, is walted with the wars betweene the erle of Clanrichard and Mac Milliam Enter : the Irish countries all walked and impouerithed, partlie by reason of their distima. . lations, focieties, and conferences with the revelles, and partlie by the particular discords among them. felues. Finallie, all the gentlemen throughout, front in times past to be keepers of hospitalitie, were by the dailie preces made byon them and their tenants fo imponerished a distressed, that they were not able to mainteine and reliene themselves noz their families. The province of Allter for wealth

and plentie was well flozed, not onlie of themselnes. but by reason that it was the receptacle and place of receipt of all the preces and spoiles from out of the or ther proninces: but as for localtie, butifulnelle, and obedience to hir mateffie, they were most oillotall, rebellious, and disordered. For affer that Shane D' Shane 9. nelle by blod and murther had gotten the maifferie, nelle, he alone then ruled the roft, who in pride crowded all the men byon the earth, abiding no superioz, nozal lowing anie equall . And heere it were not amille, The table but verie expedient to let downe the first origin and Shanco cause this the sate Shane bid first breake out from mines with his due obedience, and did thake off the gouerne, ment of hir maiestie, which (as farre as the writer bereof hath gathered and collected) is as here follo. Ineth.

Con Dneile, the first earle of Tiron, had two formes, Patthew and this Shane or John. And king Henriethe eight having god liking of this Con Dneile, and to reteine and kæpe him a good fubien. he being a mightie man, and of great power in his countrie, be made and created him earle of Tiron, Con Onthe and his eldes fon Patthew he made baron of Dun, made call ganon, and the remainder of the laid earledone to the fair Patthew, and to the heirs male of his bodic. This Shane being the fecond brother, and of an al. piring mind, ennied his elder brother, and in no wife could be banke him, but from time to time leketh occasions to quarell and fall out with him, and in the end most traitozousie and bunaturallie murthered him : their father pet living , who did not lo much las ment and bewaile the same, but began much more to diffrust of his owne fafetie. Penerthelesse, it is not knowen that the faid Shane did offer him anie biolence, but when he was dead, although he had no right to succeed into the earledome, by reason that Datthew his elder brother had left fons behind him, who by the letters patents and course of the common law were to succeed the grandfather : pet Shane Mountier, the inhabitants there like wife to the 40 viurped the name of Dneile, and entred into his far Shun the thers inheritance according to the Irith manner, a put them mong thome the cristome is that the elections of Dunk mong whome the custome is, that the clock in years The 3rd of the name of anie house or familie doth succeed his custom anceffoz, bnleffe at the time of his death he had a fon fuccione of the full age of one and twentie years. And thus has uing perforce entred into his fathers inheritance, he scorneth at the English gouernement, and after the Brith manner proclameth himfelfe Dneile, and the capteine of his countrie, refuseth likewise all obes shout? god and aunced, as to humore themselves, and to be come bir highress to humore themselves, and breaketh out into open into the come bir highress and breaketh out into open into the come bir materiae, and breaketh out into open into the come bir highress and breake rebellion.

Sir Penrie Stoneie then load tultice, in the absence of the erle of Suster, being advertised of these fire, taketh adule of the councell what was bell to bedone. Anothen it was agreed, that the faidloid tuffice hould take his fornete towards Dundalke, for the fortifieng of the English pale, and should fend a meffenger to Shane Dneile, tho then laie at a loadlyip of his about fir miles from Dundalke, and 60 to will him come to Dundalke to his loodhip with was done. But Shane returned his answer, prateing pardon, and also most humblie requested his loodly short of that it would please him to thesisten a son of his, the new part his gollip, & then he would come to his loodhip to do a figure all things in service for hir maiestie, as his lookhip house thould command and appoint. This answere at the first trace and service and appoint. Tirl was not thought god, not yet honotable to the logo tuffice fo to do , butill the faid Shane had first come and lubmitted himselfe. But when it was considered what great inconveniences might insue, if his request were denied; it was agreed that the faid losd fulfice thould condescend but o his request. And accordinglie opon the last of Januarie, one thousand fine hundred fiftie and eight, he went unto the falb,

155

mancs house, and there his loodhip and Jaques Ching field were godfathers, and having perfoxined the baptiling of the child, they both had conference of the matter : where the laid Sahaine, to excuse his don ings, at allege for his referile fund the acticles as for schundelle ings, di whichercame loweth.

Firth, he faid that Patthew baron of Bungannon was the sonne of one Bellaie of Dundalke, a thew killskes fmith by occupation, begotten and boone during the pourals of the fait kellate, and one Alton his toffe, i and that the falo Partibetu was alwaies taken and Cholicities reputed to be the sonne of the said Bellate, until he handtof of the fato Alfon, that he was the father of the fato patthete, did accept and take the fath continued by atthete, did accept and take the fath continued by atthete. be his sonne, a gave him the name of Farbarough. And here unverstand you the wickednesse of this countrie; which is, that if anie woman do millihe hir hulband, and will bepart from him, he thall haue 20 all such children as were borne of hir bodie during their above togither, except such as the thall name to be begotten by ante other man: which man fo named thall by their cultome have the fair thire : and fo it hould ferme to be invant of this point. Also the fato Patthew old opon this the affirmation of his mother læke to blurpe the name of a legniozie of the Oneiles, and the cominions apperteining to that legulorie and lurnante. Allo that there be about ahundred of that name, which will not in anie wife 30 pelo to this the clame of Patthew, although he for his owne part would be contented therewith. Alfo he faith that the letters patents (if anie such be) that thould intitle the sonne of the said baron to the said lands are biterlie boid, because that Con Dneile father to the fato Shane had no other right no; inter, eff to that countrie, but during his owne life: and therefore without the confent of the loads and inhabitants of that countrie, could make no furrender noz connetance, wherby he might be inabled to take 4 and have the fato lands by force of letters patents.

Also he saith, that by the lawes in the English pale of Ireland, no letters patents, made to ante person, be of anie force or value, until that an inquilition be taken of the lands to given before that the letters patents do passe: which in this case neither was, no; could be done, lith the countrie of Tiron is no thire ground. Also if the fato lands thould accord ding to the quiens lawes bescend to the right heire, then in right it ought to bescend to him, as nert heire to being multerlie borne; and the other not to borne. Also he saith, that boon the death of his father load of the countrie, the whole countrie according to the cullome of the countrie did allemble themselnes to gither, and by a common confent did elect and choice (without anie contradiction) him the faid Shane to be Dnetle, as the most worthie and ablest of that countrie. Which election by the custome of the countrie bath beene alwates bled without ante confirmation, alked of the kings and queenes of England. Also he faith that as Duetle he clameth such authoris 60 ties, jurifolitions, and buties boon his men & countrie, as are one time out of mino to his predecellors, and which duties for the most part are recorded, and remaine in writing. When the lord inflice had at full heard these articles, and confidered well of them togither with the counteil, made answer buto Shane that the matter was of great weight and impoztance, s which neither he not the councell cold before mine of themselves, before hir maiestie were made printe and acquainted there with; and therefore in the meane time willed and required him to be quiet, and to thew himselfe a dutifull subted but o hir maiestie, nothing doubting but that he thould have and re-

ceive at hir hands, what should be found met, right, anotult.

And to banking bled manie god and frændlie Shane De speches and exhautations but him, the sale shane feth to be promifed to ble and behaue himfelfe well and ho quier. nessie, aas to his dutie should apporteine; they be parted in berie frændlie manner. And thus in furb wifedome and politike manner the lost fulfice hands led the matter, that by temporating and gaining of time all matters were pacified, and to continued ber till the comming over of the earle of Suffer load bee putte: tho then of a new toke the matter in hand, and he did to fretalie and fcuerelie follow the fame, that he ouermatched Shane Dneile. But it fo grees ned the faid Shane, that not with francing he diffent bled and gave a god countenance, a promised well; pet in the end being once at libertie, he performed nothing: but as the wolfe which often casteth his haires but never changeth his conditions, was one Shane Oncil and the fame man or rather worfe, and thenfeforth to become a typannifed and bled molt crueltie, and of all others a rebell. most distoiall and disobedient; to the deputie would he not come, nor would be in anie wife confer with him, but at his owne pleafure.

The quenes matellie in lome termes he would bonoz, but in deos be dented all obedience, subtill and craftie he was especiallie in the morning: but in the relivue of the date verie uncerteine and un-Stable, and much given to ercessive gulping and fur, Shane Dnet fetting . And albeit he had most commonlie two adjunkard hundzed tunnes of wines in his cellar at Dun, and a furtetbun, & had hisfull fill therof, pet was he neuer fa. ter. tiffed, till he had fwallowed by maruellous great quantities of Alkebagh or Aqua vite of that countrie: therof fo bumeasurablie he would brinke and boule, that for the quenching of the heat of the bodie, which by that meanes was most extremelie inflamed and diffempered, be was efflones conucied (as the common report was) into a viepe pit, and fant ding bysight in the fame, the earth was cast round about him op to the hard chin, and there he did ter his drunkenmaine untill such time as his bodie was recoursed nette. to some temperature: by which meanes though he came after in some better plight for the time, pet his manners and conditions dailie worfe. And in the end his pride foined with wealth, brunkennelle, and insolencie, be began to be a typant, and to typannize ouer the whole countrie, greatlie it was feared that his intent was to have made a conquest over the thole land. He pretended to be king of Alfter even as he faid his ancestors were, and affecting the maner of the great Turke, was continuallie garded Shane D. with fir hundzed armed men, as it were his Janifa, neils force. ries about him, and had in readinesse to bying into the fields a thousand horsternen, and foure thousand The pelants formen. He furnished all the pelants and husbands in Wister traimen of his countrie with armour and weapons, and ned by in trained them by in the knowledge of the wars: and warre, as a lion bath in a we the beatts of the field, to hav he all the people to his becke and commandement, being feared and not beloued.

Dinerle meanes and wates were practited and bled by the lood deputte and councell for the pacificing and recoverie of him, and commissioners from time to time fent buto him; for and about the fame, tho fometimes would be verie flerible, but forthwith as backwards and untoward. Of all the relique of Fres land there was the lette doubt to recover them, by reason that they by their owne civill wars had cons fumed and spotled the one and the other: but of this man, small or no bope at all, buleffe he might be chafiled, and with force be reduced to conformities. Which in the end it pleased the Lord God to take the matter in hand, and to performe the fame by taking

Doftg fet beivene Fre land & Lon= non.

The milera= Breiend.

Po God nor religion in

of him awaie. And bicause in these troublesome times, it were met advertisements should go to and from hir mateffic and councell to the lood deputie, & to tikewife from his loodily to them! order was take taken for the more specie connetance of letters recipsoke, there thoulo be fet posts appointed be twene London and Ireland. Ahts was then the pres fent frate of all Ireland, altogethers benoured with robberies, murders, riots, treafons, civill and inter ffine warres, and few or none affined and faithfull I to hir highnelle out of the English pale, and out of cities and townes: and yet the one being gentles men and living by their lands, by continual ipotles and robbertes were decated; the other by the loffe of their traffike being merchants impouerished, and brought to such extremities, as not able to relieue and mainteine themselves.

And among all other the most intollerable miles ries buiverfallie reigning, this one erceded all the rest, that there was scarle a Goo knowen; and if 20 knowen, not all honozed in the land, for the churches for the most part were all destroied toncouered, the clergie scattered, the people untaught, and as thepe without their pattour wandering without knows ledge and instruction. Then where neither God is knowen, the prince obeted, no lawes currant, no gonernement accepted, and all things infolded in most ertreme miferie; how lamentable and dolefull is that Cate and kingdome: Therfore fir Henrie Sid. neie now lozo deputte, the councell pondering this 3 diffrested fate, and the great burden which late them ppon to helpe and redrette the fame, dailie affeme bled themselves; a denised the best waie wat might be to be taken herein. Wherin his loodhips cause so much was the weaker, as that fuch as were chiefest of the councell, then toined to all the him in councell and fertice, were for the most part spent and decated men; and the lord deputie himfelfe driven to deutle, to invent, to dispose, and in the end to execute all himselfe. Well, neverthelesse it was concluded and 4 agreed, that the English pale thould be fortified and defended from the invalion of the Dneile and all his complices; and that the veniles let downe for the state and recoverie of the rest of the land should be followed from time to time, as matter, time, and o portunitie would ferue therebuto.

At this present time the earles of Demond and Definond were in England, and the quarrels and controuerlies growen betweene them were bailie examined before the loads of the councell, and their 50 or chastifed : but therein the was fraied, being bonne allegations produced in writing by the one against the other. And bicause their affertions were so contrarious and uncerteine in denieng and affirming, as no proceeding could be had for a finall end and or der, it was thought god and necessarie that their complaints and answers thould be eramined in the realme of Ireland, there their dwings were beft knowen, and where their milozders were commit-Description and fair carles submitted themselves to the quienes may 60 buto it, as which by letters to and fro could not be ted. And then by the adule of the councell both the testies order a determination; and for performance fubmit them= thereof, they both by wate of recognisance in the chancerie were bound ech of them in twentie thous fand pounds. And then a committion bnder hir high nesse broad seale of England was sent to the lord deputie for taking of the forlaid eraminations. But Sir John of ing in England, für John of Delmond, in verte oute Tragious and discovered manner from forther forther than the control of the co nements of the earle of Demond, which things were verie Mostlie after appealed. In thele troublesome dates Wac Artimoze an ancient gentleman of the Irith race, and principall man of his lept in Pour fer, baning berie great postestions, and late fill in

peace and did nothing at all, neither take he partie with one whom he liked not, neither holpe he the a ther about he feared not, but to the outward amo rance milliked both their dwings.

This man made his humble fute to hir matefite, that he might furrender all his lands, possessions and mortism territoztes buto hir materies highnede, and to reduction coantic his outie and allegiance to hir, and to to re, lands to h cognife his oute and anequation from hir againe, quant to fume and have a new estate thereof from hir againe, quant to fume and have a new estate thereof from hir againe, perhand a new estate thereof from his againe, quantity of the new estate th according to the orders and laws of Angland. Which bir maiestie bio accept, and forth / made him a new effate of inheritance: and for the better his faie in all obedience and butie to hir crowne, did for the worthinesse of his bloud & stocke, & for the great. nede of his government make him a baron of the Bar Ink nede of his government mane you a value of the parlement in that relime; & for his further advance cause the parlement in that relime; & for his further advance cause the ment created him an earle under hir letters patents care, by the name of the earle of Clancare. These neines being reported to Shane Dneile, he Coffed at it, no Shanes being reported to some an including making the choice of his higheste in advanting making thing liking the choice of his higheste in advanting at the choice of his highest and malioned at the case fuch a one to that honour, and enuied and maligned Clanter. him that he was to honozed. And therefore not long after, when the commissioners were fent to intreat with him opon fundzie points, they found him molt arrogant + out of all good order, brateng out frædes not met no: femelie. Fo:(faith he)you haue madea trife earle of Dac Artimoze, I keepe as god a man as is he. And albeit I confeste the queene is my lowe reigne ladie, pet I neuer made peace with hir, but o at hir fæking. And where he had required to haw his The pass parlement robes fent onto him as earle of Tiron, tanned which title he claimed and required (which if it were Shand denied him, then he required a triall to be made in neik. parlement) pet now he cared not for so meane an hor nour as to be an earle, ercept he might be better and higher than an erle. For I am(faith he)in bloud and power better than the best, and I will give place to none of them: for mine ancellors were kings of Al fler. And as Alfter was theirs, so now Alfter is mine and chall be mine: with the swood I wan it, and with the swood I will keepe it. Which his words shame felliout true, though long he infoted not the fame: and forthwith he fell into most horrible trannies rannies and crusities, wherby he became erecrable and hater meth hard full buts all his people and countrie tho were wear before the rie of him.

Pow hir maiestie, being greeued and annoied with his treasons and rebellions of long time, was fullie minded either to have him clearelie roted out, in hand that the best wate to bring him to reformation, was to peeld to him in fundate things of him be, fired. But now the fæing him to have manifested himselfe a notozious traitoz, and past all grace; the gave commandement to the load deputie to imploie his whole care, confideration, and wifedome, how luch a cankeed and dangerous revell might be btterlie ertirped. And feeing the matter also to have fo manie accidents and circumstances belonging well concluded: therefore the fent over fir Francis Unolles vicechamberleine, to conferre with the land deputie, tho arrived at Dublin the seventh of Pale Sir fin 1566, afwell concerning these matters of watre, as those man grid the whole Cate and government of this realme. Tho when he was arrived, and having at large conferred with him about the same, the time betweene them was concluded and amounted, that the feruice fould be in the winter; & accordinglie things necellarie, as well monie, men, munitions, and vittels were lent ouer, and Edward Kandolph cozonell of the fotmen, and fundice other capteins arrived with their foolds ers from out of England, and all things were difpo feo both for the garrifon and the campe, as it was conventent

Defmond fclues to the queins ozder.

spoileth the earle of D2= monds lands.

conventent to be.

Likewise the archiraitor knowing what preparation was made against him, he doth the like also on his part against hir maiestie and at a locothip of ma nour of his about fir miles out of Bundalke, he mu fresh all his whole armie, which was of foure thou fand fotmen, and feuen hundzed hozifemen. And glorieng much in himselse of such his great force and pullance, which he thought to luttice to have conque. red all Ireland withall, and that no man burff to ab 10 Short Ontil renture upon him: he marcheth buts the towns of Thumbalko whore he income? Dundalke, where he incampeth himfelfe, & belægeth the same. He was no more bulle to giue sunorie at. tempts of invation, and to enter the towne, but the fouldiers within were as valiant to relift and befend: which in the end turned to his reproch, and hee had the repulse, being with thame valuen to raise his flege, and to depart with the lotte.

The like fucceste he had at Whites castell . and when he made his robe and inuation into the Engs 20 lift pale, when his great multitude food him not in fo much tread, as a farre smaller companie of the English Condiers Deferned commendation : which perforce and mangre of his teeth compelled him to retire with thance, and to returne with lotte. About this time in the moneth of Julie 1565, and the first peare of the deputation of fir Penrie Sidneie, Co. ward Kandolph, a verie erpert and a valiant foulcommission dier, was fent over out of England, and arrived at mparmung the Dirrie with seuen hundzed men under his regiment, and he himfelfe by the councell in England appointed to be the cozonell. This man as some as he was lanved, infrenched himfelfe at the Dirrie, there he remained in garrifon without dwing of a niething, butill the comming of the loss deputie from Dublin, with the relione of hir maichies for ces, appointed to be to ined with the fair coronell, for the better feruice against the arrogant traitour Shane Dneile.

And after that the faid lood deputie was come, and 40 had fait there about fir baies, and had fet all things paticometh had traid there about the direct required; he return hits Dirrie in luch good order as that feruice required; he return mblatteth all ned backe to Dublin through Donnels countrie, and to thorough Connagh, leaving the coroncil accompanied with one band of fiftie horffemen bnace the leading of capteine Beorge Pernie the elocr, and with fenen companies orhundreds of fotmen under the charges of capteine Robert Cornewall, and capteine John Ward, and others; all well furni. thed, both with munitions, vittels, and all other nes 50 cellaries meet and requilit. Shane Dneile who knew well of the garrifons, of their forces enumbers, and and meam: he not minding that they hould there rest in peace, phonete the but flanding now boon his hono; and reputation, incamped himfelfe about two miles from the garrilon, having then in his armie a thouland fine hundied formen, and the hundred horlinen. And from date to date he would continuallie with his horse. men house and range the fields, and thew himfelfe readie to trie the matter if the Englishmen durst to 60 adventure the fame

The cozonell not liking these dailie offers, and hinking it to be a verte great vilhonour unto him, and all the English nation, which were come over to ferue against him, and now would do nothing, but were dailie bearded by the enimie: not with franding that his forces when they were at the best, were but small in respect of the ensinie; and by reason of the licknette in the campe, that his small companie was much weakened and bnable to ferue: yet he was betermined with a full resolution to take the offer of the entinie, and either he would lose his life, or remoue him from his so nære a feat. Where vpon he diew out of his companie to the number of thies hundred men, whome he thought most meet to ferue, The cozone !! and being accompanied with fiftie hor flemen buder propareth to capteine Beogge Bernie, marched toward Dneils Dneile. campe, who pretending a great top to lie the forwaronelle of the Englithmen, he with all his forces iffued out, and with freed prepared to incounter with them : perfuading himfelfe that he thould that date be mailler of the field, and have a conquell to his bearts delire.

The cozonell made choise of the ground to fight in, and prepared himfelfe to ffand and abide their tharge. Dreile in great furie, and with a great multitude charged the coronels formen, and his maine battell; but he was so received with the English shot and to galled, that he made some fraie. Wherebpon capteine hernie taking his opostunitie, moft vali. The valiant capteine Hernie taking his opozumue, mon van fernice of cope antlie with his fmall band of horfemen brake in to trine George the battell of Dneile. Likewife cozonell Kandolph Dernie, with his fein howemen gave the charge vpon the left wing of them. The one of them being well follo, ived and accompanied with his band, did the feruice which he delired: but the coronell verie valiantlie The coronell making waie through the enimies, and no man fol. Randolph is lowing him, was in fighting wounded to death, and flainc. abereof immediatlie he died. The revels being afto. nted and amazed at the valour of the Englishmen, his companie fled and turned their backs, whome the fouldiers fole flie, and are lowed, and had the flaughter of them folong as their purfued weavons lafted in this conflict. The revels were flaine that daie in this chafe aboue foure hundred persons, belides the like number of such as were burt and wounded. The cozonell onelie was flaine, but capteine Dernie and diverte of the hollemen were

berie foze hart and wounded. After the death of this valiant cozonell, whole fire The lord be nerall the lood deputte oft afterwards celebrate with putte kapeth tyreat honour at Dublin, Edward Sentlow was Kandowha made cozonell: binder whose government the gar, functals, rison lived verie quietlie. For this last overthrow so quailed the spirits and courages of Dncile and his companie, that they had no belire of anie further incountering with the Englishmen. And thus all the winter following little was done : and being deter. mined in the fpzing to aduenture some peece of fers uice, but the logo other wife amointed it . Fog about The Dirie the foure and twentith of Aprill, by a milfortune ner and all the uer yet knowne by what means, the fort and towne bittels and of the Dirrie was all burned, and the flogehouses munitions where the munitions and vittels laie were blowne are burned. up with the gunpowder, and twentie men killed with the fame : and fo manie of the fouldiers as laie ficke there were burned in their beds. Where boon the cozonell calling all his capteins togither, and considering the distress which they now were in, by the loss of their vittels and munitions, and not knowing where to be furnished otherwise, they The cozonell all concluded and determined to abandon that abandoneth place, and to imbarke themselues to Dublin, which Dirrie, and returned to immediatlie they all did , fauing capteine George Dublin by Heruie: for he rather did chose to hazard his life to feas. pertie: tod be taute violimie to hand his fouldiers by Capteine returne by land, than to impouer th his fouldiers by George Berk killing their hordes (which perforce they must needs uic returneth have done for want of thipping. And therefore even by land in almost against all hope he returned towards Dub. great danger. lin through the enimies countrie, who followed and chased him foure dates togither without infermillion, both with horffemen and formen: but at length he recovered Dublin, not without great wonder and admiration. The load deputie he wanted not his elpials, both about Dneile, and in all places through, out Alfter : and thereby knew the forces , bent, and determinations of everie of them, whereby he knew how to meet with them everie wate for the best fer, nice of hir matefite. And yet confidering the great

killed & hare about 800.

beliegeth Dundalke, E

intrencheth

Chelord de= things in 02 =

The load beputie maketh cournie into Milter.

herein, but that he would make a tournie into Aller himselfe. And being accompanied with the earle of Kiloare, and certeine of the councell, and with fuch capteins and fouldiers as he thought goo : he ad. nanced & fet fouth out of Drogheda the feventienth of September 1566, and incamped that night at Rolle Beagh, & fo from thenle he tranelled through. out Alfer , and palled thenle onto Athlon in Connagh, where he came the fir and twentith of Dc. 10

brags) once to thew his face, nor to offer anie fight

importance of the feruice, he could not be fatisfied

tober. In this tournte the rebell never burft (for all his

The pulilla: Dneile.

Domellre=

Cozed bnto

the pollelli=

putic recones

reth a great

countrie in

mifter bnto

the crowne.

OYIG. The load des

1566

at all : fauing once at and neere a town not far from Glogher, where he offered a fairmith, and gade the charge with hoaffemen, fotmen, and certeine scotilh that : which continued a good space, and sundate burt on both fides, but none died of his loadhips men . He the wed himfelfe also once with a great multitude of horfemen and formen, not farre from the castell of Tirlough Lenough, called the Sal, mon , but toke his eafe and durft not to give the aduenture. In this tournie the load deputie restored Donnell to the pollettion of his lands and callels, kept by Dneile from him; & fundzie lozds and men of the best fort submitted themselves. By which this his lozothips tournie he recouered to hir highnelle a countrie of foure score miles in length, and eight and fortie miles in breath, without lotte of anie man faning Pac Swier, tho being ficke died in this tour, nie; and fauing a few persons which by the wate op. 3 on an occasion would adventure the winning of a certeine Ilmo in the middle of a lough, therein was supposed to be great store of wealth and vittels of the enimies, and in affailing of it they were

The earle of Definond is both no burt.

The earle of Delmond ma paire to the load deputie.

drowned. Ammediatlie boon the discharge of the armie at Athlon, the lood deputie footified all the frontiers of the English pale with garrisons sufficient for the fame . And as concerning the troublefome fate of Pounffer, the earle of Delmond was in the field with two thousand men, and incamped himselfe in places indifferent to annois at his pleasure the earle of Damond, the lord Barrie, the lord Roch, and fir Mozis Fitzgiralo of the Decies; but he bio not hurt anteman at all : fauing one Pac Donogha rebell and a difioiall fauage man . The lost deputie being ouerlaied with the continuall cares to refift Dneile, could not in person travell into Mounter, not yet fent capteine Berne constable of Leighlin buto the faid earle, whereby he might be advertised of his intendement and meaning : which appeared to be but a mere infolencie and an outrage to be revenged bp on the earle of Damond, although the rumoz was, that he would consoine with Oneile. Which report then it came to his eares, and being advertised that the lord deputie was offended with him that he had gathered luch a force, and was in the fields. He for his purgation herein, without further delaie, take 60 his bootle, and having in his companie onelie the baron of Dunboine, and capteine Herne, with their companies, made halt to prefent himfelfe before the losd deputie: where and before whome for purging of himselfe, and to occlare his dutie, he offered himselfe to his loodhips denotion, either to go and attend him buto Wilter in that fort as he then was, or elfe to follow him with all fuch force as he could get; the losd deputie finding him vittels: and then to abide e ferue in Allfer in Despite of Shane Dnelle; oz elle that he would in his loodhips absence remaine by on the borders there, with fuch a number of borffe men, as thould be appointed onto him; thewing ale so and pretending such dutifulnesse to hir maiestie,

as was meet for a subject to thew to his wuereigne. The pepatie baning forme liking of his offers, and confiberting the fickle fate of thele prefents , accept teth his tall offer, foilling him to go backe sgaine, Chunk and to prepare a crew of one hundred horsenten, at Defining the least, and to to returne againe within fourtiene franhmin vales: which he vio; and with him came fir Lohn Defmond, his bucle the bardn of Dunboine, fie lord Bowse and others : the accompanied with the baron of Welnin, fir Warbam Sentleger, and cap feine Herne, bio remaine bpon the borders, butill bis loadibips returne from out of his fournie in the

And as the realme at large was much infeffen with the crivell warres of Dnetleand the troubles in Mounter; to allo there wanted no daily complaints of griefs buto the losd deputie of fundate perfons one againft an other. For Dliver Sutten, a gentle Duur bu man dwelling in the Englith pale, bid erhibit acer, toncomple man dwelling in the winguty for, ordered in the and teine boke in writing, conteining an information who want of fundate notozious difozbers in that tealme, burt kilbar full to the good policie of the fame, and contrarie to fundate god laives and ads of parlement, thereof a great part bid touch the earle of Bilbare. The mate ter was referred by hir materies order to the hear ring of the lood deputie and councell. Likewisellt Chiefel Comund Butler and Piers his brother were gray Dunbol moullie complained byon by the ladie of Dunboine, complaint Mac Baian Arra, Dliver Fitzgirald, fir William Buters, Decarell, and others; for their bailte outrages, rob beries, murthers, preies, and spoiles taken. For the hearing and amealing of fuch matters, and for the better ministration of instice, the load deputie had bene a long lutoz to hir maiellie and councell for a chancelloz to be fent ouer, tho at length were refolned bron bodo: Weston, beans of the arches, tho arrived at Dublin in Julie 1567, a notable and a Dodoine fingular man : by profession a lawyer, but in life a florismin binine, a man fo bent to the execution of inflice, and los channel fo leuere therein, that by no meanes would be be let lord for duced or anerted from the fame; and so much good in the end infued of his byzight, diligent, and dutiful fernice; as that the whole realme found themselues most hapte and blessed to have him serve among them. Pow he taking opon him to deale in all mate ters of complaints, both easen the losd deputie of a great burthen, and did most good to the countrie, and acquited himfelfe againff hir mateffie.

But to returne to the L. deputie, tho immediatile without great perill divide his armie: wherefore he 50 boon the dismilling of the armie at Athlon, be take order (as is aforefato) for placing of his garrifons in such convenient places byon the frontiers, as then apperteined and was most meet & convenient. The rebell on his part leaveth nothing bnoon, which might be for the furtherance of his enterpiles : and being in great follittie of himselfe deutsed manie things; and to make fome theto of his abilitie, enter Che Onthe red into the English pale, with Award and fire was enursh we keep the countrie, Aue mante of hir materies sub with 1800 teas, and in the end belieged bir highreffe towns of andfin Dundalke : there his pride and treason were infli lie scourged, tho came not with so much gloste to be Dundston steer it, as be did returne with thame to leaus and second miss lofe it . The logo deputie not abiding the fame , 1107 and begann Asping his matters, determined to make a new with grid rode opon him: and in the meane time, he so hand the meane time, led the matter, that he had unfethered him of his follaken a best friends, alos, and belps. For besides the thole nimbs countrie, as is before faid, gained from him the last fournie, Dac Gwier, a mightie man in his countrie for looke him, and submitted himfelfe to hir matellie, mill, mill offering all local obevience and faithfull feruice, and but to receive his large and faithfull feruice, and but to receive his large and faithfull feruice. to receive his lands and countrie at hir highnelle beats

Alerander

F 1:10:0 De= a de piete n:00

Omile his falic fubmif:

with Dneile.

bytapteine

Alexander Dg and Hac Donell offer to ferue hir maielfie, with all the Scots bnoer them againft the rebell. Con Doonell late oclinered from the res bell, offereth feruice against him. Tirlogh Lenough with the helps of his neighbours dailie backed the faid Dneile, that his force was quailed that waie. The lord deputic had continuallie foure regiments restoing neere the English pale, who continuallie as it were by turnes were occupied in perfecuting of the rebell : 4 his loodhip being at Drogheda bid allo 10 kiddles affine out, and in one morning toke a preie of two thouland kine, 500 garrons, and innumerable other finall beatts and cattell . The rebell fæing himfelfe thus diffrested of his goods, and forfaken of his helps and followers, his men, fome by Doonell, and fome by others to the number of thee or foure thousand persons at times flaine , himselfe discomfited , his pallages stopped, and all places of his refuge preuen. mixicoof ted, and now but one pose castell lest afferein he trus el conflort 15 fed to commit himselfe buto; he being thus weaker 20 ned, and beholding his declination and fall towards, was fullie bent and determined to disguise himselfe, and to as not knowne to come with a collar of halter about his necke to the presence of the losd deputie, and in all humble and lowlie maner to submit him. felse: hoping that by this kind of humilitie to find mercie at hir maiesties hands. But his conscience was to cauterifed, and his hands to imbrued with infinit and most hogrible murthers , bloudspeds , treas nings, spoiles, oppessions, and with all kinds of wice beduese, that his heart was overlaised and overlas ben with an otter bespaire to obteine anie grace 03 fauo: and therefore was the more easilie persuaded by those whome he take to be his friends, to trie first and to intreat the Scots for friendship, and that they would to the and ato him in his most wicked rebellion. Whereupon he twke his tournic towards Clandeboie, there Alexander Dg and his companie, othescots. camped: and for the better gaining of his purpole, he had a little before inlarged Charleie Bote brother to the faid Alexander, and who had beene pissoner with him.

The Scots disguised the matter with him, pretending and promiting him ato and affifiance : which they ment not. For allone as Dneile togither with Doonels wife, whom he kept, the small companie which he brought with him were come into the tent, and they affured of him; they called to remembrance 50 the manifold inturies which they had received at his bands, and namelie the murthering of one James Mac Conell , & one Mac Buillie their nere coulins and hinfmen; and being inflamed with malicious Same Oneil minds to revenge their deths, they fell to quarelling with the faid Shane Dueile, and with their flaugh ter swoods helved him to peeces, and flue all those binght made of his companie that were with him; his bodie they wraped in a Kernes Chirt, and so without all honor was carried to a rumous thurth not farre off, and 60 there interred; but after a few dates he was taken bp againe by capteine Piers, by whose deuise this Aratagem or rather tragedie was practifed, and his bead was fundeed from the bodie, and fent to the load hils head fet deputie, who caused the same to be set byon a stake of Minister pole on the top of the castle of Dublin. A fit end for luch a beginning, and a full reward for luch a wicked traitoz and facrileger: who began his tyzannie in blond, did continue it with blond, and ended it with bloud. The load deputie being then at Daogheda, and advertised of the death of this Shane, and of the fuft indgements of Goolato bpon him for the fame profirated himselse before the high and eternall God, and gaue his most humble and hartie thanks for the

delinerie of that land from to wicked a tyrant, facriliger and traitoz; and with all the convenient speed The quene that might be , he dispatched the mellengers to hir aducrised of maieltie and councell, advertifing this hap and god neils death. fucceffe. Which done, his loodship with all speed made his repaire into Allfer, and incamped himfelfe in the middle and heart of the countrie, but o whome all the noblemen and gentlemen of Tiron being glad that they were delivered from the tyzant, made their repaire onto his loodhip: and especiallie all they of Alifer, bewhich were competitoes of the capteinrie of Tiron, ing glad of tho most humblie and obedientlie presented and Oncils death, submitted themselves onto hir highnesse. And when do submit his lozofhip had fet all things in fuch ozder as the themselues. time required, he allembled all the gentlemen of the countrie, and most pithilie and effectuallie instructed and persuaded them to obedience, teaching them the great bleffings of Goo which commeth thereby, as also putteth them in mind that inconveniences, miseries and calamities they had felt by the contrarie: and for their greater quietnesse and peace, he promifed thortlie to fend commissioners amongst them, who thould have authoritie to decide all contronersies betweene partie and partie (title of land and death of man ercepted.)

Also he proclamed and commanded his maichties by the lord bes peace to be kept, and commanded all churchmen putte to the and hulbandmen to returne to their accustomed er, noble men of ercifes: and that all men of warre should live byon Tilder. fons, thosedomes, bunkenneffe, robberies, bur, 30 their owne, or bpon that which their freends with a god will would give them : and so publishing peace bniverfallie, cuerie man departed home toifullie. The 1920 deputie likewise returned to Dublin , and Oneils sonne commanded the some of the late revell, who late for fafecustodie. an hollage' of his father, to be lafelie kept in the car ffell of Dublin , according to hir maieffies letters of commandement in that behalfe, dated the firt of Julie 1567. The queenes maieffie being deliuered from this traitozous rebell, and having all Alffer thin helpe to the number of fir hundred persons, were then in 40 at hir commandement and disposition, was verte descrous to have a true plot of the whole land, wher, Robert Leth by the might in some fort fæ the fame, t did fend ouer fent into Irea into Ireland one Robert Leth, fkilfull in that art, landto braws and that he Gould make the perfect descriptions of true plot of the the same. Likewise also the being advertised of the whole land. outragious dealings of the earle of Delmond, in mainteining proclamed rebels, and continuing of warres against the earle of Damond (whose info. lencie to læke to be reuenged bpon the faid earle, was the diffurbance of the whole realme, the spoile of the whole countrie, and the onelie cause of great murthers, bloudihed, and budwing of manie people) the willed the losd deputie by hir letters to appethe willed the look deputie by hir letters to apper Defmond beind the said Desmond, and to commit him to the committed to caffell of Dublin, which was to done. And affer both ward, and fent he and his brother fir John of Delmond were fent to the tower, into England, and there committed to the tower.

After all the forefato broiles and civill wars were John Defappealed, and the realme let in quietnelle and god og. mond, der, the losd deputie having received hir maiellies letters for his repaire into England unto hir prefence, he did accordinglie prepare himfelfe therebn, fon and fie to, and by a committion bider hir brode feale of Free william Fitz land of appoint doctor Wiefton then lord chancellor, Sulliams and fir William Fitzwilliams trealuro; at wars, marclogos to be loods infices in his absence: the one of them being verie well learned, tuff, and byzight; the other berie wife, & of great knowledge and experience, in the affaires of that land. Both which two being like well minded to do hir mateffie feruice, did moff louinglie and brotherlie agræ therein, each one adul, fing and advertifing the other according to the feue. rall gifts which God had bestowed byon them : by which meanes they pasted their gouernment berie

The earle of togither with his brother ür

Doctor wes

Bir Benrie dieneie 1020 peputie pal= feth into England, and carica with him the earle of Delmono.

Ed.Mulineux.

Sir Edmund Muiler brea= keth out into outrages.

The pride of Mac Artic Moze earle of Clancart.

Ebe carle of be on the lozo Roch. James Fitz: the baron of Lixenew.

Rethe archhie Thop of Cathell in banger to be kullen.

Sir Peter Carem ma= keth fute to bir maieffie for the recoue ric of big

well and quietlie to the great contentation of hir maicffie, the commendation of themselves, and the common peace of the countrie; and so the said sir Henrie having placed the fait inffices, he paffed the feaz into England, and carried with him the earle of Definond and Deconnog Sligo, he was with great honor received at the court, and the other was fent to the tower. Hir maiellie lay at this time at Hamp, ton court, and loking out at a window, the fawhim to come in with two hundred men attending vpon 10 him, and not knowing at the first fight who it was, it was told hir that it was ar Henrie Sioneie hir deputie in Ireland. Then it is well (quoth the) for he hath two of the best offices in England. So he presented himselfe before hir highneste, and was well come to bir. Beuertheleffe, affer bis beparture, the particulat grudges betweene some certeine men, brake out into great and outragious dilozders, as lir Comund Butler with great holfilitie maketh inuafion voon Dliver Fitzgirald, being accompanied 20 with Wiers Brace. The outlawes of the Dconnogs and Dimozes proclamed traitors, and having in the ficto a thousand of Galloluglattes, horstemen, and Bernes, threaten to burne the towns of Bilken, nie , and spoile Dearell of his countrie . But they as alfo Dituer Fitzgirald, a man not apt in times patt to complaine, but rather bent to fatilite hinfelfe with double revenge, leaving to læke revenge by armes, made their recourses to the loads suffices, and by law requested redictic. We exte of Clancart was 30 ber 1568; and toke the fwood of government by putted by with fuch infolencie, that he named him, felfe king of Bounfler, and did confederate with the Hac Swaines, Molinan Hoze, and others of the Triffizie of that province, and in warlike manner and with banners vilplated inuadeth the lord Ro. thes countrie, and in burning of his countrie, he Clancart ma= peffroied all the come therein, feuen hundged thepe, and a great number of men, women and children, and carried awaie fiftene hundred kine, and a hun. decogarous, Alfo James Fitzmozis of Delmond mosts maketh maketh ernell wartes against the lozd Fitzmozis 40 baron of Lirenew, which albeit they were but prinie displeasures, pet trouble some to the whole countrie: and the loads fulfices being not prepared to Cop the fame, they did yet so tempozife with them, as they gained time, till further order might be taken bpon aduertisement of hir maiesties pleasure here, in . About this time one Posice a runnigate preff, baning latelie bane at Kome, and there confectated by the popes bull archbishop of Cashell, arrived so into Ireland, and made chalenge to the same see: which being denied buto him by the archbilhop which was there placed by hir maiettie, the faid supposed bishop suddenlie with an Irish skaine wounded the bishop, and put him in danger of his life.

This yeare fir Peter Carew of Pohonelotrele in the countie of Deuon knight, one descended of a noble and high parentage, whose ancestors for sundrie hundred of peares were not onelie barons of Careto in England; but marquelles of Corke, bar rons of Dozon, and loads of Matton Twete; and fundie other legniozies in Ireland. When he had lolands in Ire: ked into his enidences, and had found how by right thefe great inheritances were descended buto him: he made the queens maichtie and councell acquainted therewith, and praied that with their fauor and furtherance he might have libertie to follow, and by order of law to recover the fame . Which was granteo buto him, as also be had hir highnesse and their loodhips feverall letters to them, then loos infices and officers there to that effect: and willing them to ato and allist him with all such hir maiesties eutoens ces remaining in the records of the castell of Dub. lin, oz else where in that land; and by all such other

and meanes they might . Wherebyon he fell the writer hereof to be his agent : tho having by fearth found his title to be god, and confirmed by fundate records and presidents, found in hir maiesties treat furie and castell of Dublin, answering and agraing with the enidences of fir Peter Carew: then the faid fir Peter passed in person into Ireland, and fair plan made title and claime to the loodhip of Pafton, then Cartopate in the possession of fir Moistopher Chuers knight, was high and to the baronie of Dozon, then in the occupation

of the Cauchaughs. The first, when it was found god in law, and fir Chaillother Chiners peloco , and compounded for it: the other was traversed before the lord deputie and councell, and bpon good and fubifantiall cuitens ces, records, and profes; a decree palled by the lords of the councell , in the behalfe of fir Peter Carem, Siepein and the same confirmed by the lost deputie, and by Entubes that meanes he recoursed the polletton of the baro, been things nie, thich was befoze taken from his ancellozs; as thich beine the recozos do impact, about the eightenth year med I have of king Kichard the fecond . But as for the mar: quelhip of Cooke, being a matter of great weight and importance, and the pronince of Pounifer then not fetled in antequietnelle : he would not as then nor pet thought it goo to deale therein . Sir Hen 1668 mir bem rie Sidneie, hauing spent a long time in England, Monacte was commanded to returne to his charge in Ire turnething land, where he arrived at Crag Fergus, in Septem, depune, on him, and so discharged the loads suffices. And then he and the councell by their letters of the fourth of Pouember 1 5 68, did aduertile hir maiestie of the Cate that the fact realme of Ireland then Cod in. Which in briefe confifted in these points imme

biatlie following. That fir Comund Butler had made apzeie in Cheftatthe Shilelagh vpon Dliver Fitzgarret, and done fun in. drie murders, burnings, and great spoiles boon his countrie: who was forthwith fent for, and refuleth to come ercufing that he had bufineffe about the ere cution of certeine services in the counties of lale kennie, and Tipozarie, and that the residue of all Leinster was quiet . That Connagh was in indif Connaghu ferent god oader, fauing some contention betwene peace. the earle of Clanricard, and Hac William En ter ; and an old controuerlie renewed betweenc D. donell and Doonner Sligo for the title of a rent in Enter, Connaghs countrie. In Thomond great complaints made against the earle thereof, by D. thaghnes, tho by reason of the oppession of the said earle, he was compelled with his followers to for fake his countries. As for Hounter, it was all in Hounters diforder by the warres of James Fitzmoris of Del dopon. mond, again & fitzmozis baron of Lirenew: and of the earle of Clancart, against the baron of Koch: and also by the disorders of Coward Butler, who bes ing combined with Piers Brace and certeine outlawes, dio disorderlie spoile and preie the countries

to feed their bellies . The present state of Wister the lood deputie ber ing delirous to know the certeintie thereof, immer diatlie byon his landing in Ireland he made a four neis throughout the fame, and found the Frifhie to stand in wavering terms : wherebyon he fent for Turlogh Lenogh Dneile, who pælving himselse somewhat guiltie, because he somewhat swarued from his dutie , and differed from the articles in his Curlop Li loadhips abience before, concluded with him in mai nagh braken king a fournete opon Fernete, and in combining the path, in with the Scots, of whome he had in retinue about one thousand; he desired pardon: which it was long sun heric harding and heric harding alarm. and berie hardlie obteined, and not butil his lood thip had caused the pledges to be executed, which the Socots

Scots hav put in for their loialtie. Dooneile quiete lie possessed the countrie of Trireconell , and continued a dutifull subtect to hir matestie; saving the old grudge betweene him and Turlogh die rather increase than decate. Dehan lood of the land betweene Loghfoile and the Ban, being for the same some time moletted by Turlogh Lenogh, did beare with all inturies, and defired to be erempted from Tur. load, and to hold the same of the queenes maiestie. The like vio the two principall men, eligible for the i tapteinrie of Tiron , belire for their parts all the relidue of Allter in good fraie and quietnelle.

The load deputie after this tournete returned to Dublin, and there, then by the adulic of the councell he had disposed all things in god oader concer, ning the gouernement : he cauled the waits for fummons of the parlement to be awarded out buto ener rie noble man for his apperance; 4 to everie Chiriffe for choling of knights and burgelles for their like apperance at Dublin the leuenteenth of Januarie, 20 chancelloz, speaker in the bigber house, to discourse in the eleventh years of hir maiesties reigns; at which time and date appearance was then and there made accordinglie . On the first date of which parlement , the lozd beputie, representing hir maie, ties person, was conducted and attended in mot bonozable manner buto Chilles church, and from thenle buto the parlement house : where he sat but ber the cloth of effate, being apparelled in the princes lie robes of crimion veluet doubled of lined with ermin. And then & there the load chancelloa made a 3 ancies his verise eloquent oration, declaring what law was, of that great effect and believe being that tie of men was thereby mainteined, and each man in his degree confermed; as well the inferior as the fuperioz, the subject as the prince: and how carefull all god common-wealths in the elder ages have beene in this respect : who considering the time, state, and necellitie of the common-wealth, did from time to time ordeine and establish most hollome lawes. either of their deuiles , 02 daawen from some other 4 god common-wealth; and by these meanes have

prospered and continued. And likewise, how the queenes most ercellent maiestie, as a most naturall mother ouer hir chilbien, and as a most bigilant prince ouer bir fubteas, hath beine alwaies, a now presentlie is verie carefull, Audious, toiligent in this behalfe : having caused this present parlement to be assembled, that by the councell and adulte of you hir nobilitie, & you hir knights and burgettes, fuch good lawes, orders, 5 and ordinances maie be decreed, as maie be to the bonoz of almightie God, the pzelernation of hir matellie, and of hir imperiall crowne of this realme, and the lafette of the common-wealth of the whole realme : for which they were not onelie to be most hankefull; but also most carefull to do their duties in this behalfe . And then he the load speaker direct ting his speches to the knights and burgelles, who were there in the behalfe of the whole commons of the realme, willed them that for the anothing of 60 confusion, and for an orderlie proceeding in this action: they hould allemble them felues at and in the bouse appointed for that assemblie; and there to make choise of some wise and sufficient man to be their mouth & speaker. And then concluding with an erhoztation of obedience and outifulnette, he ended, and the court adjourned butill thursdaie nert, the twentith of Januarie. In the meane time, the knights and burgelles met in the lower houle, and apointed for their speaker one Stanihurif, recorder waser of the of the citie of Dublin, a verie grave, wife, and learned man; who opon thurldate aforelate was prefented to the load deputie, and to the loads of the higher house : 4 then be having done most humblie his

obedience and dutie , made his ozation and fpech; Stanthurffs first abaling himselfe, being not a man sufficient. lie adorned and furnished with such gifts of know ledge and learning, as to fuch an office and calling doth apperteine: wherein he was so much the more bufit, as the cause he had in hand was of great weight and importance. And therefore he wilhed. if it might to fæme god to his loedthip, fome man of more gravitie, and of better experience, knowledge, and learning might suplie the place. Peuerthelesse, for fomuch as he might not refuse it, he was the more willing, because he did well hope his serusce being done with his best god will, and in all dutis fulneffe, it would be accepted. And againe his comfort was the more, because he had to beale in such a cause, as was for the establishing of some good and bolfome lawes, whereof he was a profestor.

And hereopon he toke an occation, according to the argument that was before handled by the lord of the nature and good effect of lawes, and what good fuccesse there insueth to all such realmes, countries, and common-wealths, as by lawes are well ruled e gouerned. And when he had spoken at large here. of, there he declared what great causes that realme of Ireland had, to give for ever most hartie thanks and praifes to God for his godnelle, in lending luch a vertuous, noble, and a most godlie prince, as was hir matestie: who not onlie was carefull by the swood to stand in their defense against all enimies, trais tors, and rebels, in times of wars and rebellions: but also for their conservation in times of peace would have luch lawes, fratutes, and ordinances to be made in a parlement of themselves, as should be most era pedient for the common-wealth of the same land. When he had at large discoursed of this matter, then he concluded with an humble petition, that it might please hir matestie to grant onto them their liberties and fredoms of old belonging to everie affemblie of o a parlement. The first was, that everie man being The requests a member of the lower house, should and might of the speaker baue free comming and going to and from the parle, of the liberties ment: and during their above at the same without of the partemolestation or impeachment of anie person or personent house. fons, 03 for anie matter then to be lato against anie of them. The fecond, that they and everie of them might have libertie to speake their minds frelie to anie bill to be read, amatter to be propoled in that parlement. Thirdlie, that if anie of the fato house thulo milozder and milbehaue himfelfe in anie onder cent manner, or if ante other person thould entil intreat or abuse anie of the said house, that the correct tion and punishment of everie such offendor should rest and remaine in the order of the late house. When he had ended his speech, and in most humble maner done his obetsance; the lood deputie having paused The look bpon the matter, made answer to euerie particular beputie an point in moff eloquent and effectuall manner , thich (wereth Staconfifted in these points: Pothing milliking with niburds the speaker for so much abaling of himselfe, because be knew him to be both grave, wife, and learned, and berie lufficient for that place, doubting nothing but that he would performe the same in all outifulnesse, as to him apperteined. And concerning the benefit thich groweth to all nations and common-wealths by the vie of the lawes; belides that dailie experi ence did confirme the fame generallie, fo no one na. tion particularlie could better anouch it than this realme of Ireland: and therefore he did well hope that they would accordinglie frame themselves to live accordinglie, and also to praie for hir maiel. ties fasette and long life, whereby wnder hir they might infoie a peaceable and a quiet life in all profperitie. And concerning the paulleges, which they

requested

Staniburfe

I parlemnt tunnoned at Dublin.

requested to be allowed, forformuch as the same at the first were granted to the end that they might the better and more quietlie ferue bir highnesse in that affemblie, to hir honoz, and to the benefit of the com. mon-wealth, it pleased hir maiestie so long as the were not impeached, not hir imperial frate derogated, that they should intoit the same. And so after a long time spent in this oration the court was adfourned.

The next daie following being fridaie the lower 10 house met; and contrarie to the order of that house, and putie of that companie, in fied of bnitie there began a division, and for concord discord was receiued. For all, or the most part of the knights and bur, gelles of the English pale, especialite they tho divelled within the counties of Weth and Dublin, who feing a great number of Englishmen to have place in that house began to ercept against that assemblie as not god, not warranted by law. Their vantparler was fir Chistopher Barnwell knight, who being 20 Dir Chailto: fomethat learned, his credit was fo much the moze, and by them thought most meetest and worthie to have beene the speaker for that house. And he being the spokesman alleged the special causes, whiche and his complices would not yell their confents. The first was, because that there were certeine bur. gelles returned for fundrie townes, which were not corporat, and had no voice in the parlement. The fecond was, that certeine thiriffes, and certeine mas tops of townes copposat had returned themselnes. 30 The third and thefelt was that a number of Englishmen were returned to be burgesses of such towns and corporations, as with some of them neuer knew, and none at all were reliant a dwelling in the fame, according as by the lawes is required.

These matters were questioned among them. felues in the lower house for foure daies togither, and no agreement: but the moze words, the moze choler; and the moze speches, the greater broiles; on till in the end, for appealing the matter, the same 40 was referred to the lord deputie and sudges of the realme: buto whom the fait speaker was sent to beclare the whole matter, and to know their resolution ons. And they having at large discoursed and confer, red of this matter, returned their answer; that concerning the first and second exceptions, that the burgelles returned for townes not corporat, and for fuch thiriffes, maiors, and fouereignes as have returned themselues, shall be dismissed out of the same: but as for such others as the thiriffes and majors had 50 returned, they thould remaine, and the penaltie to rest opon the chiristes for their wrong returnes. The mellenger of this answer, how soener he were liked, The difficiency his mediage could not be received not allowed: which of the tudges heing advertised into the lost popular and the first being advertised buto the load deputie and the judge cs, then Lucas Dillon hir mateffies attoznete ge-The felfewill nerall was fent onto them, to ratifie and confirme their resolutions: and yet could not be be credited, neither would they be latilised, buleffe the judges burgeffe of the themselues would come in persons and set downe 60 English pale, this to be their resolutions. Upon this answer the speaker commanded a bill to be read, but the foresaid persons would not suffer no abide the reading there. of: but role by in verie difozdered manner, farre differing from their outies in that place, and as contrarie to that gravitie and wifedome, which was 02 Chould be in them . Therefore , for pacifieng of the fame, the chefe fuffices of the queenes bench, and the chefe inflice of the common ples : the quenes fergeant, attornete generall, and follicitoz, the nert date following came to the lower house, and there did als firme their former resolutions, which thought it might have sufficed. Det certeine lawfers who had place in that house, did not altogisher like thereof.

And albeit this matter were orderlie compaged and fufficient to have contented everie man: pet the same was so formathed, that the placing of the En alithmen to be knights and burgettes, could not be bigefted, as did appere in the fequele of that affein blie, where euerie bill furthered by the Englift gen, tlemen was stopped and hindered by them . And especiallie fir Comund Butler , who in all things thich tended to the quienes materies profit or com, Sur Committee the tended to the quienes materies profit or com, Suit mile mon-wealth, he was a principall against it: fearing bethink the that their capteinries thould be taken awaie, and parliment coine, and liverie be abolithed, and fuch other like disorders redressed, which he and his complices mills king, it oid even open it felfe of a rebellion then a brewing and fowards. Which in ded followed. For immediatlie after the parlement, he returned home with a discontented mind, and gathered his forces. and followed his purpole. But to the purpole. There were two billes put in of moment agreat

consequence. The one was concerning the repeale Europeal of an act for that sessions, onelie made in the time of of Homing fir Coward Poinings load deputie, in the tenth yere of king Penrie the fewenth, which though it were meant most for their owne benefit and common, wealth of that realme: yet so gelous they were, that they would not in long time enter into the confiden ration thereof. The other was for the granting of the impost for wines then first read. And in this mate imposs ter they shewed themselves verie froward & so but wings. quiet, that it was more like a bearebaiting of diforbered persons, than a parlement of wife and grave men. Wherewith a certeine Englith gentleman (the writer hereof) being a burgette of the towne of Athenrie in Connagh, who had before kept filence, and Itill to meant to have done; when he faw thefe foule milozders and overthwarting, being graved, food bp, and praied libertie to speake to the bill, who made a preamble, faieng, that it was an blage in Withagozas Choles, that no Cholers of his Mould for certeine yeares reason, dispute, or determine, but give eare and keepe filence : meaning that then a man is once well infruced, learned, and adulted, and hath well deliberated of the things he hath to do, be should with moze discretion and wildome, speake, order, and direct the fame. Potwithstanding, now he being but a man of small experience, and of less knowledge in matters of importance, and therefore once minved to have beene altogither filent, is inforced even of a verte zeale and confcience, and for the discharge of his dutie, to praie their patience, and to beare with his fpeches. And then boon occasion of the bill read, and matter offered, he entred into the discourse what was the office & authoritie of a prince, and that was the dutie of a subject : and last lie, how the quænes maiestie had most honozablie and care, fullie performed the one, and how undutifallie they had confidered the other: for that the neither found that obedience in that land, which Will lived in rebelli on against hir; neither that benevolence of the better lost, which for hir great expenses spent for thest defendes and lafeties they ought to have yielded but to hir . It appered manifelt in fundzie things, and speciallie in this present assemblie, namelie one bill concerning the repeale of Poinings act, for this time onelie meant for pour owne benefit, and for the common-wealth of this realine : and the other concerning the bill now in question, the one by you de nied, and the other liketh you not . And yet hir mar testie, of hir owne roiall authoritie, might and may establish the same without anie of your consents, as the hath alreadie done the like in England; fauing of hir courteste it pleaseth hir to have it passe with your owne confents by order of law, that the might thereby have the better triall and afforance of your outifainede

2 mutinie in the lawer houie.

oher Barn: against the choile of the burgeffes.

The refoluti: on of the tub=

epinions.

outifulnesse and goodwill towards hir. But as the hath and doth find your bent farre otherwise, so doth the right honozable the lozd deputte find the like. Foz notwithstanding his long services in times past, his continual and dailie travels, forneies, and hoffings, with the great perill of his life against the rebels for your sake and safette; and his endlesse turmoiles and troubles in civill matters and privat lutes for pour quietnesse, and to you well known, he hath des pour quietnelle, and to you then amount, the year set we the more than well at your hands: yet as the vinit mans against Holes, the indinitial alreadites against Holes, the indinitial against Holes, and others; and as the bigrateful Atheniens against Holes, and others; you have and boom misseles, Pelliane, and others; you have and boom misseles, Pelliane, and others; you have and boom the pelliane, and others are presented the name of the citizens for the citie of Exceller at the national property holden at Westmington. millocles, peltiades, and others ; you have and do most bugratfullie requite and recompense this your noble governoz: against whome and his dwings you do kicke and spurne what in you lieth. But in the end it will fall boon you, as it hath dome buto others to your owne thame, ouerthow, and confusion. And then he had spent a long time in this matter, and 20 plomed the same by sundrie histories of other nation ons, he proceeded to the bill, which by fundate reasons and arguments be promed to be molt necellarie, and met to be liked, allowed, and confented onto.

pow when he had thus ended his speeches, he sat cowne, the most part of the house verte well liking and allowing both of the person and of the matter; fauing the persons before named, tho did not heare the same so attentiuelie as they did digest it most unquietlie, supposing themselues to be touched here, 30 in. And therfore some one of them role by and would have answered the partie, but the time and date was fo far spent about the ordinarie houre, being well neere two of the clocke in the afternone, that the speker and the court role by and departed. How. beit luch was the prefent murmurings and threatnings breathed out, that the fato gentleman for his lafette was by forme of the best of that assemblie conducted to the house of Ar Peter Careto, where the fair gentleman then late and relided. The load deput 40 tie in the meane time, hearing that the lower house were so close, and continued togither so long aboue the optimarie time, he bombted that it had beine com cerning the questions before proponed, and therefore did secrettie send to the house to learne and know the cause of their long fitting. But by commander ment of the speaker, ower was given to the dozes kepers, that the dozes thould be close kept, & none to be luffered to come in or out, to long as the gentleman was in deliverie of his speches; and after the court was ended, it was advertised to the faid lord deputie, tho thanked God that had raised by bnknowen frænds botto him in that place.

The nert date following being fridate, allone as the court of the lower houle was let, fir Chailtopher Barnewell, and the lawiers of the English pale, tho had conferred togither of the former bates speches, stoo op and desired hearing: who leaving the matter in question, did in most disorderlie manner inueigh against the fato gentleman, aftirming, 60 anouching, and protesting, that if the words spoken bad beine spoken in anie other place than in the faid bonte, they would rather have been than have borne withall. Thereupon the speaker by consent of the relidue of the house commanded them to filence, and willed that if they had anie matter against the faid gentleman, they thould present and bring it in witing against mondate then nert following. And for formuch as their dealings then were altogither disordered, being more like to a bearebaiting of lose persons than an assemblie of wise and grave men in parlement; motion and request was made to the speaker, that he should reforme those abuses and disovered behaviours; who not onelie promised

fo to do, but also prated affiffance, abuile, and count fell for his doings therein, of fuch as were acquainted with the orders of the parlements in England. A boile of the Which was promised but of the orders of the parter house imprime ments bled in England thould in time be let forth in ted for 3reprint, which the faio gentleman bid, and prefented & land. bestolved the same among them in forme following.

the parlement holden at Westminster, Anno Do-mini 1571, & Elijabethe Reg. decimo terrio and the like vsed in hir maiesties realme of Ireland.

And here you must note, that what the kings and queenes of England do in their persons in England, the fame is done in Ireland by the lord deputie, and who in the like parlement robes and vnder the like cloth of effate representeth hir maiestie there in all things.

By whom and for what cause a parlement ought to be summoned and called.

He king, tho is Gods annointed, being the head and thiefe of the whole realme, and bpon whom the government and estates thereof do wholie and onelie de. pend, hath the power and authoritie to call and affemble his parlement, and therein to læke and alke the adulte, counfell, a affiliance of his whole realme, and without this his authoritie no parlement can propertie be fummoned or affembled. And the king. having this authoritie, ought not to fummon his parlement but for weightie and great causes, and in which he of necessitie ought to have the adule and counsell of all the estates of his realme, which be there and such like as followeth.

First for religion, forfound as by the lawes of God and this realine, the king nert and immediat. lie buder God is his deputie and vicar in earth, and the chiefest ruler within his realms and dominions: his office, function, and dutie is, above all things to læke and le that Bod be honozed in true religion and pertue, and that he and his people do both in profellion and life line according to the fame.

Alfo that all idolatries, falle religions, herefics, Chilines, errors, superstitions, t what soener is contracie to true religion, all disorders and abuses, els ther among the cleargie or laitie, be reformed, ordes red, and redreffed.

Also the afforance of the kings and quænes perfons, and of their children, their advancement & preferment in mariages, the chablithing of fuccellion, the suppession of traitors, the audiding or eschelo. ing of warres, the attempting or mouning of wars, the fubduing of rebels, and pacifieng of civill wars and commotions, the leuteng or having ante ato or substoic for the preservation of the king and publike effate : also the making and establishing of god and tholesome lawes, or the repealing and behaving of former lawes, as whose erecution may be hurtfull or preindicial to the estates of the prince or com, monwealth.

For these and such like causes, being of areat weight, charge and importance, the king (by the adutle of his councell) may call and fummon his high court of parlement, and by the authoritie therof citabliff and order fuch good lawes and orders as then thall be thought most expedient and necestarie.

P.J.

The order and maner how to fummon the parlement.

Tipe king ought to send out his wits of summons to all the estates of his realme, at least fortic dates before the beginning of the parlement; first to all his loods and barons, that is to wit, arch billiops, billiops, dukes, marquelles, earls, bicounts and barons; and cuerie of thefe must have a speciall wit. When to the clergie, and the wait of their fame to mons muft be addielled to enerie particular bilhop for the clergie of his diocette. All thefe writs which are for the clergie, the king alwaies fendeth to the archbilhops of Canturburie and Dorke, and by them they are lent and dispersed abroad to everie particus lar bithop within their feuerall provinces, and fo the bilhops give fummons to the clergie.

Lastlie, for the summoning of the commons, he fendeth his wait to the load warden of the five poats, for the election of the barons thereof, and to enerte 20 fenerall thiriffe for the choife and election of knights, citizens, and burgelles within his countie.

How and what persons ought to be chosen for the clergie, and of their

The bilhop aught boon the receipt of the wilt fent buto him for the fummoning of his clergie, forthwith to lummon and warne all beanes and 30 of the indentures, lealed by fuch as made choice of the archdeacons within his diocelle to appete in proper person at the parlement, buleffe they have some sufficient and reasonable cause of absence, in which case he may appere by his prodor, having a warrant or prorte for the fame.

Then must be also send the like summons to the deane and chapter of his cathedrall church, who Chall forthwith allemble their chapter, and make choice of fome one of themfelues to appere in their behalfe,

on oz pzorie.

He must also send out his summons to everie archdeaconrie and peculiar, requiring that the whole clergie do appere before him, his chancelloz or officer, at a certeine daie, time, and place: who being fo affembled, thall make choife and election of two men of the fato elergie to appeare for them, and thefe thall have their commission or provie for the same.

These proctors thus to be chosen ought to be grave. wife, and learned men, being professors either of die 50 uinitie of the eccletiasticall lawes; and that can, will, and be able to dispute in cause of controversie. conumcing of herefies, amealing of thilmes, and deuiling of god and godlie constitutions concerning

true religion and orders of the church.

Thefe proctors (thus elected) ought to have refonable allowances for their charges, according to the fate, qualitie, or condition of the person, as also are fped had to the time. The proctors of the beane and chapter are to be paid out of the ercheker of the car 60 thedaall church. The process of the clergie are to be paid of the clergie, among thom a collection is to be leuted for the fame, according to an old order bled a mong them.

How and what maner of knights, citizens, and burgesses ought to be chosen, and of their allowances.

He Chiriffe of everie countie, having received I his writs, ought forthwith to fend his precepts and fummons to the mators, bailiffes, and head officers of enerie citie, towne corporate, borough, and fuch places as have beine accustomed to fend burgestes within his countic, that they do chose ande. lect among themselves two citizens for everie citie, and two burgelies for enertic borough, according to their old custome and blage. And these head officers ought then to affemble themselves a the albermen and common councell of cueric citie o: towne, and to make choice among themselves of two able and fufficient men of everie citie or towne, to ferue for and in the faid parlement.

Likewife at the next countie daie to be holden in the faid countie after the receipt of this wait, the this riffe ought openlie in the court of his thire or coun, tie, betweene the houres of eight and nine of the fore, none, make proclamation; that euerie fræholder thall come into the court, and chose two sufficient men to be knights for the parlement; & then be muß cause the wait to be openlie a distinctlie read. There, bpon the faid freeholders, then and there prefent, ought to choic two unights accordinglie, but he himfelfe cannot give anie boice, neither be chofen.

These elections aforesaid so past and done, there ought to be feuerall indentures made between the Chiriffe the fresholders of the choice of the knights, and betweene the major and the head officers of ene rie particular citie & towne of the choise of their citizens & burgelles & of their names, & of their main perners and fuerties. Of these indentures, the one part being fealed by the Chiriffe, ought to be retur ned to the clerke of the parlement; and the other part knights, & luch as made choice of the citizens & bur. actes bnoer the fenerall common feales of their ch ties and townes, ought to remaine with the thiriffe. or rather with the parties to elected and cholen.

The charges of everie knight and citizen was wont to be a like, which was thirtiene Chillings and foure pence by the date: but now by the flatute it is but eight Chillings, that is, to everie knight and ever rte citizen foure Millings, and to everie burgelle the and this man thus cholen mult have their committe 40 old blage to have five thillings; but now it is but thice Chillings and foure pence limited by the statute, which allowance is to be given from the first date of their fournete towards the parlement, untill the last daie of their returne from thense. Pronided, that everie such person shall be allowed for so manie Daies as by fourneleng fir and twentie miles everie date in the winter, and thirtie miles in the fummer, he may come & returne to and from the parlement.

In choice of these knights, citizens, and burgelles, god regard is to be had that the lawes and cultoms of the realme be herein kept and observed: for none ought to be chosen, bulesse he be resiant and dwelf ling within the Chire, citie, or towns for which he is chosen. And he ought to be grave, wife, learned, skilfull, and of great experience in causes of policie, and of fuch audacitie as both can and will boldlie btter and speake his mind according to dutie, and as occasion thall ferue; for no man ought to be filent of dum in that house, but according to his talent he must and ought to speake in the furtherance of the

king and commonwealth.

And the knights also ought to be skilfall in mare tiall affaires, and therfore the words of the writs are that suchshould be chosen for knights as be cindi gladio: not bicause they thall come into the parle ment boufe in armour, or with their fwords : but ble cause they thould be such as have god experience and knowledge in feats of warre and martiall affaires, whereby they may in such cases give the king and reline god adulle and counsell. Likewife they ought to be laie men, and of good fame, honeffie, and credit, being not outlawed, ercommunicated, or perfured, or other wife infamous: for fuch persons ought not to have place or be admitted into the parlement house.

The degrees of the parlement.

In times past there were fir degrees or estates of the parlement, which everie of them had their feue, rall officers and ministers of attendance; but now the fame are reduced into foure degrees.

Thefirst is the king, who in his personage is a full and whole degree of himselse, and without whom no

thing can be done.

The fecond degree is of the loads of the clergie and of the tempozaltie, and are all called by the names 10

The third is of knights, citizens, and burgeffes, thele be called by the names of the communaltie.

The fourth is of the clergie, which are called by the name of connocation, thele persons have no voice in the parlement; neither can they do anie thing o ther than to intreat in causes of religion, which from them is to be commended to other chates.

> Of the places and houses of the parlement.

Sit licth in the king to assigne and appoint the Atime when the parlement thall begin, so that he gine at the leaft fortie dates fummons : fo likewife be mais name and appoint the place where it Hall be kept. But where soener it be kept, the old vlage and maner was, that all the thole degrees of the parle. ment fat togither in one house; and everte man that had there to speake, did it openlie before the king and his whole parlement. But here of dlo grow manie 30 inconveniences, and therfore to avoid the great confulions which are in such great allemblies, as also to cut off the occasions of displeasures which effiones dio happen, when a meane man speaking his conscience freite, either could not be heard, or fell into the displeasure of his betters; and for sundrie other great greefs, dio dinide this one houle into the e houles, that is to wit, the higher house, the lower house, and the connocation house.

In the first litteth the king, and his loods spirituall and temporall, called by the name of barons, and

this house is called the higher house.

The fecond is where the knights, citizens and burgelles do lit, and they be called by the name of commons, and this house is called the lower house.

The third is, where the prelats and the prodors of the cleargie, being called by the name of the cleargie, and this house is called the convocation house. Of everie of these houses, their orders and officers, we will breffie subnect and declare particular. lie in ozoer as followeth.

Of the higher house.

T He higher house (as is sato) is there the king and his barons do lit in parlement, there the king litteth highest, and the loads a barons beneath him, each man in his degree: the order is this. The bonte is much more in length than in breadth, and 60 the higher end thereof in the middle is the kings leat or throne hanged richlie with cloth of effate, and there the king litteth alwaies alone. On his right hand there is a long bench nert to the wall of the house, which reached not to farre op as the kings feat, and bpon this lit the archbilhops and bilhops, everte one in his begrie. On his left hand there are two like benches, byon the inner fit the bukes, marquelles, carles and vicounts. On the other, which is the him dermost a next to the wall, sit all the barons everie man in his degree. In the middle of the house, betwens the archbifhops feat and the dukes feat, fit. feth the speaker, who commonlie is lozd chancelloz, of keeper of the great feale of England, of the lood

thiefe inffice of England, as pleafeth the king, tho doth amount him: and he hath before him his two clerks litting at a table before them, bpon with the y do watte and late their bokes. In the middle rome beneath them fit the chiefe inflices and indges of the realme, the barons of the ercheker, the kings forges ants, and all luch as be of the kings learned councell, either in the common laives of the realme, or of the ecclefiafficall laws, and all thefe fit byon great woll facks, covered with red cloth.

At the lower end of all thefe feats is a barre or raile, betweene with the lower end of the house is a both rome feruing for the lower house, and for all futoes that thall have cause and occasion to repairs to the king or to the lords. Wis house as it is diffinct from the others, so there be distinct officers to the fame belonging and amerteining, which all be affige ned and appointed by the king, and all have allowans ces for their charges at the kings hands, of which of 20 ficers what they are, what is encric of their offices, and what allowances they have, shall be written in oeder bereafter.

Of the officers of the higher house, and first of the speaker, and of his office.

He chefelf officer of the higher house is the spear ker, tho is amointed by the king, and commons lie he is the load chanceloa og kæper of the great feale, or lord chefe tuffice of England, his office confifteth

in diverse points.

First, he must on the first date of the parlement make his oration in the higher house, before the hing, his loads and commons, and then and there des clare the causes thy the king bath summoned that parlement, erhorting and admiling everie man to do his office and butie, in fuch fort as maie be to the glos rie of God, honor of the bing, and benefit of the com,

Allo he mult make one other oration, but in wate of antwer to the speakers oration, when he is present

ted to the king.

Likewife he mult make the like on the last date of the parlement. And you thall binder trand, that book thefe three dates he frandeth on the right hand of the king nære to his feat, at a barre there appointed for him; but at all other times he litteth in the middle of the houle, as is before faid.

When he hath ended his oration byon the first day, he must give order but othe lower house in the kings behalfe, willing them to repaire buto their house, and there (according to their ancient orders and cu-

froms)make choice of their fpeaker.

All bils presented buto the higher house he must receive, which he half forthwith to beliver buts the clearks to be fafelie kept.

All bils he mult cause to be read twise before they be ingroffed, and being read this times he must put

the same to question.

If anie bill put to question do passe with their confent, then the same must be sent to the lower house, buleffe it came firft from thenle , and in that cale it must be kept until the end of the parlement.

If anie bill be denied, impagned, and clære ouer. theolone, the fame is no more to be thenfefwith re-

If any bill be put to question, tit be doubtfull the ther five is the greater, & giueth most voices; then he must cause the house to be divided, and then sudge of the bill according to the greater number.

If anie bill be buperfed, og requireth to be amens ded, he must chose a certeine number of that house, as he thall thinke god, and to them commit that bill to be reformed and amended.

If anie bill of mellage be to be fent to the lower house, it is his office to make choise of two of the hings learned councell there being to be the mellen.

gers thereof.

If any bill or melfage be fent from the lower house, he must come from his place to the bar, and there receine the fame; and being returned to his place, and euerie Granger og mellenger departed, he mult bil close the same to the loads.

Item, if anie diforder be committed or done in the house by anie lozo or other person, he ought with the adulle of the loads to reforme the fame : but if it be a mong the loads, and they will not be reformed, then

he must forthwith advertise the king.

Item, he ought at the beginning of the parlement, to call by name all the logos of the parlement, a like wife at other times as he feeth occasion, whose der faults ought to be recorded, they to paie their fines, unlesse they be dispensed withall by special licence from the king, or have some suff and reasonable cause 20 king: and there the one must read the bils which are of absence.

Item, be mult fe and caufe the clearks to make true entries & true records of all things done there, and to fee that the clearks do give and beliver the contes of all such bils there read, to such as demand for the same.

Item, he thall keepe the fecrets, caufe & command enerie man of ech degree in that house to do the like.

Also he ought not to go ante where, but the gentle, man sergeantought to attend von him, going be 30 signment. soc him with his mace, vollesse he the lozo han: Peougl celloz, for then he hath a forgeant of his owne.

Dis allowance that he bath is at the kings thar

gcs.

Also for everie privat bill that passeth and is enac. ted, he hath tempounds for his part.

Of the chancellor of the higher house.

The chancellog is the principall clearke of the The chancenor is the principul the here higher house, and his charge is safelie to here the records of the parlement, the acts which be pall.

All such tratutes as be enacted, he must send to the kings feuerall courts of records to be involled, as namelie the Chancerie, the Kings bench, the Common plæs, and the Ercheker.

All fuch ads as are to be impainted, he muft fend

to the printer.

All fuch privat acts as are not imprinted, if anie 50 man will have the same exemplified, he must trans mit the same to the lood chance" or to be ingrossed and fealed, and for the fame he to take the fees appointed and accustomed.

He hath for his allowance an ordinarie fix for

terme of life of the king.

Of the clearks of the parlement.

There be two clearks, the one named the clearke of the parlement, a the other named the clearke of the crowne. The clearke of the parlement his of fice is to lit before the lord speaker, and to read such bils presented as he chall be commanded.

He muft keepe true records, and true entries of

all things there done and to be entred.

If ante require a copie of anic bill there, he ought to give the same, receiving the oppinarie ses.

If anie bill after his ordinarie readings be to be ingroffed, he must do it.

The councell of the house he mate not disclose.

At the end of the parlement he must deliver bp buto the chancellog all the acts and records of that house, saving be may keepe a transumpt and a copie thereof to himselfe.

De hath his allowance of the king.

Also for energe privat bill which is enacted, he has thee vounos.

Also for everte bill whereof he glueth a copie, he hath for enerie ten lines a penie, according to the cultome,

The clearke of the crowne, his office is to luplie the place and rome of the clearke of the parlement in his absence, s hath in all things the like tharges and profits as the clearke ought to have.

De must give his attenbance to the higher boule from time to time, to what thall be intoined him.

All such acts as be not imprinted, if anie man will have them exemplified buder the brode feale, he must eremplifie them, and have for the fame his or dinarie fæs.

Thefetwoclearks, at the end of the parlement, duabt to be prefent in the house, and within the lower bar at a bood before them, their faces towards the pall both houses, and the other must read the consent or dilagreement of the king.

Of the sergeants or porters of the higher house.

Here is but one fergeant, which hath the charge 1 of keeping of the owies: for though there be di nerse dozes, yet the keepers thereof are at his ali

He ought to læ the houle be cleane a kept lwet. De ought not to lufter ante maner of person to be within the house, so long as the loads be there litting,

other than such as be of the learned councell, and of that house; and except also such as come in message from the lower house with bils or other wife, and er, cept also such as be sent for, and be admitted to have anie thing there to do.

Also he must attend and go alwaics with his mace before the speaker, unlesse he be lost chancellos, or keeper of the great feale: for then he hatha ferges ant of his owne.

He ought to kéepe lafelie luch palloners as be commanded to his ward, and to fetch or fend for fuch as be that be commanded to fetch.

This poster of lergeant hath (belides his ordinaris fee)a franding allowance for enerie date of the parle ment.

Also he hath for enerie privat bill which is enaded, fortie Willings.

Also he bath for everis prisoner committed to his ward, a certeine allowance for his fes.

Also he hath of everie baron or lord of that house, a certeine reward.

Of the lower house.

The lower house (as is said) is a place distinct I from the others, it is more of length than of breadth, it is made like a theater, having foure rowes of feates one aboue an other round about the fame . At the higher end in the middle of the lower row, is a feat made for the speaker, in which he ale waies litteth: before it is a table bord, at with litteth the clarke of the house, and therebpon laieth his bokes, and writeth his records. Apon the lower row on both lives the speaker, fit such personages as be of the kings privite councell, or of his chiefe of ficers; but as for anie other, none claimeth, nor can claime anie place; but litteth as he commeth, laving that on the right hand of the speaker, nert beneath the faid councels, the Londoners, and the citizens of Poske ow lit, and fo in order thould lit all the citie zens according tie. Without this bouse is one other,

in which the burder clearks do fit, as also such as be futors and attendant to that house. And when soener the house is divided boon anie bill, then the rome is voided; and the one part of the house commeth powne into this to be numbered .

The office of the speaker of the lower house.

The chiefe of principall officer of this house is the speaker, and is chosen by the whole house, 10 or the more part of them; he himselfe being one of the fame number, and a man for grauttie, wife-bome, experience, and learning, chosen to suplie that office, ouring the time of the parlement; and is to be presented to the king the third date following .

His office is to direct and guide that house in god order; and to fee the ordinances, blages, and cultoms of the fame to be firmelie kept and observed.

Withen he is presented unto the king, litting in his estate rotall in the parlement house for the purpose, he must then and there make his oration in commendation of the lawes and of the parlement; which bone, then he hath (in the name of the house of the commons) to make to the king the requeffs.

firft, that it maie please his maiestie to grant, that the commons affembled in the parlement, may have and intoic the ancient privileges, cultomes, and liberties, as in times pall have apperteined, and beine vied in that house.

Then, that cuerie one of that house maie have lie 30 bertie of speech, and frelie to btter, speake, and des clare his mind and opinion to anie bill or question to be proponed.

Alfo, that everte knight, citizen, and burgelle, and their feruants, mate have fræ comming and going to and from the fato parlement; as also during the faid time of parlement; that they, no; anie of their feruants og retinue to be arrefted, molefted, fued. imprisoned, or troubled by ante person or persons.

And lastlie, that if he or anie other of that come 4 panie, being fent or come to him of anie mellage, and do milfake himfelfe in dwing thereof; that his matestic will not take the advantage thereof, but grationlie pardon the fame.

He must have good regard, and see that the clearke do enter and make true records, and fafelie to keepe the same, and all such bils as be delivered into that

ner he else will, call the house by name, and record their defaults.

All bils, to be brought and to be presented into that house, he must receive a deliver to the clearke.

He ought to cause and command the clearke to reade the bils brought in, plainelie, and fentiblie; with done, he must breeflie recite and repeat the eff fed and meaning thereof.

Di the bils brought in he hath choice, which and when they that we read: onlette order by the whole 60 boule be taken in that behalfe.

Euerie bill muft haue theé readings, and affer the second reading he must cause the clearke to ingroffe the same, buleffe the same be rejected and day

If anie bill of medage be fent from the loods, he ought to cause the mostengers to being the same bus to him, and he to receive the same openlie; and they being departed and gone, he ought to disclose and open the fame to the house .

If when a bill is read, dinerle do rife at one instant to speake to the same, and it cannot be discerned who rose first; then shall he amount who shall speake: ne verthelesse, everie one thall have his course to speake if he lift.

If anie fpeake to a bill me be out of the matter, he thall put him in remembrance, and will him to come to the matter.

If anie bill be read their times, and eueric man have spoken his mind; then shall be aske the house whether the bill thall patte or not e fairing thus: As manie as will have this bill paste in maner & forme as bath beene read; faic 32ea: then the affirmatine part faic Pea. As manicas will not have this bill passe in maner and forme as bath beine read, saie Do. If byon this question the whole house, or the more part, do affirme and allow the bill: then the fame is to be fent to the higher house to the loos. But if the whole house, or the more part ow denie the bill; then the same is to be dashed out, and to be rejected: but if it be doubtfall byon gluing voices, whether five is the greater; then muit a division be made of the house, and the affirmatine part must arise and depart into the otter rome, which (by the fergeant) is voiced before hand of all persons that were there. And then the speaker must assigne two or foure to number them first which sit within, and then the other which be without, as they do come in, one by one: and as boon the triall the bill thall be allowed or disallowed by the greater number: so to be accepted as is before faid.

If boon this triall the number of either five be like , then the speaker thall give his boice, and that onelie in this point; for other wife he hath no voice.

Also if anie of the house do misbehaue himselfe, e breake the order of the houle: he hath to reforme, correct, and punish him, but pet with the adulle of the house.

If anie foren person do enter into that house, the affemblie thereof being fitting, or do by arrefting anie one person thereof, or by anie other meanes breake the liberties and privileges of that boule, he ought to lie him to be punithed .

Also during the time of the parlement, he ought to lequester himselfe from dealing or intermedling in ante publike or privat affaires, and bedicat and bend himselfe wholie to serue his office and function.

Also he ought not to resort to anie noble man, councello2.02 other person, to deale in ante of the parlement matters: but must and ought to have with him a competent number of some of that house, who mate be witneffes of his doings.

Also ouring the time of parlement, he ought to He mult on the first and third date, and when foe 50 have the lergeant of armes with his mace to go be fore bim .

Allo he hathlibertie to fend anie offendoz, either to lergeants ward, or to the tower, or to anie other prison at his choire, according to the qualitie and quantitie of the offense.

He hath allowance for his diet one hundred pounds of the king for everie fellions of parlement. Also he hath for everie privat bill patter both how

les, and enacted, five pounds. At the end, and on the last date of the parlement, he maketh his oration before the king in most humble maner, declaring the dutifull feruice and obedie

ence of the commons then assembled to his mater fie: as also most humblie praieng his pardon, if a nie hing have bene bone amille.

Of the clearke of the lower house.

Dere is onelie one clearke belonging to this I house, his office is to lit nert before the speaker at a table, upon which he writeth a laieth his bokes. He must make true entrie of the records and bils

of the house, as also of all the orders thereof. The bils amointed buto him by the speaker to be 39.fff. read.

The Chronicles of Ireland.

read : he must read opentie, plainelie, and sensiblie. The billes which are to be ingroffed, he muft do

ít. If anie of the house aske the fight of anie bill there, or of the boke of the orders of the house; he hath to beliver the same buto him.

If anie belire to have the copie of anie bill, he ought to give it him , receiving for his paines after ten lines a pennie.

without special licence.

He ought to have for everie privat bill palled and enacted, fortie thillings .

He hath allowed but him for his charges (of the king) for everie lections, ten pounds.

Of the sergeant or porter of the lower house.

Defergeant of this house is commonlie one of 20 the kings fergeants at armes, and is appointed to this office by the king . His office is to keepe the dozes of the house; and for the same he hath o thers under him, for he himselse kæpeth the doze of the inner house, there the commons sit, and seth the fame to be cleane.

Also he maie not suffer anie to enter into this house, during the time of the litting there; valelle he be one of the house, as be sent from the king as the losds, as otherwise licenced to come in.

Af anie such person do come, he ought to bring him in , going before him with his mace opon his Moulder .

If anie be committed to his ward, he ought to take tharge of him, and to keepe him in lafetie bu till he be required for him .

If he be fent for anie person, or to go in anie melfage, he must leave a substitute behind him, to do his office in his absence.

He must alwaies attend the speaker, and go ber 40 fore him , carteng his mace opon his Coulder .

His allowance (during the time of the parlement) is twelve pence the date of the kings charges.

Also he bath of enerie knight and citizen, two thillings fir pence; and of everte burgeffe, two thil

If anie be commanded to his ward, he hath of enerie such pationer, by the date, fir thillings and eight pence.

If anie privat bill do palle and be enacted, he hath 50 for everie fuch bill, twentie thillings.

Of the conuocation house.

He connocation house is the assemblie of the 1 thole clergie, at and in some peculiar place appointed for the purpole.

But as the barons and loods of the parlement have their house severall and distinct from the commons: even to the archbithops and bithops do fer 60 der and commandement to them given. queffer themselves, and have a house severall from the residue of the clergie. And this their house is called the higher connocation house, the other being named the lower convocation house . Both these boules have their leverall officers, orders, and blages; and each officer bath his peculiar charge and function; as also certeine allowances, even as is bled in the parlement boules of the locas and commons.

The archbishops and bishops do lit all at a table, and do discourse all such causes and matters as are brought in question before them, either of their owne motions, or from the higher court of parles ment, or from the lower house of connocation, or from anie prinat person. Querie archbishop and ho thop litteth & taketh place according to his effate and degree, which degrees are knowne by fuch degrees offices in the church as to everte of them is alligned: for one hath the personage of a priest, an other of a beacon, this is a subbeacon, he is a ferton, and fo footh, as such officers were wont to be in the church.

The bishops do not sit at forenous, but onelie at afternone, because they, being barons of the higher house of parlement, do resort and assemble themselves there at the forenones with the tempo, rall loads.

> The connocation house of the rest of the clergie do observe in a manner the like orders as the lower house of the commons on vie. For being allembled togither on the first date, with the bishops, areby them willed to make diffe of a speaker for them, thom they call the proliquutor: when they have tho. fen him, they do prefent him buto the bilhops : and he thus presented, maketh his oration, and dothall things as the speaker of the lower house for the commons both, as well for the ordering of the clergie t of the house, as for the order in litting, the order in speaking, the order of recording things done a mong them, and all other such like things.

Anothisis to be biderfood, that the wholecler gie can deale and intreat but onlie of matters of religion, and orders of the church, which their dwings 30 and conclutions can not bind the whole realme, but leffe they be confirmed by act of parlement : but yet fufficient to bind the thole clergie to the keping thereof; so that the king (who is the supreme governot of both estates) do consent and consirme the fame. And for formuch as by knowing the orders of the parlement house, you may also know the orders of both the connocation houses, which are like f cor respondent to the others: these shall suffice so, this matter.

Of extraordinarie persons which ought to be summoned to the parlement.

Belides the personages of the somer degrees, which ought to be summoned to the parlement: the king also must warne and summon all his councelloss both of the one law and of the other; and thele have their places onelie in the higher house, name lie the two cheefe inflices and their affociats of the kings bench and the common ples , the barons of the excheker, the fergeants, the attorneis, the follici to, the mailter of the rolles, and his fellows of the chancerie.

The offices of these personages are to give coun. cell to the king and parlement, in everie doubtfull cause according to the lawes.

Also if anie bill be concesued and made disorderlie, they ought to amend and reforme the fame, byon or

Also they must attend to come and go at the commandement of the king and parlement.

Also they may not speake not give adule, but then they be alked and put to quelion.

Also they have no voice in parlement, because they are commonlie councelloss to the fame.

They are all reteined at the kings charges. Likewise all officers of the parlement are to be fummoned, as namelie the chancellor of the parle ment, the clerks, the lergeants, the posters, and luch others, who like wife are reteined at the kings colls. Of their offices and charges it is alreadie particul

larlie declared,

Of the daies and houres to sit in parlement.

Al daies of the weeke are appointed, fauing and Acreepted the fundates and all principal fealls, as namelie the feath of Alhallowes daie, Chailmas, Caffer, Whitfuntide, and faint John the baptills daie, and also such other daies as the parlement by confent thall appoint and affigue.

The beginning is at eight of the clocke in the mos 10 ning, and both continue butill eleven of the clocke. They do not lit at afternones, for those times are

referred for committees and the convocation house. In the morning they beginne with the common praier and the letanie, which are openlie read in the

Of the king, his office and authoritie.

 $H^{
m Aning}$ declared of all the effates, begrees, and 20 perfonages of the parlement, it refleth now to fpeake also of the king, and of his office, who is all in all, the beginning and ending, and bpon whome ref. teth and dependeth the effect & lubstance of the whole parlement. For without him and his authoritie no. thing can be done, and with it all things take effect. Penerthelette, then he calleth & affembleth bis par. lement, there are fundite orders which of him are to be observed, and which he ought to see to be kept and erecuted; or elfe the parlement ceaseth to be a parles 30 ment, and taketh not his effect, of which orders thefe be the cheefe which do infue.

First, the king ought to send out his summons to all the effates of his realme, of a parlement, affigning and amointing the time, date, and place.

Allo his lummons mult be at the least fortie dates before the beginning of his parlement.

Also he must appoint and provide all such officers as ought to attend the parlement, who must be found at his charges.

Also the king ought not to make anie choise, 03 cause anie choise to be made of any knight, citizens, burgelles, proctors of the clergie, speaker of the com, mon house, or proloquutor of the connocation house : but they must be elected and chosen by the lawes, 03. ders, and cultorns of the realine, as they were wont and ought to be, and the kings good adulle yet not to be contemned.

Also the king ought to grant, permit, and allow to all and everie of the estates, and to everie parti: 50 cular man lawfullie elected, and come to the parlement, all and everie the ancient frædoms, piulles ges, immunities, and customs, during the parle, ment; as also during the times and dales, comming and going to and from the parlement: but pet the fame humblie to be requested of his highnesse by the speaker in his ozation at the beginning of the parle-

Also the king in person ought to be present in the parlement thee dates at the least, during the time of the parlement; that is to faie, the first daie, when the thole estates according to the summons make their appearance, which is called the first date of the parle, ment . On the fecond date, when the speaker of the common house is presented, which is counted the beginning of the parlement. And the third date, which is the last day, then the parlement is proroged or off folued: for upon these dates he must be present, but leffe in case of ficknes, or absence out of the realme, for in these cases the king may summon his parlement by commission, and the fame is of as godes. fea as if he were present in person: and as for anie other dates, he is at his choice and libertie to come oz not to come to the parlement.

Also the king ought to propone to the parlement house in writing all such things amatters of charge, as for which he calleth the faio parlement. And accordinglie as the same thall then by the consent of all effates be adulfed, concluded, and agreed : fo the king either hath to allow ordifallow the fame, for he can (of hunfelfe) neither adde not diminish anie bill; but accept the fame as it is presented but ohim from the effates of the parlement, or else altogisher reient it. Also the king as be both prefix and affigne the date

and time when the parlement thall begin; to also he must assigne & amoint the time when the same shall be proroged or distoluce : which ought not to be as long as anie matters of charge, weight, or importance be in question, and the same not becided no;

determined.

Of the dignitie, power, and authoritie of the parlement, and of the orders of the fame.

De parlement is the highest, chæfest, and greats 1 eff court that is or can be within the realme : for it confifteth of the whole realme, which is divided into the effates; that is to wit, the king, the nobles, and the commons, everie of which effates are lubied to all such orders as are concluded and established in parlement.

These the estates may fointlie and with one confent or agreement effablith and enact anie lawes,03. ders, and fratutes for the common wealth: but being divided, and one swarning from the other, they can do nothing. For the king, though he be the head, yet alone can not make anie law; nog pet the king and his loods onelie, not yet the king and his commons alone; neither yet can the loads and the commons without the king do anie thing of auaile. And yet neuerspeleste, if the king in due oader haue summoned all his toods and barons, and they will not come, or if they come they will not yet awerc; or if they come and appeare, yet will not do 02 yeld to any thing, then the king with the consent of his commons (who are represented by the knights, citizens, and burgedes) may oxocine and establish anie actor law, which are as good, lufficient, and effectuall, as if the loads had given their consents.

But of the contrarie, if the commons be fummoned and will not come, or comming will not appeare, or appering will not confent to do anie thing, alle, ging some fulf, weightie, and great cause; the king (in these cases) cannot with his loods denise, make, or effablith anie law, the reasons are these. When parlements were first begun tozdeined, there were no prelats or barons of the parlement, and the tempo. rall loods were verie few or none, and then the king and his commons did make a full parlement, which authozitie was hitherto neuer abzidged . Againe, e. uerie baron in parlement both reprefent but his ofme person, and speaketh in the behalfe of himselse

But in the knights, citizens, and burgelles are represented the commons of the whole realine; and enerie of these gineth not consent onlie for himselfe, but for all those also for thome he is sent . And the king with the confent of his commons had ever a fufficient and full authozitie to make, ozdeine, and e. Kablify god and wholesome lawes for the common, wealth of his realme. Therfore the lords being law, fullie fummoned, and yet refuling to come, fit, 03 confent in parlement, can not by their follie abzinge the king and the commons of their lawfull proces ding in parlement.

The loods and commons in times pall did lit all in one boule, but for the anothing of confusion they

be now divided into two fenerall houses, and pet ne, nertheleffe they are of like and equall authoritie, cue, rieperson of either of the said houses being named and counted a perc of the realme (for the time of the parlement) that is to faic, equall: for Par is equall. Anotherefore the opinion, confure, and judgement of a meane burgelle, is of as great quaile as is the best loads, no regard being had to the partie who speaketh, but the matter that is spoken.

They be also called piers, as it were fathers, for 10 Pier is a father, by which is meant that all such as be of the parlement thould be ancient, grave, wife, lerned, and expert men of the land : for fuch were the fer nators of Kome, and called Patres conferipti, for the wifedome and care that was in them in governing of the common-wealth. They are also called councelloss, because they are assembled and called to the parlement for their adule and god councell, in making and deniling of luch god orders and lawes as

may be for the commonwealth.

They therefore which make choile of knights, citizens and burgeffes, ought to be well adulted that they do elect and choic fuch as being to be of that alfemblie, and thereby equall with the great effates, thould be grave, ancient, wife, learned, expert and carefull men for their commonwealth, and who (as faithfull and truffie councelloss) should do that which Mould turne and be for the best commoditie of the commonwealth, other wife they do great inturie to their prince and commonwealth.

Also enerie person of the parlement, during the times of the parlement, and at his comming and go ing from the fame, is free from all troubles, arreffs and molestations : no action or fute taking effect which during that time is begun, entred, or commen. fed against him, in what court so ever the same be, ercept in causes of treason, murther, and fellonie, and ercept also erecutions in law, awarded and granted

before the beginning of the parlement.

Also everie person having voices in parlement, 40 hath free libertie of speach to speake his mind, opinia on, and judgement, to ante matter proponed ; or of himselfe to propone anie matter for the commods tie of the prince and of the commonwealth : but hauing once spoken to anie bill, be may speake no more for that time.

Allo euerie person once elected & chosen a knight, citizen or burgelle, and returned, cannot be dismilled out of that house; but being admitted, thall have his place and voice there, if he be a lateman. But if by erroura man of the cleargie be chosen, then he ought and thall be dismissed; also if he be ercommunicated, outlawed, or infamous.

Also everie one of these boules ought to be incorrupt, no bather no; taker of anie rewards, giffs, o; monte, either for deutling of ante bill, or for speaking of his mind; but to do all things byzightlie, and in fuch fort as best is for the king and commonwealth.

Also everie one ought to be of a quiet, honest and gentle behaufdur; none taunting, checking, 03 milu 60 fing an other in anie bulæmelie wozds oz dæds: but all affections fet apart, to do and indevour in wife. bome, sobrietie and knowledge, that which that place requireff.

Also if anie one do offend or misbehaue himselse. he is to be corrected and punished by the adule and order of the relidue of the house.

Also all the prisons, warrs, gattes, within the realme and the keepers of the same are at the commandement of the parlement, for the custodie and fafekæping og punishment of all and everie such palfoners, as Wall be fent to ante of them by the faid parlement houses, or anie of them: howbett most

commonlie the fower of London is the prison which

Also if anie one of the parlement house be ferued, fned, arreffed, og affached by ante writ, affachment, or minister of the laings bench, Common plas, Chancerie, 03 what court fo ever within this realmer the partie to troubled and making complaint there. of to the parlement house: then forth with a large, ant at armes is fent to the faio court, not onelie ab, nertifing, that the partie fo molected is one of the parlement house; but also inhibiting and command, ing the officers of the fato court to call in the faid procedle, and not to deale anie further against the faio partie: for the parlement being the hieft court, all other courts as inferior yello and give place to the fame.

Also as everie one of the parlement house is fræ for his owne person, for all manner of sutes to be commensed against him: so are also his scruants fre, and not to be troubled noz molested; but being 20 troubled, have the like remedie as the maiffer half or may haue.

Also no manner of person, being not one of the parlement house, ought to enter or come within the house, as long as the sitting is there, upon paine of impallonment, or luch other punishment as by the boule thall be ordered and adjudged.

Allo everie person of the parlement ought to keps fecret, and not to disclose the fecrets and things for ken and done in the parlement house, to anie manner of person, bulette he be one of the same house, by on paine to be fequeffred out of the boule, or other, wife punished, as by the order of the house thall be appointed.

Also none of the parlement house ought to depart from the parlement, without special leave obteined of the speaker of the house, and the same his licence

be also recorded.

Also no person, being not of the parlement house. ought to come into the fame, during the time of the fitting: lo euerie one comming into the same oweff a dutte and a reverence, to be given when he entreth and commeth in.

If a baron oz a lozo come ano enter into the high: er house, he ought to do his obelsance before the cloth of estate, and so to take his place.

Allo when he speaketh, he must stand bare headed, and speake his mind plainlie, sensiblie, & in decent ozder.

If ante come in medage or be lent for to the higher house, they must state at the inner doze untill they be called in, and then being entred, must first make their obeifance; which done, to go to the lower end of the house, and there to state butill they be called : and being called, they must first make one lowe courter fie and obelfance, and going forwards must in the middle wate make one other lowe courtesse, and then being come footh to the barre, must make the third courtelle; the like must be done at the depart

Allo when anie knight, citizen oz burgelle doch enter and come into the lower house, he must make his dutifull and humble obeifance at his entrie in: and then take his place. And you thall buder fand, that as euerie luch person ought to be grave, wife, and expert; lo ought he to thew himfelfe in his apar rell. Foz in time patt, none of the councellors of the parlement came otherwise than in his gowne, and not armed not girded with weapon. For the parle ment house is a place for wife, grave, and god men; to confult, debate, and adulle, bow to make lawes and orders for the commonwealth, and not to be are med as men readie to fight, or to trie matters by the swood. And albeit the watt for the election of the knights have expresse words to chose such for knights as be girded with the fwood: yet it is not meant thereby that they should come and sit armed, but be fuch as be fkilfull in feats of armes, and be fibes their good adulles can well ferue in martiall af faires . Anothus the Romane fenators bied , who being men of great knowledge and experience, as well in martiali affaires, as in politike caufes, fat al. maics in the fenat house and places of councell in their gownes and long robes. The like also was al maies and hath beine the order in the parlements of 1 this realme, as long as the ancient lawes, the olo customes, and good orders thereof were kept and ob-

Allo if anie other person of persons, either in mchage or being fent for, ow come: he ought to be brought in by the fergeant, and at the first entring must (following the fergeant) make one lowe obets fance, and being past in the middle waie, must make one other; and othen he is come before the speaker, he must make the third, and then do his medage; the like order he must kæpe in his returne. But if he do come alone, 02 with his learned councell, to plead a nie matter, oz to answer to anie obiection : he shall enter, and go no further than to the bar within the doze, and there to do his thee obeifances.

Alfo when anie bill is committed, the committés have not authoritie to conclude, but onelie to order, reforme, examine, and amend the thing committed buto them, and of their doings they must give repost to the house againe, by whome the bill is to be 30 confidered.

Allo eneris bill, which is brought into the house, must be read the severall times, and opon the fer uerall dates.

Also everie bill, which opon anie reading is come mitted and returned againe, ought to have his thee readings, bules the committées have not altered the bill in anie lubstance og forme, but onelie in certeine

ther by one consent rejected, or by voices after the third reading overthrown, it ought not to be brought anie moze to be read, during the fellions of parles

Also if anie man do speake buto a bill, and be out of his matter; he ought to be put in remembrance of the matter by the speaker onelie and by none o. ther, and be willed to come to the matter.

Also when soener anie person dooth speake to anie bill, he ought to frand bp, and to be bareheaded, and 50 then with all renerence, granitie, and femelie spech to declare his mind. But whenfoeuer anie bill thall be tried either for allowances, or to be rejected: then euerie one ought to lit, bicaule he is then as a ludge.

Also everie knight, citizen, and burgeste, before hedwenter into the parlement, and take his place there, ought to be Moorne and to take his oth, ac. knowledging the king to be the supreme and onelis governour of all the estates within this realme, as allo to renounce all forcen potentates.

The order of the beginning and ending of the parlement.

A the first date of the summons for the parle-ment, the king in proper person (valets he be ficke og ablent out of the realme) being apparelled in his rotall and parlement robes, ought to be conducted and brought by all his barons of the cleargie and lattie, and the commons summoned to the parle. ment, buto the church, where ought a fermon to be made by some archbishop, bishop, or some other famous learned man. The fermon ended, he must in like odder be brought to the higher house of parle, ment, and there to take his feat boder the cloth of effate: likewife enerie lood and baron (in his degræ) ought to take his place.

This done, the load chancelloa, or he whom the king spointeth to be the speaker of that house, maketh bis ozation to the thole allemblic, beclaring the caufes whie and wherefore that parlement is called and fummoned, erhosting and perfuading cuerie man to do his best indevour in all such matters as shall be o in the faid parlement proponed, as thall be most erpedient for the glorie of God, the honor of the king, and the commonwealth of the whole realme. Then he directeth his talke unto the knights, citizens, and burgelles, aductifing them that the kings pleafure is, that they do repaire to their house; and there ace cording to the old and ancient cultonie, do those and eled forme one, wife, grave, and learned man among themfelues to be fpeaker for them, and giveth them a saie when they hall prefent him to the king. And thefe things thus done, the king arifeth, and encrie man departeth. This is accounted for the first date of the parlement.

The fecond or third date after, when the speaker is to be prefented: the king with all his nobles (in like order as before) do affemble againe in the high, er house, and then come op all the commons of the lower house, and then and there do present their spear ker onto the king. The speaker forthwith maketh his dutifull obeifances; beginneth and maketh his ozation before the king, and profecuteth fuch matters as occasion servety, and as is before recited in the of. fice of the fpeaker; and this owne, everie man departeth. And this is accounted for the beginning of the parlement, for before the speaker be presented, and these things orderlie done, there can no bils be put

in,noz matters be intreated of.

Lafflie when all matters of weight be discussed, ended, and determined, the king commandeth an end to be made . And that date the king, his nobles, Also then anie bill opon anie reading is altogic 40 and commons do againe assemble in the higher boule in their robes, and in like order as is before recited, where the speaker maketh his oration, and is answered by the load chancellos or speaker of the higher house. Then all the bils concluded and past in both boules, that is to late, in the higher house of the lozos, and in the lower house of the commons, are there read by the titles: and then the king glueth his consent or villent to everie of them as he thinketh god. And when the titles of all the bils are read, the losd chancellos or losd speaker, by the kings commandement, pronounceth the parlement to be pro: roged or cleane diffolued. And this is called the last date of the end of the parlement, and enerie man is at libertie to depart homewards.

> The mondate following, fir Chiffopher Barne. well and his complices, having better confidered of themselves, were quiet and contented, and the parle ment begun with some troubles had his continue 60 ance and end with better fucceste. In the time of this parlement, and after the same, sundate grieuous complaints were exhibited to the lood deputie and councell by the late wife of the deceased baron of Dunboin, Pac Baian Arra, Dliner Fifzgiralo, fir William Dearell, and diverfe others the queenes god fubieds, against fir Comund Butler and his Commission betheen, for lundie routs and riots, spolles and out rers fent to rages which they were charged to have done byon bearethere. hir mateffies lubteas. Wherebpon firft letters and plaints made then commissioners were fent in to the counties of against the Bilkennie and Tipozarie for the hearing and rediels fing thereof : but they returned without dwing of as nie thing. Fog fir Comund, conceiuing fome hard dealings to be meant toward him by the load depu-

oThe noble= men agens ilemen iit Bounfter fent their mellengers to the pope.

The noble = men & gen: tiemen in Mounfter proclamed trattors.

Sr Peter Carewis comanded to ferue against the Witters. Cloughart: man taken.

Bir Deter Carew in banger to hauc beine killed.

Henrie Da: uels fent to biscover the enimie.

Bir Peter Carew and the English capteins giueth charge bels & hane the bictorie.

tie, and minding to Cand opon his defense and gard, did not appere before the faid commillioners, but both he and his brethren combined themselves with James Fitzmozis Ddelmond, Pac Artie Poze, Mac Donagh, and the fenefchall of Imobilie and o thers of Pounster, who before (and bulwitting the Butlers) had fent the blurped bilhops of Cathell and Emelie togither with the pongeli brother of the erle of Delmond buto the pope & to the king of Spaine, for reformation of the populh religion, t for freeing 10 the land from the possession of hir matestie; and of the imperial crowne. Which mater in the end brake out into an open and actuall rebellion, and the load deputie by proclamation published them all to be traitors, and against whom he prepared an hosting. But before the fame was fullie prepared, he fent his letters and commandement onto fir Peter Carew knight then being at Leighlin, to enter into the acti on of warres against fir Comund Butler, tho be. Palbie, capteine Basenet, and others, latelie sent buto him from the losd deputie, followed his commandement, and first assaulted the castell of Clough griman in the Dullogh belonging to fir Comund Butler, and twhe it, and gave the spoile buto the soul-

From thense they remoued to Kilkennie towne. there they late for a time, where a man of the earle of Damonds, espieng upon a certeine daie fir Peter Carely to be walking in the garden of the castell 3 of Bilkennie alone, he charged his pece, and leveled the fame unto the faid Peter Carew, and minded to have discharged it boon him out of a window in the castell. At which verie instant a chapleine of the fato earls & his feward, comming by him, & fulpeaing some euill thing towards, turned by the mouth of the pece, which there with was discharged, and so no bodie hurt; and binder flanding the thing was meant against fir Weter Carety, blamed the fellow, and for capteins laie at Kilkennie, it was advertised buto them, that a great companie of the rebels were incamped about them miles out of the towne, & were there marching in verie god order. Wherevpon fir Peter Carew, being then the generall, assembled ail the capteins, and taking their adule what was belt to be done, they concluded that Henrie Dauels a verie honest and a valiant English gentleman, tho had ferued long in that countrie, and was verie well acquainted, especiallie in those parts, for he had 50 maried his wife out of that towne, and him they fent out to discover the matter, tho about the miles off had the view, and espied a great companie of a bout two thousand, resting byon a little hill in the middle of a plaine, being all armed and marching in battell araie. When he returned with this report, then fir Peter Careto appointed the boward to capteine Gilbert, who togither with Benrie Dauels and twelve other persons of his companie galloped before the rest, and finding as it was before advertiled, gave the charge. The relidue of the companie 60 followed with the like half under fir Peter Carew, and then capteine Palbie, and capteine Balenet, feeing and affured that all things were clere behind them, followed to nære, that all the companie cuen as it were at one instant gave the like charge, where they flue foure hunozed Ballowglaffes at the least, belides others. The relique of the companie were fled into the mounteins fast by, and none oz fewescaped but the horsemen and Berns. And of hir maieffics fide no one man flaine, but a man of capteine Palbies was hurt.

Sir Peter Carely, having had and obteined this biaogie, and marching in good ogder, did returne with

all his companie to the towns of Kilkennie, energe capteine and fouldter carteng two Gallewgiaffes ares in his hand; but left the spoile to their follow, ers. Sir Comund Butler at this instant was not in the campe, but was at his uncles house at din ner. The townelmen of Bilkennie were verte forie for this the floughter of fo manie men. And pet no nerthelekonat long after, James Fitzmozis came Jame fin to this tolung, and belieged it; but the towne being mous well garonifed with certaine foldiers, they them get ha felues well appointed, bid fo carefullie and narowite loke to themselves, that they defended and kept the towne, not with Canding all his force. But pet the countrie and other small townes old not so cleape, for the countie of Waterford, and the lord Powie, the countie of Dublin, and all the countrie were spoiled, precied, and overrun; and among all others the old Fulco Duimerford a gentleman, of long folio On time feruant to thee earles of Demond, was robbed Hickory ing accompanied with capteine Gilbert, capteine 20 in his house at Callon of two thousand pounds, in his miles monie, plate, and houthold fruffe, belides his come and cattell. When they had taken their pleafare in this countrie, they went to the countie of Werford, which thing has not lightlie beene feene before, and at a faire kept then at Enelcoath, there the fouldiers a within committed most hourible outrages , lamentable face at en flaughters, filthie rapes, and deflourings of young kopth, women, abuling mens wines, spoiling the towne, a llaughtering of the men, and luch as did escape the o flword were carted captives apriloners. From hense they went into Offerie and into the quenes countie, I with and spoiled the countrie, burned townes and villa, comprade ges, murthered the people : and then they met with thetratisa the earle of Clancare, and James Fitzmozis D defmond, with whom they then combined; and agreed to cause Tirlough Lennough to procure in the Scots, they fent new mellengers to the pope, and to the king of Spaine. Finallie, nothing was left bndone, which might ante water tend to the lubuer a time thruit him out of the house. Whilest these 40 sion of hir maiesties imperial crowne of Ireland, and to discharge that land from all Englishmen and English governement, and by these means (the Englith pale and the goo cities & townes ercepted) the most part, if not the whole land, was imbrued \$ infected with this rebellion.

The earle of Dimond himfelfe, a man of great honour and nobilitie, was all this time in England: but from time to time was advertised of the trouble, some Cate in that land : and thereof no little bettle ment redounded to his loadship, by reason that a great and most part of all his loodhips throughout Church that land there incided and there should are there which his beautiful that that land were spoiled and wasted, which did not to lands spot much growuc him as the follies of his brethren. For great were his griefs, & verie much was he buquie. ted therewith: for when he bethought himselfe of his brethren, nature moued him, and reason persuaded Chipm him, that no fuch outragious parts could proceed train from them, which in anie wates thould either converted of manier water than the converted of the converted o cerne hir maiestie, or the dishonour of him and his bushin boule, which historic both house, which bither to bath beine alwaies found found and true. Therefore, when he beard of anic matter against them herein, he would plead their innocencies, and defend their caules, butill such time as by credible letters, aduertisements, and reports, he saw apparant matter and manifelt profes of the contrarie. Which reports albeit they græued him beris much, pet (as I faid) nothing greeued him moze, than their diflotaltie and breach of dutie against hir mai testie, and the disponour of his owne house. There of the fore to acquite himselfe and his dutie towards his owners. highnes: he offereth to ferue against them a others, rehister by the (wood, or by lome other means, to reconctant against reclaime them.

Wherebpon hir maiecile, Canding afficed of

The carle of Dimond are per:010.

Che carle re= ejo deputie.

Ebaund muteth him

his fivelitie, and having a frecfall trust in him , fent himouer into Ireland, who arrived at Werfood the foureteenth of August 1569, at that verie time when that wicked mallaker was committed and done at the faire at Innelcoath. Immediatlie opon his lanbing, he advertiseth buto the load deputie his comming, and with all convenient speed maketh his repaire unto him, thouhen was incamped and laie nære Limerike : and then and there offereth his fernice with all his best power, and brought with him 10 his brother Comund Butler, who in the open view and fight of the whole campe did yeld and submit himfelfe fimplie to hir maieffies mercie, confelling his follie and crauing pardon. And then was he velinered to the earle his brother boon his bonds, to bee forth comming before the faid lord beputie at his comming to Dublin: and also promised to do the like with his two other brothers, which he did upon the artenth of Daober 1569. At which time when they all appeared before the lord deputie and councell. they were charged with manie and fundzie things: but fir Comund Butler for himfelfe alledged , that others were the causers whie he did that which he did. And for himfelfe he alledged, firft that the load deputie dio not baoke noz like him, for he could have no fuffice at his hands , nor againft fir Peter Carely, tho claimed and had entered byon some part of his lands, noz vet against any other person. Then that the faid lord deputie had threatned him that he would lie in his fairts, and would pull downe his loftic lokes. 3 Thirdlie, that the faid lood deputie thould go about to kill all the Butlers in Ireland, and would then go into England, and there would domanie things.

When all these things were heard at full, and no. thing in profe falling out as was anouched, the three brethren were committed to ward into the callell of Dublin, out of which fir Comund elcaped, and made breach: neverthelesse the earle brought him againe. And opon the last of Februarie 1569 he brought al lo his two other brethren, for thome he had binder, 40 taken, and presented them before the lord deputie and councell, where the matter being heard at large, the councell conferred hereof among themsclues, and in the end they all the thie biethien were againe called before the lord deputte and councell, and then and there kneeling boon their knees, did confesse their follies, and submitted themselves in all dutifulnesse and simplicitie to the quiens mercie: where the earle not onlie naturallie as a brother made humble peti. tion for them: but gravelie as a father recited their 50 errozs, repromed them of their outrages, and counfelled them to their duties: and in the end conde fcen, ded in the due confideration of hir matesties rotall estate. And therebyon they were committed to safe képing within hir mateffies caffell of Dublin, at hir highnesse disposition; and not long after bpon bope of amendment were pardoned. But to the mat. ter againe.

The load deputie followed his first begun hosting, tho then be was incamped nære Clomnell, where it 60 was thought he thould have beene fought withall, he wrote to the major and his brethren of the citie of Wlaterford to fend onto him the affifiance of a few fouldiers onelie for thie daies; who did verie info dation louisiers onette to types somes, and answer by wate an ibritis of disputing their liberties with hir maiesties preroto the logo gatine, and so fent him no aid at all. Wherein the more they theired their affection to the rebels; the more was their ingratitude & diffoialtie to hir high, thelophde nelle, the released thereof they felt in the end. The camp at this time being within halfa mile of Clom, disclounced nell, the loss deputie before his dislogging from thindrie thense went into the towne, where the sourceigne solvathes was his hashour recoined him with all the honour and his brethren received him with all the honour

they could, and gave him a banket in their tolune. house, where, buto them a the whole multitude then prefent, he made a verie cloquent fpeach, teaching them the dutifulnelle and obedience of a lubicat, and the great inconvenience which groweth by the contrarie to all commonwealths, and cach member of the fame: and therefore lateng before them their prefent effate for example, oid moue and perfuade them to hold fall the dutie & obedience which they ouight to hir maiestie, and not to be dismaid at the dwings of the rebels and oilobedient: who though for a time they had their will and pleasure, yet God, in whose hand is the heart of the prince, and under whome all kings and princes do rule, bath beine alwaics, is, and will be, a fwift revenger against them for the same : even as of the contrarie he sendeth his mant. fold bleffings of peace, wealth and prosperitie to the obedient and butifull subject. And so having bled fundate and notable fentences and examples to this effect, he left them and returned to his campe.

And from thense he remoued and marched to. wards Calhell, which lieth in the countie of Timo. rarie, nere bnto which place Comund Butler had warded a castell: who when he saw the armie approthing, he fet all the out houses on fire, and vicuared themselves to befond the pile. The load deputie ta king the same as a defiance, approched therebuto and belieged it : and whilest the assault was in preparing, it was yelved by composition, and after restored to one Cantrell the owner thereof. From thenle by tourneies he marched and went to Corke, being met in the wate by the vicounties of Roch and Barrie. and by fir Coman Pac Teege : and being aduers tiled that fitzedmund seneschall of Imobillie, a principall rebell, and combined with James fitz mozis, had spoiled and preied the whole countrie, and had also warded and vittelled his castell of Ba. Baile martes lie marty2, which by his tenure he was of himselfe feneschals bound to mainteine and defend it, he marched this belieged and ther and laid liege to the same, and in the end toke it taken. full of vittels. But the fenelchall in the dead of the night fled out through a hole of the houle in a bog, Challescapeth and there escaped.

The spoile was given to the fouldiers, the castell castell with a gard of twentie men was giuen to Jafper Horlete, 4 to he returned to Corke, and from thenle he toke four neie to kilmellocke, and finding that place moff necestarie for a fort, he appointed and na. Dumfrete med Humfrete Bilbert hir maieffies fernant to be Bilbert made cozonell, and belives his owne band of an hundzed affoundter. boldemen be appointed foure hundled fotmen, and certeine hernes there to remaine. And there he bid knit and confoine buto him by oth, and buder god pleages, the vicounties of Roch and Dellis, with the logo Powze, the logo Courcie, fir Coman Hac Tege, fir Donogh Clancartie, and Barrie Dge, and the most part of the fræholders in the counties of Limerike and Cooke. And this done he passed by fourneles to Limerike, and from thense he went to Ballemaie, and there effablished a president and a councell, and placed fir Coward Fitton to be loid Sir Coward president, the earles of Thomand and Clauricard, fitton made and all the noble men a fepts of gentlemen of that prefident of prouince peloing to the fame.

Thense he marched to Athlon, taking in the wate the castell of Rosocomen, which he less with the ward of twentie hordemen, to Thomas le Strange, and then dismissed the armie; but himselse by sours neics traucked and came to Dublin, and there remained. Capteine Bilbert in the meane time, hauing a speciall respect and regard to his charge, his baliancie and courage was luch, and his good hap fo Giberts god inell answering his worthie and forward attempts, fernice. that he in Most time broke the hearts, and amalled

Cantcing

the courages of all the rebels in Mounster, and no rebell knowne left in effect, which dare to withfrand and make anie reliffance againft him. And to luch an obsticace he brought that countrie, that none bid or would refuse to come buto him, if he were sent for but by a hortle boy : for all yckloco onto him, some by putting in recognifances, a fome by gluing of pled. ges, and all in lething mercie and pardon.

And that proud earle of Clancare, which in his

alorie not long before viurped this name to be king 1

The earle of mitteth him=

of Mounster; enen he now, and Wac Donagh his teine Bilbert, thiefe follower, went to Limerike bnto him, and there falling boon their knées acknowledged their trefons, and most humblie defired hir maiesties pardon: and offered to put in his eldeft fonne, and the formes of his chiefest frecholders for pleages and hos The good fers frages. Likeholfe the prefident of Connagh in fuch mce of fir Co- wifedome, courage, & bpzightnelle, directed his go ward fitton uernement, that he was obeied of all the whole peo. losd president ple in that province, as well the nobilitie as the commons. The wicked he spareth not, but being found faultie either in open fellions, of by martiall inquilition, he causeth to be executed: and by these meanes having rio awaie the most notable offendoes and their follerers, the whole province refled in

The Cauenaghs, the ancient enimies to the Eng-

gliff government, and tho in the rebellion were

god quietnesse and in dutiful obedience to hir matelite and hir lawes.

The Canes naghs fub= millions.

Eurioah fhot through with two bultets.

confoined with the Butlers : these bordering bpon 3 the frontiers appointed to fir Peter Carew, were fo by him chaled and perfecuted, that finding no place of rest as quietnesse, he bath brought them to submit themselnes simplie to hir maiesties mercie, and have put in their pleages to abide such orders and conditions as thall be laid boon them . Turlogh Lennogh in Allter, being at supper with his now twife, aunt to the earle of Argile, was thot through the bodie with two pellets out of a caliner, by a fear fter of rimer of the Doniloghs. Wherebpon the 4 Scots whome he reteined were in a maze, and the countrie francing byon the election of a new capteine: bowbeit, he was in hope of recoverie. And thus after long troubles was the Cate of the whole realme recovered to quietnelle. Wher boon capteine Bilbert, when he had fetled Pounffer in outward apperance in a most perfect quietnesse, and brought it to good conformitie: he made his repaire to Dublin to the load deputie, where he advertised and re-

counted all his dwings at full.

And having matters of great importance in England, he delired licence to depart over : whome the fato deputie did not onelie most courteouslie receine; but also most thankefullte did accept his god feruice, and in some part of recompense, byon Newyeares date in the church at Drogheda, he did bestow voon him the order of knighthwo; which he well descrued, and at his departure gaue him lets ters of credit to hir highnelle, and to the lozds of the councell. And now by the wate, if without offense 60 there humblie opon his knees to aske pardon and a man maie, after the maner of Cambrenfis in his historie, and after the blage of noble governors and capteins in other realmes, who for the increase of vertue, and incouraging of wathie persons, do at tribute to fuch as do deferue well their due praifes & commendations, I hope it thall not be offentive to the reader, not impertinent to the historie, to let downe somewhat of much, what make be said of these two worthis personages, sir Peter Carew, and fir Humfrie Gilbert : both which were of one countrie and birth, borne in the countie of Denon, and of necre bloud, kinted, and confanguinitie.

Sir Humfreie Bilbert, he was a fecond brother, and borne of a great parentage, whose ancestors

came and descended from the earle of Comewall, a hundred man of a higher trature than of the common fort, a sumbre of completion cholerike; from his childhood of a be hashing rie pregnant wit and good disposition : his father died leaning him berte young, and he conceining foing great god thing to come of his towardnette, proutded some postion of living to mainteine and kepe him to fchole. And after his death, his mother, being no lette carefull of him , did cause him to be sent to o schole to Cton college: from thense, after he had profited in the elements & principall points of gram: mar, he was fent to Drford, & did there profper e increase verie well in learning and knowledge . And being (as his friends thought) berie well furnified, they would have put him to the ins of court . But an aunt of his, named mittres Batharine Athlete. tho was attendant to the quænes maiestie, affer that the faw the young gentleman, and had had some conference with him, the fell in fuch liking with him, that the preferred him onto hir maieffies fernice: and fuch was his countenance, forwardnesse, and behaviour, that hir materite had a speciali god liking of him; and verte oftentimes would family liarlie discourse and conferre with him in mate ters of learning. After a few yeares spent in the court, he passed over into Ireland, being commended by hir highnelle to ar Henrie Sioneie then lozo deputie: who gave him interteinement, and made him a capteine ouer an hundzed hozsemen: wherein he so well acquited himselfe, that he was also made cozonell of Mounster; and had appoint ted buto him, belides his owne band of one hundred horstemen, foure hundred fatemen, belides lud Beraldines as Thomas of Delmond, brother to the erle of Delmono had procured, topon his of of lotaltie and pleages had promiled his faithfull fernice.

And albeit he were but young of yeares, which might læme to hinder his credit: pet luch was his denout mind to ferue bir mateftie, and fo effectuallie to his great praise he followed the same; that with manie god gifts and excellent bertues he lo luplied euen as much as manie men of elder yeares a greater experience of o not commonlie atteine onto. For in service byon the enimie he was as valiant and couragious as no man moze; and fo god was his hap to answer the same: for he alwaies for the most part baunted the enimie, and appalled their courage; as did appere in the overtheologiven nece Bilken nie in the Butlers warres, when he with twelve persons gave the onset byon a thousand men, of which fir hundred were armed Ballowglaffes , tho then were overtheolone : and likewife in Pountier, The ballow which was altogither by in rebellion; and he colo negintar nell, did not onelle in martfall affaires thew him and the mine felfe most valiant; and in sport time reduced the bometings thole trope of the rebels, and the proudest of them firmular to obedience, having bnoer him but five hundred a Gibni. gainst fundzie thousands; and inforced that proud earle of Clancart to follow bim to Limerike, and mercie: but also, after that he had subdued and onercome them, did most oppightlie order and direct his governement, and with all indifferencie would heare, decide, a determine the complaints a griefs, and compound all the causes of everie luto? . Which was so rare a thing in one of his yeares, as karle was credible, had not elewitneffes and daille crpe rience proved and juffified the fame.

After that he had established peace and tranquilli tle in that countrie, he went to Dublin : there then he had recounted all his feruices, and the god fue celle thereof; and in that quiet fate he left the count trie, he defired leave to palle over into England, for and about certeine matters of great importance.

Gilbert Dub= bed knight.

Dzogheda.

Canteine

The belerips

which he had to follow, which he did obteine: as also in reward of his fernice, and for his good deferts he (as is before faid) was honozed and bubbed a knight; and with letters in his peacle and commendation to hir matelie, and the loods of the councell, he departed . Altone as he had prefented himfelfe before hir highnesse, hir good countenance and fauour, in refpea of his god feruice to hir maiestie was increas fed and doubled; and he specialite aboue all others magnified and well accepted. Pot long after, he 1 was maried to a young gentlewoman, and an inher ritrir: and thenletwith he gaue himlelfe to fludies perfeining to the frate of government, and to nauigations . He had an excellent and readie wit, and therewith a tong at libertie to otter what he thought. Which being adopned with learning and knowledge, he both did and could notablie discourse anie matter in question concerning either of thefe, as he made god profe thereof, as well in familiar conference with the noble, wife, and learned; as al 20 fo in the open attemblies of the parlements, both in England and in Ireland: in which he theired the great value of knowledge, wifebome, and learning which was in him, and the great zeale he had to the commonwelth of his countrie. De had a great des light in the Audie of colmographie, and especiallie in natigations; and finding out by his fludies, certeine nations and buknowne lands, which being found, might redound to the great benefit of his countrie : he made hir maiestie acquainted there, 30 with, and obteined of hir alicence to make a nauls gation, which he toke in hand. But before he could compatte the fame to effect, he was in a foule florme drowned at the feas. Onelie he of all his brethren had five sonnes and one daughter, children by their countenances giving a hope of a good towardnesse. And albeit he in person be deceased, yet in their bis fages, and in the memoriall of his great vertues, and a life well spent, he shall live in same immortall. impertinent, concerning this gentleman, and now to the historie.

Turlogh Lenough thinking to innade bpon the English pale, for the bending of the lord deputies force against him, he was repressed, and driven to kepe himselfe within his owne limits, and by that meanes brought to disperse his power: for being not able to pate and fatilite the Scots, the one was wearie of the other ; and his wife and he not agree of Ahomond revolteth from his due obedience, and becommeth a rebell : whome the earle of Demond so hardie pursued, that he draue him out of that land, and he fled into France, and from thense into England. For the discouerie of whose treasons and revellions to hir materite & to the loads of the councell, one Kafe Rockeleie chiefe inflice of Connaugh was fent into England, where after long fute made for his submission, he was sent backe into Ireland, there to receive according to his deferts : hir mai 60 iellies pleasure pet being such, that if he were not found culpable of treason against the fate, that he thould be spared from indgement of death.

This yere the quenes maielite, confidering the language that god service of Lucas Willon hir generall attorneie in Ireland, was upon the death of baron Bath made these baron of the ercheker there; a capteine Piers for his good fernice at Knockfergus was liberallie confidered and countenanced by hir maichtie. And likewife after manie motions, futes, and requells made to hir materite for a prefident and councel to be established in Mounster; and the same once beter. mined and appointed : but by the ficknesse and bnabilitie of fir John Pollard, amointed to be the prefix

dent, it was lingered and deferred, is now reulued and renewed: and fir John Perot knight was made bir John lozd president, and a councell of god assistants chosen, as also his diet houses, interteinment, and all other lood president things necessarie ordered, assigned, and appointed. of Mounster. This knight was borne in Penbrokelhire in South wales, and one of great revenues and worthin, valiant, and of great magnanimitie; and lo much the more meet to governe and tame to faithleffe and but rulie a people, as ouer whome he was now made ruler. They heard no loner of his comming, but as a fort of walps they fling out, and revolting from The rebelling their former feined obedience, became open rebelles of Mounter finine to their burt and publics.

and traitoes boder James Fitzmosts an archtraf, against the to, and as bogs they returne to their bomit, and as prelident. And here may you lie the nature and disposition of this wicked, effrenated, barbarous, and bufaith. The nature of full nation, the (as Cambrenfis waiteth of them) the Irthmen. they are a wicked and peruerle generation, confrant alwaies in that they be alwaies inconfrant, faithfull in that they be alwaies bufaithfull, and truffie in that they be alwaies trecherous and butruffie. They do nothing but imagin mildefe, thave no delite in anie god thing. They are alwaics working wicked nes against the god, and such as be quiet in the land. Their mouths are full of burighteoulnette, and their tongs fpeake nothing but curffednesse. Abeir fæt first to thed blod, their hands imbaued in the blod of innocents. The waies of peace they know not, & in the paths of righteoulnelle they walke not. Boo is not knowne in their land, neither is his name called rightlie opon among them . Their quene and lo. uereigne they obeie not, and hir government they allow not: but as much as in them lieth do relice hir imperiall estate, crowne, and dignitie. It was not much aboue a yeare past, that capteine Gilbert with the swood so persecuted them, and in suffice so executed them, that then they in all humblenette fub. Thus much without offense, and not altogither 40 mitted themselues, craved pardon, and swoze to be for ever true and obedient: which, to long as be maifrered and kept them buder, follong they performed ft; but the cat was no loner gone, but the mile were at plate; and he no foner departed from them, but forthwith they tkimed out, and call from themselves the obedience and dutifulnelle of true lubients. Foz such a perverse nature they are of, that they will be no longer honest and obedient, than that they cannot be luffered to be rebelles . Such is their Aubbornelle ing, they were opon a point to lunder. The earle 50 and prive, that with a continual feare it must be bitveled; and fuch is the hardnesse of their hearts, that with the rod it must be still chassiled and lubon. ed : for no longer feare, no longer obedience; and no

experience teacheth it to be true in these people. Foz

withdraw the fword, and forbeare correction, deale

with them in courteffe, and intreat them gentlie, if

they can take anie advantage, they will surelie thip

out; and as the dog to his bomit, and the fow to the

burt & puodle they will returne to their old and for

mer infolencie, rebellion, and difobedience. This is

to be meant of the Irithite and lanage people, who

the further they are from the prince and court, the

further from outie and obedience; the moze thep are

binder ibeit Dbifan gouernment, the leffe dutifull to

their narurall fourreigne and prince. But concern.

P. j.

longer than they be ruled with feweriffe, no longer will they be outiful and in subjection, but will be as they were before, falle, trucebreakers & traitorous. Being not much bnlike to Percurie called quicke filuer, thich let it by art be neuer fo much altered Thenature of and transpoled, yea and with fire consumed to alhes; quickelliner. pet let it but reff a tibile butouched nor medled with. it will returne againe to his owne nature, and be the same as it was at the first . And even so dailie

the English

Che carle of

The earle of demeth him out of the

LHI BDil:

134

ing the inhabitants in the English pale, and all ci. ties and towns, the contrarie (Goo be praifed) is date lie fæne.

thould have to do with a fort of netles, whose nature

ing hard cruthed togither, they will do no harme:e,

uen so he began with them . The swood and the law

Tuell, this worthie knight knowing that he

The gouerus John Perot. is. that being handled gentlie, they will ffing; but be-

Dis fernice

against the

rebeilen.

he made to be the foundation of his government, by the one he persecuted the rebell and disobedient, 1 and by the other he ruled and governed in fuffice and tudgement. Great troubles he had in both, but lit. tle he did prevaile in the latter, before he had over, come the first: and therefore minding to chastife the

rebelles, and to bying them to obedience, he follow, ed and chased them from place to place: in the bogs he pursued them, in the thickets he followed them, in the plaines he fought with them, and in their caltels and holds he belæged them, and would never fuffer them to be at rest and quietnesse, butill he had 20

tired and ivearied them out, and at length inforced Names Fitzmozis and his complices to come onto mens faith Billmalocke ontohim, and there simplie to submit himselfe, and byon his kness in the open sight of all the people to confesse his discialties, and in all hum-

ble manner to crave mercie and pardon. Whome though butill hir maiesties pleasure knowne he oto forbeare, pet the relique he spared not; but after their deferts he executed in infinit numbers. And having

the fields from these thomes, he entreth into the go. normement by order of law, and from place to place throughout all Dountter he travelleth and kepeth The civill go: his festions and courts, hearing everie mans com-

acrocment of plaints, and redresseth their græfes, and in thort time brought the same to such a quietnesse and peace. able effate, that thereas noman before could paffe through the countrie, but was in danger to be murdered and robbed, and no man durif to turne his cat, tell into the fields without watch, and to keepe them 40

in barnes in the night time : now everie man with a white flicke onelie in his hands, and with great treasures might and did travell suffhout feare or idanger where he would (as the writer hereof by tris all knew it to be true) and the white there did keepe

the blacke, and all the beaffs late continuallie in the fields, without anic fealing or preieng.

Pow when he had thus quieted this pronince, and fetled all things in good order, then he beginneth to reforme their maners in life and common convertage 50 tion and amadell, fuffering no glibes not like blages of the Irithrie to be vied among the men, nor the E. gyptiacall rolles byon womens heads to be worne. Whereat though the lavies and gentlewomen were formethat growned, yet they poloed: and giving the fame ouer , die weare hats after the English man ner. In this his feruice he had two verie god a no table affifiants, the one concerning the martiall af faires, and the other for his government by the course and order of the law. Concerning the affaires 60 to some for that countrie. For never man was more martiall George Bourchier elquier was toined with him in commission, and did him notable god feruice. he was the third sonne to John earle of Bath, whose ancestors were descended from out of the loines of kings, and men of great honog and nobilitie; and they were no more noble of bloud than valiant, wife and prudent in all their actions, both in the feruices of chivalricand matters of policies, and whereof the histories of England in mante places do make mention and report. And this gentleman, having some motion of the value and valiantnesse of his ancestors derived and descended upon him, was as fected and given to all feats of chivalrie, and especiallte to the fernice in the warres, wherein he promed

a verie god fouldioz, and an expert capteine, bedhas an horsteman, and as a foteman, both wild water he ferued, as the feruice and time required. If he fer ned byon fort, he was apparelled in the manner of a Rerne and a foot foulding, and was fo light of fot as no Kerne Awister: for he would pursue them in bogs, in thickets, in woos, in palles, and in freces was focuer; and never leave them, butill he did performe the charge and feruice committed unto him. If he were to ferue bpon his horfebacke, his vailie feruice can witnes lufficientlie how much, and how often he prevailed against the enimie, and amailed their courages, and with wome he would incounter if

be might by anie meanes.

PotivithCanding, as couragious and circum fpect as he was, that he would not be lightlie intrap, ped in the field, yet was he deceived in the house. How ped in the new, yet tous go to so boon a truce taken, binder the colour of a parlie, and boon a truce taken, Goog & he was invited to a larger, and little thinking that therein anie breach of the truce should be made, he went in pilone. to the castell thereas he was bidden. But in his be, ing there, he was taken pailoner, and handfalled, and so kept for a space; but yet not long after he was re-Mozed and fet at libertie. Concerning his other alle fant, his name was George Welfh borne in War Stogeth terford, and a gentleman of an ancient familie, he alaund was brought op in learning, and was a fludent in learning the innes of court at London, and prospered berte build well therein: and albeit his yeares were but young, thus rio the garden from these weds, and rated by 30 yethis knowledge, granitie, and finceritic counters nailed the fame with an overplus. In deciding of all matters he was byzight and inft, being not affector nated not knowne to be corrupted for anie mans pleasure. In indgement vpzight, in inflice seuere, and without respect of persons would minister what the law had prescribed; he spared neither partie, nor would be affected to anie; by which meanes be did maruellous much goo in that feruice, and hapie was that governor that had fo god a counsellor.

Immediatlie byon the placing of this governed ment in Pounker, fix Penrie Sidneie had libertie am find and licence to returne over into England, andre and not ceived hir materies letters dated the thirteenth of indian Desember one thousand fine hundled seventie and one, tin the thirtenth pære of hir maiesties reigne, for the placing of fir William Fitzwilliams to be loed deputte in his place. Which when he had done, hepatied oner the leas, and by tourneiss came to the court. De was verie honozablie received, and by hir highnesse well commended, there being fundzie no blemen and gentlemen of the court, which met him before he came to Whitehall, where hir maiestic then late, who (as time concenient ferued) did recount onto hir the woole estate in all things of the realme of Ireland, which hir maiestie liked berie

But this fir John Perot president of Pounsier continued fill in his office, and there remained for certeine yeares butill he was renoked, with was fit governour for that effrenated and hardnecked people than was he, not was that countrie ever in better estate for wealth, peace and obedience, than he in the time of his government oid reduce the fame buto. Hapie was that pronince, and hapie were those people, thich being eaten out, confumed and der uoured with caterpillers, he had brought and refor med to a most hapie, peaceable, and quiet estate; and he left it even in the same maner. Which if it had bæne continued by the like, to have followed him in the government, the fame would fo have continu cd: but the want of the one was in thost time the de cate of the other, and that reformed countrie brought to a most miserable estate, as by the consequence

James Fitz= fubmitteth hunfelle.

fir Tohn

The quietnes Mounster.

Str John Derots als Altants.

Gozge Bour: birth and

map appere.

Sit Milliam Fitzwilliams, haufing a special care mid respect to his charge and office, disposeth all things in the best order he could by the aduste of the councell, and finding the flate somewhat quict, saning Pounter, his care and ftudie was to to keepe and mainteine it. And he being a wife and a grave man, and of to great experience in that land, he das weth the plot of his government into certeine spes ciall points and articles. First, that the religion exponents stabilihed according to Gods holie word, should for williams have a free passage through the whole land, and by co beatter uerie man aswell of the clergie as of the lattie to be received, imbraced and followed. Then that the common peace and quietnesse throughout the thole land might and Choulo be conferued, and all occations of Ehe common the breach thereof, and of all mutinies and diulions to be cut off. Thirdlie, that hir maieffies great and ercelline charges to the confuming of hir treasure might be Mortened, and hir renenues well husbane 20 died and loked buto, according to hir fundate comgents to be mandements tofoze given. Lafflie, that the lawes and fustice might have their due course and be current throughout the whole land, and the sudges and officers thould byzightlie miniffer tuffice to each man according to his vefert, and that all the fouldt ers thould be kept in that discipline as to them ap-

perteineth.

barren in

Religion.

The fauing

These considerations and such like, being ordered and established with the consent and adulte of the 2 thole councell, and well liked of everie god fubica, bicause the same was grounded byon verte god reasons; pet it toke not that effect as it was meant and wiffed it Mould. For that wicked race of the I. rithite, in thom was no zeale in religion, and lette obevience to hir mateffie, and leaff care to live in an honest connertation and common focietie, but ale water watching the best oppositunitie and time to breake out into their wonted outrages, robberies, and revellions: these (I faie) in fundite places be: 40 gin to plate their pagents. The first was Bzian Packabir of Unocking in the countie of Cater. lough Cauenagh, tho voon certeine wrongs with he complained he had received by one Robert Browne of Malrenkam, he tyrannized oner the whole countrie, committed manie outrages, and spoiles, preied the countrie & burned sundrie towns. Likewise the gentlemen of the countie of Werford, and namelie fir Aicholas Deuereur knight, being greened with the death of Robert Browne, who was s his nemue, being his litters sonne, were as unquiet on their parts, and all role op in armour against Bian Pac kahir, and each one with all the forces they could make vio relift the other, so that all the thole countrie was thereby in a verie troublesome frate; and no end could be had before they had tried it with the fword. For the Werford men following their matters verie egarlie, and being in a great companie well amointed, they fought out Brian Pac labir, and gaue the onlet opon him; but he lo 60 watched the matter, and toke them at that aduantage; that although he and his companie were but finall in respect of the others, pet he game them the Aduction for and overtheory, and killed the most principall gentlemen of that thire about or aboue thirtie pers

the wertord Pallerlon.

Sian Mac

In this companie was an Englich gentleman, woalter was in great credit a office among them, and he in danger to have drunken of the same cup, was driven to leave by on horsebacke behind and ther man, and fo escaped, or else he had never beene leneschall of that province. After this fight, though the gruoge were not forgotten nor a revenge onlonght, yet by little and little it qualled. About two

peares after, Bitan Pac Bahir made humble futes Bitan Dae to the logo deputie for his pardon, and submitted submitted, himfelfe to his losofhips ocuotion confesting in waiting his fowle vilozders and outrages; and pet firms lie anouthing that the quarell did not begin by him nor by his meanes: his fubmillion was luch and in to humble fort, as that he obtained the fame. And according to his promife then made, he did thenfeforth ble and behaue himfelfe moft butifullie, and lived in a berie god oeber. This Beian was a Cauenaugh, Buan Asse and the some of Charels, the some of Arthur, which hahr what Arthur was by king Genrie the eight made a baron for terme of his life: for he was a man of great power within the counties of Werford & Cathers lough. And this Batan Dac Habir Bac Arthur was a younger fonne to Charels, but the chiefest for valiantnelle magnanimitie and wifedome; and none of all the fept of the Cauchaughs, though they were manie and valiant men, to be compared onto him euerie waie, and onto whom they all would give

place. Pow he being aftured of them, and also being as The trength lied by marriage unto Powen Pac Shane, those kahir. daughter he married, he was also affored of the De birnes and of the Omeroughs, & lo a man of great Arength and abilitie. He became in the end to be a Bzian Dac follower unto fir Peter Carew, with whom he ne: Kabir is a fols ner brake his promife, but food him in great fied lower to fir afwell in matters of counsell, as of ante fernice to rew. be done in those parts. A man (which is rare among thefe people) berie conflant of his word, and fo faith fullie he ferued, and fo much he honoured fir Peter Careto, that after his beath, being as one mained. he confumed and pinco awaie, and died in peace.

The Omoges, notwithstanding the earle of Bill, Che Omoges dare was waged by hir maiestic to persecute and chaffife them, yet without ante reliffance of impech ment they rage and outrage in all traitozous manner and rebellious discipers. They inuaded the Onglith pale, spotled and burned fundite townes and villages, and carried the preies and pillage with them without anig reliffance. The thole prouince 311 Connagh of Connagh was altogither in aquali rebellion by in aquali resthe earle Clauricard formed and then for their air bellion. the earle Clanricard formes, and they for their ato had called & waged a thousand Scots. And though they and the Trifficie were of viverle nations, pet of one and of the fame dispositions and conditions, being altogither given to all finne and wickednes, and their harts were altogither imbaued in bloud and murther. The earle himselfe was at this time fembling of pissoner in the cassell of Dublin for the same revole the earle of lion, who hearing of the outrages of his fonnes, Clansicard. made fute to the loso deputie, that if he might be fet at libertie, he would undertake to bring in his fons, and to quitt the countrie.

The losd deputie, destring nothing more than peace, after fundate conferences had with him, did by the adulte of the councell inlarge him, in an affured hope that he would effectuallie performe in deed that he had promifed in word . But he came no for ner home among his people, and had conferred with his formes, but he forgat his promife and performed nothing at all. Likewile the Donners and the D, Che Dichons nothing at all. Linewite the Authorites and the moors, accompanied with a rable of like rebels, fall Dusges te into open tebellion, spoile the countrie, or noure the bell people, and make all walt and defolate. Tirlough Lenough in Allifer was readie to renoit, but that he food in doubt of the earle of Effer, who lieng upon the fines and marches in Allfer, was not onelie in readinelle to have bearded him: but also he had let Dooneile in open warres againft him. Pounffer was likewife in open rebellion . But fir John Des rot then prefivent to coursed and followed them, that notivitifanding a great combination and league

mas

A. (j.

The Diffrefs fed mind of the load bes putie.

in Connagh and Leinfter, pet he kept them alunder and to tharpelie purfued James, that he left him no one place to reft in, not anie followers to follow him. Belides these bniverfall troubles, which were fudicient to have apalled the best and wifest gover, nour, these three things increased his griefe and sop row. First the loss of a most faithfull councellog and The death of one of his chiefelf and truftielf allifants bodo; Wes boator welfon fron then load chancelloa, whom it pleased Bod to call to all men. And as was his life to was his death, 20 ers and erhoztations.

> pointed a generall communion to be had of his bouthold and friends in his chamber, buto which all the councell came and were partakers. And then erhoztation to the councell, perfusoing them to be bertuous and zelous in Gods true religion : then to be mindfull of their duties to hir maiestie, and lafflie remembring their callings and effate, and the and committed buto them, that they would be ball ant, carefull, and studious to performe the same, as benefit to the whole realme. Which points he hand. their teares to trill, and their hearts to be heavie. After this done he bid them fareigell, and not long after he being feruent in his praiers, he died most godlie, bertuoullie, and chaiffian like.

The third was the renocation of the earle of Ol tion of the erle fer, who had taken boon him to recover the whole province of Aller to obedience, with hir maielies aid. And he having with great charges brought the fame to a great likelihod and towardnesse, the armie was calhed, and he dismissed and discharged, and the enterprise distolued. These with lundre other acci. dents of the like nature, were sufficient to have Swallowed by anie man in the gulfe of despaire, had not the lord God loked byon him, and hir matelite most gratiouslie pondered his manie & sundzie most humble requells for his renocation, which hir high Sir william nes by hir letters buto him granted; and immediate

Fitzwilliams lie wherebpon be(after foure yeares painfull feruice)

The renocas

of @ffer.

The earle of

breaketh

prilon,

was betweene James Kitzmozis and all the revels lord chancels out of this milerable life, a man in his life time molt godlie, byzight and vertuous, and luch a one as that place was not possessed of the like in manie currents of yeares, in his life most vertuous and god. lie, in matters of councell most sound and perfect, in fustice most opzight and oncorrupted, in hospita. litie verie bountious and liberall, and in manners and connerfation most courteous and gentle, faith full to his prince, firme to his friend, and courteous tho a little before the same called his houshold, and gave them such godlie instructions, as to their callings apperteined. Then he fet his private things in oaver, and he spent all the time that he had in paats

> At last, fæling a declination towards, he apthese godie actions finished, he gave a most godie 30 great charge of the government lato opon them might be to the glozie of God, honoz to the quene, & led fo godlie, learnedlie & effectuallie, that he made 4

The next was the breach of the earle of Delmond, tho was applioner in the castell of Dublin, and he bauing given his faith and oth to be a true priloner. and to thew himfelfe a dutifull fubica, did yet make hisescape: which being done in so troublesome a time, it was doubted berie much what would infue thereof. Wherefore not onelie in that land, but in England alfo, hir maiestie bpon knowledge did cause musters to be made in all the parts opon and towards the fouth and well parties, and men to be in readinesse to be transported, if anie occasion by his escape thould hamen to follow. For it was greatlie doubted what would follow of that his breach, fauing that the prelident in Mounster was thought to be fufficientlie prepared and furnished against him, if he did or would attempt ante disorder that wate.

imponerished, laning the Pewzie, which lie Picholas Bagnoll knight marthall did inhabit, and the Glins and Routs with Serlo Bote with the Scots polleli fed, and Killultagh. Pow in all that toznete few came to submit them Celues, Cauing Pac Pahon, and Pac Gwier, & Tir. 60 lough Lenough, who first fent his wife; and the being a woman verie well spoken, of great modestie, nur ture, parentage, and disposition, and aunt to the then earle of Argile, was verte velirous to have hir bul band to live like a god fubiect, and to be nobilitated. Tirlough himselfe followed verie thoatlie after his tutfe, & came before the lord deputie without pledge, promise or hostage, and simplie a without anie con-Ditton bid lubmit himlelfe in all humblenelle and re. Citian uerence to his lozoffity, making the like futes as his muchon toffe before his comming her wife before his comming had motioned but his mallhamin loadhip, referring himfelfe nevertheleffe to be oabe red and directed by his loadthip in all things. And af ter that he had fpent two dates, bling himfelfe in all the time of his abode in all outifulnelle, subjection,

was disharged of his office, & returned into Eng. dishard land. Panie god & notable things were done in the the application. time of this mans deputation worthie to be remem bred, and for ever to be chronicled. But forfomuch as the records and presidents of the same cannot be bad, and the imprinter cannot fale his impression a nie longer time, the same with patience must be borne withall, brill a better opportunitie thall ferue as well for it, as for the commendation of this hono. rable ancient gentleman, who bath deferued well and honourablie of his prince and countrie for his fernice and government. After that this man was cleane dilcharged, the fwood and office was deline birthm red unto fir Henrie Sioneie, who now the third time Sidenting entred into the government of this curfed land, and disputely arrived at the Skirries the twelfe of September thinds. 1575, who at his comming found the infection of the plague fo generallie dispersed, and especiallie in the Plague to generative supervised in a place there Chapter to lettle himselfe without danger of insection. And greating even as this plague reigned, to the old rebellious English minds of the northerne Aliferians brake out. for he was no foner knowne to be entred into the land. but for a bien benen to welcome him into the coun, trie, Serlo Boie with his companie came to knock butok fergus, there to make prete of the towne, & so prond. affailth lie affailed the fame, that he flue a capteine named knoching Baker, and his lieutenant, with fortie of his fouldi ers, belides diverle of the townsmen, of whome some were burt, some maimed, and some saine; and vet ne nerthelesse by the valour & courage of the rest of the fouldiers and townsmen, the prete was rescued, and

the Scots perforce briuen awaie.

The losd deputie, confidering with himselfe that

of fuch beginnings enill would be the events and fer quels thereof, if the same were not out of hand pre-

uented; and knowing also by his owne experience,

how perillous delaies be in fuch cases, thought it be-

rie necestarie and erpedient (according to the old fate

eng Principys obstasero medicina paratur, oc) forthwith to withfrand the fame. And therefore by the adule of

fo manie of hir maieffies privie councell, as could in

that quelle time be allembled, he toke order for the fafe keeping of the English pale, and committed the custovie thereof in his absence, to certeine gentles men of best account and wifedome, to lethe fame to be kept and quieted. And he himselfe in his owne person, taking with him hir maiesties armie, with was then about fir hundred horsemen and formen, and accompanied with fuch gentlemen and councel. The look loss as be had amointed for that feruice, toke his putting formers tourneie towards Aller. And as he palled, he found to aller. the whole countrie throughout wasted, spotled, and

mid reverence, dio in like maner take his leave, and returned to his otone home. And as for Donell load of Directed, and Pac Swier load of Farmanaugh, albeit they came not in persons, yet they wrote their most humble letters of submission, and offered all sudvents and services, as to them apperfeined to peld, making request that they might onelie serue under hir highnesse, and be discharged from the er. actions of all others.

After that the lood beputie had performed this I Celoaniete Autre mat we 1030 deputie had performed this fournete, and was returned to Dublin, then he made the like fournetes towards the other parts of the land. And beginning in Leinster, he found the whole countie of Milbare, and the baronie of Carberie, er. treamelie impowerithed by the Dmeries, both in the time of the late rebellion, and also fince, when thep were under protection. The kings and queenes counties were all spotled & wasted by the Donners and the Omoges, the old natine inhabiters of the fame, and of them Rosie Dg had gotten the polletion and 2 the fetting of himfelfe in fundaie lands there, thether the tenants will of no, and as a prince occupieth with open that he liffeth, and wasfeth what he will. Denertheometal left, upon the word of the earle of Demond, he came and a to the lood deputie at his being in Kilkennie; and in the cathedrall thurch there he submitted himselfe: and in outward amearance repented his former faults, and promifed amendment : but how well he hept and performed it, his rebellions in the yeare following can witneffe.

The losd deputie at his comming to kilkennie was received by the townsmen in all the best maner eintertes they could, and the earle of Dymond himfelfe feathed obnewell and intreated him most honourablie, and had great care that his lozofhip and all his traine fould not want anie thing. At this towne the two coulins and kinimen of fir Peter Carew late deceaffed, that is, Peter Carew, and George Carew, and the gentles man who hav beene his agent in all his causes with in that land, came before the lord deputie, and there communicated with his loodhip the fate of the deceased knight, and of his countrie; submitted the fame to his order and direction, as also made humble fute buto his loadiffip for his prefence at the funerals at Materford, where it was appointed he hould be buried. Those loodship as upon the first newes of this knights death, to now also byon the new recitall thereof, maruelloullie lamented and bewailed the lotte of to worthie a knight, and the want of to wife and faithfull an affiffant and councelloz. And then he twke oper therein, thewing most honourablie not onelie the offices of a faithfull and good friend to the dead; but also the like god will to the two young gentlemen, of which one was then his heire, and to inioy his baronie. And according as things were determined, the coaps was remoned from Rolle where he died, and carted to Waterford against his comming Convoled at thither, where it was buried in verie honourable mas hand at was not to the biffering for for nothing flore the control of the biffering for for nothing flore the biffering for for nothing flore their files of the biffering for for nothing flore their files of the biffering for for nothing flore their files of the biffering for for nothing flore their files of the biffering for for the biffering for for the biffering for nent to the historie to let downe some short discourse 60 of this most worthte gentleman and of his life.

Sir Peter Careto was descended of noble and high parentage, whole first ancestor was named Pontgomerete, and in the time of king Henrie the fecond hemaried the ladie Elisabeth daughter to Roeffus wince of Southwales, by which mariage he was advanced to honour, and made baron of the ca. fell of Careto, thereof his posteritie in time twhe their farnames, being called Caretos. And some of them patting into Ireland old grow to be mightie men, and of great hono; and pollettions in that land, being marquelles of Cooke, barons of Piozon and Lernew lords of Walton, and inheritors to fundate great loodhips and leignlosies in that land . And

likewife in England they were men of great crebit, feruice, and honour, and by waie of mariages matched and combined with honourable and areat houles.

This forefaid fir Peter, tho was lineallie befren. Dis flature. bed from them , was of flature meane , but berie fronglie and well compaded; of complexion choles rike, from his childhoo upwares bent and given to an honest disposition, and in his tender yeares he for, his disposico. o ned bider, and was page to the prince of Dringe beyond the feas, and by that means had the greater delight ; Mill in martiall affaires, wherein he had his fhilland god knowledge, as did well awcore in the manifold fernice in the feruices he did binder king Henrie the eight, king Coward the firt, and quene Clifabeth, in fundite places beyond as also on this side the leas. We was in his ponger years a great traveller, and had beene his travels. at Constantinople in the Turkes court, at Ulienna in the emperours palace, at Menice, and in the o French kings court, and in the houles of the molf of all driffian princes; in everte of which places he left some tokens of his value. He was blessed of God with manie fingular googiffs, as well of the mind as of the bodie, being vertuoullie disposed euen from his berle infancie, fincere in religion (and for tibich His religion. he was partite an eriled man in the Marian daies) butifull to his prince, and faithfull to his countrie, bp right in iuffice, politike in gouernement, and baliant in armes, fkilfull in the Italian and French tongs, wistearning. o and a great fludent in such bokes as those twngs did yeeld; and by that means fome knowledge toined with his pregnancie of wit, he would discourse verie Substantiallie in anie matter concerning policie 02 religion, peace or warres, good to enerie man, burt, Bis contions full to no man ; bountifull & liberall, abborring coue. toufnelle and whordome: a great houlekeper, and of great hospitalitie. And if anie fault were in him, it was rather of to much spending, than in reasonable was rather of to much ipenoing, wan in real name. His anger fauing; be would be some warme, but without gall, without mas and against his enimie most stout and valiant : fir lice. nallie fuch was his upright dealing , honeft conner, fation, and zeale to the commonwealth, as no man Diszeale. mas more honoured, nor butuerfallie beloued than

When he had spent the greater part of his age, he his title to bethought himfelfe bpon fuch lands as his anceffors Treland. had in Freland, and thich in right bid bescend buto him: and finding his title to be goo, he acquainted hir highnette therewith; and obteined hir favour and god will to palle ouer into Freland, to follow Be reconereth the recouerte thereof. Which he did, and made luch some part of god profes of his title, as well by records as by ent, his lands in dences, that he recouered to much as he did then put Ireland. in lute, namelie the loodhip of Patton, of which he had beine dispossessed of about leaven score yeares, which he devarted with unto fir Christopher Chiners knight, then tenant to the fame, and the baronie of Hidzon then in the postestion of the Tauenaughs, the ancient enimies of the English gonernment, and the had expelled his ancestors about two hund his good began died peares past. But being put once in possession, ling with his he dealt in such god order with them, and so honous tenants. rablie bleo himfelfe, that they all boluntarilie pelded by their lands, and submitted themselves to his deuotion; and finding him to be a verie tare man in manie and fundzie respects, as of the like they had not heard not knowne, they much reloffed of him, and counted themfelues hapie and bleffed to be bre per his government. At his first comming he refumed the whole baronie into his owife hands, and thereof he gane fome pieces in fre hold, to luch gen. tlemen as he thought good; and for the relique enerie of them that he had before, he toke it againe bnoer withing by leafe. De dinived the baronie into cer-

Digqualiticg.

th, birth and dis delet ne. Biron of

Pis houleké = ping ano hof-pitalitic.

teine manoes and loedthips, and in everie one he did creat a court baron, and there all matters in variance betweene them were ended and determined after the English maner, according to fustice & truth. He would not fuffer anie wong to be done buto them, neither would be beare with anie of them dwing wrong. Their complaints he would heare, and with indifferencie he would determine them: he dwelled among them, and kept a verieliberall and a bountifull house, and such hospitalitie as had not beene to 10 advertise him throughlie of his whole inheritance; fore knowne among them; and for which he was marrelloudie beloued, and his fame (pred through, out that land.

He kept continuallie of his owne privat familie, abone of nece a hundred persons in house, he had al. wates in readinelle fortie hordemen well appointed, besides formen, & commonlie one hundred Berns, and all that his countrie at commandement; by which meanes he chaled and purlued luch as late bp, on the frontiers of his countrie, that they if anie had 2 offended, would come and fabmit themselves simplie to his mercie: & the residue willing to serve him at all needs. If anic noble man or others did palle by his house, there he first flated and was interfelned according to his calling, for his cellar doze was neuer thut, this butterie alwaies open, to all commers of anie credit. If anie garrilon either came to allit and attend him, or palled through his countrie, he gave them interteinment, and vittelled them at his owne charges, and paied readie monte both for 2 it, and for all things taken of the countrie; for with, out present paiment he would have nothing : which was a rare thing and not heard of in that land . And as concerning hir maiesties service, it was so ho. nourable for hir highreste, and so profitable to the countrie, and accomplished with such a disposition and a good will, as all and everie the governours in his time thought themselves hapite to be allised with such a man. In matters of counsell he was berie grave and confiderate, in matters of policie bes rie wife and circumfpect, and in martiall affaires verie valiant and noble jand in all of great know. ledge and experience: in everie of which (as occasion ferued) his feruice was readie and at commande ment, folong as his above was in that land.

Dis fernice in the Irifh

Readie pai=

ment foz

allthings

In the Butlers warres, bpon commandement from the deputie, he did firit ferue at Cloghgreman, a castell of fir Comund Butlers, where being accompanied with capteine Bilbert , capteine Palbeie and capteine Balnet, and Benrie Dauels, and 50 their bands, affaulted the castell, toke it, and gave the preie to the fouldiers. Then they went to kilkennie where they issued out and made a fallie byon the thole armie of fir Comund Butler : thich being as bout the miles from the towne, gave them the o nertheolo, and put all the Balloluglattes and the reft to the fword, fauing the horffemen and kernes which fled into the woods: and then meeting the load depur tie, attended him in the whole cournete and scruice of the faid warres butill the fame was ended. In which he affilted the faid deputie with his faithfull aduice and councell, and with all fuch dutifull feruice as which his loadhfu could not lacke, and which he fo aduertifed to hir maiestie. Likewise in Alster he was in the whole or the most part of that service with the rarle of Effer, whom he adulted and affifted with nice in Allfer. all the best fernice and counsell be could, to the great comfort of the earle, and commendation of bim-

Sir Beter Carewes fer=

Dis title to hislands in Mounfter.

The fame and report of this noble gentleman, for his wifedome, valiantnelle, erperience, vpzightnes, boulkeping, bountifulnelle, liberalitie, and his tult dealings with enerie man, was fpred through out all that nation, and he favoured and beloved of all

men. And certeine gentlemen in Dounffer, knoin, ledging and confesting that he had a just title to their lands and polletions, and that he (as descending it, neallie from the marquelle of Coshe) was their Thought lawfull lozd, and to thome they ought to yield their the gamen, lands; some of them made their repaire, and some to their wrote their letters buto him: and all with one con name. fent acknowledged him to be their right and lawfull load, and offered not onelie truclie to infirud and to but if it would please him to come to the citie of Corke, they would all appeare before him, and fub. mit themselves, and yeld by their lands into his hands. Sir Peter Carew, when he had confidered and well bethought of thefe offers, and had taken ad. wife with his freends, thought it not god to refuse the same; and that so much the soner, bicause he had made hir highnesse acquainted with his title, and had before obteined hir letters to fir William fit; o williams then lood deputie of Ireland, and to fir John Warret then loso prefident of Mounter, that they thould affilt him in his lutes, and to call the contrarie parts, and to persuade them with all quiet. nelle to yelo to his full titles. And againe, finding that part of the realme to be now veric quiet , the people well disposed, he sent first his agent the wife ter hereof to Cooke, where and before whome there came Dac Artie Kiogh, Coman Dac Tæge, Barrie Dg, the Dmallons, the Dozifcots, the Doallies, flundie others, who of their owne freewill offered to give in recompense of that which was past, and to wards the letting up of his houle, if he would come and owell among them, thee thousand kine; and lo manie heepe and hogs and come, as according to to that proportion; and would also yerelie give him in the like maner luch a postion as should be to his contentation and good liking. When his agent had advertised these things but ohim, and according to his order had prepared a house in Binfale, and one other in Cooke for him: the faid fir Weter did fet the boule of Leighlin to his kiniman and couline Peter Carely, tho afterward was his heire, and prepared his thip to patte himfelfe with his houthold finte to Corke. And being in readinelle for the fame, it plear fed God to call him to another pallage; for falling ficke at the towne of Kolle, he died the feauen and Thereint twentith of Pouember 1575, and was buried berie fir Atti bonozablie and in marliko manner at 2000 aforford honozablie and in warlike manner at Materfood, the fifteenth of December in the cathedrall church, highwill with all fuch enlignes of honoz as to his degree ap perteined,there being then prefent fir Benrie Sio neie lord deputie, and the councell. And thus much concerning that worthie knight fir Peter Carew.

The load deputie, being accompanied from Bil The met hennie with the earle of Dymond but officite of ungalish and a look beginning that exercised at look beginning that the control of the look beginning that the look beginning to be a look beginning that the look beginning to be a look beginning his entrie into the citie, by the matoz & his brethren, and an ozation congratulatozie made unto him in the Latine twng by a yong scholar clad in white attire, verie well and eloquentlie pronounced. Great triumphes were made, both open the land and boon the water; with all such thewes and tokens of foic and gladnelle, as could be deutled. And whiles he remained in the citie, there wanted not anie thing meet and convenient to, the interteinement of his loadilyip, and of all his traine: which his loadily old berie well accept and take in god part; as alload, nertifed it to the loods of hir materies honourable prinie councell in England. This citie is a berie all Chillip cient citie, and first builded (as the common opinion in almost is) by Sitiracus one of the three brethren, which came for out of the works and the common opinion in almost is. out of Pozwaie, called Cafterlings, It fandethand Exclus is lituated opon the riner of Suire, with rifeth in ton. the bill or mount Blandina, named in Frin Slough

blome : and fletch by Thurles in Tipozarie, where of the earles of Dimond are bicounts: from thence to the Polic croffe, Aromale, Cahir Dowelke, Ard finan, Iniflouagh, Clomnell, Caricke Pac Briffin, and to to Waterford.

It was of it selfe a verie little pile, but strong and well walled, and of late yeares (bpon occasion of warres) inlarged in the time of king Benrie the fee nenth and inclosed with a firong wall : then Lam. herd (named Perkin Warbecke) was crowned 10 hing at Dublin, about which king fell great controuerlies betweene them and Bilbert erle of Bilbare. For the fato erle being then load deputie fent his let: ters to the faid maior & his citizens, requiring them to receive into their citie the new king, as other god cities had done : who refuling to acknowledge anie other king , than king Henrie of England, he threatened them that he would take their citie perforce and hang the maior. Wherebpon hot words grew on euerie fice, & the fame like to haue growne 20 to hand fight: the Waterfoodians offering to wage the battell where the erle would amoint. Which their truth at that time auailed them much afterwards, and they in speciall favour with king Henrie the les uenth and king Benrie the eight, by whome their lis berties and franchifes were inlarged.

The foile about it is verie barren and full of hils and rocks, and the leffe profitable for lacke of god manurance and hulbandzie: but what faileth in the land, is recompensed with the fundrie commodities which the river yeloeth, which is not onlie plentifall and abundant of all forts and kinds of filhes, but allo it is a goodie hauen and a receptacle for all forts of thips: 4 for this it is called Larga porta, The great orlarge hauen. The refort of merchants from out of all countries to this citie maketh the same verie populous and rich, & is the chiefest Emporium of that province. Breat be the privileges which the kings of England gaue to the mator & citizens, as well concerning the river as the citie, by king John, king 4

Henrie the third, and king Coward the first. The river was bounded and limited from the mouth of the leas, betweene Kindowan where Yoke tower Candeth boon the east lide, and Rodibanke bpon the west sive, and from thense onto Caricke bpon Suire: and fo farre beyond, as the fato riverebbeth and floweth that wate: & from the fato mouth buto the Inolliage byon the river of Dire, and so far as the same water ebbeth and floweth; and likewise from the laid mouth, but o laint Polins byon the riv 50 ner of Barrow; and so farre beyond the same, as the waterfor water ebbeth a floweth. Det notwithstanding great controuerlies have beene betweene this citie and the fille for the towns of Kolle, which lieft boon the river of Warrow, concerning the bounds and limits that wate, bicause they of Rosse dw claime a printlege whom that river as of the gift and grant of Koger Bigod earle marthall : who married Isabell the elocit daughter of Walter earle marthall, and in hir right was lood of Rolle and of the river of the Barrow. 60 Ibridit pal- Where upon certeine inquilitions were taken in the time of king Coward the third, and of king Kichard the second: and then at Clomnell opon the othes of fir knights and eightæne esquiers, it was found for the citie of Materfoed. And thefe are the bounds of nsofwater- the post or haven of Waterford; within the which Adoponithe bounds and limits the citie of Waterfood, by the grants of fundate kings whoer their charters, have there privileges: That no thip thall be laden nor but laden, but at the citie of Materford, and there to paie all such customes and outies as belong and are due for their merchandize: Also that they have the prilage wines and the inviloiction of the admeraltie, within the limits of the latoriver.

The citie it felfe was first incorporated by king The incorps. Henrie the fecond, & after confirmed by king John, ration of the Henrie the third, and king Coward the first with The visusles augmentations . The mator hath the fword borne ges of thecibefore him by the gift of king Coward the fourth, tie of waterand king Henrie the feauenth, by the name of the food. The favord of fword of inflice. They have cognifance of all maner inflice. of plas as well reall, perfonall, a mirt. They are fullices of oter and determiner, smale fit byon triall of treasons, murthers, and felonics, without anie spec ciall commission to be suco out for the same . Also that no officer not officers of the kings of queenes of England, no; their deputies thall intermeddle, no; exercise anie authoritie nor invisoration, within the citie and liberties, but onelie the maloz cofficers of the same. Also they have a major and officers of the Staple pearelie to be chosen , who have the liberties for taking of Catutes and recognisances Caple, not onelie within their owne towne & concerning them. felnes, but also of fundate townes in Leinster and Mouniter, and the counties of Waterford, Bilkens nie, Merford, and Tipporarie. Also they have liber. tie from time to time to transport, lade, and carrie as wate come, vittels, woll, hordes, thawks; and to liv cence anie other within the limits of their iurifoidis on to do the like. Also all forfeitures, amerciaments, fines, felons gods, and deodands gods, they have to their owne vie. Also that in all doubts, the incods of their charters Chould be expounded to the belt fenfe. and if then there were anie further doubt, the fame should be determined and decided by the king of his councel in the realme of England. Also that thep should not at anie time be compelled to go and serve in anie holling, ercept the king himfelfe or anie of his fonnes were prefent in perfon.

These and mante other like printleges of the kings of England from time to time, of their bounteous liberalitie, and in consideration of their du tifull and good fernices, did give and bestow opon them . All which , D you the inhabitants of Pana. In admonitia pia and citizens of Materford, the offpring of fo onrothecitis god ancestors, ought to be lessons and presidents bin- zens of we-to you, for your continuance in the like offices and terford. duties: that you maie thereby thew your felues to be as were your predecellors, faithfull, lofall, and obedient: and that your apostthegme mate be for es uer found true , Waterfordia semper manet intatta . Di Waterfordia therwife beag neuer fo much of your worthineste, femper manes e glorie never to much of your values (as the Jewes did of their father Abaham) pet it thall to little as uaile you, that their honour thall be your reproch. and their glozie your thaine, if you do not allo the like; and in the end your otter confusion. For as the bolie fcripfure faith : If you be the chilozen of light, then as chilozen walke you in the light; otherwife that light which is in you thall be darkeneffe. If you be the children of Abraham, then do you the workes of Abraham: otherwife Goo, who is able and will raise by the verie froncs to be sonnes to As braham , thall refect you , and give your citie to a people with thall bring forth the fruits of dutie and obedience. For lo did he with his owne peculiar peo. ple, the Jewes, thom for their difobedience against himfelfe, and against his annointed princes, did af ter fundzie punishments and no amendment giue them over unto their enimies hands: who put their poing men to the fword, & their prieffs to flaughter, their virgins were deflowed, their widows defiled, their citie otterlie deftroied, and not one fone left bpon an other; and all the people which escaped the fword, carried awaie captines, 4 made bagabonds, enen to this date upon the face of the earth. If he did this to his owne peculiar people, ow not you of Was terford, whom God bath bletted mante wates, thinke

Barrow.

beiwene

ne carte of

uldare and

h: waterfox

The water

hicto ac

nang re=

Dubin to be

hu king.

Eb water=

mans in

the kings of England.

The comono=

lega porta.

Christe at

ud in the be: Waterfozdi.

terfozb.

The princes

prerogatine.

that you dwing the like wickednesse, thall escape the In exhautati- like judgements. Wherefore if you will eschew the on to the citi= weath to come, beware by their examples, and humble your felous in all outifulnes a obedience to God and to your prince. Cramine not his authoritie, nor decimer his power: compare not your privileges with his authoritie, nor do you dispute your liberties with his prerogative. For not with francing your priulleges, liberties, and grants be great and manie: pet they can not abate not impugne the least part of r the princes prerogative: which is to great, as nothing can be greater, if you will take the view of Gods owne ordinances, when he first erected and establithed a king, tho gave him to high and to abfolute authozitie, that (as the apostle faith) it must be with all humblenelle obeied : bicante he is Bods minister especiallie when it concerneth the interest of hir matesties imperial crowne of that land, the suppession of rebels and traitors, & the deliverie of your felues and that realme from the enimies and rebels.

And do not you thinke that this digrettion is into pertinent to the billogie. For as your ancellogs god dwings are let downe to their prailes and commens dations; fo the fame thall be done of yours, either to your praises for your well doings, or for your respect to the contrarie. But to the historie. When the lozo deputie had given thankes to the maioz and his brethren for his god interteinement, he departed thense by tournies towards Cooke, and by the wate at Dungaruon the earle of Delmond came buto 30 him, and berie humblie offered him all the fernice he was able to do to hir maiestie, and did accompanie him from thense onto the citie of Cooke, where the faid losd deputie was received in the best manner the citizens could, with all humblenesse, and with all fuch triumphs and other theires and tokens of god will and butifulnesse as they could give, without grudging or complaining either of the townelmen or of the fouldier. To this towne reforted but o him the earles of Delmond, Thomond, Clancar, and all 40 the noblemen and best gentlemen in all Mounster, and their wives, and there kept their houses the whole Christmasse. During his being there, manie complaints were made of great outrages, murthers, spoiles, and thesis done throughout that pronince; therebpon dailie feftions were kept, and the malefactors of which three and twentie verie notae ble and notogious offendoes were executed and put

It was also ordered, that for the cutting off and 50 abolithing of the great fwarmes and cluffers of the idlers, which like waspes troubled the whole land, and lived onelie by spoile and rapine; that everie nobles man and gentleman thould give and beliver in the eleman to and names of everie fervant and follower which he had, and should see the same to be boked and registred. And if any of them were found buboked and not registred, that he should be vsed as a fellon where so ever he was taken; and for all fuch, as whose names were registred, his load and master should answer 60 authoritie for redzesse thereof; and therewith most for him. To this order all the noble and gentlemen gave their full consents, and forthwith the same was openlie proclamed in their presence, who seemed to receive it with all toy, and promiled that it thould be followed with effect, and immediatlie they game in their pledges. When all things were thus in theis parts letted in god and quiet order, he toke his fournte towards Limerike, and there he was received with much more pompe and thewes than in anie place before. But as before, so here be spent a few dates in képing of festions, in executing of fusice, and in hearing of pope mens complaints, and toke the like order for registring of everte noble and gentlemans follower, as he had done at Cothe. Which

then he had done, he rode thense buto Abomond, Change where he was complained buto of manie grat dance murthers, rapes, thefts, and other outrages, thereof out. be found great plentie. And for want of lufficient time to proceed throughlie to do inflice and indge. ment therein; he referred the same to certeine commillioners appointed for the purpole : fauing that he committee the principall offendors to ward, and some he banished and abandoned out of those parts, butill further ozder were taken for them.

From thense he entred into Connagh, and came Chimn to the towne of Gallewaie, where he found the Gallewaie towne much decaied and almost desolated, sundie greating of the goo boulholders having lought new habitation ons under Pac William Eughter, and the countie throughout altogither spoiled and devoured by the Wac an Barles, the hopeles (but much better if thep had beene hoplette) formesof the earle of Clanrie card, thole outrages were mod beinous and bort ble. But when these graceles impes percetued of the great complaints made against them, and doubting that would be the lequele if some wate were not take the state of the character of the state of ken, they voluntarilie went to Gallewate towne, Cleming and came to the church bpon a fundate at the publike former to fernice, where the load deputie then was; and there with the knæling byon there knæs confessed their faults, sinns, submitted themselves, and most lamentablie craued pardon, promiting bufeinedlie amendment, and never to revolt moze from their butifull obedience to hir maiectie and hir lawes. The deputie moucd here with, and hoping the belt, did by the abuile of hir maiesties councell thinke it god, with some tharpe reprehensions and a little punishment for this time to release them. so be toke his tournie towards Du blin, where he came the sthirteenth of Appill 1576, but kept fellions in everie place as he paffed through the countrie, and placed his garrifons in places conuentent.

1576

An this his fournie he found a verie romous fate and most lamentable disorders, which required a spédie reformation. And though the outrages in the civil government were great, yet nothing to be The mint compared to the ecclesiasticalistate, for that was to the endis to far out of order; the temples all ruined, the par fall flat. rith churches for the most part without curates and pattozs, no fernice faid, no God honozed, noz Chiff preached, nor facraments ministred. And therefore it appered, yea and it was openlie preached before the Mania ! lood deputie himselfe, that manie were borne which readed never were christened: and the patrimonie of the thurch walted & the lands imbezelled. A lamentable cafe, for a more deformed and a more overthrowne The bold thurth there could not be among thissians. The De: the change putie confidering and bethinking with himfelfe, how the church of God was abused, and that God had in store some weath and indignation for this defiling of his holie fanauarie, did for the audiding thereof write his letters of advertisement to hir highnesse, and most earnesslie praied hir princelle humblie requested, that the commonwealth being destitute of a chancelloz, and other most necessarie magistrates for the government, might likewise with all speed be sent over. When hir maichte and the release councell had considered this advertisement, and the standard had entered the days had entered into the depth thereof, other for a region. drelle was taken forthwith, and the matters concerning religion and reformation of the thurth, it was committed to the faid lood deputie, and to arth bishops and certeine bishops, with others, to le the william be lame to be put in execution. And for the government rathous in an execution. one William Berard elquier a professor the laws burning was fent to be lozd chancelloz , eftr William Diw Duntelli rie to be president of Mounter, with arrived at sopplished

The earle of Defmond humblie offe= reth his fer: uice to the lozo deputie. The load de= ĥonozahlie in: to Cozke.

Mil the noble= men in Moun fter repaire to the load deput

Executions at Cozke.

Querie noble man and gen= fwer for his men.

Of fiction he= nutie honora-

Dublin, the one the Artænth of June, and the other the three and twentith of the same 1 5 7 6. The load hancellos he did forthwith lettle and place in his come. And then his lozothip prepareth to take a fournie fowards Waterford, to do the like with fir William Drucie. But ichen he was passed a daies fourtie, word was brought onto him from the bithop of Deth, tho late then boon the confines of Deth and Connagh for ordering of matters in thele parties; and the like from the maior of Gallewaie, and from diverse others, tho affected well the state, crieng out with trembling termes and volefull reports, that the earle of Clanricard his fonnes that basterlie bimo, which not scarle two moneths past had humbled themselues to the load deputie, confes fed their faults, and craued pardon, and had most firmelie protested and sworne most dutifull and continuall obedience.

These (I saie) not without the counsell and confent of their father, were on a night follen oner the river of Shennon , and there caft awaie their Englift aparell, and clothed themselves in their old monted Irith rags, and fent to all their old friends to come awaie to them, and to bring the Scots thom they had folicited, and their Ballowglattes, and all other their forces with them. Who when they met togither, they forthwith went to the towne of Athenrie, and those few houses which were newlie builded, they facked, fet the new gates on fire, beat awaie the malous and labourers which were there in working, brake and spoiled the quænes armes. 3 and others, there made and cut to be let by. Bad and wicked they were before, but now ten times worfe than ever they were; being come, even as it is faid in the scriptures, that the wicked spirit was gone out of the man, and wanting his wonted diet, retur neth buto the house from whense he came, and finding the same swept cleane, he goeth and sæketh out other feuen wicked spirits, and entreth and dwelleth there he did before, and the last state of that man is worle than the first. And if a man should aske of these 4 baffarolie boies, and of their fier, what thould be the cause that they thould thus rage, and so wicked ie and suddenlie revolue, as dogs to their bomits, so they to their treasons and treacheries, having beene lo courteoullie vled, so gentlie interteined, so friend, lie countenanced fo fatherly erhorted fo pithilie perfuaded, t fo mercifullie pardoned in hope of amend ment: furelie nothing can they answer, but that they would not be honest, noz in anie part satisfie a little of infinite the robberies, theffs, and spoiles which they had made. Foz bastardie sips cannot bring forth better fruits, neither can thornes bring forth grapes. It is the good tree onelie that bringeth forth god fruits. thich is to be cherified, and to be much made of; but thornes and briers are prepared for the fire, and to be burned. For let the hulbandman beflow neuer so much husbandzie byon the thorne, he will fill be but a thome: yea let him graffe neuer to god a peare opon him, the same thall be but a stonie 60 peare; and lacking continuall busbanozie, will renolt to his old nature againe. As the hulbandman then prospereth best, when his fields and gardens are weded and clenfed from thornes, brambles & briers, prepared for the fire : even so Chall the magistrate infoie the quiet state of a commonwealth, when inflice taketh place, and sudgement is executed; when on the god are preferred and therithed, and the wicked (prepared for the gallowes) according to their deferts are punifhed.

The instrument, when everie string is streined to his proper tune, then the mulike is fivet, and the barmonie pleasant; but if that one fring be out of other, the discord of that one marreth and disgraceth

all the whole mulike of the rest: even so is it in a commonwealth, when everie fubiect is dutifull to his prince, obedient to his magistrate, and liveth accoading to his bocation and calling, the fame profpe, reth and flourisheth; but let the wicked be left at lie bertie, and be bupunified, the whole fate is diffurbed a the commonwealth (as a garden overgrowne with weds)in perill and danger to be onerthrowne. The best commonwealth in all ages then prosper red best, when the wicked were as well punished, as 10 the good conserved. And experience teacheth, that a thefe, murtherer, a traitoz, ; fuch malefactors bo ne uer better feruice to their prince & commonwealth, than when they be hanged on the gallowes, and fo far frened to a gibbet. But to the matter.

The load deputie opon thele aduertilements. fine Che 1020 Des bing the matter to be of fuch importance, which require putte altereth red some expedition to withstand the same, or else entrethinto the thole land like to be in danger, altereth his inten Connagh. ded tourneie, and returneth to Dublin, bling luch er= pedition, that within the daies following he was entered into Connagh. The baute thereof when it was blowns abrode, it was scarse credited by the rebels, bicause it was so sudden and with such speed. But finding it to be true, and they affraid of their thadowes, they all one and other fled into the mouns teins, fauing certeine gentlemen of the earls coun. The earle of trie. With left the traitozous boles, a came to the der fent to the ca putie, and offered their loialtie and feruice with fide, fell of Dublin littie. The earle their father would faine have excused and kept in himselfe, but in the end when no excuses could be ac. stofe prison, cepted, his castels were taken, and he brought to the lord perutie: the notivithstanding his humble submillions and craning of pardons, he was fent to the callell of Dublin, and there kept in close prison. But the lood deputie he passed thense to Gallewate, and the logo deputie he patied thenle to Wallewate, and her william after he had there stated a few dates, for the comford Druste placed ting of the townelmen, tho food much dilmated of to be lozd pretheir effate, and in feare to be furpailed and taken for fident in pledges : he palled through Thomond , and came to Pountter. Limerike, where he fetled fir William Deurie (who had accompanied him in all this feruice') to be the load prefident. And from thenle being accompanied and attended byon with him and the nobilitie of that province, and diverte gentlemen of account, they paffed to Cooke, & there the lood prefident remained. Ham Drutie.

Bow he the faid president, being thus placed in the gouernement of that province, die beare himfelfe To bpzightlie, and in to honourable a lost, that he reto formed the fame maruelloudie both in life and maners: and of a flerce people he tamed them to obedience. For the euill men he spared not, but bo law and fuffice in the open festions, or by sword without respect of persons he punished according to their de. ferts: even as of the contrarie the gwo subtects he mould fauour and protect. If anie feruice were to be done byon the enimie and rebell, he would be the first in the field, and never cease to pursue him, butill he had either taken him, or betwen him out of the countrie. If anie matters were in variance bes twene man and man, or anie bils of complaints erhibited buto him , the fame he would either befer. mine, 02 referre them to the law, for which he kept courts continuallie, where the same were heard and ended, and at which for the most part he would be prefent. The rude people be framed to a ciuilitie,'s their maners he reformed and brought to the English or der. And by all these means he did maruelloulite reforme that whole prontince to a most peaceable, quiet and civill effate, fauing the countie palatine in Checarle of Berie : inich the earle of Defmond claimed to be his Defmond will libertie, and that no person was to intermeddle nor have no officer get to vie any turifoidion there, other than his owne to intermedate officers . But then his lozothip had loked into the inhis countie

Clanricard is

The cotterna

most palantine.

The countie palantine a Linne and wickeonelle.

The lord pre= fibent purpos inffice in Merrie.

into Berrie.

& he treaches

rous practile

of the earle to

ned thr load

The load pre= fident giveth

of Delmond.

prelibent.

most lose and disolute life there bico, and that it was a fananarie for all lewd and wicked persons, and how that liberties granted at the first for the mains tenance of fustice was now become a cloke and a throwd for all licentioninelle: he purposed and was fullie determined to make a fournete into that pair uileged place, to make a passage for law and iusice to be there exercised, even as he had tofoze done in other places, knowing that it could not be fafe a. mong a great flocke to leave a scabbed thepe, not 10 god for a commonwealth to have nurfleries for

The erle, when he perceived this, he was in a great furte and agonie, and bled all the wates he could to distuate the lood president from the same. Which when he by no means could compate, then according to his accustomable distimulations he maketh faire weather, and offereth all the fernice he could bo to his locothip, and requested him that it would please him to ble his house and countrie at his pleasure, 2 and that it would likewife please his loodhip to lie at his house at Tralie when he passed that wate; the earle minding nothing leffe than his welcome this ther, but practifing in the end openlie what he had dissemblinglie and in secret deutsed and defermined. The lozd deputie, nothing milkrusting anie secret practife to be imagined against him, grantesh the earles request; and when he saw time, he taketh his tourneie into kerrie, hauing no moze men with him
The lozd pie than sufficient, to the number of six scoze, oz seuen 30 sundzie of his castels, and spoiled him of his gods spoile. woent entreth score persons: and as he passed through the countrie, he kept courts and fellions, and heard everie mans complaint; and at length as his fournete laic, he rode unto Tralie, where he minded to lodge with the earls. The earle having the governoz (as he thought) within his cloches, and minding to practile that openlie, which he had deutled fecretite; had appointed in a readinelle feuen bundzed, oz eight bundred of his best followers to have intramed his lord. thip; and in feed of a bein benue into the countrie, 40 to have cut him off for ever comming more there. Which his villanous treacherie when his looding faw and understod; and considering that he was so neere boon them, as that he was either to adventure bpon them, or with diffonor to hazard himfelfe and his companie: he calleth all his companie togither. and with berie god and pithie words, incourageth bronthe earle them to give the onlet bpon them: and forthwith with a god courage they all march forwards, and ding they were all well armed, and seven to one of the other: yet being as it were acconied at the bolonelle of this noble man , and at his great courage ; for which he was famous in & through all that land: both the earle and his companie turned their hales, for loke the field, and dispersed themselves into the woos, and elsewhere, for their best safetie

The countelle, when the heard hereof, fell in a great forow and heavineffe for hir hulbands to bad dealings; and like a god Abigaell went and met the 60 lord prefident, fell upon hir knees, held up hir hands. and with trilling teares praied his loodlyips patis ence and pardon, erculing as well as the could hir husbands follie, sating that he had assembled all that companie onelie for a generall hunting, nothing thinking bpon his loodthip; and that the men feeing his loodship could not be persuaded to make anie faie: and so prated his lordship to take it. And herein the so wiselie and in such modestie old behave hir felfe, that his loodship granted hir request, and temporifed with the earle. But he followed his betermination, and bled his authoritie to decide matters in and throughout the palantine of Merrie. This greened the earle to the hart, who having no o

ther wate to be revenged, he devileth certeine arti. The tale in ther wate to be revenues, so seemed, existing and the entire entire cles against the president, which he with great explanation clames exhibited unto the load deputie. The load by Sand with the deputie of Priching putie, when he departed from Coake , he returned to Dublin, there he was advertised that the War an Chapter Carles in Connagh had hired a new luplie of two en Carles thousand Scots, and were in actuall rebellion. Connected Wherebpon he prepared a new sourness thicker, with the wards: and being come thither, he found the mat. ter to be frue, and that they were by in campe and in outragious maner spoiling the countries. But Theme before his comming they had belieged Bailie Kingh, ions box. before his comming were have shoule, and for his acquisite thich was the earles their fathers house, and for his kingh.

In this house the load deputie, at his last ocparture from thense, had placed Thomas le Strange, and capteine Colier with one hundred formen, and fiftie bootlemen to lie in garrifon; but the earls fons, thin, king themselves of sufficient frength to recover the fame againe, lato fiege buto it, and invironed it round about : but they were to relitted, that they did not onelie not prevaile; but the garrison with in did make fundzie affaults bpon them, and fine at fundate times fir of their principall capteins, and one bundged and fiftie of their men . And in the end, when they fair they could not prevaile, they raised their fiege, and followed their accustomed robbing and spoiling of the countrie; but especialite upon Mount and cattels. The lood deputie, not flacking no; flow ing his butinette, followed out of hand the forefaid Chelmh: rebels, tho skiped to and fro in such fort, that in no putitibles wife could be find them at anie adantage. Whereose he did disperse his companies, and according as intelligence was given, he caused pursute to be made byon them. And by that meanes, although he could not meete with the whole trope of them. thereby to have a full advantage byon them; yet manie times he met with some of them, sue them, hanged and executed them, twhe their preies from them, and gained awaie their holds and caffels. And at length having god espials, it was advertised bri at length yauting government, and the confins to him, that the Scots were incamped in the confins and marches of Pac William Eughters countrie: incompt and therebpon he forthwith marched thitherwards, Connagh, and in his wate manie of them fell into his lap, tho had their rewards. Unto those loodship resorted the fato Pac William with all the force he had, could Mat will gaue the charge bpon them. But they, not with frant 50 make; who in this rebellion, being the onelie man of multiplical power in Connagh, e pet not able to faue himfelte the found a hole from their inualions, bid thew himfelfe most could ma lotall, and bid the best service that was done byon but their the rebels ; and by the meanes of the fait deputie, bepatie, he recovered, and was repossessed of sundie his car ffels, which in this rebellion had beene taken from

> The Scots, when they heard of the amording of the deputie towards them , they raifed their campe, The boot and lubbenlie dispersed themselves, and the most toplaks Con of them, being werie of their above and intertein naghander ment , fled into the rout in Alfter . The refidue like turne hom buto the bare arted rebels sculked to and fro; but in the end, they and the others were all dispersed, s durft not to appeare. Therefore the deputie, then be had broken the galles of them, shad thus disperfed them, he by fournies returned towards Dublin, and having a little before received hir maichtes let bir film fers in the behalfe of Picholas Palbie hit fernant, ia spill whome the commended for his sufficiencie, both for armond co martiall and civell causes: and as well for the in nagh, couragement of him, as for the nourithing of the like vertues in others of his profession; hir pleasure was to commit onto him the chefe charge and go uernement

nernement binder the fait deputie in Connagh, and willed that he thould be forthwith established in that office, to be swoone one of his privile councell, to bauethat countenance, authoritie, a interfeinement as was meet, convenient a agreeable for the place, of fice, sperson. Thich the said deputie most willing lie egladlie performed, dubbed him knight, and made him governor by the name of a coronell of Connaugh: thinking himselse most hawie, that he was allided with such a man, as who for his experience 10 infungement , his discretion in gouernement , and his paincfulneffe and fkill in martiall feruice was fufficient and compleat; and best able, partite by force , partlie by perfuation , and chiefte by minifring of iuffice, was (I faic) best able, and would framethe rude and barbarous people of that prouince to civilitie and good order. And thus much he advertised onto hir mateffie by his letters, with thankes for hir choice of fo meete and apta man. During the time of this service and being of the 20 lood deputie in Connagh, the earle of Offer, a man of great nobilitie and parentage died in Dublin. Great doubts were made of his death; some thin, king that he thould be potloned, because he was then in the best time of his age, of a verie god confitution of bodie, and not knowne to have beene fiche anie time before his death. But the matter eramined by all the meanes that could be denifed, throcath of there was no luch thing then found: but supoled, that for so much as he had a flur, thich was a spile of a Dysenteria, and wherewith he had beene often. times before troubled, by the inspection and sudges ment of such physicians & others who were present: it was inoged and found that it was some cause of his death. Some thought rather that he Chould be bewithed, as that countrie is much given to such dais liepractices. But how far is that from all christis anitie, all wife and goolie do know, and everie god dullian thould understand . It is against the word of the Lord and all christian religion; and therefore 40 not to be credited . It was thought and fo affirmed by the most part of all men, that some inward griefe of the mind and secret socrow of the hart had haltes ned that, which no infirmitie of the bodie noz anie o. ther deutles ertraozdinarie could compatte. Foz therethat maladie is once entered, and hath feized and taken possession, and which by no thysicke can be relaued or cured: it is but in vaine to minister the fame to the boote, which can not indure when the or ther faileth, no moze than can an accident remaine, 50 then the lubstance is gone; or else as the imbers or albes give heat , when the wood is burned and confus

He was no moze honozable of birth and parent tage by his ancestors, of whome some descended out of kings loines; but as fingular a man for all the bonnes gifts both of mind and bodie, as that age had not manie better. Towards God he was most deuout and religious, whome he ferued according to his ho lie word in all truth and finceritie, and his whole 60 life according to his vocation he framed after the lame; being not spotted with dunkennesse, couetoulnette, whosedome, incontinencie, or anie other notocious crime: a great favourers of the goolie, a friend to the professors of the gospell, can extreame enimie to the papites & enimies of the true religion: tohis prince i fouereigne most outifull and humble, faithfull t obedient: his superious he honozed, his el: ders he remerenced, his equals he loued, his inferiors be fauozed: to his countrie truffie, to the commons wealth jealous, to all men courteous, and to the pose and oppessed bounteous and liberall.

In matters of policie he was verie pundent, and of a great reach: in causes of counsell found, and of a

diepe judgement : in martiall affaires most valiant and of great courage, and of to heroicall a mind, that if his abilitie had answered his goo will, he had not bin a fecond, neither to Lacie, noz to Courcie, noz to anie the first conquerous of Alster to the crowne of Aplot for the England . For such a plot he had laid for the regain regaining of Aliter. ing therof, that it could not be denied, but if the fame had beine followed, great god would have infued in processe of time to hir maiestie, in obevience and reuenues, and a great suertie to that estate, and the like increase of benefit to the whole commonwealth. The more noble were his good and worthic attempts, the more he was croffed and contrarted ; but by fach fer cret meanes, as which he did rather for the most part contecture amille, than bit aright: but yet fuch was the great valour of his mind, and the magnanimitie of his fromach, that his god meanings a attempts, for the honor of his prince, and the benefit of the commonivealth, being to contrarted and overthwarted, The carte of he thome no travels, no paines, no fervice, no hard. Effer contra nesse could breake; the verie griefe of mind and for red in all his row of heart (as it was thought) old onelie confume and overthow. He was also verie learned, and of The carle bea great reading, and sometimes a scholer in the uni, riewellier= uerfitie, and had berie good knowledge in all kind of ned. letters, as well theologicall as humane, and of a berie quicke wit to conceine, of a good capacitie to bus derstand, and of a readie twng to biter and deliver in a perie god order what he had conceived; and fo well he would discourse and argue anie matter, as few Scholers better, and not manie so skilfull in anie one, as he was generallie in all god vertues. A more noble man euerie waie, not England, noz anie other nation bath lightlie affwoed . And certeinlie, if it had pleased God that Lachells had bene idle', or had fpun a longer thread, that he might have lived to have beene imploted according to his ercellent vertues, either in matters of counsell, of policie, or mars tiall, no doubt he would have proved a most worthic and beneficiall member onto hir maiestie, and hir wole common wealth. As his life was, so also was his death most godlie, comfortable, and vertuous, the one answerable to the other, euen as S. Augustine watteth; vix male moritur qui bene vixit . In all the I godlie ife time of his sicknesse, which was about twentie or one cod. and twentie dates, although he were manie times tozmented with grauous pangs in the bellie : yet was he never heard to grudge or murmur, nor to fpeake anie angrie og idle word, but most patientlie Dis patience and mækelie toke all things in god part. After he in his ficknes perceived that nature began to faile and defect, he pelded himselfe to die, and was verie desirous that his friends and welwillers thould have accesse but to him, and to abide by him at their pleasure. And by that meanes he had continuallie about him diverte men of all degrees, as well of the clergie, as of the laitie, both men and women, gentlemen & fernants, before whom he did thew most awarant arguments of a godlie and bufeined repentance of his life palt, his repenand of a most chissian and perfect charitie with all tance and chas the world, frælie forgining eucrie offense owne unto ruie. him, and alking the like of all others . His faith he openlie confessed, and witnessed a most ondoubted al. De confesseth furance of his faluation in Chiff Jefus, purchafed his faith. for him in his bloud and death: and manie times he would with a lowd voice faie; Cupio disolui & ese cum his praicing Christa. He fpent most part of the time , when the er, and hearing tremitie of his fickneffe did not let him, in praiers, the word, and in hearing the wood read buto him, and would ble luch goolie admonitions, luch pithie perlualions, & lo grave intructions, as he never did, not thought he could do in all his life time : for he never femed in all his dates to be halfe to wife, learned, and elos quent. The nerer that death drew, the more feruent

The fambale

Ace more of

this carle of

Ellerin the

ci;zonicles of

England,

pag. 1263.

he was in profer, and requested all his companie to do the like; and the verie last words that he spake ivas, The lood Jelus . And when his tong gave over to speake anie moze, he lifted up his hands teles to the Lord his Bod, butill most swætlie, mildlie, and godlie he did pelo by his ghoff, which manie times before he had commended to his Lord and God. And thus this noble man boon the two and twentith date of September, and in the pere of our Load one thou fand five hundred feventie and fir, left this world, to 10 the great forow of his freends, and lotte of the com monwealth; but to the gaine of himfelfe, who by all awarant arguments and tellimonies of his budouted faith, doith affure be of his euerlafting toie, and eternall felicitie.

putic.

Whe effect of the earles let= ters to the De-

About thee vaies before his death, he weat his last to the load des letters to the load deputie, being then in the remote parties of Connagh; and verie desirous he was to have spoken with him. In which letters he gave his logoship most hartie thanks for all the good frænde 20 thing past betweene them, and wished that the god and faithfull dealings betweene them were knowne as well in England as elsewhere. Then he commended to him all his fernants generallie, and some by particular name; and therein a speciall request for his sonne and heire, that though he himselse should die to his frænds, pet his sonne the earle of Effer might line to the fernice of his prince, and the goo of the commonwealth . And lattlie , he touched fomes buto his lorothip a little George and agarter, the enlignes of the order of the garter, whereof they both were knights and companions, to be a memoriall of the love and godwill past betweene them. And now leaving this honozable earle in his heavenlie tote and bliffe: let bs returne to the historie of this

AT he nife= greements be: tweine the caris of Def= mond and Thomand.

The earle of Delmono re= all amb otbers,and com: plaineth a= gainst the ceffe.

Sir John of Delmond committedto ward.

wife.

effere and effrenated nation. The pronince of Pounter was indifferent qui et, but some repinings were betweene the earles of Thomono and Delmond, the one not abiding no. 4 digesting the orders, which byon sundrie complaints were made against him, which he refused to obeie, untill polens nolens he were present thereunto by the lord prefident: the other, who was alwaies a verie wilfull man, not withfranding he had at Corke yel. ded himselfe (of his owne fre consent) to abide the orders there made for the quietnelle of the countrie, pet now having taken the adule of his dilozdered for lowers, he would not be withdrawen from his won. ted eractions, and therefore repined to beare further 5 pineth against ante cesse; and wrote his letters to the lords of hir mateffies printe councell in England, complaining much, and proving nothing, and aggravating the taking of the celle, with most manifest butruths. And so far he was carried in milliking the government, bicause he saw his owne wonted swaie was much abated, that he would verie faine have Aipped out if he could . And it was verelie thought that he was combined in a fecret confpiration with the forelorne sommes of the earle of Clanricard, as was his 60 brother fir John of Delmond, who for his confes rence had with Shane Burke, was suspected to have foined with him in his rebellion; as also because he had promifed him aid out of Pounter, if he would hold out, and for which he was committed to ward. Which carried the more likelihoo, bicause his intention was to put awaie his owne wife, to have mat. thed himfelfe in marriage with Shanes fifter, who Sir 13. Del: was Dewackes wife, tof late forfaken by him. Peo mond putteth verthelette, the erle was fearefull to offend the state, away his wife for the president was so watchfull to espic out both anothermans his and all the rest of their doings, and in such a readinesse to be at inches with them, and byon their bones if they farted out never to little, that he kept

bimfelfe quiet, and came in to the faid prefident, and belivered in his men that were demanded, & with before he dented, being berte notorious malefagors and practifers of buquietnette.

And now that the whole land was (as was thought) in quiet, oz at leaft in outward thew moze quiet than in times paff, the noblemen & gentlemen in the Ch. glith pale, of whome least suspicion of anie cuili was Enguine thought: they begin veris inconsideratlie to repine men mite against the ceste: who if they had entred into the due valetage against the ceste: who if they had entred into the due valetage against the ceste (although somewhat to 1011pm; a confideration thereof, they (although somewhat to design a design to the confideration thereof). their further charge) Chould have mainteined it : be, true, cause that the same was procured for the defense of themselves, and they onelie had the benefit thereof. For you hall understand that the load deputie, being a man of great wifdome, knowlege, and erperience, when he considered the fickle state of that wavering and rebelitous nation of the Irithie, the notwith fanding they had never to firmly promited, fwome, and howed all allegiance and obedience to hir may ieffie : pet bpon enerie light occasion, without anie respect of faith and butie, would fling out into secret conspiracies, and so into open rebellion; and then for the amealing thereof, and the prefernation of hir god lubiects, hir highnelle was deinen to inlarge bir garrifons, and to increase hir armie to hir ercessive charges, and all which companies were vittelled by the English pale : and further, considering that the benefit which grew hereby, was generallie er that concerning his buriall, and herewith he fent 30 tended to the thole pale, who in equitie thould be contributozie to the burthen, as they were partakers of the ease, and yet manie of them, pretending to have liberties and privileges, claimed to be er, empted from anie contribution at all, whereby the claims who relidue were the moze greened, & the greater burther bikharana ned, to their impowerithing, the hinderanceof their them. feruice: the lozo deputie caused a through search to be made in bir highnesse court of the ercheker in Ite Chinan land, of all the records, for and concerning all and all fearth in manner of liberties which at ante time had tofoge bin thomas, granted to anie person or persons that soener: and in the end found that (verie few ancient liberties ercepted) all were blurped, or by fatute repeat led.

Wherebpon to eale the oppelled, and to make the burthen to be borne more briverfallie, and lo more indifferentlie; and for the better furtherance of hir bighnesse service: he commanded by proclamation found with all fuch liberties and freedoms to be disolued, as clamation which either had no grant at all, 02 which had not that continuance of times out of memorie of man . And of this latter fort were manie made by a flatute but to indure onelie for ten yeares, and all which were expired. And for this cause they never found fault before now that they are greened, and therefore do repine against cette; and with open mouths crieout, that they were so poze that they could not be are ante celle, and that it was against the law. And here for pour better understanding that cesseis, and that what alle is meant thereby, it is a prerogative of the prince, to impole opon the countrie a certeine proportion of all kind of vittels for men and horde, to be delivered at a reasonable price called the queens price, to all and enerie such souldtoes as the is contented to be at charge withall, and so much as is thought competent for the lord deputies house; and which price is to be pærelie rated and affelled by the lood deputie and the councell, with the amifants and affent of the nobili tie of the countrie, at fuch rates and prices as the Couldings may live of his wages, and the fair Deput tic of his interteinment.

These things although they were orderlie done, counts mi pet certeine malecontents, anding themselves gree that when wed, bicause they should also now beare a postion, and also now

be contributaries: first they draw their heads togic of her and make there supplication to the logo deputie mos mersus minimum which was received verie willinglie, and offer made that conference thould be had with them, how and that wate it might best be deutled to eale there griefes, & not to charge the queene. There open at a time appointed they all met, and came in persons before the deputie and councell, there the falo maleconfents first opened their griefes, that they had certeine old and ancient privileges and lis 1 berties which were taken from them; then that they were compelled to yeald to an unreasonable cesse, thich they were not able to beare, and that was will amppleasure onlie, and contrarie to all law and reas for, that anie such charge should be imposed opon them without a parlement orgrand councell.

When the loss deputie and councell heard them atfull, they appointed a date, when they thould come artimities their answer. In the meane time the lood deputie and councell confulted and confidered 20 of the matter, and resolued themselves opon an anfwer. And when the date came and they appeared, and fwer was made unto them by the mouth of the load hancellos, that they had no charters nor liberties at all to be found in hir highnesse records, other than had as were expired and of no validitie. And as for the greatnesse of the ceste, the burden whereof they had alleged to be unreasonable and not to be borne, bicaufe they fato a anouched that it was ten pounds tiwelue pounds of echplough land; it was offered that they thould be discharged, if they would paie but five markes for everie plough land. And whatfor ever they faid in dentall of the pateng of the celle, it was and is to be proued, that it was not onelie hir maieffies pierogatiue with may not be impeached; but also to be promed by most ancient records, that ever fince the time of king Penrie the fourth, for the space of eight or nine score yeares, there bath bin fill from time to time, as occation hath required, the putte and councell, and fuch nobilitie as were fent to and did come to the fame, now in question and by them repined at. Penerthelette, they repined and flatlie denied that they would pield to anie ceffe, faleng and alledging as before, that it was a gainst reason and law, and therefore praied that they might have his loodhips libertie to make their res patreouer into England, and to acquaint hir high nelle with their cale. Wherebuto he answered, that to go. Wherespon they assembled themselves togither againe, and by the adulte of certeine buffe head ded lawiers and male contented gentlemen, who had lirred and let them a worke to contoine themsclues to follow this lute, and contributed a matte of monie amongst themselues, for the charge of the faid lawiers, namelie Barnabie Scurlocke, Richard Peteruill, and Penrie Burnell, who having beene Cometimes Audents in the ins of the court in Lone don, a acquainted with Littletons tenures, thought 60 themselves so well traughted with knowledge in the laws, as they were able to wave in all matters of the deepest points of the law. But if they had first (as it becomineth dutifull subjects) to have loked in the boke of God, they Chould have found it written there, that it was God himfelfe who first made kings and established their thrones, and gave them most ercellent preeminences next to himselfe, that they hould be under him the supreme governours byon the earth; and have that authoritie and prerogative, hat all inferiors and labiens should and ought in all humblenesse and dutifulnesse submit themselves buto the obedience of them for the Lords fake: bis tanle lois it the will of God, without lifting of his

authoritie or examining his government. For there is no power (as the apolite faith) but of God, sthry are ordeined of God; wherfore the fo relifteth them, reliteth God, and whole relitances & dilobediences the Lord himselfe hath revenged offentimes on the disobedient. Wherfore euerie man is to be subied in all humilitie & obedience buto them in all maner of ordinances, being not against God, not onlie bicanse of weath, but also for conscience sake, especiallie in matters being well confidered, which do concerne their one benefit and safetie. If this be the infallible truth, how farre were thefe men overshot, that thus would dispute the princes prerogative with their Littletons tenures; and measure the same with their ofone rules and deutles ? It had bin much better for them, moze to their commendations, if they had (as the scholers of Pythagozas) kept silence and had beld their peace, butill such time as they had beene better Audied in their owne lawes : and then they Chould have found it written that the prince or king is the Chekings head and most excellent part of the bodic of the com: prerogative monwealth; and through his governance the prefer by the lawes ner and defender of the whole bodie, and (as the prothet termeth them) to be nourithing fathers of the people which are the rest of the bodie, and for which eaules the lawes do attribute onto him all honoz, dignitie, prerogative, and preeminence aboue all o thers; and which his prerogative both not onelie ertend to his owne person, and all that which he hath of his owne, but also to all his subieces. And the lawpers themselves do so far firetch this for a Maxime, that ichatloeuer lawes be made and elfablished either for the benefit of holie church or common profit, it is alwaies implied salua in omnibus regus prarogatina; and that nothing thall be intended to be prein diciall to his crowne and dignitie. But by all likelihoo thele men were not to facre read;03 if they had, their malice or defire of some pelting lucre, which blindeth manie of that profession, had made them like darges impoled by the name of celle by the De: 40 forgetfull of themselnes & of their duties. Well, thrie great lawiers beare the malecontented loads a gen. tlemen in hand, that their cause & sute was god and reasonable, and by the law to be warranted, a not to be doubted but the fame would have good successe. Wher boon they made by their fuplication and let. Che impaled Ther upon they made up their implication and ter-ters to hir maieckie, with the like letters to hir honor fend into Enrable prinie councell, bated the tenth of Januarie, gland their as 1576, and binder the hands of Roluland vicount gents to comof Baltinglas, Ed. of Deluin, Christopher of Doth, plaine. bewould neither give any luch leave nor benie them 50 Peter of Erimletton, James of Mellew, and Par frike Paugle barons; fir Dliuer Plunket, fir Thomas Pugeat, fir Chiffoper Chiners, and fir Will liam Searefield knights; Coward Plunket, Patrike Paugle, Patrike bulleie, Beorge Plunket, Francis Pugeat , Laurence Pugeat, Picholas Talle, James Pugeat, and William Talbot, in the names of all the inhabitants within the English pale, had subscribed. Another also they delinered in the like order their letters of atturnete unto their faid agents, and fo much monte for their erpenfes as was thought lufficient, with their order and promile to supplie what soener they thould need. And thus being furnished with all things to their contentments, they paft ouer the feas, and made their repaire onto the court of England, and there at time convenient did exhibit their luplications and letters to hir materite and the loads of the councell, which

in effect conlifted in these points. First, that where there was a celle impoled by the lood deputie and councell boon the English pale for The effect of hir matellies garrifons, they finding themfelues the letters pir materies garrious, des anothy described complaint grieved therewith, made their complaint thereof exhibited to but the faid lood deputie and councell for reducte, hir materic and could not be heard.

Seconda

and councell.

146

Secondarilie, they affirmed that the faid celle, or ante other like to be imposed opon them, was against the lawes, statutes, and vlages of that

Thirdlie, that the ceffe was a most intollerable and grieuous burden, there being eraced out of eues rie plough land ten and twelve pounds.

Fourthlie, that in the leuteng and eracting, there were manie and fundzie abuses done and commit-

The matter is referred to the councell.

When hir matestic had throughlie read both the complaints and letters, the foothwith fent and fet them over to the losos of hir privile councell to be confidered, and the same to be throughlie eramined; who forthwith affembled themselves, and having read and heard the contents thereof, did compare them with the like letters fent onto them from the fato malecontented loads & gentlemen; as also with the instructions and advertisements, which they likewise had received from the load deputie and 20 councell out of Ireland, concerning the same. And after long ochating of the matter, that they might the better prove and understand the greatnesse ther, of, did by hir highnette commandement call before them the earles of kildare and Dimond, the bicount of Wormanstone, and the baron of Dunsante, who then were attendant at the court, and declared unto them the whole matter, and the maner of thefe mens proceedings both heere and in that realme, ubofe intent and meaning was in verie deed, binder 3 coloz to féche some reliefe, to have taken awaie who: lie the imposing of anie cesse, and so consequentlie to have taken awaie the right a prerogative, which hir maiestie & predecestors have alwaies infoied, and without which that realme could not be defended, no; themselves preserved.

These foure noblemen, when they had heard the whole matter, fæmed to be forie, and to millike of their bnabnifed procedings: they confesting and acknowledging that ceffe hath beene alwaies bled to a be taken, and they thought him not to be a dutifull lubied, the would dente or impugne the same: ab though they withed and did praise, that the pore inhabitants in times of fearlitic might be ealed of some part of the burthen which they now presentlie did The answers beare. When the loads of the councell had proceeded of the councell herein so farre as they could, they delivered by their to the articles opinions to hir maiestie, advertising that concerning the first article they could say nothing; but that they supposed that the doings of hir highreste depuis tie was not so frict as was complained: bicause he had written otherwise.

To the fecond their opinion was, that it touched hir mateffies prerogative, fo much to be dented of that impolition, which hath beene vled, allowed, and continued for manie yeares, and in times of hir fundrie predecessors; that now it might not be suffered to be impeached, onlesse hir highnesse would lose and forgo hir title, right, and interest to the crowne of Areland, or elfe support the whole burthen and charge 60 to defend the same of hir owne purile: neither which extreamities could or might in anie wife be tolled

To the third, that the celle was intollerable, and not able to be borne, they thought that to be true, if ten pounds and twelve pounds thould be demanded out of enerie plough land, as they complained : but they understood by credible informations from the deputie and councell the contrarie, that they were offered at five marks the plough land: with was Supposed to be perie easte and reasonable.

To the fourth article their opinion was, that if a nie such abuses were done, it were god the same were let downe and knowne, and a redrelle thereof to be ordered.

to be expersed.

Then hir highnesse had read and shoroughlic control with marks shoreed their opinions and resolutions, and sinding offended by the subjects, the control with t bir selse undustifullie to be handled by his subjects, the concommanded by the adulse of his councell the sald a plants. gents which followed their fute, to be committed to the Fleet, and foothwith wrote hir letters to the fall The appear hir deputie and councell, finding hir felfe grieued of the fam with the faid hir subjects of the pale, that the relax planting in the uing of hir armie with vittels by wate of cells, tothe fix fould be anouched to be a matter against law, and ancient custome : and yet the same both in hir time and in the times of hir progenitors, hath bluallie bene imposed, and now impugned by some such as in times palt had subscribed therebuto, in presudice of hir prerogatine, and hinderance of hir fernice. of hir perroganue, and processing a generality made lie offended with these their persumptions and by offended but this offended with the specific persumptions and by offended but fall maner of proceeding; but also found fault the maner of proceeding; but also found fault the maner of proceeding; but also found fault the maner of proceedings and the councell there that then the specific persumptions are the specific persumptions. with the fato deputie and hir councell there, that they countie would and did fuffer hir prerogative in contempt of ringthing bir highnesse and authoritie to be so impugned, the planes to parties not committed to punished by which meanes the matter at the first and in the beginning might have been remedied. And therefore as hir highnesse had alreadie given order for committing them to the flet, for the punishment of the agents which were fent over with the complaints and letters, for fuch their instiffeng and mainteining the imposition of the faid celle to be against the lawes and customes of that hir realme, and therefore leking to impeach hir prerogative and rotall authoritie: but also willed and commanded him and all hir whole councell to fend for those lords and gentlemen, which subscribed the letters sent buto hir highuesse, who if they will frand to mainteine their affertions, and anow the Therm customes of the realme, and not warrantable by hir be fent and prerogative, that then hir pleasure was, that these persisting and auditing to be likewise committed. wark

And concerning the abuses perpetrated in the maner of the leuteng the fato celle, hir commande ment and order was, that itholoeuer were culpable therein, he Chould be punished with all seweritie. And berewith also the was contented, and had given or der for some qualification to be pælded buto, as by the fato hir deputie and councell should be thought met : confidering the scarlitie and the dearth which The comple was then in the faid English pale. And in case the uersachin faid loads and gentlemen bpon better confideration ledging the will be contented to acknowledge their offences, and fault tob fubmit themselves simplie, and buder their hand, gratic bia witings: that then they to receive favour. And as for those and such hir learned men, as were present at the debating of the matter, and did forbeare (contrarie to their dutie & knowledge) to fand in main Entland teinance against the said prerogative, to be displat of ced and discharged out of hir fee, and their places to this femilia be supplied by such others as by the deputies shall be teiningthe committees thought meet. Immediatlie open the receipt of hir complaints maiesties letters, and the like from the councell, the col. losd deputie and councell by their letters fent not onelie for those malcontents, which had before subscribed to the letters sent to his highnesse and come cell; but also in discretion for such others who for their disguised and cunning manner of dealings whe military were specialite noted to be councellors, ringlea, ients state ders, and procurous of these letters to hit male abbettops lis frie and the loods of hir councell : who when they for were come, and then being dealt withall, touching were arrogant and wilfull, and repining against enforced bir matesties representation their claime of fredome from celle : their answers bir matesties prerogative, and affirming boldite the malest in plaine speches and without anie Afching, that no imis.

plainers.

celle could be imposed but by parlement or a grand conicelly ind what some was other wife set downe, wisagainst the law: and so stubbornelie they were bent therein, that they would not yield to ante cons ference: whereupon they were all committed to the calfell of Dublin, notwithstanding some of them (after they had better aduited themselves) yeelded a submission and praied mercie. amitted to

Mhich dwings when the load deputie and councell had forthwith advertised to hir highnesse the r councell in England; they nothing, liking thefe are rogant and diffoiall parts of thefe impaled male, contents, fent for their agents; and having the like conserence with them, found them of like dis polition, being as a fit couer to the pot, berie froward, arrogant, and wilfull : thereupon they were remoued from the fleet to the Lower : a place amointed for the offendors in capitall causes, and for fuch (being impugners of hir prerogative) as be fup-Thefe things when they were notified unto the loads and gentlemen in Freland , they were maruelloul lie graves, but not the one not the other would give ouer, untill their arrogancies and infolencies were by apparant matter and good records fullie conninced, and condemned : for which the load chancellog of berie purpole was fent ouer into England, who fo fullie, effectuallie, and discreetlie bid resolue bir mas fellie and councell in everie point, which the parties

agents could not denie. powin the end they confidered better of themifelics, and fent their humble fubmiffion in waiting buser their hands to the faid loods of hir maiesties privile councell, confessing that they had distoiallie and insolentlie, both in words and writings offen. ded most grænouslie; protesting pet that their intent was neuer to benie hir rotall prerogative, to vie the fame as occasion thould ferue, but onelie to redictle corteine abuses; and therefore most humblie praied they might find some mercie, and that the hard 40 and painfull impationment which they had fuffeined, might be a sufficient punishment for the same. Therebpon they were released, putting in bonds of unitaled one thousand pounds, that within five dates they should depart homewards into Freland; and after their transportation a arrivall thither, thoulo make mind depas their immediat repaire, without faie og lingering, to the losd deputie and councell, and there to give their attendance, untill by them they thould be licens ced to depart. At their comming home they perfore to med the conditions of their obligations, and most humblie in like order submitted themselves to the losd deputie and councell, and then (according to an order thought good by the lords of the councell in England, and referred to the liking of the load deput tie and councell in Ireland) the fame was after long trauerse ended and determined . But here to set downe what practiles, informations, toeulles were made against the said deputie, by the said malecons tents, and some (by their means) of no small calling had informed that he had alienated the hearts of the 60 subjects from locall obedience, that he had farmed all the whole reline, that he had walted hir maiesties hip dipu- treasures and revenues, that he wanted policie in his government, that he thould for this dealing with hir subjects be renoked, that he did all things bubis owne mind without the adulte of others, contrarie to the course of other veputies before him, that he did grant manie pardons, to the imbolde. ning of manie which offended the more.

These and manie such other like butruths they speed. But truth, which is the daughter of time, did manifest it to the whole world, that their overthrow was his credit, and his prenate was to their reproch

and thame. And albeit manie were the pangs and inward greefes, which for a time by the meanes of their falle luggestions he lusteined, and with great paines he couered: pet in the end it turned to his great top and comfort. And here by the way, if a man without offense should fall into the consideration of this their reliffance, and repining against the celle, which was then enterprised and taken in hand; when the whole land frod in a broken and doubtfull frate, and the time berie dangerous; when the earle of Del mond frowardie kicked at the like, and all the loads in Pounffer had contrarie to their owne orders and promiles, denied, and commanded their tenants to Dente after the manner of the English pale, to pale anie celle ; then James Fitzmozis being furnithed with men, monie, and munition, by the pope and king of Spaine, was dailie loked for to come and innade the land; and when the great ones has ning hollow harts, and addicted to papifirie, die date posed to offend in the necrest degree to the bighest. 20 lie gape and expect so, the same; when the distoill Arithite in Mounster and Connaugh were combined and toined in these conspiractes; when Roxie Dg, Dmoze, Connoz Dac Cozmake, Dconnoz & o. thers, animated by the foliaid conspiracies, were by in open rebellion, and bled most erecrable outrages; then fome of the belt townes in Leinfter bio aid, comfort, and mainteine thefe revels, and belides manie other circumstances concurring herewith: might it not be well presumed (and as it was so 30 doubted) that the cause being like, they should also be combined and linked alike. And might not the whole world judge that neither barrell was the better her ring. And pet not with francing it fell in the end to a better effect. For the lords and inhabitants in the English pale, since the time of the conquest by Chesbeittie king Penrie the second, and since their sirst arrivally pale to the uall into this land, it bath not bene lightlie knowne crowne. that they had broken their faith and their allegiance, and not to rebell in anic warres against the crowne of England, and the kings of the same; saving as nom in refrect to faue their purffes, rather than meaning ante breach of butte, had ouer that the miclues: which opon a further confideration of the truth they repented, and byon their fubmillion were pardoned, in hope and boon their promise that they would nes uer thenleforth offend, not be found faultie with the like. During the traverle about the celle , manie things hamened in the land worthie to be reprehens ded (as great and fundzie were the advertisements from out of France by luch Englishmen as were there imploied) of an intention of James fitzmozis to innade Ireland, who had beine at Kome with the pope, and there was he princelie interteined, and res turned from thense with a good maste of treasure, making his returne through Spaine, and by the king thereof was furnithed with men, munitions, & treasures, and all things necessarie. Which things were by letters from him fignified buto the chefeft of all Pounter his fecret confederats, and they be ing papiles both in bodie + foule, of firous of change of government, and to be boder a prince of their owne supersition, die bailte languish and erpect his comming. Therefore hir mateffie and councell, bas uing the like intelligences, do also prepare monie,

> Kozie Dg, Dmoze, and Connoz Bac Cozmake, Dconnoz, and their coparteners, contrarie to their othes, fubmillions, and promiles, hoping for all out of Connaugh, began anew to gather their frænds and confederats out of feverall places, to the nums ber of a hundred fwords, which with his owne made aboue featien fcoze; and being animated by Shane Buche to continue a rebell, he burned diverte mens baggards, D.y.

munitions , vittels, and men , and all other things

necessarie for the withstanding of him.

Ek agente

The burning of the Paas by Rozie Da.

haggards, poze mens houses, and sundzie villages, and committed manie outrages : and being not relisted, he take such incouragement of his successe, that leaving poze villages, he went to great towns, as to the Paas, diffant from Dublin about ten miles. The verie same date that he came thither at night, was the patrone daie of the faid towne, com, monlie called the church holie daie, which daie after the maner of that countrie, and not much bulike the festinall dates which the Ethniks and Pagans were 10 wont to celebrate to their fooll gods of Bacchus and Menus, they spent in gluttonie, dunkennesse, and furfetting. And after they had to filled their panches, and the date was gone, they somewhat late in the night went to their beds, having forgotten to make fall their towne gates, or put anie watch to ward them. Which thing Rosie Dg when he knew, and has uing intelligence that everie man was in his bed as Riepe, then he in the dead night came to the towne with all his companie, who like buto a fort of furies ano divels new come out of hell, carried byon the ends of their poles flankes of fier, and did fet as they went the low that theo houses on fier. And the wind being then somewhat great and vehement, one house twhe fier of another, and so in a trise and mo, ment the whole towne was burned; and yet in the towne supposed to be five hundred persons in out, ward amearance, able to have relifted them : but they being in their dead fleps, suddenlie awaked, were so amazed, that they will not what to do, for the fier was round about them and past quenching, and 3 to pursue the enimie they were altogither bufurni, thed, and durft not to do it, neither if they would they could tell which way to follow him. For he tarted berie little in the towne, saving that he sat a little while open the croffe in the market place, and beheld how the fire round about him was in everie house kindled, and thereat he made great toy and tri unith, that he had done and exploited so direlish an blage in all his cuill actions, but pet contrarte to his blage, he killed no one person in the towne. As he returned he picted and spoiled the countrie, and ranging to and fro, as his wavering head carried him. he came verie Mostlie buto the towne at Leighlin bridge, and there burned part of the towne.

hurneth the towne at Leighlin bridge. tem with

Rozie Da

George Catwelue per= fons against 240 fetteth boon them & diructh them to fire.

The cafteil in banger to be taken.

But Beorge Carew brother unto Peter Carew. then constable of the said towne and fort, having then but a finall ward to defend the violence of the enimie, and yet thinking it should be tw great adis honour onto him to be bearded with a traitor, and to let him depart unfought withall: he issued out byon him, having with him onelie feuen horstenien and five thot, and gave the charge byon the faid rebels, being two hundred and fortie, with fuch a courage and valiantneffe (and they affonied vicaule it was fo Sudden and in the night time) that he killed some of them: and then they with the lotte of those men by gan to flie. But at last when they perceived his force 60 which he had in a readinesse, and at a food not far off to be but small, and to weake to resist their great number, they returned and chased him to the verie walles of the castell; where if he and his small companie had not like valiant and goo fouldiers acquited themsclues, the rebels had entred into the house; for they were within the gate and there fought, but driven out and the gate thut. At this bickering they lost sirtiene men, and one of their chiefe capteines named Wiers Moinagh, who died verie Mostlie after of his hurt. Capteine Carewooff but two men and one horte, but everie one of the rest of his companie was burt.

The enimie, nothing triumphing nor liking this interteinement, presentlie retired and departed, by

which meanes the one haife of the fowne was fauch. The tring After their returne from henle, they spoiled sund ie is diam to after their recurrence by the confines a boiders little a townes and billages byon the confines a boiders and little and their fines by their area. of the English pale. And albeit they were berie eger. lie followed and purfued, and offentimes with lotte of his companie, yet he was so mainteined, and his watch and spialt was so good, that partite by the helpe of his acquaintance, and partlie by meanes of the water bogs and fattenelle in eueric place, he was in fafegard and fafetie. In this purfute made bpon him, it happened that a parlie was appointed betweene capteine Parington and him : buto whom Korte Dg fwore and promifed most faithfullie to pæld himselfe to some conformitie and order. The capteine nothing millrufting him, gave to much credit to his labtill promiles, and did to open him felfe unto him, that through his owne follie Roote toke aduantage, and perforce toke him and Aleran, Rose og toke advantage, and perforce twas bill and street and disht ends ber Colbie, aho was with him in hand, both which he copy taken handfasted togither, and caried them along with him captained as his water spaniels, thorough wods and bogs, rington pilo threatening them fill to kill them. Wis thing being ner. knowne, great forow and greefe was conceived of the load deputie, and of all good Englishmen, and bak lie practifes were deviled for their deliveries; and at length by treatie of friends an agræment was in a manner concluded. But before the same was fullie perfected, a draught was made by Robert Harepole Admight perfected, a draught was more by record on the make make him constable of Catherlough, to intrap and to make a make him by draught boon Rosie: for he knowing where the faid harpen Rozie was wont to hant, and by god elvials learning where his coch and cabine was, he being accompanied with Parker lieutenant to capteine Furle and fiftie of his band, earelie in the mos ning, about two houres before date, he went and marched to the verie place where Rosie laie, and befet the fame. Roste hearing an unwonted noise, and inspecting the worlf, he came suddenlie bpon Bar rington and Colbie, thinking to have flaine them, Captiluth act. And then after a thost space he arose and depart 40 and gesting in the darke to the place where they late, tingion is ted with great criumph according to his accustomed 40 gave him diverse wounds, but none deadlie; the greatest was the losse of the little finger on his lest hand. Robert Harepole when he had broken open the doze of the cabin, he toke as manie as were within prisoners: but Rorie himselfe and one other Boile of privilie in the barke fole awate and crept among cleapth the bulbes, to that he could not be found. The foul diers in the meane time, making spoile of all such gods as they found, killed all the men the were there, but saued capteine Parington and Colvie.

Rozie Dgalbeit he was glad that he was wellar Captonia ped, pet in a great griefe for the lotte of his priloners, belimited. and minding to be revenged, privile with all the companies with he could get, belides them with Shane Burke had fent buto him out of Connagh, he went to Catherlough earlie in the morning, and he went to Catherlough earlie in the morning, and Boile of burned a few haggards of come and a few houles, burned es and to retired. Robert Parepole hearing hereof, theriough forthwith followeth them with ten or twelve hordes he overtoke them, and killed firteene or fene. tene of his bed men, and Rosie himfelfe escaped berie narowite; and to continued frill in his former outrages, butill he was intrapped and taken by a ocule of his owne to intrap others, which was in this manner. Apon the nine and twentith of June 1578, he fet forth of purpose an espiall, whom he had curninglie framed, and made apt for the purpose to go to fir Barnard Fitzpatrike lord of bur et Darie, Abaituble and to tell him by the wate of great friendly and per And in secrette, that Roste Mg had beene of late in the country of Religious countie of Bilkennie, and there had taken a great prete and spotle of pots, pans, and other houshold Auffe, which he might easilte take if he mould adven

1578

ture the matter; and if he did wisclie handle it, he might also take Kozie himselse and all his companie, thich as he faid (but untrulie) that they were but few in number. The load of opper Diferie, neither believing not yet milituating this newes, and yet forecasting the work, did put himselse in readinesse to follow the occasion that was offered, and faking with him a good companie of hordiemen and forts men, went towards the place where the bait was laied; and being come neere onto it made faie, or 1 elle be had beene intrapped, and sent thirtie of his men into the woods to ferch for Rosie. But the baron himselse with certeine of his horsemen and thot faied in the plaines, to attend the iffue of the mats ter. The companie were no loner entered into the woos, but Rosie the revell thewed himselfe with a thirtie persons, the rest lieng in ambuth; and he was of the opinion that his fame and estimation was fo great, and of fuch value among the Irithic, that no mandurst to aduenture bpon him if he once saw 20 his prefence. But he was occeived. For at the first light and view of him, the lood of Diferies therne gaue the charge opon him, and at their incounter one of them lighted boon him, and with his fwood presentlie thank him through the bodie: which was no foner done, but two or three hacked upon him, gaue him such deadlie wounds that he fell downe and died, the same being the last date of June beforelaid; and so this bloudie caitife, deliting all in bloud, perished and died in his owne bloud.

But before Rorie Dg was thus brought to de-Arnaton, the losd deputie made a fournie to the bosin looder ders of Offallie and Ler, to have met with the forepatmastry faid Rozie Dg + bis companions the Dconno2s for the lappelling of their infolencie, who were grows en into luch a patoe by taking of capteine Harings... ton, and their frength foincreafed, that with most bidutifull termes they breathed out flanderous fpaches against hir maiestie, as which were not to be indured. Wherefore he beset the whole countrie confines as he thought belt, to ftop their pallage and to annote them, & fo he went to littleennie, and thereby sundie examinations found people of all degrees in that towne to have relieved the faid Ko rie with vittels and all other necessaries, for his fee ding and defense, with whome he twhe order according to their deferts. At his being there he fent for the earle of Defmond to come buto him, bicaufehe had refused to come to the load pressornt when he fent for him fundzie times, and for which cause the said 50 friende of load president was there to complaine upon him, as also that he had of his owne authoritie, without historic to antic warrant, gathered togither a rable of lewd and thind being antic warrant, gathered togither a rable of lewd and thind being and bottom the to kilkin; burulie followers, which harried by and downe the countrie, eating and fpending upon the fame, contravie to all good orders, and which was not to be lub

Which earle forthwith, byon the receipt of the faid letters, came to Bilkennie to the lord deputie, and there being eramined of those his butemelie parts, 60 confessed some part : and for excuse he alledged and much missrussed and doubted the president, least he would have faied him, and have vied him hardie, for which he was blamed and repromed by the lood deputime of tie. But in the end, when they came togither, they dinond and were reconciled and made good friends, and then he kindysia promised byon his returne home to disperse abroad histome discompanions, and to overe the president as hir maiesties principall officer of that province, and to come buto him at all commandements, and which things he performed. For not long after he ottered detailed and betwaised to the laid load packident the pastiles nond bile of James Fitzmoris, who by the arrivall of certeine And tof Frenchmen and Triffmen onto Sligo, in a thip of

faint Dalowes, Did what he could to firre 4 make a lord prefident rebellion in Hounffer and Connagh, whereby a plot fants fitz was lated for the fraie of those Frenchmen, and the practices. appehention of the Irithmen. Thele were god demonfirations to the otter thew of the obedience and localtie of the fact earle, but in truth more billinus lation, as afterwards it apeared.

Connagh was in some part troubled, by means of Diwarke capteine of his furname; in whose Coiners in countrie there were certeine coincrs of monie, and Connagh, mainteined by him. The coconeil binder landing hereof, he fent unto Dewarke for them, and the Denied to beliver unie of them: wherefore to correct found to believe that his pride, disobedience, and infolencie, he fent a ner f coincid prinat band of fortmen, who diffrested Diwarke, flue biscastellis his men, toke his castell, and put all the ward to the taken, and he fivozo. Therebpon he came with all humilitie, and fabmitteth fubmitted himfelfe, and craued pardon. All the refis himfelfe. due of Connagh was veric quiet, and increased hir maiesties revenues to the yearelie funme of eightiene hundred pounds by the yeare, with good contentation. And now when it was thought that all things were quiet throughout all Ireland; behold fudden advertisements were given both unto hir mateffie and councell in England, and to the lood Deputie in Ireland, that Thomas Stukelcie was ar, Tho. Stuke rived out of Italie onto Cadis in Spaine, with cer to come into teine men, thips, and munitions alligned unto him Fredand, by the pope. And being accompanied with certaine frangers attending boon him, he was come to the feas, to land bpon some part of the realme of Fres land, in trattozous maner to inuade the fame, and to pronoke the people to toine with him in rebellion. All Great prepare things, as well men, munitions, monte, vittels, and ration made all other things necessarie were prouted and pic, against pared fo, the preuenting of them , as well by fea as Stukeleie. by land : but in the end, aduertisement was given from out of Portugall, that his enterprise was di uerted another wate, and to another purpole, and lo all things were quiet. Peuerthelelle, it appeared that The pope his he was in great fauour with the pope, and was ap fauour pointed to Come (pectall feruice againft bir maicitie, Stuketere. if opportunitie would have ferued, a all other things had fallen out as it was deuiled. And for the incouraging of him, the pope belives great treasures live: rallie belfowed bpon him , he gaue him fundzie tie tles of honour, and made him knight, baron of Rolle and Jozon, bicount of the Pozough & Benth Stubcleie hie lagh , and earle of Merford and Catherlough, and honour and marquele of Leinster, and generall to the most hos lie father Gregorie the feuenth Pontifici maximo.

In the middle of these broiles, the vicount Baltinglatte, one of the chiefe impugners and malecon, tents against the cette, wrote his letters to the earle of Dimond, then attendant at the court of Eng. land, and complaineth of great infuries and spoiles to the value of two hundzed pounds in monie, be, Chebicoune fides numbers of theepe and kine, done bpon him Battinglaffe and his tenants by the English fouldiers, under fir tothe carle of Oicholas Bagnoll knight marthall thou then have Picholas Bagnoll knight marthall, when they were Demond alodged one night in his house at Baltinglasse, in the gains fir file time that they ferued boon the rebell Rote Dg. chotas Bag-Which letter was by the fait earle thewed to hir ma, woll tellie, and to the loads of hir most honourable painie councell. Apon thich complaint , bicause it seemed The carle of Cometibat pitious and lamentable, and hir maieflie Damondads partlie persuaded (as a matter verie likelie to be uernfeth the true) that fuch greuous ertortions fuffered bucor, complaint of rened, made hir gouernement moze hatefull to that hir mauflie nation, than did anie of the Irith eracions: letters and connecil. were fent to the load deputie, to take care with all Bir matelie biligence, that the pope oppeded might be fatilited, in the behalfe and the offendors also be punished, according to the of the bicount quantities and qualities of their offenles.

Baltinglaffe.

The bicount 1Baltingiaffe complaineth to the load De = putic against fir Micholas 25 agnott.

The losd deputie, before the receipt of these letters, was complained but by the faid vicount, and fir Picholas Bagnoll was called to answer such hurts as were objected against him. And opon the replication of the vicount, fir Lucas Dillon and fir Thomas fitzwilliams knights were amointed to eramine all such witnesses, as were brought forth for profe of the farmiles, which in the end fell out to none effect, for nothing could be proued to ante purpote. But it appeared manifest of the contrarie, by the re. post and testimonie of fundzie gentlemen of berie god credit, and how that the faid marthall at his firth comming to that towne, has given great charge to enerie capteine, to forelæ that no infurte fould be offred, no spoiles committed, not anie thing to be tar hen by ante fouloier or other perfon without prefent paintent, protesting and proclaming execution ac. cording to marthall law, opon fuch as thould do the contrarte. Likewise at his departure from thense, he made

the like proclamation, that if there were anie which had ante cause of complaint for ante wrong or inturiedone, orthat anie thing were taken and not paied for, he thould come and be heard, and be fatilfied. And by this it doth ameare, that the farmiles were made rather to aggrauat his greefe conceived against the imposition of the cesse, than for anie god matter in truth. Wherefore as he and his complices prevailed little in the one, no more had he successe or credit in the other. For the matter was fulliecer, 30 tified but of the loads of the councell, and a request therewith made verie earnesslie, that the said vicount might be repromed, and also terrified to profer ozpzacife any fuch butrue and indirect dealings. By thele and other the like practices of the faid vicount, that bicante he did not broke nor like of the cette, he thought by wate of erclames to aggrauat his owne case, that thereby the losd deputie might fall into the diffile of hir maieffie, and be out of fauour, but the

The whole land in peace

The bicount

Baltinglaffes

complaints

are butrue.

1578 The fword is Delivered to fir william Daurie as lozdiuftice.

The beparture of fir Benrie Sid: neie, and of his talt faiengo.

The notable works of Moles, & pet he not acs cepted.

niscredit. When the losd deputie had ended and finished all his businesse, and had let the whole realme in order and peace, being now deliucred from inward and cimill warre, and from the feare of Stukeleies inuali. on, be prepared (according to hir maiesties former letters of the fix and twentith of Warch last past) to take his pallage for England, and to make his repaire to hir highnesse. And so when all things were according tie prepared, and the wind a weather fo feruing, he delivered by the fword according to hir mas tetties commandement, the fir f twentith of Pate 1 578, bnto fir William Daurie, then load prelibent of Pounter. And then being conducted by the faid now losd indice and councell, and all the nobilitie, citizens a people to the waters live, he imbarked himfelfe, taking his leave in most honourable, louing, and courteous maner of everie man. And at his berie entring into the thip for his farewell unto that 114 pfalme, In exitu Ifrael de Aegypto, & domus Iacob de populo barbaro: alluding thereby to the troubles some trate of Poses in the land of Aegypt, and of his departure from out of the same: who not with fanding he had in great wifedome, care, and policie governed the Affnecked people of Afraell, had done many miracles and wonderous works to their comfort, had delivered them from maniegreat perils and dangers, had preferued and also kept them in peace and fafetie, had in the end through the mightie hand of God brought them out of the hands of Phas rao, and from out of the land of Aegypt, and had gis uen them the fight of the land of promise: yet he found them alwaies a froward and peruerle genera.

tion, a stiffenecked and an ungratefull prople: cuen no lette as this noble man, and most worthis governour hath found of the people of this most curifed nation. Who not with fanding he was a veric pain, nation. Tabo notwith tanoung he was a verte pain the can'en full traveller both by date and night, in fowle and in the traveller both by date and in towners in faire weathers, in stoomes and in tempests, in lood departe troubles and in dangers, in Carlitie and in penurie, not confident in danger of the enimie and perill of his life: and pet continuallie fludieng, deuifing, travelling, tolling, and labouring to do them god (as he did full manie and often times) which folong as they felt the eafer comfort, fo long were they contented and quiet: but otherwise most vngratefull and buthankefull. And offering unto him the like reward as Licurgus tes ceiued of the most buthankfull Lacedemonians, who then he had recovered that favage nation to a civill life, and a politike governement, and in the end reduced them to that order and maner, as they became to Epimorelle be feared of all their neighbors, they in recompense tube of the euill intreated him in verie bad speaches, and strake Lacebemon out one of Licurgus his eies. But thefe men fo, ans to Li thoulands and infinit commodifies, would not one, curgus lie have bereft his lozofhip of both his eies, but also done him a further inconvenience (if successe had happened) according to their malice.

And now here by the waie, let if not be offenfine to fet bowne somewhat of much concerning this two, this and noble man for the course of his life. He was borne and descended of a noble house and par Chepsten rentage, bis father named fir William Sidneie, a tage offit knight of great reputation and credit in the countie Benie of Bent, and in great favour with king Henrie the Bidnik eight, in whole time, and with his great good liking, he and others luftie young gentlemen of the court trauelled into Spaine and other nations, to bilit and to fie the maner of the emperours and other print ces courts: his mother descended of the house of Charles Beandon duke of Suffolke, unto whom the was verie nere alico. This yong gentleman, his father being beceafted, and he of berie tender and contrarie in the end fell out to his owne reprofe and 40 yong yeres, was brought op in the court bnoer the fame mailter as was king Edward the firt, and pro, fited verte well, both in the Latine and French tongs, for he had a berie god wit, and was berie forward in all god actions, and whereof was conceived ued some god things would come of him: his count bir hente tenance was verie amiable, and his behaufour verie Stoner but gentle and courteous , in whome king Henrie the bioughty eight (being his goofather) had a verte great liking, the count. so and made him be attendant and plaisfellow with

pzince Edward. This prince fell in such a god familiaritie and Birhmit good liking of him, that he vied him not onelie as a Stoneth companion; but manie times as a bedfellow, and canton and to delighted in his companie, that for the most part bedilion. they would never be alunder, neither in health, not in lickenesse, untill the dieng date of the prince: tho The bling be then departed his life in this gentlemans armes. emifron Somethat before his death, the king gaue the order rie Slamis thole land and nation, he recited the words of the 60 of knighthod to this gentleman, for a memorie and arms. a recompense of his good will and love : byon which date also he of the like onto six William Cics. The being now lozd Burghlie and lozd high treasures of all bubbeth six England : by meanes of which their contoined ad penta bo uancement, there entred a verie feruent affection nate and fi and god will betweene them, with a recipioke and culturally culturally contained the management of the brightness and contained to the brightness and culturally culturally contained to the brightness and contained to the b Iwering of benenolence each one to the other, butill one best. their dieng dates. This noble gentleman for his for waronelle in all goo actions, was as it were the par Edm. Moli ragon of the court, by reason of the manie googliss neur thich God had bestolved boon him enerie wate. For concerning the bodie, he was goodie of person and well compact, and well besome ; he was comelie and of a good countenance, he was to courteous and

of logod behaviour, he was to wife and to modell, b vertuous and fo godlie, fo discreet and so sober, as he was another scipio; being but young in years, and old in behaviour, and finallie fo rare a man, as that age had not afforded manie better. This man for his ercellent good giffs, he was made amballa por into France, being but about one and twentie peaces of age; and twife in one yeare after that in minimus, to Scotland: and by quæne Parie foined in commillion with others to attend king Philip his com, 10 ming into England, for the mariage betweene their maiesties . And now in this hir mateffies reigne , he was fent ambaffadoz into France, to treat a peace of pacification betweene the prince of Con-

vie and the duke of Buile.

dir Denrie dionale an

concretore

_{bright} of the

en Penrie

producte log d productor at

nimis lord

The plot of

mis.

In the beginning and about the fecond or third peare of hir maieffies reigne, he was made knight of the garter, and lood prelident of Wales; and after one of hir maiefties moft bonozable prinie councell. But before this, immediatlie bpon his returne from out of Spaine, he accompanied the loed Thomas loed Fitzwaters his brother in law into Ireland: where he was made treasuro; at the wars, one of the principall offices in the land: and in course of time & yeares for his excellencie in know ledge and erperience in that land, he was made load tultice foure times, and was lood deputie theé times. In which offices, how he did most honorablic acquite himselse, his acts do declare, and the summarie recitall thall partlie discouer and fet bowne. 30 De was no loner placed in gouernement, but firft and forthwith he laid downe his plot, where boon he would ground a late the foundation of his governes ment, and according to it would be frame and direcall his actions: which plot and beuile confifteth in thefe points ; religion towards God , obedience to the prince, the peace of the people, and the well government in all things concerning the commonwealth, either in caules civill of martiall.

Concerning religion, he was no more carefull in 40 his owne person, but the like also in his privat famil lie, where he had bailte exercites of praiers, both earlic and late, morning a evening, neither would behaue ante to serue him, who was not affected to religion, and of an honest conversation. Atheists and papills he detelled, dronkards and adulterers he abhorted, blafthemous and diffolute persons he could not abloe. And at his first being in authoritie in Freland, a finding the whole land generallie (a few pair uat places ercepted) to be either of no religion, or of papilicall religion; and being openlie by a preacher out of a pulpit advertised, that in the remote places Interpret of that land, mante a soule was borne which never received baptisme, noz knew anie christening; great was his grefe, and much was he unquieted, untill he had found the redzelle thereof. Wherfore he adners tiled bir maieftie, & moft earnefflie fued & praied for rediesse reformation, which in the end was granted, sa commission fent to him for the same : which foothwith he committed to the archbilhops & bilhops 60 to erecute, with whom he toined, furthered and holpe them accordinglie to the ottermoft. But yet it toke not that god effect as he wither and willed it might. And as for ecclesiasticall livings which were of his giff and disposition, he would never bestow, but by on luch, as of whome he conceived a good opinion, both for his religion and honefie.

The prince, tho was scarle knowne in manie plas ces in that land, he brought both to knowledge and obedience. The wild he tamed, the froward he refore med, the disobedient he punished, the traitors he perlecuted, the revels he chaffiled, the proud he made to flope, and that arrogant and most insolent Shane Dneile, who could abise no equall, nor acknowledge

a superioz, by a draught was brought to his deferued confusion: a whose head for a trothete, a for the er ample of Gods fuffice lated bpon him, was fet bpon a pole bpon the gate of the castell of Dublin. The Mullicer thole prounce of Alfter, with all the mightie per fo bedience. nages of the same, he brought to the quænes peace & obedience. The earle of Clanricard he twhe and im The carle of prisoned, and his butamed springals he draue to Clauricard fubmillion, and to five are outie and obedience. The unpuloned. buconstant earle of Desmond and all his Giral. Chemightie dines and followers, and the proud and bugratefull Mounter earle of Clancar, and all the Frische of his ad brought to herents, he made them perforce to submit them, submission. felues, and to crave pardon. The Cauenaghs, the Dtoles, the Dbirnes, the Dcomores, the Dmores, Leinfter taand a rable of other like lepts , togither with Ko med. rie Dg, Wheon Pac Hew, and other their leaders and guides in Leinster he tamed, and perforce compelled to Aveare lotaltie and Subsection. Lastile, the malecontents against hie maiesties prerogative for The malecons the celle in the end cried Peccaui, and conformed tents against themselves in all outifulnesse. And when he had tras the cesse refore uelled long in these affaires, with he saw could med. not have continuance, bulette they by foine other meanes might be kept bnoer gouernement : he by pithie perfualions, found arguments, great reasons, and continuall futes to hir mateffie and councell, ob. teined to have rulers and governozs to be placed in the remote provinces and found, learned, and bpe right fult lawiers out of England to be fent ouer. for the direction of the government, according to the lames of England: which in the end hir maicffie most gratioullie granted, and he most toifullie ob.

In Mounter therefore firth he placed a coronell to breake the ile ; namelie fir Humfreie Bilbert,a ba- Sir Duma liant, a worthie, and a notable man, both for his mare freie Gilbert tiall feruice, and his civill government: after him cozonell in Adounter. followed the like and worthie gentleman fir John Sir John Perot knight : and laftlie the valiant and prodent Perot, Sir fir William Diurie , which both were lozo prefit william bents . Ahis man was afterwards lood inflice , and Daurie lood the other at these presents is look deputie of that Mounter. land . In Connagh fir Coward fitton knight, a berie wife and a modelf gentleman, late treasuro; at Sir Edward armes, was lood president: and after him was sir fitton and sir Aicholas Palbie knight a valiant and expert man Micholas Palbie goin martiall matters, and verie wife and of god vernors in knowledge in publike and civill causes : who could Connagh. verie eractie handle the swood, and vie the pen, he (I faie) was made cozonell of all Connagh. And bow well the forefato rulers and governors of rule by the fword, with the afficiance of their capteins, and how opzightlie they ministred law and instice by the adulte of the councelloss in their fenerall prouinces, the records and registers of their dwings do at large witnesse and set footh. The like order he twice also at Dublin, which being the metropole and chiefe citie of the whole land, and where are hir maiesties principall and high courts, to answer the law to all futors throughout the whole realme : and he confidering that a great defect was in the administration of instice in those courts, by reason of English laws kinred, affinitie, and privat affections among the persplaced to thiefe lunges and officers of that countrie birth ; beiuftices in he by his like earned lutes to hir maiellie , procured the courts, them to be remoued, and their romes to be lumlied with fuch wife, grave and learned Englithmen , as were fent from out of England to be chiefe tuffices, atturneie, and follicitoz. And further allo, thereas there were manie god lawes & Catutes established The Catutes in the realine, which hitherto were lato by and throu, to be revewed bed in filth and cobwebs, and bifer lie buknowne to and printed. the most part of the whole land, and everte man ig.

The rebels in

notant in the lawes of his owne native countrie, he caused a through view, and a review to be made, and then a choise of all such Catutes as were mot necessarie to be put in the and execution : which be ing done, he caused to be put in print, to the great

The records fearched and (et bp in placcs convente cnt.

The caltell chamber dulic kept.

> Edm. Moli-TICUX.

The Irish grounds res counties and thires.

Dublin res parco.

fortified.

A nacic at Molengar butibed. rie in Connagh be caused to be recoified, & the faire Athenrie res bridge of Athlon byon the depe and great river of The bridge of the Shenin he builded with masonrie and free stone, Athlon new and raised by the walles : battlements berie faire.

benefit of that whole nation. And like wife for the records, which were verie e. nill kept , not fenfed og befended from raine and foule weather, but late all in a chaos and a confused beape, twithout ante regard ; he caufed to be vietwed 10 and forted, and then prepared meteromes, preffes, and places for the keeping of them in fafetie, and bib appoint a special officer with a yearelie fix for the kæping of them: and for all such matters as were to be heard and determined in the castell chamber, before the lords, as it is in the flar chamber in Eng. land; he would be for the most part present at enerte court, and alwaics would have the affiliants and persons of hir maiesties learned councellogs . Reucrthelece, he himselfe had a maruellous head to 2 conceiue, a depe inogement to bnoerstand, and a most eloquent tong to otter that soener was requifit to be spoken, either in that place, or in anie other affemblie, which he would deliver in such an eloquent

theafe, and to pleasantlie it would flow from him, with fuch pithic reasons, sound arguments, and et fectuall discourses, as that the lesse learned he was, the more frange it was that ludgreat god things could come out of his mouth . And luch was his amiable countenance, his comelie behautoz, his com 30 men, verie familiar with most men, and strange to mendable personage, that he would and dio conquet their hearts, and gaine the love of everie man; and the people of all forts would and did fall in love with him for his oppightnelle, indifferencie, and iuffice, in determining of everie mans caule. And he know ing the nature and disposition of that people, who could not abloe anie long lutes in law, he was to ak

cause, and with such expedition would cause the same 40 to be determined, that he purchased to himselfe the univertall love of all the Irithzie, who thought themfelues the more hamie, if their causes might be once brought to his hearing, & the more willing to leave their Dhian law, a to imbrace the course of the English laives. Where boon he deviled, and consequent. lie with great policie and wisedome erecuted the diuilion and diffribution of the wild, fauage, and Frish

fable and courteous, that everie lutor should have

accesse but o him, and footh with he would heare his

kind of officers as are vied to be in all other counties: by which meanes hir maieffies wit had paffage amongest them, and they brought to the order of the Englichlaives & gouernement, which never tofoze was heard or knowne among them.

When he had dome all such things as are before

grounds into thire grounds and counties, apointing

recited, for and concerning the due course of govern, ment by order of law: then also he bethought himfelfe byon such other things as were necessarie in of Dublin, which before his comming was ruinous, fonle, filthie, and greatlie decated. This he repared, and reedified, and made a verie faire house for the loed deputie of the thiefe governor to relide a divell Chetowneof in. The towne of Cariglergus, being open to the Cariglergus northerne rebelles, he began to inclose with a wall and to fortifie, which for thortnette of time he could not finith. A gaole at Wolengar he builded, a berie necessarie thing in those parties, for restreining and The towne of fafe keeping of malefactors. The towne of Athens

By building of which bridge a pallage (never tofore bad) was made open e fre betwene the English vale and Connagh, which more banted, apalled, and beut the rebelles in awe and obedience than any thing be, fore had done . Sundzie like common workes he made and did, and more would, if his reliding there had continued. All which his forfald doings, no doubt. were verie chargeable to hir maiestie. And for easing Thequana thereof he(as it became him) & in verie bed had also greatcharges promiled and deutled how and by what means thefe tobe relaud tharges might be answered, and hir highnesse be reloued of the great and intollerable charges which the dailie was at in that land, he did by god means inlarge and increase hir revenues and yearelie re: hir matelita ceipts to about eleven thousand pounds by the yeare runnism more than he found it, and much more would he have trasto. done, if he had fraied there but a fort time longer

than he did. Thus much brieffie of his generall actions, and concerning his prinat dealings and convertation. The goods De was godlie bilpoled, & a zelous promoter of the tuesandal frue reliaton, a notable ogatog, cout of whole mouth henric sub flowed such eloquent speches, such pithie sentences, no fuch perfuafozie realons, as it was verie frange, Religious, that he by a naturall course thoulo performe that Cloquing which manie by learning could not reach noz atteine bnto . We had some fight in god letters and in histories and armozies, and would discourse verie well in all things; he was affable and courteous to all Affable none; verie temperat and model, feldome of nener Competat in anic diffempered or ertraordinarie choler, bpright in tulice, fre from corruption, and liberall to euerte Liberall deferring person, a bounteous housekeeper, and of 3 housest great hospitalitie, and had all officers in veric bono, per, rable order, according to his estate chonor; athing much allowed and liked in that nation : berie famile liar, and a louer of all fuch as were learned and were men of understanding, whome he would hono; and elleme berie much; gratefull to all men, and a molt louing maifter to all such as ferued him, whom he los ued fall dearlie. And albeit he were a man of a great Samuel reach and subgement, yet be would not do anie this fir has thing without admice countell, for thich purpole be the English made a special choise of two singular men, who were chomics, printe to all or most part of his actions; fir Lucas In. Don. Dillon knight, and Francis Agard elquier : the one 1584 mith a lawier, and pet not ignorant in anie thing pertein income fifter to the marthall affecting ing either to the marthall affaires, or to the civill in cuerie of them thiriffes, conffables, and all luch 50 gouernement : the other a verie wife man, and of a deepe indgement and experience in all matters of policies. And to true and truffie thefe were, that he named the one Meus fidelis Lucas; and the other Meus fidus Achates. And not with fanding in fundate and almost infinit respects, as partile by the course of this historie it doch ameare, be hath deserved most hartie thanks, and a gratefull remembrance for euer a. The ingrite mongsi them: pet most bunnaturallie and bugrafful tank lie they have requited and recompensed him. pot The callell of fundzie respects to be done, as the cassell and house 60 much bulke the viper, who when he hath done the act of generation with his female, which (as the wat ters of naturalles faie) it is done by the mouth, the The matural immediatlie biteth off bis bead , and lo deffroieth epeuper. him; and likewife the yong, conceived with the death of their fire or father, and nourithed in the wombe of their mother, and readie now to be borne a brought footh; they not abiding their due time, mol buna, turallie dognawout hir wombe and bellie to bir confusion; and so they are conceived with the destruction of their father, and borne with the confusion of their mother. This ongratfull people (I fate) not with Chanding the innumerable benefits bestowed boon them and that thole commonwealth, yea and the dailic purchating of their wealth, prefernation, and

This wis a mable forms eichement.

Chreeffe im=

Ebt corrupt

fafetie, could ne would be ever thankfull. As belides manie examples it appeared at the parlement holden in the elementh years of hir materies reigne, where when lawes were to be established for their benefit, and the abolithing of certeine wicked and lews plages, which were among the Iriffizie, thep not onelie vio impugne and relift that affemblie, as much as in them late: but recompensed the good things (for their benefits elfablithed) with open war and rebellion against hir maiestie. Also, when a rear 10 fonable and a vied ceffe was to be fet and leuted for the benefit of the inhabitants and divellers in the Englif pale; and for the reprette of their enimies which thirtied after their confusion: they immediatly repine and do refiff the fame . Foz this is their coze rupt nature, that if he did at anie time pursue the e. nimie for their peace and quietnelle, and did aduen: ture never fo great dangers for them, were his fuc. ceffe neuer fo goo, pet would they envie at him . If be by the abutle of the councell bio octermine anie 20 thing for their behofe, yet would they millike it. If ante thing well meant had entil successe, they would likeit; and byon never to little occasion offered they would make their complaints, libels fould tailie be erhibited, and acculations be deutled, with open mouths they would exclame, and nothing would they leave bnowne which might turne to his discredit and impediment of his government. But truth the daughter of time, which in the end was manifested; and when he had yeelded before hir highnesse and 3 councell a true and a perfect account of all his do, ings, and had trulie manifested the course of his go. wernement, then their glittering gold was found to be worse than comer, not abiding the hammar, he accopping to his defert received thanks, and they reproch and ignominie. Wherefore great god cause badhe to be glad and foffull, that he was to be delivered from to ungratfull a people and unthankfull a nation . But thall a man faie the truth . It is a fai Chamilder tall and an incuitable bestinie incident to that nation tubon all on, that they cannot broke anie English governor; for be he never to tuft, opzight, & carefull for their be. nefit, they care not for it: let him be neuer so beneficial to their commonwealth, they account not of it; lethim be never to circumfped in his governe, ment and adulted in his dwings, they will discredit and impeach it . If he be courteous and gentle, then like a fort of nettles they will fling him; if he be fer vere they will curffe him; and let him do the best he

This noble and worthis man, who about all o thers had best triall thereof, thought himselfe most hapie then he was delivered from them, and gone out of their Egypt, and now returned to his owne native countrie of Chanaan, tho thenleforth some times attended the court, and ferued hir matellie as amost faithfull, grave, and wife councellog: fome times be followed his charge and calling of prefident in Wales, which office he did most honogablie vie 60 and discharge. In the end, then Lachelis had spun out the thread of his life, and Atropos readie to eres cute hir office, he fell sicke at Warzester: and fee ling a decate of nature, and that he did dailie war weaker and weaker, he yelded and humbled him felfe to die; and holding by his hands, and lifting bphiseies he continued in most bartie and incel lant praices buto God, craving with a most penitent bart, pardon for his fins, and commending his foule into the hands and mercie of God, thorough the bloud of Jefus Chift. And when his hands gave or ter, his tong ceased, and his light failed, he pelded ophis spirit, and departed this life in a most goolie and chillian maner the fift date of Paie, one thou

Cand fine hunded efabtle and fir. His boole was ini. bowelled, and his entrails were buried in the deans chamell of the cathedrall church in Worceffer: his hart was carried to Ludlow, & there into med in the tome that his welbeloued daughter Ambrolia was buried, which he had builded in the collegiat church of the same towne; wher in he had erected a certeine mos nument for a perpetuall remembrance to that town to Tikenhill, to which he was verie much affected, a made his most above during the time of his press dencte. And from thense his bodie by easte tournies was verte honozablie carted to his house of Pene, Edm. Mothurst in Bent, in his partif durch there he was interred in all honozable maner, as to his effate did a. gree opon the one and twentith of June, in the yeare one thousand five bundzed eightie and fir, he being then about the age of leaven and fiftie yeares. And thus this noble and worthie knight, who had spent the thole course of his life in the dutiful service of his prince, and to the great benefit of the common: wealth, is now delivered buto the everlasting fernice of the eternall Bod, in whose celestiall heavens he resteth in blisse and tote with the foure and twentie elders, who there are now beholding the face of God, and praising his holie name for ever.

But to returne to the logo inflice, tho being en bir william fered into the governement, and finding it in some Daurie the quiet flate, did by the aduite of the councell follow lood inflice for that course as necre as he could, as which was left course of his burto him; and by that meanes kept the whole land predecedor to perie quiet and in peace. For almost a yeare after his rule in peace. entrie into that office and governement, butill that Romith cockatrice, which a long time had let about boon hir egs, had now hat thed hir chickins; which be ing benemous as were their fire, raifed, wrought, and beed great treasons, open warres, and hostilitie through out that land. For James Fitzmoris a Gis raldine & couline germane to the earle of Delmond, James fitte tho not manie yeares before had beene an archtrate moris a toz, and a principall capteine of the warres and re, archtraitoz. bellion in Pouniter; and wherein he was then to for lowed at inches and purfued by fir John Perot, then lood president of Pountier; that after manie and fundzie conflicts, he was in the end compelled and inforced to geld and lubmit himfelfe, and to craue James fitza hir matelities gratious pardon: infomuch that he moris submits came in fimplie into the towne of Bilmallocke, and teth himfelte there in the church before all the people did humble obedience, and proffrate himselfe before the said lord president, can, be thall never avoid not escape their malice and 50 and asked pardon, swearing and promiting then all dutifulnette, truth, a obedience for ever to hir highneffe, and to the crowne of England.

Quen this pertured cattife, who for his treasons James fitzi and great outrages, villanies, and bloudifieds, had moris hath deferued a thousand deaths, and yet in hope of a bis paron mendement hir matellie gaue him his pardon, and tent buto him. fent it bnto him by hir fernant Francis Agard el. quier : euen this man (3 faie) molt traitozoullie fled into France, and there comming into the kings prefence, did offer to deliver into his hands the whole James First realme and land of Ireland, if that his materie mois fleth would give him ato, and furnith him with men and into france monie, and such furniture as he Chould have need of and offereth monte, and lucy turniture as he choling are the recommend in luch an action. The king at the first gave him god Fredand to the countenance, great rewards, eliberall interteine. French king. ment, and accepted his offer ; but ichen he had well considered the matter, and had further loked into the fame, he changed his mind . James fitzmozis, Che French tho had flated there in the French court about two bing mills mo had used there in the Items of the French kert to deste peares, and faw nothing go forward, 4 the French kert to deste in Ireland king wared cold; who in the end gave him no other matters. answer, but that he would commend him by his let ters to his fifter the quæne of England, for obtetning of a parton for him, and for hir goo counter

:01

154

tip and to the pope.

James fitz: moris his nzomile to king Phi= lip and the pope.

The none is mozis offer.

acquainted with doctor Sanders and Doctor Bilen.

nithed with thing and all necellaries.

at Saint ABarie weeke in Areland Swith foure fcoze Spa= mards.

mores thips are taken a= Spaic by one Chomas

Sir Tames and fir John of Defmond theestles bzethzen come to Tames Fitzmozis.

James Fitz nance towards him : he folloke France , and mozis feeketh made a fournie into Susine unto king Mulin The made a fournic into Spaine onto king Philip. The king who had received the gift of Freland of the pope by meanes of the bithop of Cathell, being not wil ling to deale therein, without his affiffance & adule; James Kitzmozis made his tournete from thenfe to the pope, onto whom he declared that he had beene with king Philip, as doth appeare by his letters of credit to his holinelle; and that he would deliver and cause to be delinered the kingdome of Ireland by into their hands, and reduce the same againe to the ho, 10 lie church of Rome, if he might have men, monie, and such furniture of munitions, tother necessaries as thould be requilit in that feruice . The pope was verie glad of this lute, and liked it verie well, and bid accept this offer, as allo gave him good countenance James fitz= and interteinement. And in the end bpon fundzie conferences betweene the pope and king Philip, it was agreed betweene them, that Fitzmozis thould farie for this feruice. James Fitzmoris during his James Fitz- being in Kome, he fell acquainted with doctor Sandons falled ders an English Tesuit a page Communication. fuit, and both traitors to hir maiestie and crowne; and these two men being glad of such a sute, 4 they in great fauoz with the pope, folowed the lute verte earnefflie, mo promifed to follow it to the bitermoff in their owne persons.

Pow when all things were concluded betweene the pope and king Philip, bodo: Sanders, dodo: Allen, and James fitzmozis made their laft repaire to 30 the pope, who forthwith made Sanders his legat, gauehim the holie ghoff, with authoritie to bleffe and curife at his will and pleasure; and to him and James Fitz- the others he gave then also his bleding; and there mozis is fur- with his letters of commendation to king Philip, the according to the conclusion made betweene them both, he was furnished with all things meet and necessarie for them. Wherebpon when time fers ued they imbarked themselves, and their companie in thie thips well amointed for the purpole, and ar-James fitz- riued at Smeretweke, dias faint Parte weke, in the mozis landeth beginning of Julie 1579, neere the Dingle a cufh in Berrie in Ireland: where he landed, and all his come panie, being about the number of foure score Spa niards, befides a few Englithmen and Frithmen, and there builded a fort in the west side of the baie for their fafetie: and drew their thips close bnder the faid fort.

The two doctors, when they had hallowed the place after their popish maner, promising all fafeties, and that no enimie should dare to come boon them, and trouble them:nevertheless they were beguiled. For at that instant, there was in Bensale a Deuonshire Jomes fitz: gentleman and a man of warre, named Thomas Courtneie, and he hearing of the landing of this James fitzmozis, and of the popes traitozous les gats, was contented, and by the perfusion of Dengentleman of a good wind, did come about and doubled the point, 60 did persuade them to the like, tho as then had all gains the Denon. came into the baic of Saint Parte weke of Smer weke, and finding the three thips of James Fitzmor ris at anchoz, was so bold in the waie of god speed to take them. And after that he had fated there a while in that feruice, he toke them all along with him: whereby James Fitzmozis and his companie ioff apiece of the popes bleffing, for they were altogither destituted of anie thip, to ease and releve themselves by the seas, what need soever thould hap pen. As sone as they were thus landed, newes was fent and carried absode forthwith to James & John brethren to the earle of Defmond, and to confequent lie to the whole countrie. These two brethren, who had long loked for the arrivall of this their confine,

and archtraitoz, affembled all their tenants, foleine ers, and friends; and out of hand made their prefent repaire onto him: whole commings and companies he accepted verie thankefullie, fauing that he had not a thorough and a full liking of his couline fir John of Delmond. Which when fir John perceined. he deutled how he would falue that fore, as most wice kedlie afterwards he did.

The earle of Delmond at this time was in recole the nichts fieng of a castell, which he had in the confines of ringoing Brenne Agonellis countrie, who allone as he heard landing of Beenne Agoneuis couline James Fitzmoris, he James fur of the arrival of his couline James Fitzmoris, he would be for the attended of the arge and diffinite his thole come our his but panie of workemen and labourers, pretending in dings. outward thew what he never meant, that he was to withfrand and relift his couline and all his companie, and forthwith maketh his repaire into herrie, and there affembleth all his followers and force, as Themka though he would do great things and worke mira. Definion though he would do great which and where must peterding cles. And foothwith likewife he fent his letters to fome frage Was Artie Poze earle of Clancar, & willeth him in againg the all half to affemble all the force he could make, and rebels fentel all half to allemote all the tope of the control with cate to make his specie repaire to him, for banquishing to the cate to make his species repaire to him, for banquishing to the cate to make his species of the cate to m (if they could)of the entinies now landed at S. Da toine with rie weke. The earle of Delmond in the meane time him. had received a piece of the popes bleffing, and his heat was abated. But the erle of Clancar returned Checate a his answer, that he would come but o him with all Clancer to speed, and lie in campe with him where he would, as earled De nere to the Dingle as he might: and accordinglie mond he came to the place appointed. Which Delmond les med to like well though it were against the splene, Defmonth neverthelesse then he saw the forwardnes of Clan Clancars car, albeit he would not, noz pet well could in open readingle ternus fall out with him, pet he deutseth matters therebyon he might have some occasion to distike Clancar by with him, 4 to make him wearie of his companie, parteil fine Which when Clancar perceived, and faw the build. linguelle of Delmond to do ante feruice against the rebels, but rather inclined towards them, he twke the best opportunitie he could, and departed awaie from him, and dismiffed his companie.

The lood instice, tho was at Dublin, as sonc as Thinks he was advertised of James Fitzmosis landing, he maketh all the preparation he can, a march with Mountain all the quænes force towards Bountier, dispatch ing also a mellenger to hir materite of these toward broiles and rebellion. But before he could prepare all things, as to luch agreat action dio amerteine, he o fent Benrie Dauels an English gentleman before nelsent th him, that he being verit well acquainted with the the carled earle of Delmond and his brethren, thould pradile Delmond. with them to prepare themselves to be in a readi nelle to allie his loodhip, for the reliefing against those entinies. Tho being accompanied with one Arthur Carter prouoff marthall of Pountier, made his fpeoie repaire to the earle of Delmond a bis bre Bentit De then being in Kerrie, and advertised but o them the beth Delad lood inflices pleasure, as also as much as in him late to form his force and fouldiers about him. From thense he rebels beparted to the fort, whereof when he had taken the view, a faw the force as yet not to great but might be easilie as yet overtheowne; he returned backe to the earle, and gave him adulte to draw all his force and companie towards the fort, perfuading him to affaile it while it was but weake, of small force, and easie to be taken, and that in so doing it Monld be greatlie to his honour. But the earle being not of to greathing godamind, or bent to do so goda pece of service guest and answered; that he mould not a service of service guest and answered; that he would not adventure to take so byon 3 miles great an enterpate in hand with to finall a comparation nie as he then had. Then Dauels went to fir James and to fir John of Delmonds the earles brethen,

and perfuaded them to admife their brother the earle, ampreciant deruice which would be to his great honour and commendation, or else that they would take it in hand; which if they would also refuse it, that then the earle would spare to him a companie of his Callowglasses, and about the close of his shot, and he would toine with capteine Courtnete who late then within the bate with his mariners, the would gine the affault by land, and the other fhould do the

Threatle tes

like by lea. But the earle, being moued hereof, would not pelo to this motion, but answered that his that was more meet to that at foule than fit to adventure fuch apace of feruice, and his Ballowglaffes were god mento incounter with Gallowglasses, and not to answer old souldiers. Therebpon when he saw the bent and disposition of the earle, that he minded not to annoie, but rather to toine, ato, and helpe the trattous : he togither with the prouoff marthall toke their leave of the earle, and minded to returne backe 20 unto the load tustice, to give his loadship to underfand how all things floo, e that successe he had had inhis mellage. And by the wate they laie that night at Traleigh, which is about fine miles from caffell Maine, and laie that night in one Kices houle , who kept a vittelling house and a wine tauerne, the house being both firong and defentible, but so little that their companies and forwants were dispersed. and late abroad in other places where they might haue lodging. But fir John of Delmond, whole hart 30 was imbrued with a bloudie intent, followed him, but somewhat late, and came to the towne of Traleigh, and immediatlie let fpics bpon Dauels, as also had corrupted the man of the house which kept the gate, that he Could leaue the dozes open . Henrie Dauels millruffing no burt, and least doubting of that tragedie which was so nière at hand, especiallie to be done by him, whom of all the men bozne in that land he least doubted, e best trusted, gat him to his bed; t Arthur Carter the prouoff marthall with him. 40 pow about the bead of the night, when they were in their depe flepes, fir John according to his wice hed deutle came to the house, the castell doze being lest open for the purpose, with all his companie, eue. rie one being armed and their fwoods drawne, and went forthwith by into the chamber there Dauels & his companie were in their beds fast allepe, but with the notic they were fundenlie awaked. When Dauels faw fir John of Desmond armed and his fwood drawn, he was formith at act onice at that fight, 5 and riling up in his bed faid buto him (as he was euer wont to saie verie familiarlie) What sonne! wat is the matter. But he answered him; Po moze fonne, noz no moze father, but make thy felfe readie, allunur. for die thou halt. And forthwith he this compante frake at him & his companion, both naked in their hirts, and most cruellie murthered them both . Then they learthed the whole boule & spared none, but put all to the fword, fauing a boie named Smolkin, who lenger betweene Dauels and this John Delmond. Chipple This boie leeing his maisser to be thus murthered Adabote ran opon John of Desmond, and held him by the his matter, armes as well as he could, crieng; What will thou kill my maister: But he answered; Go thy wates Smolkin, thou thalt have no harme. But the bote feing blowes fill to be given, cast himselfe downe bpon his maifter, crieng. If thou wilt kill him, then kill mealfo. And fo faued him as well, and fo long as be could. But it availed not, for flaine and most cruellie he was there murthered.

This Henrie Danels was a gentuman, soon a way beaun, and descended of a verte ancient and a way beaun, and descended of a verte ancient and a way beaung this first house, and being but a younger brother, and This Penrie Dauels was a gentleman, borne in

having but a verie small postion left buto him, when became to some yeares and knowledge, he gave bimfelfe to ferue in the warres . And king Penrie the eight, having then warres against the French king he entredinto France toleke his aduenture: and there he had verie god interteinment, and pane ued to be a verie god fouldiour. After whole warres he ferued in Scotland, and was in garrison at Bar. wike : and from thenle he was remoued into Ire land, where he ferued buder fir Picholas Herne knight conectable of Leighlin, and senethall of Werford; and so well be behaved himselfe there, that he was commended for his goo fervice towards the prince, well beloved of his countriemen, and in marnelous favour of the Irilh people; for no feruice was to hard for him in the kings causes : and so well he was acquainted with the countrie, as no man better knew and had the skill to serve than he could there. As for his countrimen, he was to deere and louing The loue of towards them, as he was more like a father than a Dauels to frend, and mozelike a freend than an bnacquainted his countrie countriman: for he was an holt and a harborer to men. enerie one of them, of what estate and condition so euer he were of . Foz were he rich or pore, a gentle man oz a begger, be was frændlie to everie one; and no man oid or could lacke that interteinment, that he was by anie manner of wate able to give and affood: which a number of Englishmen tried and found to their great comfort, and to his everlaiting

And as for the Irithmen, the longer he lived the better beloned among them: for as he would not intarie them, no moze would be luffer them to be ops pressed or insured : a great housekeeper amongst them, which they marueloulite elicemed . When he was in office among them, he was byzight and tudged righteoullie; if out of office, louing & frændlie to everte man, and by that means to well as no man better) beloned and truffed. For what he had once faid and promifed , that would be furclie keepe and The credit of performe, and thereof it came into a bie-word in the Dancis word. countrie where he dwelled, that if anie of them had spoken the word, which was assured in loked to be performed, they would fate , Daucls hath faid it : as who faith, it thall be performed. For the nature of the Friffman is, that albeit he keepeth faith for the molt part with no bodie, yet will he have no man to breake with him. But Penrie Dauels, be was fo carefull of his word, that if he once promised, he would not breake it for anie mans pleafure; and by that means he was to well beloved, that his verie hordebotes had free passage even through the entimies, if he were knowne to be Dauels man. And that which is moze, as the writer hereof fpeaketh by on knowledge , that if anie Englishman had anie occasion to travell in that countrie thosoughout Leinter og Mounter, if he had but a hogifeboie of his, he Moulo not onelie passe frælie thozough the countries without impeadment, but thould have lais in the chamber, and had beene a continuall mel 60 also verie god and frendlie interfeinment. Among the noblemen he was greatlie effemed, and was in great fauour with the earles of Dymond and Defmond: who although they were for the most part at tarres and contentions , yet Henrie Danels was in fuch fauour, as he could and did palle to and fro in the greatest matters of importance betweene them : wherein he bare so indifferent a hand, as both parties imbraced him for his byzightnesse and indifferencie. The erle of Damond himfelfe loued him to well , as no Englithman better; and all his bie. then found such a freend of him, and such interteinment with him and especiallie fir Comund Butler, that at all needs and in all diffrestes they were sure to have him to their freend; and manie times it food

Henrie Das ucls alwaies

to fir John of

Delmond.

them in god fréd.

And as for the earle of Delmond, though he were a verie uncerteine and a mutable man, pet Henrte Dauels could prevaile with him; and were his furie neuer to hot, and he neuer to hattie, yet could he ap, peale and quiet him . And as for fir John of Del. mond the earles brother, such was his profession and outward affection towards him, of a moft firme frændship; that it was thought to be impossible, that the love and goodwill betweene them could by anie 10 meanes be diffolued. For in what diffreste to ever fit John of Defmond was (as he was in manic) Henrie Dauels ofo alwates helpe him , and at fundrie times redemed him out of pallon, pea out of the car fell of Dublin, when he was committed for caple tall crimes , and became fuertie for him in great fums of monie, and became pleage bodie for bodie for him; Dauels pur fe was at his commandement, his house at his denotion, and what he had at his dis polition. And so farre this god will grewbetweite 2 them, that John of Delmond, as one knowledging himselse most bounden to him, dio call him father; enen as the other called him sonne . And now se, ichen treason and treacherie was entred into him, how contrarie to all faith, freenothip, and humanitie, the some most unnaturallie bereft the father of his life, and most cruellie murthered him. Wo worth to so wicked a villaine, that so bereft the prince of so faithfull a lubica, the governors of lo truffic a feruito: the commonwealth of fo god a member, of a 30 man most outifull to his superiors, opright in inffice, truffie in feruice, erpert in the warres, faithfull bn. to his freend, louing to his countrie, fauoured of all men, burtfull to no man, of great holpitalitie to all god men, god to all men, a father onto the diffres fed, and a fuccozer of the oppelled; finallie fuch a rare man of his degree and calling, as few like hane beine found in that land; and pet against all pittie and mercie, most cruellie murthered by a traitor to Bad and his prince, even to the greefe of the traitors 40 their ofone minds : advertifing them that in the of his owne brod. But here it fallethout that is of old fait ; Saue a murtherer og a thefe from the gallowes, and he thall be the first that thall cut the throte.

John Delmond for kil= ling of Das

his crucitie milliked,

The popes boctors boo allow and commend the murther.

When this bloudie murtherer had executed this crueltie bpon his good frænd, he forthwith made his repaire to James fitzmozis, and to his bodozs and companie in great brauerie, recompting buto them that a noble act and a valiant service he had done in murthering of an honest, faithfull, t friendlie gentle. The brags of man, fateng ; I have now killed an Englifh churle (for to malicioullie the Frithmen terme all English men) & faio to his couline James; Pow thou maift be assured of me and trust me, for now that I have begun to dip my hand in blod, I will now Cand to the matter with the to my vitermoft . James fitze mozis when he had heard him at full, although both he and his doctors, and the whole companie of the Spaniards did reioile and were glad of his death, pet James of blame and abhorre the maner of his 60 now about the fcore miles from S. Parie weke, beath, blaming and reproving him berie much, that he Choulo murther him in his bed, being naked and fcarle awaked out of his liepe, which he fato was to cruell, bicause he might otherwise have had aduan tage boon him either by the high waies or other wife to his commendation. Holvbeit, dodo; Sanders terming his bloudie murther to be a sweet sacrifice before God oid both allow it, and gave him plenarie remillion of all his finnes. The earle himfelfe likes wife, when he heard hereof, he was maruelouffe graued and offended with his brother, and gave him fuch tharpe speeches and reprofes, as it was thought they would not so some have beine frends againe: but wicked dwings amongs the wicked establish

and confirme them in their bickednelle. At flis present time, there was with the earle (as veric often be had bene) one Ameflete an Englich carteine, tho could do berie much with him, and bpon the hearing of the death of his god friend Henrie Danils. he began to boubt and miliruit of himfelfe and of his owne adurance. Therefore he goeth to the earle, and Therefore he goeth him to death him diffembling his griefe, perfuadeth him to draw his Delmond to companie togither, and to remove from thense to mouth to his house of Alketten, which is about fourtene miles Alketten, from Limerike, and there to abide the comming of the load tultice, and to toine with him in this fernice against the entinie. The earle, who minded nothing leffe than to to ferue, diffembled the matter, and followed this counfell, and removed from thense to As. ketten, where he late close and did nothing, but fill feemed in speeches and outward shelves to millike with James Fitzmozis and all his companie; and pet bailte his best followers and foldiers flocked and repaired to James Fitzmozis, manie of them for Cheratic zeale to the populy religion, wherin they were as de, chickman nout as the popes legates and the Spaniards: but turned in mante of them knowing the earles intent, did it for feare and auctoing of his displeture. The Spaniards, who had continued there in the fort and elsewhere. mid not finding the repaire of the fouldiers, not yet anie other thing answerable to that service as it the house was promifed them, began to millibe it; and diffrust their comme ing of anie god luccelle, bid repent and were forie. withing themselves at home againe: but such was their case, that they could not thift for themselves to escape neither by sea noz by land; and therefore necellitie to compelling, they refolued themselues to abide the brunt.

James fitzmozis, perceining their discontented James fin minds, had conference with them, s perfuaded them morapide to be of a good comfort, for they thould verie thortie marks in proceedings to be of a good comfort, for they though the profile marks in proceedings. have a greater suplie and companie which he dailie ficate loked for and all things (hould be had according to meane time he was to take a journie to a place of the of foure dates tournie from thense, called the bos lie rod or croffe in Lipporarie, and there to performe James fin a vow which he had before made when he was in more prin Spaine, praieng their patience. Wint in berie truth bith a pip his intent was to travell into Connagh and into Allter, and in both his wates, his nærest wate was through Timorarie, and there to flocke and draw in to him all and so manie of the rebels as he could wage to foine with him, whereof he made no boubt, but affured himfelfe to find as manie readie to go as he willing to have. And so taking his fournic with thee or foure hordemen, and a dozzen Bernes, he palled through the countie of Limerike, & came into the countrie of fir William Burke his berie nere couline and kiniman, and tho before in the lall rebellion did idine with him, to the great danger of

his life and lotte of all his gods. Another he came to farre in his tournie, being his cartage hordes (which they terme garons) wared be commanded some of his mentogo before, a loke moust will garrons they first sound in the fields, they garrons though take them and himse them take him and himse them take himse himse take himse take himse take himse take himse take himse take himse himse himse take himse himse himse himse himse himse him faint, and could not trauell ante further: Werefore should take them and bring them onto him. And as tt fell out they espied a plow of garrons plowing in the field, which they fouthwith take perforce from the pore bulbanemen two of them, and carried them awaie. Therespon according to the custome of the countrie, the hobub or the hue and crie was raifed. Some of the people followed the trad, a some went to their loods house, which was fir William Burke et Seit being neere at hand to advertise the matter, tho hat follow the uing three or foure of his connes and berte tall gen plate

tlem it at home with him, they take their hoofics winds and few Kernes and two thot with them, and following lavor the tract and overtails them. and and the trad, and overtwhe them at a fastenes fast by the woods five, there they found James Fitzmos ris, thome before they knew not to be come into in the parties, to make head to answer them. But of the upon the faw that it was his confine Theobald win many were and his brother and his companie, tho had bene his companions in the late rebellion when or John Perot was losd president of Pounster, he 1 pakeouer unto them, and fato, Couline Theobald, wo was the elvest son to his father, two carriage holdes chall be no breach betweene be two; and I hope that you which do know the cause that I have filly now in hand, you will take my part therein, and do options as J and others will dos : and so continuing some puches, did what he could to draw him and all his companie to be partakers in this rebellion. But he answered that he and his father had alreadie dealt tomoch that waie with him, and that he will neuer 2 do the like againe: for his father, he, and all his bres then, had fwome to be true, obedient, and faithfull to the quanes materie, and which of they would nes ver breake : curling the date and time that ever they toined with him in so bad a cause against hir mates fie, and therefore required to have his garrons as gainc, oxelle he would come by them aswell as he

James Fifzmoris Amding bpon his reputation, with that which he had in hand, and therfore viterlie benied the deliverte, and therebyon each partie fet fourre to the hortes and incountered the one the o. ther. The fairmish was verie hot and cruell, and Theobald Burke & one of his younger brethren were flaine, tome of their men . James Fitzmozis likes wife and his companie had the like fucceffe, for he hus fits, himselfe was first hurt and wounded, and then us first, with a shot striken shorough the head, and so was flaine, with fundate of his companions : wherein he found that the popes bleffings and warrant, his Agnus Deriand his graines had not those vertues to faue him, as an Frift Raffe oz a bullet had to kill on thinke him. Thus was hir highneste most happie, and that unispace upole land most hapiest, that they were delivered finate was from so wicked and bloudie a traitour, and that the an that great & venemous hydra was thus thortened of one of his heds. For other wife it was to be boubted that if he had lived, he would have bin the cause of much bloudified, and all the revels in that land would have co ik condition with him. For he was of veriegod credit that James elimation through the whole land, he was of a verie god governement, and of a great ready; but a deepe diffembler, paffing fubtill, and able to compaffe ante matter which he toke in hand, familiar to all men, and berie courteous, valiant, and verte expert in martiall affaires, but lo addicted to poperie and that baggage religion, that he became a most hourible traitour to bir maieffie, and a mortall enimie to es ueric god man: and fo far he was imbrued herein, 60 that a man might fair that he was borne to the fame end, euen to be a traitog and a rebell to God, tohis prince, and to the thole commonwealth.

After that he was thus dead, and the fame made knowen to the loso tustice, he gave order that he hould be hanged in the open market of Bilmal-Into fity locke, the beheaded t quartered, the quarters to be set upon the towne gates of Kilmallocke, for a bink gates perpetual memorial to his reproducts his tresons and perfuries, contrarie to his folemne of taken in that errour. Dir maielite, ichen the was addertifed of this piece of good feruice of fix William Burke and the loffe of his eldeft forme, the wrote hir letters of the god acceptation of his fernice, comforted him

for the lotte of his fon, and in recompense did create bir william him baron of the castell of Connell by hir letters made a baron patents dated the fourth of Paie, the twentith yeare founce for of hir reigne, a gaue him the pearelle pension of a top a floritie hundred marks, to be paso at hir maiesties ercheker after bied. pearelie during his life, wherof he take to fudden toy that he fowned, and fæmed to be dead.

When newes of the death of James Kitzmoxis was brought to the fort at S. Marte worke, great for Chespanis o row was amongest them all, they being all amazed with the beth and will not what to do especiallie the Spaniares of fitzmozes. the depart could not, and to submit themselves they would not, and yet they were of the mind to give o. uer and to intreat for a licence to bepart. Third purpose they would have followed, if that sir John of Sir John of Delmond hab not taken the matter in hand : for he Delmod fuphauing imbaued himfelfe fo bunnaturallie in bloud, plieth James and doubting the fame would never be pardoned, rome. did follow the matter. The lood tuffice (as is aforeof follow the matter. The lood full tee (as is afore six william faid) immediatlie upon the newes of the arrivall of Dourie lood these Spaniards, and of the death of Henrie Das tuftice ma uels, made his preparation of all the forces which hir bethe tournis maiestie had in that land, which was but soure hunder. deed formen and two hundred harffemen, a berie fmall companie for fo great fernice towards : yet confidering that the vidorie confideth not in the arme of man, noz in horffe or mule, but onelie in the god gift of God; he marcheth forth in his fournie, having in his companie of Englithmen fir Picho. thought it to much bithonogable buto him to depart 30 las Bagnoll unight marthall, fir picholas Balbie cozonell of Connagh, Jaques Mingfield maffer of the ozdinance, and Coward Materhouse one of hir maiesties servants, Edward Fitton, Aomas Mas fterson, and others. And of the Brith loads he was acr companied with the earle of Kilvare, ar Lucas Dil lon thiefe baron, the vicount Pountgarret, the bas ron of opper Diferie, and the baron of Dunboine, tho had of themselves two hundred hordemen, bes The lord tulides formen and Bernes : and fo they marched for fice incanward by fourneis butill they came to Bilmallocke, pethnere to there not farre from the folime they all incomes Bulmallocke. where not farre from the towns they all incamped? then he fent from thense a mellenger to the earle of Desmond, and so likewise to all the principall gentlemen of the best accompt in those parties, to come unto him.

The earle in outward apperance fæmed berie willing to come, but butil he had received fome promile of favour from the lood fuffice, he fill lingered mile of fanour from the lood tuffice, he trill lingered The carle of and trifled the time and came not. But in the end his Defmond coloodhip being verie well accompanied with hoofes meth to the men and formen, he went to the campe, and prefen, lord tuffice to ted himfelle befoge the logo inflice, and made a them the campe. of all dutifulneffe, obedience, & fivelitie, where as indeo no luch thing was ment. For though his bodie were there, his mind was elsewhere; for whiles he was in the campe, fundrie trecheries were practice by him; yet they were not to fecretic done but they came to light, were discourred to the load inflice. Thereupon be was committed to the cultodie of the The carte of Therebpon he was committed to the cultude of the Mermond is knight marthall. Whiles he was in his ward, and committed to fearing leaf fome greater matters would be re: Sward. uealed against him, he praied accesse to the lord in fice; and then be humbled himfelfe berie much, and The carle of promited and fware voon his honour f allegiance, Delmond but he month fathfallia and to the historiant of his that he would faithfullie and to the ottermost of his huncie and power ferne hir highnesse against the revels. Those fwea. eth to humblenece and promite the lord inffice by the ads feraetraite. uile of the councell did accept, and fo inlarged him: thich was in the end the vitter confusion of the earle himselse and all his familie, and in the meanetime great troubles, causes of much bloudsped, and budos ing of all Wounder.

Whiles the lood watice laic thus in campe about Kilmallocke, newes was brought onto bim, that fir

mond incain= pethat Siew= lougher.

John of Dels John of Desmond was incamped with a great companie of the rebels boon the borders of Slews lougher. Therespon his loodhip remoued and marched thitherwards, the earle then promiting that he would in person incounter and fight hand to hand with his brother. Pow when they were come to the place of feruice, the earle being best acquainted with the countrie, gaue abuile to the lood fuffice, that he should divide the armie into two parts, and the load tuffice thould take one wate, and he the earle would 10 take another wate: which adulte was followed. But bicause that place of the present service is adjoining to agreat wood, and wherein were manie fastnesse, the load tustice did divide the rest of his companie into two other parts, and so everie of these three com. panies toke wate into the wood ferched it through out, but there they found no bodie. Fog fir John had fome fecret knowledge of the load inflices comming, and fo was gone before.

The date being spent to small purpose, the night 2 drawne fowards, he incamped that night in the fame places where the rebels had lien before, & there he remained fomethat longer than he thought: bis cause he would spend and wast the forrage of that countrie, which was one of the chiefelt places of reliefe that the enimies had. And from thenle he went backe againe towards kilmallocke, where he incamped himselfe at a place called Gilbons towne,

which lieth in the plaines betweene Limerike and Bilmallocke towards Emeleie and Harlo; & there 30 he continued about nine wekes in continual tois ling and trauelling to and fro, in all such services as was vailie offered to be done opon the enimie, from which he had no rest neither day nor night. Wher byon for the better feruice he divided his bands, and twke out of the Irith companies one hundred, and oclines red them to the guiding of capteine John Herbert, a

man of verie god feruice, and one other hundred to capteine Paile.

teine revels, which theowood themselves in the great mod called the blacke woo, byon whom they made a fallie, and did berie god feruice bpon them. But as they were to returne to the campe, which late belive Getenbie castell, the said John of Desmond, who Dir John of laie in ambulh for them, met and incountered them, Defined lieth where was a tharpe fight betwirt them, and the two capteins with the most part of their companie saine: & John of Delmond himselfe was there hurt in the note. The losse of those two capteins and their men s was a great weakening to the load fuffice his armie; his enimies being Arong and manie : and his com, panie weake and few fauing at that instant the fouldiers fent out of Deuon and Cornewall arrived at Materford to the number of fir hundred men, but The Denon- der the leading of capteine George Bourchier, cap. thire fouldiers teine Peter Carein, capteine George Carein his arrive at wab brother, and capteine Doindale, whose comming at so present a diffresse was both totall and also glad.

> And niere about this time, it was advertised but to the lood inffice, that John of Desmond was at Connell, which was about firteene miles from the campe; and his loadthip being well furnished & prepared, and he minding to do some peece of feruice opon him, made verie secretlie a tourneie thither: but Delmond wanting not his god espials, had an inkling and a knowledge thereof, and fo thifted him. felfe awate, therebyon the load fulfice returned to bis campe. The quæns maieffie and councell, beina alwaies minofull of hir Ireland, and by reason of the newes that the enimies were dailie Aronger and fronger, the fent oner fir John Perot late prefident of Pountier, with fir thips well furnished and ap

pointed, thereof he was admerall; and William Bogge matter poster of the tower and a pensioner, biceadmerall; and all thefe arrived buto the citie of Cooke. Thereof the lood fuffice being advertifed. was berie glad, and die appoint one hundred buto fir William Stanleie, who before was capteine of certeine hordemen, and one other hundred he allig. ned bnto capteine hind. And leing now fome god fernice towards, and to incourage certeine gentle men to be the more willing to follow the fame, called befoze him Beogge Bourchier, William Stanlete, Anishen Peter Carew, and Edward Doze, and bling both both to them verte goo speches, to incourage and persuade them to do hir maieste good feruice in these hir af faires, and in hope they would performe the fame, he bubbed them knights: who accordinglie did acquit themselves, and some of them with the lotte of their lines ended their dates in this feruice.

And he further also for his owne part, the more he bethought himselfe of the great service and charge laid opon him, the more carefull he was to do what the same required: where, in his owne person he so toiled and travelled, and so overcame himselfe with Audieng, watching, labouring and travelling, that he overtheld his owne health, and was no longer able to induce the same: but being overcome by birmin ficknesse, and driven to yeld therebuto, was deter licking mined to have disolved his campe, and so to have re- to wants turned to Waterford, and there to State for a time. But the capteins fæing the necellitie of the prefent feruice, perfuaded him not to diffolue the armie, but to take some order herein for hir highnesse sernice, and he to lequester himselfe for a time for his health. Thon those adules he prepared himselfe to travel him following and for the continuous of the towards Waterford, and for the continuance of the matino fernice did commit the government to fir Aicholas of Months Malbie, who was then governour by the name of co. ronell of Connagh; and then by easie four nefes he came to Waterford, and there he found himfelfe ene Thefe two capteins had made fpfall byon cer. 40 rie daie moze weaker than other, and in the end did

distrust his owne recoverie. And pet mindfall of hirmaiellies feruice, he to in knight w courage other therein, fent & called befoze him Will bed at we liam Pelham efquier, Milliam Bogge efquier vice, infop. admerall of the fir thips, Thomas Perot fonne and betre to fir John Perot, and Patrike Wellh maio; of the citie of Waterford, and gave buto them the order of knighthwo, bling the like persuasions as heretofore he had done buto others in the like cale. And albeit he were of a good heart and courage, yet that was no lufficient phylicke to recover his helth of bodie, but that Will decaied. And douting berie much of his reconerie, he fent to Dublin to the load chancelloz, and to the ladie Thame his wife, for their spee die comming onto him, who according lie fatilited his request. But he intoice their companie a verie sont time: for he died within two dates after their com bir willing ming, being the laft of September 1579, and affer minitiatur his death his bodie was caried unto Dublin, where it was buried.

But here by the waie (which thould before have biene faid) as he came towards Waterford through Tipozarie, the counteste of Defmond met with him, of Defmond and brought with hir hir onelie sonne and heire to the givethus earle; and being a futor in the behalfe of hir hulband, to be aple presented him to the lood instice to be a pledge for the forth and spalitic and institute to be a pledge for the truth and fidelitie of the earle hir hulband. For after the time that he was let at libertie in the campe nære kilmallocke, he never repaired any moze to the loed fuffice, but frod opon his owne keeping; not withstanding by his letters he professed all localtie and obedience, which he never meant. For in veril truth he was (not with francing his diffembling) a ver rie ranke traitoz, as in open fact and action did verte Mostlie

in an ambulb foz the Eng= and discomfi= teth them.

terfold.

Bir John Derot fent to

hottle ameare, to his olone deferued confusion.

But to returne to fir Picholas Palbie, who immediatlie boon the departure of fir Milliam Day rie buto Waterford, according to the office a charge is about the fame for he for a fact that the follow and performe the fame. For he was able to do it being of great erperience in martiall affaires, hauing bene feruitoz that wate under fundzie kings, & in Arange nations; as also was verie wife, lerned, and of great knowledge in matters of policie, having bene a flu dent in good letters, and a great traveller in fundzie nations, and therein did observe the maner of the les nation, and a sucrise fuct place as there he travelled. He had under him in the thole an hundred and fiftie horflemen , and nine hundred fortmen , to command; and dividing them according to the fer, nice then in hand, he fent fir Beorge Bourchier, capteine Dolwdall, and capteine Sentleger, unto Bil mallocke with the hunderd formen, and with fiftie met for the same, & which the entimie most speciallie courted to possesse. But the more his care was that maie, the like was their viligence, bigilancie, & care of the other wate to keepe the same. Then with the re. fidue of the companie he marched himfelfe to the citie of Limerike, there he fraied and remained for a time to refresh his fouldiors.

During his abode and being there, it was thought goody him and his capteins, to send but o the earle of Delmond for his repaire buto him, and to have 30 conference with him, to binder frand his bent and ad, uile for hir maieffics feruice against the entmies. The earle having received the governours letters,

gane verie god words, & promifed much , but perfor, med nothing. Wherefore he was againe and againe fent for from time to time, but he came not, but laie fill at his house of Asketten, which is about fourtene miles from Limerthe. For albeit as yethe was not in anie actuall rebellion, yet it was not buknowne but that he was fecrettie combined with his two bies 4

then, which as open traitors were in open rebellion and in armes against hir maiestie. Which the earle, suspecting the same might be late buto his charge, would not adventure himselfe to come in person to the gonernoz; but Mill fed him with faire woods and

frivolous answers. Therefore the governor thought good to spend no moze time in baine to loke for him, but left Limerike, and went into the fields, where he incamped himselfe, and so set forwards to do some

feruice bpon the enfinite, having then in his compa. 50 nie fir hunded formen under the entigns of fir Will-Argonemor liam Stanleie, capteine George Carely, capteine authirom Kilher, capteine Furle, capteine Piers, & capteine Hind; and he himfelfe and capteine Apellie referued

one hundred horffernen betweene them. Pow being advertised that a great companie of the revels were incamped in Connilo under their capteine John of Defmond, he marched towards them. And being come necre to an abbete or monafferte called Monas ffer Denagh , feuen miles from Limerike , there 60

appeared a great companie in a plaine field both of bottemen and formen, in estimation two thouland or there abouts, marching in battell araie, and had call out their wings of thot, and placed everiething

berie well and orderlie.

When the governor perceived and beheld this, being verie glad that some peece of service was to Enquerno, wards, he like wife conferreth with his capteins, and by their adulles letteth his companie in like god oz ber, and brought them into a quadrant proportion, fetting out his flankers in feuerall places according to the feruices, a amointed verie good leavers for the fame: but his cartages he placed in the rereward, with that lufficient for their lategard . Pow when all

things were thus ordered, he marched forwards to the enimies. John of Delmond, when he law that he muff fight or flie, and that brags would not beare out the matter, by the councell of doctor Allen, who had the holie ghost at commandement, to give them the victorie, caused the popes banner to be displated; The popes and then marching forwards in verie god order, he banner otte twhe a plaine oith in the open field : and minding to placed. abide the fight, disposeth his hoallemen, fatmen, Calowglaffes, and his that for his best strength and ad-

The gouernog letteth onlwards, & gineth the onlet The batteti bpon them with his thot, who valiantlie relifted the betweenethe first & second volces, answered the fight verte well, for Tohnof even to the couching of the pikes , that the matter Definond. ftod verie doubtfull. But the Englishmen fo fierce-lies desperatise set opon them asresh with the third volce, that they were discomfited and had the ouer. throw given them, and fled . John of Delmond, as holimen, there to lie in garrison, and a speciall place 20 a two, thie Xerres, this (as the histographers write of him) was Primu in fuga, postremus in bello, fat upon his horse all this while and gave the looking i who foener turned first, he was the first that was gone: The Frish for he put spur to the horse a fled awaie as fast as he lost the field. could, shewing a faire paire of heles, which was better to him than two paire of hands. In this fight were manie flaine, of which doctor Allen was one, Doctor allen and the score others of god account. And in the is saine. thate, there were flaine and hurt, which died thouttie after, about two hundzed men . This bodoz Allen was an Iriff man boine, and the chiefelt cause of this fight . For he truffing to the Spaniards, whom Doctor Allen he knew to be verie skilfull, and also decaming incorraged

the vidorie by his inchantments to be at his come the competer mannement incorraged Toky of Thefrence for mandement , incouraged John of Defmond for wards and in the campe in the waie of god foxo would needs fair malle, and as the prochets of Baal in the time of king Achab, he offered to his God Par jim, and cried out for his aid, but none would come; for his God was allepe and could not heare . Pot. with anding, be and to much boon the credit of his offrings and factifices, that he affured them of a bice topie, and that he himselfe would be the first that Mould that date give the first blow; but whether he

Co did of not, there was be flaine: where he had the full reward of a traitor, tho most wickedlic and oils locallie for twice the butie and allegiance, which by the word of God he did owe wate hir highnelle, and benoted himfelfe a professed Jesuit to the Romith and chaill, and an open traitor buto his lawfull prince. The earle of Delmond himselfe was not present

in this fight , but he and the diffembling baron of Checarles in this fight, but the view a fight of it, byon a little Welmond Lernew frod in the view a fight of it, byon a little was in view bill in a food about a quarter of a mile from thenle : of the fight, but the whole companies were there, and had part of

the breakefall.

This baron of Lernews elvet fonne, named Pafrike , was feruant to bir maiestie and fwogne, and Che baron of ferued in the court ; but had leave of hir maieffie to Lernews fon, come into Ireland to fee his father : but he was no fernant to the come into Ireland to lex histawer; but he was no quane and fwomer, beahome , but he follotte his faith and oth to hir high retharmes as nelle, and became a wiched rebell, and moff trafe gainft bir. tozoullie bare armes against bir, and lo continued a ranke traitor to the verte end . Wherein appearcth the nature of himselfe, and of the brod of that cursed generation, among ihome there is neither faith, hofaithnes nortruth. And therefore they maie be verte well refembled to an ape, which (as the common proverbe Irihric. is) an ape is but an ape, albeit he be clothed in purple and belief to the first belief and beluet : cuen fo this wicked impe . Hoz not with Canding he was trained by in the court of England, fwome feruant unto hir maieffie, in god fauour and countenence in the court, and agearely **19.13.**

Threath of

Jupitergcat.

led according to his begree, and dailie nurtured and brought op in all ciullitie : he was no somer come home, but awaie with his English attires, and on with his brogs, his thirt, and other Brith rags, being become as verte atraftor as the vertelf knaue of them all, & fo for the most part they are all, as date lie experience teacheth, dissemble they never to much to the contrarie. For like as Jupiters cat, let hir be transformed to neuer lo faire a ladie, and let bir be lavies, let hir be neuer fo well effemed and hono. red : pet if the moule come once in hir fight, the will be a cat and thew hir kind : but to the historie.

The carle of his counfell.

The eale of

theweth him:

felfe to be an

open rebell.

Rekeil.

Defmond

When the battell was ended, the retreat foun ved, the governoz incomped himselfe fast by the ris uer five of the monasterie aforesaid, and there late that night. About midnight, when all things were quiet, ceuerie man was at his rest : euen then the often named earle of Delmond lendeth a mellen: distembling, & ger with letters of congratulation buto the gover, 20 no; , bearing him in hand that he was berte glad and totfull of his good successe and bidonie: and like an hypocrite pretending verie god will to hir maiestie, gave him adulle that for the anothing of hir great charges, he thould diflodge himfelfe from that place; which as he thought was not best for an armie to lie in. The governor answered his letters with the like. and requested him to come buto him, that they might have conference togither, and toine in this bir maieffies feruice, and wherein he would be glad 30 to follow his adule in anie thing that might further hir highnesse service: but to withdraw himfelfe and his companie from thense, buleffe he could giuchima goo reason, he would not yeld to his motion, not take his warrant for anie warrantife. And therefore he remained thenlefwith in the same place this or foure daies, expeding fill the earles comming: but he so little meant anie such thing, that henseforth he became a rebell in open action. The governoz in the earle but disembling, and to vie belaies and remouth to faire speches to gaine time to form his mouse from thense to a towns of the earles named Rekell, and there incamped himselfe. They were no fwner fettled , but the fcoutmaffer, hauing beine as broad, declareth to the governor that he had disco. ucred a great companie of horsemen and formen which were within a mile of the campe, & therewith was the alarum made, t fundzie hozsemen t shot ac: cording to the direction of the governor flued out, \$ 50 met with the enimies, and fkirmilhed with them, of thom they killed manie, and take some pationers.

The carle of Delmond in open rebellion,

The carle of Delmond fes ninbt ften= leth to the gocampe to ine trapit.

These men, being eramined, declared that the earle was now in the fields and in armes, and to had beene ever fince the last overthrow of his brother John of Delmond; and likewife declareth the whole bent of the earle and his brother . Wis piece of fer, nice being done, and the night drawing niere, the watch was charged , and enerie man toke his reft. But the earls and his brother minding to do some 60 mer and wonted diffimulations, returneth the mel mischiefe, they watched, and in the dead of the night then following, taking advantage of the time, when men were wearie and in their flepes, came with all their companies, and meant to have let bpon the thole campe . But they came to thoat and milled of their purpole: for the campe was to well warded for them to take anie advantage. The governor confidering the intent of the enimies was to do that they could to remove him from that place, which could not be kept but to the great damage of the enimies fundric wates, and that the fame was L gartson plas a verie necessarie place for a garison and a ward, ced at Rekeil. Thereby to frop the continuall intercourse of the ente nnics, which by the means of a bridge oner that water,

they hav a continuall recourse to a fro that wate: he before his departuce from thenle did plant & place a ward in the castell adjoining to the bridge, which did from that time annote the enimies berie much: and then from hence he marched towards the earles bouse of Asketten, and by the wate he met with sun, Drie of the earles companie, and fkirmithed and fought with them to the lotte of manie of them .

Ahis house of Aketten is a vertestrong cased, Askutinsk neuer to well attired and accompanied with the best 10 standing upon a rocke in the verie midst of there earliered tier and the chiefest house of the earles, wherein he monds thick had a strong ward : but he himselfe at this present boule. time and his brother John were affembled boon a little bill on the further five of the river, flanding there upon their whole force. The governor hoping of some god service towards, dew all his companie into the abbeis house of Alketten, not far from the caffell house; and there conferring with the capteins that were belt to be done, it was agreed and thought god, that a letter or two more should be written to the earle, and to perfuade him to fubmif fion . The governos, tho was a verie god lecreta Butter fini rie, and could pen a letter verie ercellentlie well, totherated biodzaw a letter, bling manie god woods, termes, Definantin and realons to per made him to conformitie and obe, to substitute and obe, and and ob dience to bir maieffie: & that be thoulo not be the oc cation of the otter fall & end of to noble a house, which descended from Roefius the great prince of South wales by his mother Deffa, baughter unto the faid Roefins, as Giraldus one of the fame familie web Delinus teth. And herewith by the wate of a parenthelis, it both not ameare by anie sufficient authoritie, bu lette a fonet and a deuile of a noble man be a fuffich ient authoritie, that the Biraldines came out of 3. talie; but perhaps out of Pormandie: and the first of them placed in England had some interteine ment and living at Windeloz, and thereof was called Giralous de Windeloza : and he gaue not the armes of Kichard Strangbow earle of Chepflow, and in armes against the governoz, finding nothing 40 as some have written: but as he was a gentleman of himselfe, gave the armes incident to his owne bonfe, which is argent a falter gules . Forcerteine it is, he was and is a verie ancient

gentleman , whose ancestoes were planted and plan ced in that land by king Henrie the fecond, and have ever fince continued in this land in much honoz, withing, aduiting, and perfuading, that if there were ante feare of God, obedience to the prince, or regard of himselfe, and of his name and familie; that he would reclaime himfelfe onto dutie and obedience: and that the honoz of his ancestozs might not be bur ried in his treacheries and follies. These letters be The forman ing well penned were fent buto him . But not with, will not be francing the most pithie, true, and effectuall reasons persuant and arguments were fufficient to have perfuaded anie honest og reasonable man : pet was his tha raos heart lo hardened and indurated in disobedience , rebellion, and freatherie , that nothing could makehim to yelo and relent: but leaning his for fenger with a flat dentall that he will not yeld ante further obedience to hir highnelle. And forthwith to Theunist further obedience to hir highnette. And toutimum to confirme the same, he southeth his stronges and best besiness. boules and callels : as namelie Alketten with his acls. chosen followers and men of best trust; the castels of Carigofoile and Strangicullie with Spaniards and some Irithmen. The governor, opon the recerpt of the earles answer, and minding to frame his service accordinglie, news was brought him that fir William Dzurie lozd tuffice was bead, tho deceased at Materfood byon the third of Adober Dunk with 1 5 79, which was a volefull hearing to all good Eng. liftmen, and a great hinderance unto hir highnelle feruice.

Dis

This fir Milliam Daurie was verie vallant, wife, and a gentleman of great experience, descended of a berie ancient and a worthipfull house, being a your ger brother, but the birthright ercepted , nothing inferior to his elver brother anie kind of wate in the giffs of wifedome, valiantneffe, knowledge, and er: perience of matters politike of martiall . In his pouth he was a page, and ferued in the court; and as investes, so in knowledge of all courtlie scrusces he did grow and increase, and became to be as 10 gallant a courtier as none lightlie ercelled him . De was verie benout, and a follower onto the then load Ruffell lood printe feale, and after earle of Bedford, tho gave him good countenance and interteinment: primite at for under him he ferued in France at Puttrell and Bullongnois, and affer the warres ended, he went to Calis, and oftentimes being there he illued out, and did manie good feruices about Cambrate and in Actois . And in the end about Baurelles he was taken pisoner. Pot long after he was redemed and 20 cansomed, and then he would nieds scrue at the seas, and having gotten a thip well appointed for the purhunth at pole, he aduentureth that feruice. The beginning of it was fo hard, that in nine dates he was in a conti nuall Corme, and in great despaire for ever to reco. wer : neverthelesse, thom the fwood could not make afraid, the feas could not difinate; but was ever one and the fame man, of a god mind and great cozage: and the frozme being past, he followed the service wich he had taken in hand, and became to be an er. 30 cellent maritimall man, and berte expert in all fer. vices at the leas. When the time of this his scruice was expired, he returned into England; attending boon the earle of Bedford, he accompanied him in belimite at the fernice against the revels of Deuon, at the comhumanis motion or rebellion in the third years of the reigne of king Coward the firt one thouland fine hundred fortie and nine, and did there verie god fernice. At bimitest ter wich in course of time, he went to ferue at Berwike, where his valor and behanior was such, that he 4. hispool was made prouost marshall buder the earle of Sulfer being loso lieutenant, and for his fundate nota. kis dubbro ble good services he rewarded him with the degree of knighthod.

out teken

Pot long after that , there was a piece of ner cellarie fernice to be done in Scotland by the faid earle bpon the queenes commandement; but he was verte licke, and at that time he could not performe the same: wherfore he deputed in his place this wor his grand this knight, whome he then made generall of the ar. 50 mie: and with fuch forces as were thought meet he entreth into the feruices amointed buto him, being accompanied with the earle of Lennor, fir Thomas Panners, fir George Carie, and fir Kobert Conflable, with fundzie other capteins, to the number of twelue hundzed formen. And his commission being to ferue at Coenbozough, which then by the reas fon of the vinision among the noblemen, about the murthering of the earle of Murreie, he toke, spotled, and burned fundate foats and caffels : and in the end history besteged and toke the towns and castell of Evenbo, 60 rough, and delinered the fame, according as he was and some start and some start and some start and so he returns ned agains to his old charge, with great praise and commendation, as in the chronicles of England and Scotland is at large recorded.

In berie Gott time after, bir matellie hauing god experience of the valor of this knight everte wate, as well for his valiantnes in martiall affaires, bi william as for his wiscoome in civill governement, the calleth and draweth him from his office and charge at building: Berwike, and removeth him into Ireland, there to be implained in the office of a look prefibent, and as be imploied in the office of a load prefident, and af figueth but o him the government of the whole pro-

uince of Mountter, there he thall hane lufticient matter and occasion to ble both the fwood the law, tudgement and mercie. And having received hir highnes commandement in this behalfe, he maketh his voiages repaire into Ireland : & being now let. led in his rome and office by the right honozable fir Henrie Stoneie loed deputie, he acquiteth him. felfe berie well euerie waie , being as feuere a judge and earnest perfecutor of the wicked and rebelli. ous, as a zealous defender of the dutiful and obedient, to the great gooliking of hir maiellie, the terroz of the wicked, the comfort of the god, and the benefit of the commonwealth. After some time of his triall in this office, and fir Benrie Sioneie load de. putie being reucked into England, he tho had fer. Sir william putie being reucked into England, he tho had fer. Dauriets ned well in part, is called now to ferne in all : and made lood infrom a particular president is called to be a generall fice of all gouernoz: and is in place of the departed deputie Ircland. made load fustice. He was no soner entred into the office, but forthwith the rebellion and warres of the of the D fe Defmonds began in Pounffer bnder James Fitz monde mozis, and the Italians latelle come from the pope, Mounter. and buder the earle of Delmond and his brethren, the had long breathed and loked for this time . For the pacifieng, or rather subouing of this wicked rebellion he toke fuch continuall travels and troubles. e to bouled his bodie, that being not able to hold out any longer, he fell ficke & died (as is before faid) in the citie of Waterford, and from thenle his corps was The death of remoued to Dublin, and there buried; his bodie res fir william fting in peace, his toule in eucrlafting bliffe, and Diurie. his fame in this world for ever immortall.

Sir Picholas Palbic, tho was chefe gouerno? of Mounter, now that his committion by the death of fir William Dzurie was expired and ended, gaue The campe is ouer to follow anie actuall warres og civill adminis diffelned and Aration in Mounter; but removed himfelfe and the thought and the thought and there differ to them. thole campe onto Lougher, and there dispersed them abrode in tolones and billages to lie in garrifon, and poon their owne gards, butill it were knowne who thould have the fivozo, and be the principall officer. Amongeli the capteins thus dispersed into seuerall Sir william places, fir Milliam Stanlete, and capteine George Stanlete and Careto were affigned to lie at Abare . The traitors capteine Trebels, hearing of the beath of the worthic knight, Trevare Carof thole prowelle and valiantnelle by the fword, for ned to Abare, those will build him a work those will be the first and pare. thole wiledome & byzightnes in gouernement, they had good triall; pet not abiding to be alienated from their old leavened and wicked blage, they were not a little glad that he was dead, even as the other were most forowfull for the loste a tacke of him. Wherefore now they pull by their fpirits, & confer togither how they may in this inter-reigne win the fpurs, and be biterlie belimered from the English gouernement. Wherefore it is agreed among them, that boon cues rie feuerall garrifon of the most principall capteins, they would let feuerall companies to watch & keepe The garrithem in their holds, that they thould not iffue out, fons are belies but to their perill . Some therefore are amointed at roned by the Bilmalocke, some at Carigofoile, some at Alketten, Irishue. and some at one place, and some at another. And at Abare, there thefe two gentlemen fir William Sir James of Stanleie & George Carewlate, fir James of Del Gegeth Foars. mond brother to the earle with foure hundred Berns and fiftie horfles was appointed to ferue and watch; which he did to carefullie a narowite, that none durff to peepe not loke out but in danger of some perill, But when vittels wared thoat within dozes, the foul. biors, who could nor would be pined, gaue the aduens ture to fetch that which was without dozes: and as want of vittels old increase, to old their illnings out bpon the entinies grow and increase . And fo offen Che Brith open the entities and incountrings with the entimited the mies, that in the end they finding e fæling the con garrion. 19. fg.

The knight of the ballete his countrie fpoiled.

The knight of the ballete a

Sir william canteine Gcozge Ca: rews feruice at Woare.

Sir William Pelham cho: fen to be lozd iuftice. I 5 7 9

Sir William Pelham ha= uma taken the fword. Dubbeth the lozo chancel= loz knight.

rage of the Englishmen, they had alwais the wort five; and at everie bickering ever lost some of their companie. Therebpon they railed their liege, gaue place to the garrifons, and returned to the earle of Delmond. For albeit as yet they wanted a gene, rall governo, to rule above all, yet the captens were not to lieke, not yet failed to bo, the fernice which onto them did amerteine, either for feruice or fafetie. And among all the rest fir William Stanleie and capteine Beorge Carcw (as is before laid) lieng in , garrison at Adare, and boon an occasion minding to do a pecce of feruice, verie earlie, and before the breake of the vaie, they toke a bote or a cote frough, third could not hold about eight or ten persons at a time, and palled over their foldiors buto the other fide of the riner, which lieth betweene Adare and the Berrie, minoing to have burned a wasted all the lands and countrie belonging camperteining to the knight of the vallete, who then was in actuall revellion a. gainft hir maieffie, with the earle of Delmond and his brethren, where they then late at a castell named Balliloghan, the chiefest & ffrongest place wich the enimie had in that place and countrie, and this was furnished with a strong ward of the Spaniards. Af ter that these two capteins had burned and spots led the countrie, and put to the swood whomsoever they thought goo: in their returns before they could Sir william recouer the river, fir James of Delmond, the Scanleia and knight of the valleie, and the forefaid Spaniards with all their forces, to the number of foure hundred formen and thirtie horffemen, gaue the charge opon 3 these two ensignes verie fiercelte, they having not in their companie aboue fir score persons to the bt. termoff. Thefetwo capteins answered the charge, and mod valiantly fkirmiffed with them at the pulh of the pike inthout intermition aboue eight hours, and killed of them about fiftie thot and thernes; and fir James himfelfe with others greuoullie hurt and wounded, without the lotte of anie one of their owne men, fauing fundzie were Chrewolie hurt and wounded. At length these two capteins recovered their bote, and canted all the fouldiors to be trans ported; they themselnes being the verie last that pas fco over, and the entimies doubting of the fafetie, And afterwards upon a better force.

The loads of the councell at Dublin in the meane time, confidering the diffreffed fate of the whole land for want of a principall officer, did affemble them, felues, and toke adule for the choile of some one wife man, met and fit for the government. And in the end they resolved byon sir William Pelham, whom they chose to be lood suffice. And opon sundate being the eleventh of Datober 1579, he received the Swood and toke his oft in Chills church of Dublin: there being present the lord chancellor, the archbishop of Dublin, the earles of Dymond and Kildare, and the thole councell: belides a great number of bas rons, knights, and gentlemen . The fermon being ended, he returned to the callell, before whome fir Picholas Bagnoll knight, marthall of Ireland, by 60 his office did beare the fwood before him, & the whole companie there did attend him: being come to the castell, he was received with the thot of all the great artillerie. As some as he was entered into the chamber of presence, and the sword there delivered, he called the load chancelloa before him: and in confideras tion of his god feruices in causes of councell, and of hir maiesties god acceptation of the same, heres warded a honoured him with the degree of knight. hod, by the name of fir William Berard.

Likewise, he called Coward fitton the sonne and heire of fir Coward Fitton, late treasuro: of Ireland, and dubbed him knight. After dinner the councell fat, confulting opon causes of the estate:

and for quieting of the realing, letters were fent but to all the noblemen and gentlemen of anie counter nance and calling, perfuading them to the continue ance of their lotalties and butifull obedience. And for the government of the province of Hounder, in The absence of the lost inffice. a patent was scaled and of Dining delivered to the earle of Demond: who having the made general being and custodie of the pung losd Giral forme not of Pour and heire to the eric of Delmond, was by a warrant willed to beliver him to capteine Wackworth, and he to bring or conneie him to the castell of Dublin. Likewife, a warrant buder the brode feale was fent to fir Warham Sentleger, to be knight or prouoff Sir waten nearthall of all Pounder. These and other things Dentuge down econcerning the keeping of the English pale in machand quiet : the lood inflice, who had a speciall cie to the Hounlet. troublesome state of Mounster, prepareth to make presentlie a fournie into Mountier. But first it was Chelopoin concluded and agreed, that the load chancelloa thould dicc making passe over into England, with letters of advertise, ioutnicinto ment to hir mateffie and councell of the present flate Chelon of Ireland, and of his loadships tournie toward, chancelly against the revels: who had also in commission to be fentinto ter by speech what was to be advertised answered England. boon hir mateffies demands and councels. When all things were prepared for his tournie, he appointed the erle of Bildare to defend the boyders northwards and his loodhip marched fouthward toward Hounfer, taking with him the three bands latelie come from Berwike, bnder the leading of capteine Wal ker, capteine Cafe, and capteine Wikeman: with fo manie others as he thought meet and necellarie for that Cornice. And when he came in his waie to bile kennic, being the nineteenth of Daober, there he red Chelonia mained two dates and kept fellions, thereat he fat thickness in person, and determined manie matters, and did sollions at caule Comund Pac Pelle a notable traito, & fun, Billiannia die other malefactors, to be erecuted to death: and also he made a peace and reconciliation betweene Checontil the earle of Damond and fir Barnabie Fitzpatrike, Dimondin baron of oper Diozie: betwirt wome was a mozi the garonol tall hatred. And bonds were taken betweene them bpper Plant for refloring ech one to the other the preces, which elementation there of their men had taken. During his above and being in Kilkennie, the earle gave his loodship berie bonourable and god interteinment.

From this towne he departed the two and twentith of Daober, and by fournies he came to Cathell, there the earle of Demond with a band of two hum dzed and thirtie men came and met him. And here the load tuffice fent his letters of the foure and twen The ented tith of Daober to the earle of Delmond, for his re Delmond paire onto him, for the amealing of the quarrell and fent forto controuersie betweene him a fir Picholas Palbie, concrete referring unto him to come either to Cashell or to Limerike. And from this towne he rode to Limes rthe, and about a mile before he came to the citie, fir Picholas Palbic and fundrie other capteins & gentlemen met his loodship; and for his welcome gaue him a braue vole of that: and to brought him to the citie, where the mator in all outifull maner received him, and presented him with a thousand well weapo, dichonois ned and appointed men of the fame citie. The nort bilercound date he departed thense, and went to a towne named unto Links Fanings, where fir Pitholas Palbie prefented bn. ribt. to his loodhip a letter, which he received from Alike Burke: the same being the letter of Doctor Santeers Doctor Sin Cent onto the said Alike, and with most pessilent reas decisions. fons perfuaded him to rebellion. And to this towne letters of came the counteste of Desmond from bir bushand, like Subs. with letters of hir husband to the load inflice, in cr culing his not comming onto him.

The load tuffice feeing the earle to be but delaies, twhe adulte of the councell which was with him,

that was bell to do . And in the end it was concluoco, that the earle of Demond Could go buto him, and to conferre with him byon fuch articles as were belinered, and now fent by him buto the faid Del mond, and to require his resolute answer.

The said articles were in summe as followeth.

Irff, that he Mould deliver unto the faid 10 losd inflice, doctor Sanders, and cer-feine frangers of diverse nations, noto remaining in the faid earles countries, and mainteined by fuch traffors and in fuch castels, as be at his denotion and commandement. with Spa-

That he Chall deliver op into hir maiecties hands grane of one of his castels of Carigososte or Asketten, so, the pledge of his good behautour: which opon fundate and diverte reasons is suspicious, and he for his distoial tie greatlie fulpecteb.

Ehat he do forthwith come and simplie submit himfelfe unto hir maieffie, and to referre his caufe to the subgement of hir maiestie and councell in England, 02 buto him the logo fulfice and councell in greland.

That he do forthwith repaire to the losd fuffice, and foine with his lozofhip with all his forces, to profecute his brethren and other traitors, and to allift and aid the earle of Demond, losd generall in this fer-

Which conditions if he will hold, then he thall be 3° reputed as a nobleman, and be received into favour notwithstanding his errours past: but if he refule, that then let him know, that immediatlie by open proclamation he challbe publiched a traitor.

The earle of Demond, according to the order, went to the fato Definond, and belivered buto him both the letters and the faid articles, and required his refolution and answer. Which when he had over read and confidered, he returned his answer by a letter vated at Trough the thirtith of Daober 1579, vling therein nothing but trillings and delates, requiring relitution for old wrongs and infuries, and fullifleng himselfe to be a goo subject, though he do not pæld to the forefato articles. During the time of this parlie, the lood inflice was removed to Crome, where he expected the returns of the erle of Damond and to that place fir William Stanleie & capteine George Carew came buto his lorothip with their 50 teas, for whome he budertoke to the late loro infice two hundred formen.

The earle of Demond being returned, & haning little prevailed with Delmond, not with fanding his sundie persuasions, there were other letters sent buto him to induce him to the confideration of him. felfe and his effate : but ithen no reason, no persuabrowning fion, noz counsell could prevaile; then it was thought good by the losd fulfice & councell to proceed to their former determination, and to proclame him a trais toz. The losd inffice removed from Crome to Kath 60 kill, and he was no coner incamped, but alarum by the traitors was raised; which was answered forthe with by the losd tuffice and the earle of Dymond: s in that thirmith these or fours of the traitors were flaine, of which the earle of Delmonds butler was one, the earle himselse being then incamped within a mile of his brothers: and not with Canding his in fification to be a god subject, he dailie accompanied and conferred with them. The load tuffice feeing that neither counsell noz delate of time could availe with the earle of Desmond, then by the generall confent of the nobilitie, the councell, gentlemen, and the whole armie, a proclamation was openlie publis thed against the fato earle and all his confederats, in

the highest degree of treason at Kathkill the second of Pouember 1579. The effect of which treasons and proclamation was as here wnder followeth.

The earle of Defmonds treasons articulated.

Hat the erle of Delmond hath praadifed most brinaturallie the subversion of the whole State.

2 That he practifed to bring in ffrangers, and practice with foren princes to bring and allure in frangers to inuade this land.

3 That he foltered and mainteined bodo: San, bers, James Kitzmoits, and others beyond the leas to worke these feats.

4 That albeit to the otter their of the world, he feemed at the first to dislike with them at their landing: yet were they fecretlie interteined by the faid 20 earles permittion, throughout all his countie of pas lantine in Berrie.

5 That ichen bis brethren molt traitoroullie had murthered Benrie Dauels and others at Traleigh, he old let his falo brethren flip, without reproving or blaming of them, and had also commended special. lie the flaughter of Comund Duffe an English. man, who at the fato murthering late in the next bed bnto Dauels.

6 That when the Arangers at Smerweke had no waic to escape by lea, at the comming offir Will liam Darie, he gaue place onto them for their escape by land, and gave his tenants and followers libertie, to ato, helpe, and mainteine them.

7 That contrarie to the commandement given buto him, by the load tuffice, he returned into Berrie, and caused the strangers to leave the fort, and to repatre to the towne of the Dingle and to other places which were at his denotion, a had there interteines ments.

8 That he diffributed the ordinances and artifles rie of the forts buto the rebels, as doth appeare by a note found in the post mantieu of doctor Allen lates lie flaine in the incounter executed by fir picholas Malbie.

9 That he hath fet at libertie such Arangers as he kept colourablie as priloners, and hath amointed them to gard his houses and castels.

10 That he hanged most abhominablie Kichard Cultace, Simon Brian, and others the queenes lub. to be fafelie brought buto him.

II That he fent fundate of his principall men, ferd uifors, and followers, and his houlhold fervants, as also his chiefe capteins, which wnver the popes banner displated most traitozonilie in the fields, dib alfaile fir Picholas Palbie knight bir maieffies lieus tenant of all Mounfter, at Mounfter Guagh, and with banner Pitholas Williams the earles butler did that daie carie.

12 That he hath otterlie refused manie persuafions, friendlie counfels, fundzie messages, and all the good means vice and wrought to reduce and to bying him to obedience.

13 That he hath not onelie refused to deliner op boctoz Sanders and the Spaniards, thich do dailie accompanie him; but hath broken downe his cafels, burned his townes, and desolated his countries aforehand, to the intent hir maiellies forces and lubiects thall not be fuccoured no; refreshed,

14 That he vailte loketh for a further aid and a new luplie of foreners, & vailie folliciteth the chiefe men of the Irith countries to toine with him in this his most execrable and rebellious enterprife.

15 That he openlie protefted fent a mellage to

Ebut he p20:

Dilmond is

ot drille

en faric to

golfila.

the carle

mielle.

hnorth let:

The lecond

the load fuffice that he would disturbe the whole state of Ircland. Therfore they did pronounce, proclame, and publify him to be a most notozious, octestable, and erecrable trattoz, and all his acherents, again & hir maiesties crowne and dignitie, buleste within twentie dates after this proclamation he did come in and submit himselfe. Unto which proclamation there subscribed the earle of Damond, the baron of Dunboine , the bifhop of Waterford , the bicount Pountgarret , fir Bicholas Palbie , fir Comund r Butler, Coward Waterhoule , Theobald Butler, Coward Butler, and Piers Butler.

The prociamation as gainft Defs mond is fent to all the cities in Freiand.

This proclamation was forthwith fent and dil. perfed to Dublin, Waterford, Corke, Limerike, and other principall townes to be in like order proclamed. Immediatlie and within an houre after this proclamation, the countelle of Defmond came to the campe; but the campe was before dillodged from the towne, and all his countrie forthwith confumed 20 with fire, and nothing was spared which fire & Swood could confirme. From this place the load inflice remoued to Pople Baian , wherebpon the third of Ronember be twke a generall muster of the whole armie : and then he delivered to the erle of Dimond tivo hundzed and fiftie boaffemen, and also eight enfignes of formen, of the which companie George Bourchier went to kilmallocke, and fir William Stanleie and capteine Beorge Carew to Abare, And then he remoned and take his fournie buto 30 Limerike, being accompanied with the earle of Damond, who the nert date left the load inffice and returned to his charge. After which departure of the low inflice, the proclamed traitor of Defmond and his brothers, not able ante longer to throw his trea. theries, went with all his forces to the towne of Doughall, where against his comming the gates of the towne were thut, but yet it was thought but co lourablie: for verie Mortlie after, without ventall or relistance, the earle and all his trope of rebels enter 40 red the towne and toke it, and there remained about five dates, rifling and carrieng awaie the gods and houshold stuffe to the castell of Strangicallie and Lefinnen, the which then were kept by the Spank

2 barke well appointed at waterford is fent to youghall.

Ehe towne of

Youghalita:

ken & Spouled.

The ordinare ces reconered from the rebeig.

teine of the barke is flain.

The earle of Dimond ma: to Connilo, E killeth a num: ber of the rebels.

The earle of Dymond, allone as he was advertifed hereof, he caused a barke well appointed to be difpatched from Waterford, & to come to Poughall: the capteine of which barke was named White, a man of that countrie birth, verie valiant and of a 50 front fromach. Affone as be was come to the wals of the tolune, and had andposed his thip, he recoue. red from the rebels certeine optinances of the fato townes; and being put to bnder frand that the fene. thall of Imokellie was comming towards the towns, he fet all his men on land; and fetting his men in god order, he entered into the towne at the watergate, and marched in god order through the towne, till be came where the rebels were togither, and then more rathlie than confideratlie, gave the 60 charge and onlet boon them : but the number of them being great, and his but a handfull to them, be was in berie Chort time inclosed and ouerlaied, and there flaine, and with much ado did a few of his companie recover their thip againe. The load generall and governour in the meane time, not flacking bis bulineffe, dio allemble and multer all his companie. s being accompanied with fir George Bourchier, fir William Stanleie, capteine Dowdall, capteine keth a robein- Furle, and others, made a fournele into Connilo, which was then the cheefest place of trust that the earle had, both for lafetie and strength, and for bittels and forage, and there his greatest force and strength of his fouldiors were feized in the townes and villa-

ges . And they then little thinking and lette loking for ante fuch ghelts, were bnawares and bpon a fubben intrapped and taken napping, and the most part of them taken and flaine, and the villages for the most part burned and spoiled. The earle of Delmond at this present time was there, but not knowne in his castell called the Princastell, and escaped verte Chemical narowlie. This piece of service being done, the load Defining gouernour marched towards Pac Willies coun. Dangerth trie, and being to go through a certeine pate, he met taken, with the fenethall, bpon whome he gaue the charge, tibo answered the same verte valiantite, and the fkirmith was veric hot, in which the senethals byo, thers and fundate of his men were flaine; and the like also befell byon the load governours men , though not fo manie, amongest whome capteine Zouches trumpetor was one; which to greened the lord gene, rall, that he commanded all the boules, townes, and villages in that countrie and about Lefinnen, which tn anie wais did belong to the earle of Defmond,03 of anie of his frænds and followers, to be burned and spotled.

From this he toke his fournete towards Cothe. and in his waie at Daunfening be toke a preie of one thousand fine bundzed kine or cowes, which were all dienen and fent buto Cooke, at thich citie affone as his loodly ivas come, and had refted a fmall time, then by the adule of the capteins he divided and beliowed his companie into fundrie garrifons and places convenient, as which might bell aniwer the feruices . And his loadily being accompanied with capteine Dowdall and capteine Furle, he went to Calhell, and by the wate he toke the maio; of Bougball thome forthwith he eramined , and for his treatons and treatheries, in that he would yeld by the towne buto Delmond, and had before refor fed a band of Englifhmen, which was appointed to lie in garrifon in that towne, for the defense thereof, and had promifed that he would heepe and defend the same against all men ; he carried him along with Chemnat him bnto Poughall, and there before his owne dage Youghally banged him. The lord governour when he came into get biss the towne, found it all defolate, rifled and spoiled, and no one man, woman or child therein, faning one fri er thome be spared, bicause be had fetched the copps of Benrie Bauels from Traleigh, and had carted it Chetona to Materfozo, where it was buried in the chancell of or paged the cathedrall church. And his lozdlyip much pittieng albeidin. the defolate estate of the towne, did take order for the reedifieng of the wals and gates, and placed therein a garrilon of theée hundred formen onder capteine Mozgan and capteine Piers, who did berie god fer The linds nice in the countrie, and by god means drew home tants much the people and old inhabitants, and impeopled the todation towne againe. And the lood gouernour departed inhebitich thenfe, and followed his feruice, as time, place, and opportunitie did ferne; and taking adulle with the capteins for some special scruice, and remembring that the Spaniards had hitherto lien in rest and quietnelle, in garrison at Strangicallie, and bis therto nothing done or fato buto them; it was a greed betweene bis loadfbip and the capteins, to do some service bpon them, and to trie their balue: therebpon they marched thither and laid liege there bnto.

The Spaniards, who kept alwates god watch, and The Spaniards had also verte god'espeals absode, they were south stranged with advertised that a companie of southers were southern the dealwing and marching towards the fatocastell, and fortands when they themselnes saw it to be true, and had dif faing an couered them, they began to diffruit themselves, and fame to doubt of their abilitie how to withstand them. Wherefore abandoning a forfaking the callell, they palled over the water, thinking to recover the woods

and to cicape that prefent danger. But fir Willliam Stanleie, capteine Zouch, capteine Dowdall, capteine Piers, capteine Roberts, and all their compantes did to egerlie follow and partue them, that in the end they overtwhe them, and flue all or the most part of them, and so toke the castell, therein the load gouernour placed a ward. Likewife then he laie at Abare, and inderstanding that the erle of Delmond was abzode, the garrison minding to do some sernice bpon him, they issued out. Thereof he having fome intelligence, notwithstanding his companie was but small in comparison of the others: pet he late in an ambuth to meet them in their refurne; and bpon an aduantage he gaue the onset bpon them, and gaue a verie hot charge, in which the fouldiers of the garrison were so hardle assatled, that they brake the most part of their pikes, and were inforced with their fwords and with the frumps of their flanes to fand to their defences, which they did so valiantlie, was diven to give over and to fle.

The like feruice did fir Henrie Mallop, who then laie at Limerike, fir Beorge Bourchier , capteine Downall, capteine Polingworth, and all the relique of the capteins in their feuerall charges and garris fons, tho though of themselues they were verie for shilligent ward; pet the load governour never flept his time, mut of the but was alwaies in readinedle, being the first with the formou, and the last with the hindermost. In the monethof August 1 5 80, he remoued and dislodged himselfe from Adare, and marched to Botenant a house of the losd Barries, where a piece of service was appointed them to be done: but luddenlie luch a fichnes came among the foldiers with twhe them in the head, that at one instant there were about the hundred of them ficke, and for three dates they late as dead fockes, loking fill then they fould die, but pet such was the good will of God, that few died; for they all recovered. This fickenelle not long after came into England, & was called the gentle corres 40 aion. Pow the companie being thus recouered, his loodhip minding to follow a pece of feruice, divideth his companie into two parts, the one he toke himselfe, and twke the wate by the Pland; the other he appointed to go directlie buto Araligh, and there they met and divided their companies into their parts, t so marched to Dingle a cuth. And as they went they draue the whole countrie before them but o the const the Mentrie, & by that means they prefed and toke thousand kine, belides houles, garrons, théepe, and gotes, and all fuch people as they met they did with out mercie put to the sword. 15y these meanes the whole countrie having no cattell not kine left, they were driven to such extremities, that for want of bittels they were either to die and perith for famine, Mimiliam of to die under the fword. Penertheleffe, mante of them bnder Canding that Cir William Winter vice, admerall of England was newlic arrived with the queenes thips at the Aentrie, and that he had receis 60 ued a commission to vie marchall law, they made their repaire onto him, and obteined protections onder him. Which the fouldiers did verie much milithe, the same to be somewhat presudiciall to hir maies lics feruice: bicause they persuaded themselues, that if they had fololived the course which they began, they Chould either have taken or Claine them all.

Sir William, viceadmerall of England, bpon the neives reported to hir maicflie that a new lup, which has prepared to come into Ireland from out of the was prepared to come into Ireland from out of Spaine, was commanded to hope the feas and to attend their comming, and as occasion ferned to do his best service bpon them. Tho when he had so done certeine moneths, his vittels wared fcant; and fce

ing no fuch matter, and also that the winter was drawing onwards, thinking nothing leffe than that the Spaniards would so late in the yeare arrive thither , be hoised his failes and returned into Eng. land. But he was miltaken a beceined : for not long after they came and landed at Smerwake, as here after shall be at full beclared. And now leaving the foldiers in their garrifons, let os returne to the losd The logo infullice, who when he departed from Limerike the fift fice with the of Pouember 1579, being accompanied with the Bands goeth Bertvike bands, he went into Thomond, where the into Thoearle and his fonne with two bad horffemen met his mend. loadhip; and from thence he travelled by tournies but to Ballewaie, where he was verie honorablie receiued. And to the end to incourage them to perfift and fice is bere continue in dutifull obedience, he confirmed buto honogablic the corporation certeine branches and articles, where received into of some before this were granted buto them in the Gallewate, time of fir Henrie load deputie, and some now new that the earls in the end with the lotte of his men 20 lie fet downe and granted, which in effect were thefe as followeth.

Werwike.

The lost fit =

The charter of Gallewaie with new liberties confirmed.

Irst, that no writ of sub pana thall be ware bod out of the chancerie against anie in-babitant in Gallewaie, butill the partie aubich sueth out the wift, have put in god and fufficient suerties before the lord chancellor, or the major of Ballewaie to profecute the same with

That no new office noz officer be erected in the fowne of Gallewaie by anie deputie or governour, other wife than as they in times pall have bled to do.

That the maior by the adulte of foure alders men, and other foure discreet men of the towne byon good confiderations may grant lafe conduct and protection to Englith rebels and Irith enimies.

That the merchants of the towns which thall buie anie wares or merchandize of Arange merchants, thall put in good and fufficient bands before the maiox that he will well and trulie make paiment buto the fato merchant franger for his debt and dutie.

That if anie inhabitant in the towne do ble anie bindecent & bireverent speach to the maioz, that he shall be punished according to the qualitie of the fault and offense.

That the maioz, bailiffes, and inhabitants thall all the cattell in the countrie to the number of eight 50 intop, vie, and exercise all their ancient liberties, ve fages, and cuffomes.

That in all actions tried before the maior, the partie condemned thall pate reasonable costs, and the faid maioz thall not take anie fæ foz anie fentence, called Dleigethe.

That no dead bodie thall be interred or buried within the towns and walles of Ballewaie.

That when anic Grange merchants come to their post and haven, that the fame be ferthed and viewed for weapons and munitions, and that none about the number of ten persons of the sato thip thall come into the faid towne.

That no Granger be fuffered to take the view of the Arength of the towne, not to walke on the wals.

That the maioz from time to time do take the muffer and view of all the able men, and of their furniture and armour.

That all unferniceable people in time of fernice be sent out of the towne.

That fufficient bittels from time to time be prepared to serve the towne for ten moneths at the least before hand.

That a Corehouse be pronided alwais in the folune for a Caple of vittels to be kept there at all times.

From

william Mo= nonewlie to the anna Engiand nexteth the lozo tuftice.

Capteine Pous fent to lie at the Pewgie.

> Hir Penrie Parington io made fenc= field of the Dbirnes.

The prond letters of the earic of Def= mond.

Ehelerd fus frice entreth a new journete into Doun= ffer.

The load inflice beepeth Collions at werford.

The load tu= ffice receiued honourablie intowater= 8020.

From thense his loodthip by fundate fournies came to Athlon and fo to Dublin; there about themiles before he came to the citie, William Poris newlie arrived out of England, and accompanied with certeine gentlemen, met him with a hundred and fiftie hortemen, well furnished and well horted with Englift gelvings, euerie man wearing a red cote with a yellow lace, tho attended his loodhip into the cle tie, and from thense he was assigned and sent buto the pewite, where he vice berie hoatlie affer bpon the five and twentith of December 1579. His hart mas confumed, his fplene corrupted, and his braine mirt with filthie matter. His bands were dinived and delinered to either capteins. And immediatlie upon his entrance into the citie, be fent for Jaques Mingfield mafter of the ordinance, and by order he ivas commanded as puloner to keepe his chamber for his contempt, bicause bedid not attend the lood tuffice into Pounter as he was commanded; but bpon his submission after foure daies he was relea. 20 fed. And opon the death of Francis Agard efquier, fir Benrie Barington, who had married one of his daughters and hetres, was by vertue of certeine letters from out of England, amounted to be fene. thall of the Dbirnes, as his father in law befoze was . The earle of Defmond and his two brethren fent a proud and an arrogant letter bider their hands, dated the nine and twentith of Ponember 1 5 7 9, to the load fulfice, advertifing, that they were all entered into the defense of the catholike faith, 30 with great authoritie both from the popes holinelle and king Abilip, tho have bindertaken to defend and mainteme them, and therefore perluaded the lord in tice to foine with them.

The losd inflice, having fet the pale in some order, t having committed the same to the governe, ment of the erle of kildare, he made a new fourneie into Bounffer, and departed out of Dublin the eighe trenth of Januarie 1579, with such companies and forces as he thought goo for that feruice, and toke 4 his fourneles along by the fea coaffs; and being come to Waterford, there he kept fellions, & fat in person at the fame. And from thenle taking Tinneterne in his wate he came to Werford, the flue and twen. fich of Januarie 1 579, by water from Ballihacke in certeine botes verie well amointed by the malor of the citie. And before he came thither, fir William Stanleie, fir Peter Carew, and capteine Beogge Carem, and capteine Piers, illued out of the citie inith their foure bands, and neere to the those in the 50 view of his lozoship, they presented him with a follie (kirmith, and fo retired themselves, to make ward against his landing. The bulwooks, gates, and curteins of the citie were beautified with entignes and thot in warlike maner, and then all the thot of the thips in the hauen, and a great ranke of chambers opon the keie, togither with the thot of the fouldiers, were discharged, and gave his lozothip a lustie and a great thundering peale.

their scarlet gownes met him, and presented unto his loodhip the fivord and the keles of the gates, which forthwith he redelinered buto them againe, and the Avord the major bare and carted before his losoffin. De went first to the church, and by the wate byon two feuerall frages made for the purpole, there were two prations made buto him in Latine; and at his returne from the church, he had the third in English at the doze of his lodging. And to this citie the carle of Damond came buto him, and they being togither, letters were fent from fir William Doz gan of advertisement, that the traitors were come bowne about Dungaruon and Doghall. Wher bpon one hunded horffemen biver capteine Zouch, and

Sentleger, and foure hundred formen buder fir Milliam Stanlete , fir Peter Carcin , capteine Broige Carety, & capteine Diers were dispatched to ferue against them.

The load tullice from Waterford, byon notice of the trouble dailie increasing, fent a commission of the eleventh of Februarie, to fir Warham Sentle, ger to be provost marthall, authoriting him to proced according to the course of marthall law against o all offendors, as the nature of his or their offenses of other and deferue; so that the partic offendo; be the mot able to offend fortie thillings by the years in offending land, or annuitie, or be not worth ten pounds in fortheman gods: alfo that opon god caufes he maic parle and hall lan, talke with anie rebell, and grant him a protection for ten dates : that he thall banith all tolers & Cur. die beggers: that he chall apprehend aiders of outlaires and thenes, and crecute all tole persons taken by night: that he thall give in the name and names of fuch as thall refute to ato and affichim: that indusing of his fecutee, he thall take horte-meat and mans-meat where he lift, in anie mans house for one night: that exerie gentleman and noble man do deliner him a boke of all the names of their feruants and followers : that he thall put in erecution all fatutes against merchants and other penall lawes, and the fame to fee to be read and published in everte thurth by the parlon and curat of the fame: and that he do everie moneth certific the lord in ffice bow manie persons, and of their offenses and qualities, that he thall erecute and put to death: with fundate other articles, which generallie are compati led in enerie committion for the marthall law.

The losd tuffice, after that he had reffed about thie wekes at Materfoid, he remound and went to Clomnell, there the earle of Damond met him, being the fifteenth of Februarie 1 5 79, and from thense he went by tourneiss unto Limerike, where The thank the chancellog of Limerike opon suspicion of treas ribeling fon fras committed to prison, and his lodging being ward in fearthed, manie maffe bokes and other popith traff, treaton. togither with an instrument of the earle of Del. monds libertie palantine of Berrie was found. He was after indiced, arreigned, and found guiltie, but in the end pardoned. And the bilhop likewife was Thing bpon forne sufpicion committed pylloner buto his oinne house.

And out of Limerike he marched the tenth of Parch to Kathkell, where within one houre the erle of Damond came buto him, and there consulted for the manner of the perfecution of the enimie. Which when they had agreed opon, they palled the next most ning over the bringe of Adare, and by the waie they burned and spotled the countrie, and went to Kath kell. Pow when they had amended the bridge with the revels had defiroled, and made passable, they pass fed ouer the fame into Connilo, idjere the logo in ffice and the earle of Dromond divided their compantes, and as they marched they burned and be-At his landing the major and aldermen arated in 60 Aroted the countrie, and they both that night incamped within one mile at Bilcolman. And there it was aduertifed, that Picholas Parker lieutenant bnto capteine Fenton, comming from Limerike with five horfemen, and the thot, which were of the gar, rison at Adare, he was set boon at Kathkellbya bundred traitors, with did dicharge arteneoreigh Partina tiene shot at him, and sundzie darts, befoze he espied ballantich them : but he and James Fenton the capteins bas fentethan ther, and Buldon, so bestirred themselves, that they sale, gave the entinie the repulse, and fine their leaver, with fine og fir others, and to came fafe to the campe, but with the hurt of one of their hoalles.

The fouldiers like wife in the campe were to hot bpon the spurre, 4 so eger bpon the vile rebels, that

hat day they spared neither man, woman, no: chilo, but all was committed to the fwood. The fame date, a fouldier of the marthals incountered with two ludie hernes, the one of them be Que, and the other be compelled to carrie his fellows head with him to the campe: which when he had done, his head also was cut off and laid by his fellowes. The nert date follow, ing, being the twelfe of Parch, the look indice and the earle divided their armie into two feverall come infice taking the one five, and the other taking the offer five of Slewlougher, and to they fearthed the words, burned the towne, and killed that daie about foure hundzed men , and returned the fame night with all the cattell which they found that daie.

And the fair lords, being not fatilited with this dates feruice, they did likewife the nert date divide themselues, spotled and consumed the whole countrie untill it was night. And being then incamped nere Demond, whome the earle in the next mogning Charonol brought before the lost deputie, where he in most humble maner yelved, and fubmitted himfelfe to his loadlyips denotion, promiting and prefenting his feruice with all outifulnelle. And then, when affer great travels they had maruellouslie wasted and spoiled the countrie, they appointed to march to Carigofoile, and to late flege to the fame: for in it late the greatest force of the Welmonds, and which was garded and kept by the Spaniards. This caffell fan. 30 produlot beth in the river, and at everie full fea both it and the bannes about it are inuitoned with the faid flouds and flowing waters. Allone as they were incamand flowing waters. Affone as they were incainped, the load inflice approched the castell so nière as he could, to take the view thereof, that accordinglie he might confider the most fittest places for the lateng of the thot for the batterie: and then he commanded capteine George Careto to take out certeine thot, under and to go with him in this feruice. Pow the Spanis mearw ards having espied them, spent manie that voon 4 thinking them, and there the lood suffice verie hardlie escaped with his life, and from being flaine with a mufket thot. When his loodhip byon this view had determi, ned what he would do, he caused the canon that to be planted in the place most fit for the batterie, for other, wife the fort was not to be affaulted.

In the same were sixtiene Spaniards and fistie others under one Julio an Italian, who at the request of the countesse of Desmond undertwke the keping of it, and who reported himselfe to be a ver 50 rie notable enginer : & standing bpon his reputati. on , he plied the campe with continual Mot, putting out an enligne and railing with manie bad fpeches against hir maiestie; veclaring also that they kept tt for the king of Spaine and to Will would, butill further ato were sent from him: and which in verte ded was dailie loked for . Before the canons and o: ther battering pieces could be buladen, they spent the time, occupieng the one the other with fuch deutles as they thought goo for the feruices . And the 60 Spaniards, having the advantage, did by their often hot hurt and kill some Englishmen, namelie a fouldies of fir Beorge Bourchiers, one of fir Henrie Wallops, & one of capteine Zouches: and fir Will liam Stanleie comming with his companie to the trenches to take the ward of capteine George Carew, which kept the watch that night past, was hurt with a musket thot out of the castell in the necke. Allone as the opinance was buladen and planted, they began forthwith to batter the fort with three car nons, a culuering, and a demie culuering; and in host time they to beat it, that the house fell and filled the ditches: by meanes whereof the same became to be affaultable.

Capteine Pacinosth, who had the ward of that daie, entred into the otter banne by a doze that the fouldioes had broken, and was mailter of it prefents lie. The Spaniards therepon retired to a turret that the callell. was upon the wall of the barbican, & some sought other places to hive and to faue themselues, but that part of the castell was beaten downe : and then capteine Pacino2th recovered the possession of the mole, and bio put fiftie to the (wood, of which nines Caricotole the earle vinious their action into two teneral come and the earlighter, the look to twent were found to be Spaniards; and fir others he is taken. toke, thereof one was a woman, which were erecuted in the campe . Pone were faued that dais but onelie the capteine Julio, whome the load infrice The bangging kept for certeine confiderations two or thee daies: but in the end he was hanged as the rest were be, banged. fore him. The next date, being the first of Aprill one thousand five hundred and fourescore, the ordinant ces were removed and carried to the thip, which with all such souldiors as were sicke and hurt were sent togister, the baron of Lernew came to the earle of 20 to Linterike, to be relieved and cured . This castell, one of the princpallest and chiefest forts thus recover red, there resteth onelie the house and castell of As ketten: and the lood fulfice, and the earle of Domond thought nothing more necessarie, than even forthe with to march to Alketten, and to incampe there and to besiege it, even as they had done to this fort of Thecastell as Carigofoile. Where then they came, the two loads Afketten ape bivided themselves, the one taking the one live, and pointed to be the other taking the other five of the water : and up, belieged, on the third of Appill they incamped at the faid cas ffell, the loso inffice lieng in the abbete, and the earle of Damond opon the farther live of the river.

The load inflice viewed the place, and found 110 waie possible to place anie watch of ward niere to the castell, by reason of the great disaduantage of the rockes which late altogither opon the castell. Sir william While the campe laie there, fir Milliam Stanleie, Stanleic gio capteine George Carew, and capteine Walker George Cawent to give fiege onto the castell of Balliloghan, rew beiege a strong house of the Desmonds, and which was the castellof warded untill this time against hir maiestie . The Balliloghan. ward had no somer the light and view of these three entignes, but that they fired the houle and fled : but Che warders they were so narrowlie pursued, that the leaver of stell. them and some of his companie were overtaken and flaine . Whileft the flege laie at Alketten, fir Hentie Mallop treasuro, at warres came from Limes rike to the campe the fourth of Aprill 1580: and the verie same night following, being a verie barke and close night, the warders of the castell fearing the example of the execution done at Carigosofle, The warders and doubting the sequele of the losd suffice preparation made for the batterie to be laid againffit , oto forfake the cas abandon and forfake the castell verie secretile about traine set it on midnight, leaving a traine of pouder to let it on fire, fire, thich confumed & burned a great part of the fame : but the principall towers remained butouched. The warders by fauoz of the darke night escaped into the woods.

This castell thus recovered, the earle of Desmond The castell of had never a castell in all Pounter which was war. Thettenis ded against hir maiessie ; but all were now at hir taken. denotion. The load inffice being polletted of Affiets ten, he appointed a frong garrifon to refide there, and placed fir Peter Carelo , and fir Henrie Mal. lops companie in the castell ; and capteine George A ward pla-Carein, and capteine Pollingworth to be in the ab, ten. bete, and so upon the fift of Aprill he disloged with the rest of the armie, and went unto Limerike: commanding the capteins to cut down the wods on both fives of the river, that the botes might paste freste to and fro. At his comming to Limerike, all things to and fro. At his comming to Limerine, all Mings The armie is noto læming to be at peace, the earle of Opmond Difperied, and returned home to Bilkennie, Tetteine of the couns the garrifons

Capteine

Epanterd is taken and

1 4 8 0

are fent to their places appointed. cell which had followed in this fourneie rode to Dub. im : and fir Micholas Palbie departed into Connagh. And notwithstanding that the most part of the armie was now dispersed into garrisons : yet the fernices of enerie of them never abated . For alwaies as the time of feruice required, the Brithmen ivere issued out opon, and most commonlie had the word five . And the lord inffice himfelfe taking an occallon to vilit the ward at Adare, he palled by water, and capteine Cale went by land , and after a time 10 fpent in fearthing the woods, they returned with a prece of one thousand and two hundred kine, and god verie flaze of thepe, belides the flaughter of

buon the fifteenth of Paie, he received hir maieffes

commission under the broad seale of England to be

manie traitozs. At his being and during his abode in Limerike,

loed inffice (where before he held the same by the election and order of the councell) and there with also one other committion , for creating of fir William 20 Burke baron of castell Connall, with a yearelie pension of one hundled markes during his life. And from this time, the lood fuffice fpent this fum. mer in Pounter, travelling to and fro through out the whole province: he himselfe and everie other capteine in his feverall garrifon dwing such fervice bpon the rebels as occasion by was offred. The load fustice boon the fisteenth of June, after that he had

marched a few miles in Dac Aulies countrie, spote ling, defacing, and burning the same, he patted 3 through the boggie mounteine of Slewlongher in to kerrie, and there he discovered a great preie of the countrie; and purlying the same, by the voward of his hordemen, and he himfelfe in person toke as bout two thousand kine, belides store of thepe and garons, with part of the traitors malking amarell.

The earle of Delmond, the counteste his wife, and bodoz Sanders little thinking of this matter, elcaped berie hardlie; and their priell for half was faine the next daie, being the five and twentith of June at Callelmange . But at this time . a great mutinie

began amongest the fouldiors bnder fir Beorge Bourchier, capteine Pactuoth, and capteine Dow dail, by reason of their wants: but his locally with fuch lenitie and courteffe handled the matter, that Sir Cormac they departed from him well fatified . Likewife fir

Commac Mac Teige Wiriffe of the countie of Cooke old notable feruice boon fir James of Defmond; roade into Pulkroie, and toke a great pieie from the foresato sir Cormac . Wherevoon his brother

hand, withstanding the matter.

Donnell assembleth his brothers tenants and countrie and followed the preie, and recovered the fame: fir James , who thought it to be to great a bilhono; and reproch to depart with anie thing which he kad in

Where upon they fell at hand-fight. In which con-

flict and fight the faid Donnell behaued himselfe so valiantlie, and his companie folustilie stucke to the 60 matter, that the preie was recovered, and fir James himselse mortalite wounded and taken prisoner, and all his force, being aboue a hundred and fiftie perfons, were flaine and overtheowne. He that toke him was a laich, and feruant to fir Comac, tho forthwith handfalted him: and for audiding of certeine inconveniences, he kept him close, and secrets lie bio him in a certeine buth in the fatinelle there. and bound him to fall and ture, that he could not ef cape no; run awaie. And when all the companie was gone, then be toke him and carried him to fir Coze machis mailler, who kept him it fafe cuftodie, but

till, by letters of commandement from the lozd in:

Aice and councell, he did deliver him buto fir Ware

bam Sentleger then prouoti marthall, and to cap hing teine Kaleigh; who (according to a commission in of Dilams like order to them addreffed) was examined, indic ted, arreigned, and then byon indgement dialven, Anthonie ted, arreigned, and then byon indgement dialven, Anthonie panged and quartered: and his bodie being quarte, Britight red, it was togither with the head let on the towne kalinghan gates of the citie of Corke, and made the prete of the was them and the prete of the was them fonles . And thus the petitlent hydra bath lost and

ther of his heads.

This feruice of this knight was maruelloullie ivell accepted, and first from the lood instice and councell, and then from hir maieffie he received her rie frændlie and faithfull letters. This man was a ponger house buto Pac Artie Reough, and thep both a yonger house buto Pac Artie Poze now earle of Clancar, and whole ancestors (as is said) were kings before the conquett of Pountier . Thep are all men of great power, and greatlie effe. med in those parties . But this fir Comac, in ou tie and obedience to hir maiestie and hir lawes, and for his affection to all Englishmen, furpalleth all his owne fept & familie, as also all the Iribite in thatland. For al beit a meere Irifh gentleman can haroly digest anie Englishman of English government, and that foeuer his outward appearance be, his inward affection is corrupt and naught, being not bulike to Jupiters cat, whome though he had Jupiters u transformed into a beautifull ladie, and made bir a noble princelle; pet when the law the moule, the could not forbeare to fratch at him: and as the ape, though he be never forichlie attired in purple, yet he will Mill be an ape : this knight, after he did once pell Think himfelfe to hir maiellies obedience, and had profef. offir Co. fed his localtie, he ener destred to coine himselse bu, Tige to the companie of the Englishmen, and became in time a faithfull and frænolie man buto them, lived according to hir materies lawes, and did to god feruice at all times then it was requisit and required, as none of that nation did ever the like . And if to leave his gowne behind. The like feruice he did 40 at anie time he were had in suspicion, he would by fome kind of feruice purge a acquite himfelfe, even as he did in this present service in taking of sir James of Delmond, to his great praile & commendation, and to his acquitall against the reproducti reports of his adversaries. And fir William Fitz williams in the time of his deputifhip, having had a verte goo triall of his fidelitie, truth, and good fer uice, did give buto him the order of knighthed, and bit Cons made him thiriffe of the countie of Cooke: enenas Ma im thich fir James byon the fourth of August made a 50 the load instice now did commend this his scrusse unto hir maiestie by his letters of the twelfe of Auguft, a thousand five hundred and eightie, and prais eng that the same might be so acceptablie received, as that the enobling of him might be both an op nament to his house, an incoraging buto others to do the like, and a testimonie against others of his fort, the have neglected a number of occasions (at greater aduantages) to have done the like ferui-

> The death of James of Delmond, and the quarter ring of his bodie did maruellouffie difmate the carle himfelfe, fir John his other brother, and boctor Sanders, and all their confederats. And by reason of the continuall perfecuting of the rebels, tho could have no breath nor rest to relevue themselucs, but were alwaies by one garrifon or other hurt and purfued, and by reason the harnest was taken from them, their cattels in great numbers preied from them, and the thole countrie spoiled and preied; the pare people, tho lined onelie boon their labors, and fed by Chamita their mild cowes, were to diffrested, that they would of the personal of the p follow after the gods which were thus taken from them, and offer themselues, their wives, and dille den, rather to be flaine by the armie, than to lufter

2 commilien to create fir Warke to be baron.

The eatre of Delmond and his wife and Doctor Ban= bergin perill to be taken.

2 mutinie a= mong the foul: Dists for lacke of bittels:

Mac Teige Douth a pecce of fernice buon fir James of

Dir James of Delmond in taking of a preieis taken valoner and erecuted.

be famine there with they were now pinded. And his great calamitie made allo a diuffon betweene the earle of iDefinion and his beather fir John , ele ther of them ercufing that inhere of they were both gulltie . The earle himfelle (without reft) fleet from place to place, and findeth finall comfort, and feing no other remedie, fent his ladie and wife whio the lood inflice, who in great abundance of teares be maled the milerable effate of hir bulband, hir felfe, and their followers, making (with mod lamentable requells) (ute, that hir husband might be taken to

fubmiffion. Hir John of Delmond , being in the like di frese, he togither with dodo: Sanders gaue the abuenture, to passe for their refuge to the vicount Baltinglasse, then being in the countie of Bildare. the garrifon which lair at Bilmallocke, making an iffue out by night to de fome feruice, by chance met the faid John and Sanders in the darke night : and not knowing them of fet boon them, and of fours 2 of them they take two, the one being a frier named James Paie and Candarobearer to the late James fitymoris, the open his cranination confessed that the earle of Delimond was author of all thefe on hours, warres, and the other was Sanders man, who was flaine, and the frier was referued, but fir John and the doctor by the benefit of the darknesse verie hard lie elcaped, cut off from their fournete. The load in flice being at pewcaffell, and being aduertifed that the earle of Delmond and Sanders were in Berrie, 3 be forthwith fent for the garrifons of Abare and AC betten to come to him, and for the garrison of Bil mallocke to met him at the place, daie, and time appointed, for a speciall poce of service then to be done. Those commandement being done and obef. ed, they twice their wate into kerrie, and there they had taken the earle, and his countelle, and doc frankand to: Sanders, had not a falle brother bewraled the matter, and yet for half they left their breakfaff behind them halfe dieffed. Peuertheleffe , thep toke 40 two preies, the one of fifteene and the other of eightone kine; and the next date they toke another prete of two hundred kine, flue diverfe traitors, and toke two friers, whole gownes were to long for them to follow the earle and the popes nuntio, they being pore bare foted friers, and he a luftie horiman; and then his loodly to returned to Alketten, where he left maister Parker conestable of the place; and from thense he went to Limerike , there he receiued news by master Zouch , and after by letters from 50 the lord Breie lord beputte, of his arrivall to Dub. lin . And then his loodship minding to make his specie repaire to Dublin , Did fet the countrie in some good order, and by the abulle of the councell at Limerike , he appointed fir Beorge Bourcher co. ronell of all Pountier, and intructions were delle di George Bourcher co: meil of Homelter. uered unto him , both for certeine special fernices to be done, salfo for the generall governement of the whole promince ; & had left but o him the charge (buber his gouernement) of the thole forces in 60 Pounter; which of formenwere two thousand eight

fourescore and fiffene: the thole, the thouland two

bundeed and fifteene men . Likewife he had fent the

like infruaions to fir Marham Sentleger, and the

erle of Clancar . And thefe & other like things dome,

be twke his fournese through Conningh for the like

establishing of the countrie, & came to Dublin the

firt date of September , one thouland fine hundzed

fourescore and one; and the next date he delivered bp

the sword to the lord Greie, as to the lord deputie of

Breland, in faint Patrikes church in prefence of the

conncell, noble men, and gentlemen, which were

for the fame purpose there allembled.

And within fir dates after the logo Greie his arris Che bicount uall, it was ginen his loodlyip to binocritano, that of Baltunthe bicount of Baltinglas, and Peon macke Hugh, the Ginnes the chiefe of his fer of the Dhains, were lieng in the with the re-Dbzins countrie, and were now of great force and beis. frength, by meanes of the companie of capteine Fitzgirald, kinfman to the earle of kildare, who had a band of formen committed onto him in the begins ning of this rebellion, for the defense of the countie of Kildare, which bordereth fast by the Dbrins. And be nothing regarding now, either the dutie of a lub: tea, 02 his cione credit, most traitozoullie renolteth from his lawfull prince, and contoineth himfelfe with traitors and rebels. And with these he practiceth and perfuadeth to refift and make head against hir maiellies forces; because they could not (as he faid) withfrand or prenatte against them : who without ante remard promifed, were ealilie perluaded, because they would be persuaded, and were most willing to exercise anie maner of outrage. All these thus combined, drew one aring, sincamped them. felues in the fattnes of the Binnes, about 20 miles from Dublin, there they kept all their gods & cate tell. This falmelle was by nature lo firong as pole The frength fible might be : for in it is a vallie or a combe lieng of the fathelle in the midle of the wood, of a great length, betweene in the Gunnes two hils, a no other wais is there to palle through. Under fot it is boggie and loft, and full of great frones and liperie rocks, beric hard and entil to palle through; the fives are full of great & mightie tres bpon the fides of the bils , & full of bulliments

and binderwoods The losd deputie, being not yet acquainted with the cultome of the countrie, no, with the Brith fernis ces, and thinking himfelfe in honor to be touched, and the thole armie to be discredited, if a companie of traitors hould lie to niere buto him, and not be touched not fought withail , resolved himselfe to hane a pece of feruice to be done bpon them. Where fore he with all his whole armie marcheth unto the fais Blinnes , & gineth order to fir William Stant & fernice aps leie, fir Peter Careto, fir Benrie Bagnoll, capteine pointed to be Amblete , and to John Darker , lieutenant to cap: bonc againt teine furle with all their fotinen, and to Francis the Doing. Cofbie capteine of the herne, and Beorge More an old beteran of Berwike, cozonell of all the formen, to take this feruice boon them. But Colbie, who had beene a long feruitoz, and knew what to that kind of fernice did belong, did forethe the danger with would follow hereof, and to declared it to his come panie: not with amoing to anoid the reproches with might be lated to his charge, followed the faid fer-uice, and byon the nert date, being the flue & twentith of August, they entered the Glinnes.

The lozo beputte being accompanies with the earle of Inibare , Jaques Mingeficio , capteins Beorge Careto, capteine Denie , and others on hoesebacke faied opon the mounteine five hard by the iood. The archtraito? Fitzgirald, having some putic flaicd fecret intelligence of the feruice towards, he be, boon the Stoweth and placeth all his men with their perces a mountains. mongst the trees, and there covered themselves, butil the Engliffmen were entered and palled into the fallnelle, about halfe a mile on more, and could not eafilie returne : and be having them at abnantage upon everie five of the bill, with great furie ale faileth them with his thot, and in berie thoat time of kill the most part of the voward , both capteins and fouldings . The relique which followed , being in bespaire to recouer what was loft, and distrusting themfelnes, fled at all hands, and ran backe as fait as they could in fo bad a waie. And yet fuch was the nimblemelle of the traitors, and their fkill of fernice in fuch places, that they were like to have beine

D. j.

Ou but is bundled a fwentie; and of holdemen thee hundled both of the

killed; if the losd deputie, and the hostlemen had not rescued them : byon those comming they retired

The English men flaine in the Ginnes.

Sir Beter

into their faffnelle. In this conflit, Beorge Pore, capteine Audleie,

Francis Colbie, and fir Peter Carem cozonell, were then murthered and daughtered, which fir 100 ter was verie well armed, and with running in his armos, which he could not put off, he was haife imothered, and inforced to lie downe: whome when the rebels had taken, they difarmed him, the most part of them would have faued him, and made request Carew flaine. for him, they thinking that more profit would grow among them by his life than benefit by his death . Potwithflanding, one villaine moft butcherlie, alfone as he was difarmed, with his fwood flaughte. red and killed him; who in time after was also kile Jaques wingfield his led. Before the entrie into this feruice, Jaques Mingfield being acquainted with this kind of bold wards his ne- and rath hardinette, and forefreing the entil fuccette which was feared would infue, perfuadeth with his 2 two nemues, fir Peter and capteine Beorge Ca. rew, to state and to forbeare to adventure into the woos. But fir Peter could not liften therebuto, not be perfuaded; but would needs go in . Dis bros ther would have done the like, but his oncle perforce kept him, faieng, If I lofe one, pet 3 will hape the other : and fo by that meanes he was by Gods god. nelle faued and preferued .

This blacke date was a dolefull and a grœuous date to the load deputte and all his companie: not. 39 withflanding, hoping of a hard beginning would follow a better ending toke the matter as patient lie as be could, and made his returne buto Dublin, abiding the comming of the load inflice; tho as fone as he was returned, then the lood Greie was Morne, and had the Mord delinered onto him . The earle of Demond in this meane time, being berie delirous to do fome feruice bpon the Spaniards, being nothing afraid of their force and multitude . marcheth towards the fort, and incamped at Tra- 40 leigh, where the scout the same night espicoa light in the entmies campe, and by reason of the barke night, the companie of them fæmed to be the great ter: which caused the governor to be more watch. full and circumfped . Wherefore in the mouning, like a wife and a politike capteine, lettethall his companies in battell araie, e fo marcheth forwards in his firength & verie god order over the firmo of Traleigh towards the foit, enerie man being at a full resolution to do his bell service that day against 50 the enimie . When thefe Arangers had knowledge of the approching of the lord governor, and his companie, albeit their fort was verte frong, both by nature and by art; pet they diffrusted themselves. and for looke the fort, and by the guiding of the Brilly rie, they remoned themselues from thense to Bland ningell, whome the governor purfued, sovertwke forme of them, boon whome he gaue the onfet, and fairmithed with them: diverte of them he five, and the relicue of them fled into the fastnesse of Glan. ningell, which is a verie Arong place and couert, by reason of the great woods and of the mounteines adioining. Witherespon the date being fpent, and no feruice for that time to be done anie further, the lood governor incamped there that night, fast to their entinies note, to trie him what he would, oz durff do.

The compa= nic of the Spaniards not aboue leuen fcoze,

marcheth in vider of bat-

The Spani=

The earle fol =

loweth the

Spaniards

and putteth

them to the

foile.

their fat.

Allone as he was incomped, he calleft the prie foners (who were taken) before him, and they confelled that they were in number, not aboue seuen hundred men: but had brought with them pikes, caliners, munitions, and all kinds of artillerie, fulficient for fine thousand men : because they knew

that the Irithmen were of bodies fufficient, but that they lacked furniture and training 3.4 in thefe tim things they minded to furnith them; and further al to they fair, that they had fent backe two of their thips into Spaine, to aduertife that they were fafe, lie arrived, and how that they were interteined: requesting that the suplie appointed before their comming from home, might with all speed be Thomson for the comming from home, might with all speed be the comming from home of speed of the cause it was throughlis concluded between the content of the pope and king Philip, to make a through conquet make of all Ireland; and to confequentlie as time though through to ferue, to do the like with England. And mozed puelo Ja uer, that they had brought with them a great malle and Hore of monie and treature, third according to their commission they hap delivered to the earle of Delmono, fir John bis brother, a to docto; Sanders the popes nuntio; and more is promifed to be fent. After thefe things thus done, it was given to

the faid governor to understand, that the same night there were three hundred fouldiors of the enimies companie returned a gone backe to the fort. Where Chand byon he returned also, and followed them the nert Dimmin morning, and came to Dingle, where he incamped camped as neere to the fort as he could; and there choling to the fact, himselse capteine Dowdall , capteine Piers , and certeine that, he drew so nære to the fort as he had the whole discoverie and fight of the fort and compar nie therein, which fæmed to be eafte to be gotten, if he had ance that and munitions for the fame. But as Chemis neither the scholer without his boke, noz the artifi, lacked man cer without his toles, can do anie thing in his protion could fellow the following the without his good with met weapons, noz ferue without his necellaries: and therefore for want of things necessarie for this batterie, the load governoz was datuen to returne,

and to leane the fort.

The Spaniards perceiving this, or milituiting fome other matter, made a fallie of the efcoze men; arbs film and the governoz fæing their advantage, thought to and guit follow the adulte of his capteins, and not to have famul. dealed at all with them . But one Anozew Partin more haffie than adulled, and more rath than wife, procured a lairmith with them, in which he was flaine; and the load governog compelled of force to answer the skirmily . Wut it was not long, but that be founded the retract; and being not able to annote the entimie, not prevaile at the fort, he returned Chemphe backe againe, and by tourneies he came to Rekell: putic com there he met the load deputie, buto whom he yelded to Reball, in bp all his companie, and his commillion, and then is thereal made proutition of his men, and for biduals, to fol thearth low the faid load deputie. The load deputie had now in his companie about eight hundzed men, hozile men and fotmen , binder the leadings of capteins Zouch, capteine Malter Raleigh, capteine Denie, who had also capteine Beorge Carews companie bnder his enligne, capteine Pactworth, cap teine Achin, and others: and then he marched to manic he twice, whome he caried along with him: 60 wards the fort where the Spaniards and Romans were fetled.

> Capteine Kaleigh, not with Canding that the load deputie had raised his campe at Rekell, and was gone towards the fort, pet he taried and flated behind, minding to practife some exploit. For it was not buknowne buto him, that it was a maner among the Irich kerns, that whenfoeuer anie Engi lith campe was dislodged and remoned, they would after their departures come to those camps to take what they there found to be left. Thus therefore liv eng, and keeping himselfe verie close, tarted and a bode the comming of the fato kerns; the susper ding no luch trap to be laid for them. came after their maners and old blages to the faid place, and there toke

toke their pleasure; tho when they were in their fex twictie, the capteine and his men came boon them, and toke them all. Among them there was one, tho catico and was laben with withs, which they vied at ged of halters: and being bemanded that he would do with them, and this he caried them & gaue and fuer, that they were to hang by English thuris : for & they call Englishmen. Is it lo quoth the cape teine well, they Hall now forme for an Joth herne: to their deferts.

Ehelozo de=

pine mars dith to the bu, and be:

Chriottis

1100 1.44

feit

net by

Ch'adigent

The load deputie incamped himfelfe as neere the fort as he could. And at this prefent was fir Willis am Minter also newlie returned from out of Eng. Ino: but he arrived at Binfale, another bice aomerall capteine Bingham came into the bate of faint Barie webe of Smereweke, and not long after, fir William Winter himfelfe followed . And by thefe of all things necessarie, that he at land, and fir Wall liam Minter at lea belieged the fort . But before as nie astault ginen, he first summoned the fort; requiring of them who they were, what they had there to do, by whom they were fent, and whie they fortified in hir maiesties land, required therewith to pield op the fort. But they answered that they were fent some from the holie father , which had given that realme to king Wilip; and fome from king Wilip, tho was to receive and recover that land to the holie thurth of Kome, which by hir matellies means was become schismaticall, and out of the church, with or ther reproduced speeches: and that therfore they were in that respect to keepe that they had, and to recouer that they yet had not . Therespon the lood deputte fent to fir William Winter, to haue conference with him, how, in that fort, and by what water they were to worke for the dispossessing of these firangers from their fort, and how their artillerie and munitions might be belt placed and lated for the 40 batterie; and betweene whom it was then determi

ned how all things thould be done. Whiles they were thus in speaches, and consulting of the matter, the Spaniards thinking to take fome aduantage, made a fallie opon the English. men : thich was forthwith answered by capteine the Wente (who as then had but adoszen that) and by Michaell Butler lieutenant to capteine Kaleigb : 4 thefe to valiantlie behaued themfelues, and to work thilie followed the fight, that they made the Spant 50 ards with more half than with good fpeed to returne againe to their fort . The fame night following, fir William Winter, according to the conclusion betweene the losd deputte and him, he did cause to be billion certaine culturings, and like paces of oxdinance out of hir matellies thips, which then late in the robe of Smeretweeke, and then there being a great banke betweene the thoses five mo the fost, through which the ordinance were to be caried, they bid in the same night cut through that banke, carted 60 their ordinance through it, and mounted them in the place appointed, before the breake of the baie, and before it was open date the batterie was readie to beginen. A picce of fernice (the place and time confidered) thought worthie great commendations. The losd deputie likewise had done the like upon the land five, t fo being on both fibes in readineffe to follow the fernice, his lozothip furmoned them by the hot of a piece of ordinance, offering onto them mertie if they would peeld. But they knowing nothing that was done that night, answered as before, that they would keepe what they had, and would increase that they could get. Where boon they began to bat. ter the fort on both lives, both by land and by water.

This first date of batterie was capteine Kaleighs ward bate. But the Spaniards made their brags, that they cared not for this; and to fet a good face opon it, some of them fallied out, and offered the fairs mily, but verie faintite and fearefullie : and lo both boon the first date, the fecond date, and the third date, little was vone, but onelie the continuance of the batterie. The fourth date was capteine Zduches toardoale, under whom was a luftle young gentled remember, were be hanged by with one of 10 man named John Cheke, who drew for mere the fort, John Cheke his owne withs; the relique he handled according or that he loked over the purpost into it, which being is done feene and percetued, one of the Spantards levelled a peace at him, a with his thot frake him in the head, therewith he vied . About the end of these foure vales, the trenthes for the full batterie were drawne and brought fo nære buto the fort, that now they left to vallie anie longer with the fort, but verie hate lie and Charpelie they battered at it on both fides; The foreis The Spaniaros, tho had flated themfelnes oponithe, battered on means the faid lood deputie was fo well furnished 20 hope of some further sumlie, to come out of their cuerie soe. of Defmond, tof his brethren, than pet they had received; and feeing also the batterie to be fuch as they could not be able to withfrand and hold out, they defired a parle with the lood deputie, tho otterlie benis The Spar ed it : lateng , that his feruice was againft traitogs arbs befires and rebels, with thom no speches not parlies are als lowed. And followuch as they (though frangers by birth) otherwise old confederat with them in luch o a traitozous action, they were in the like predicas ment with them . Then they requested that thep might have libertie to bepart with bag & baggage, which also would not be granted . Then they reques ffed that certeine particular men among thems felues might have their fre pallage, and certeine o ther conditions: but my load refused both this, and all other conditions, requiring an absolute pell bing, 02 nothing at all . When they faw that they could not prevaile anie waie, then at the length they hanged out a white flag, and with one voice they all cried out Mifericordia, mifericordia, and offered to yeelb both themselves and the fort, without ante condition at all . Which thing when it was advertised to his Emterio loodlylp, he fent capteine Jaques Mingfield ma- wingfieldis fer of the andinance to the fast, and to make triall fent to the tope, whether this their offer were true and unfeigned: who then he came to the fort, he was received in, and foothwith the capteine of the fort came unto him, and in all humble maner yelded himfelfe to be brought, and to be presented unto the lord depuis tie: and at the commandement of the faid Jaques Mingfield he difarmed himfelfe, and caufed all his companie to do the like, and to bring all the armonr in the fort into one place; and there they lated their pikes acroffe bpon the fame. Which being bone, the faid capteine Wlingfield came out of the fort, and brought the capteine with him, promiling him lafe conduct to the load deputie. But by the waie, his loadily fent fome to receive him at his hands, and willed the fato Jaques Wingfield to re-

turne againe to the fort. In this fort fir James Fitzgirald knight, and Cheprisoners lood of the Decies, was a poisoner by the order of the interfortes earle of Desmond and one Wilmber an Artifician earle of Delmond, and one Plunket an Irifyman, and one Englithman, which came and accompanied the traitors out of Spaine . The knight was let at libertie, but the other two were erecuted. When the capteine hab peloed himfelfe, and the fort appointed to be furrendered, capteine Kaleigh together with capteine Macworth, tho had the ward of that daie, entered into the castell, a made a great flaugh. ter, manie or the most part of them being put to the flowed. And when all things were cleere, the lood des putie came to the fort, and hauting dome what pleas

100 G 10

fed him, his loadly prefurned, and manie of the cap. teins he faued. The fort forthwith was rafed, the are moz and munitions were dispersed abroad, and all things done as it pleased the losd deputie, he sent the cozonell and campemaister ouer into England by capteine Denie, and bilmilled the armie, and fent exertie capteine to his garrilon. And his loodhip went from thence to Dingham, which is a long leafteving walle towne, and in it foure of five castels, which the earle of Desmond had caused to be besas

Capteine Zouch made the governour of Definond.

-

Capteine Berkeleis came into Freland, and Taie at Affict= ten.

Connagh, Leinfter and Myumfter, are ail by in rebel=

The earle of Dunond is of Mountter.

The caric of Kildarc, and the baron of Delain habin fulpicion, and are committed to ward.

ced in the beginning of this rebellion. And here the earle of Dimond met with the lood

deputie with a new samplie of his owne men, bes ing readie to have followed the feruice if need had to required. In this towne the lood deputie made capi teine Zouch gouerno; of Berrie and Delmond, and appointed buto him the hundred men, and accome panied him with capteine Call, who had one hundred men, and capteine Achin, who had fiftie horffer men, and commanded thefe to lie in garrifon in that towne, 03 there they thought god. And thefe had to 20 them given all the victuals which were found in the fort. And from hence his lorothip went to Limerike, and came thither the seauen and twentith of Ponember, in the yeare of our Lord one thouland fine hundred a eightie. At which time there arrived out of England fir new bands of foldiers, under the lead. ing of capteine Berkleie, capteine Crule, capteine Herd, and capteine Canner, all which his loodship bestowed in fenerall garrifons, and in fuch places as were most met for service; capteine Berkelie one. lie of the capteins remained in Mouniter, and was placed in the house of Alketten, the cheefest castell of the earle of Defmond with two hundled men. The others went into Connagh, where the wicked fonnes of the earle of Clanricard were now byon their keeping. For not with amoing that the Spanis acos were ouerthrowne, and thereby a sufficient warning was given to the rebels, to bethinke them. felues, that if they did perfift in their rebellions, the like would also infue opon them : pet læ how that the 40 venemous Bydaa had no loner loft one of hir heds, but in fixed of one, fundzie and manie others are fprong up. For at the verie instant, the bastardie brovef the earle Clauricard, the vicount of Baltingglaffe, affociated with the Dbiins, Omozes, and the uenaughs in Leinster, a with fundrie others of that wicked nation, confpire, and are bp in open rebellion; and fo now at this one instant, Mounter, Connagh, and a great pece of Leinfter are in arms and adual rebellion : onelie Alffer (with was 5 wont to be the worst) is now the best and most qub etelf.

The lord deputie being at this present in Lime. rike, t advertised of these troubles, letteth all things in oader for the fernice in Mountler, and committed the whole government of that province buto the earle of Demond, and then he returned onto Dubline, where he toke ozder for Connagh & Leinfter. And about this time there arrived out of England The cleargies 150 hollemen let out at the charges of the clear, 60 bind du actue gie of England, binder the leadings of William into Irciand. Ruffell forms to the earle of Warfell forms to the earle of the earl Fitzwilliams, with were dispersed according to the feruice . The lood ocputie being returned onto Du. bline, the earle of Kildare, and the baron of Deluin his sonne in law, were had in suspicion to be partae kers and fecret dealers in thefe rebellions, and there byon were committed to ward under the cullodie of Jaques Mingfield mailler of the ordinance . 3m. mediatlic byon whose aprehensions, the lord Hens rie fitzgiralo, sonne and heire to the faid earle, and of the age about feauentene yeares, being perfua. acd by his folderfathers and followers, be fied into

Dipalia thereof he was baron, and there (as it was Cheane faid) he was taken by the Doonhours, and kept a, inkept by gainst his will for his safetie, butill they did hears Demburg further what should be become of the earle.

This thing being advertised to the load deputie. he confedenced that this was but a furmiled and co lozable kind of dealing, to bleare his lozothips eies: therefore by order and good adulte he first willed the earle to feno for his fonne, who did fo. Wout his mef. fenger returned with an answer, that the pongloid was willing to come, but the Dconbours, who were in boubt what Mould be become of the earle, would in no wife fuffer his sonne to depart, buleffe thep might have god affurance for his fafe returne a. gaine onto them. The loso deputie not liking thefe kind of fond excules and dilordered dealings, lent the earle of Dymond then being in Dubline, to deale Cheentel with the Deanhours, who being accompanied with Openand for Comund and Piers his brethren, Picholas fentucks White mailler of the rolles, capteine George Ca, Punglap rem, capteine Macworth, and lundrie other cap, figuate teins and gentlemen, made their repaire to the boy bers and marches of Dhalfa; thense after much talke to no purpole, they all returned without the vong loed. Revertheles afterwards the Doonhours then they had better confidered of the matter, and had had some conference with Hussen and others the earles men, and militulting that some further troubles mould infue even as the earle of Dimond bad partlie threatened them; and boubting also least the faieng of the some might be prefudiciall to the far The your ther then in all half did fend the young load to the erle load is fine of Demond, the caried him to Dubline, and belive, the carled red him to the load deputie : and his loadhip fouth, Dimono. with fent him to the ward, where he remained with his father, butil they both and the baron of Deluin Kilonian were fent into England, where the earle and the bas his formen ron were fent to the Lower, and the young lood come forme inland mitted to the cultodie of the earle of Bedford. The archimin earle died after in London, and his bodie was care the carles ried into Ireland, and there buried amongest his in Lordon. ancelto2s

Capteine Walter Haleigh, lieng in garrifon at Cooke, and nothing liking the outrages, bodzages, and villanics dailie practiced by Barrie, Conden, Captiling and others bpon the god fubieds and hir maiefties leigh comple garrifons, thereof fundate complaints had beene nethanans made, and fmall redreffe had , he rode himfelfe to the futient Dubline unto the lood deputte, and made his come oftherwise plaints thereof, alledging that the outrages of the Barries and his conforts were such, that buleste they were proclaimed traitors, and with all dille gence followed and purfued, the event therof would be verie entil, to the aggrenance of god lubicas, \$ to the incouragement of the wicked : whole info lencie and prive was growne to such a brigth, that the sward with extremitie was the onclie means

now to redielle the fame.

The load deputie and councell, when they had Captrint Be heard and well confidered this, they fent him wighhatha backe againe with a committion but o himselfe, to a the misting feize and enter open the castell and house of Bar menticals rie court, and all other the lands of the sale of house and the sale of the sa Barrie: and likewise to pursue and follow him in partie the the best maner as he thought god : and for his best commit. ter feruice to be dome herein, he had certeine horde. men in wages also given buto him, and added buto Daniblos his enligne of formen : ther opon he returned . But Barne bur before he was come backe to Corke, the cafe was ab neth and for tered; for the matter was to ordered and handled by high same fuch as there and then were in authoritie, and fo may house nie delales were bled to hinder the god feruice put poled, that his commission auailed him berie litils er nothing, for the callell of Barrie Pope was come

Capte Baici laid fo fencic

Chi

mitted and delivered to the cultodie of the mother of the faid Danio Barric, and by hir fet over buto him hir fonne: and who forthwith burned and defaced the falocastell being his principall house, as also wasted the abole countrie, and became more worke and out: ragious than he was before. This capteine making his returns from Dubline, the fame well knowne onto the feneschall of Imokellie, through whose countrie he was to passe, late in ambush for him to haue intrapped him betweene Doughall and Cooke, 1 lieng at a foot, which the fato capteine must passe oner with fir horstemen, and certeine kerne. The caps teine little mistrusting ante such matter, had in his companie onelie two horsemen and source that on horsebacke, which was to small a force in so doubt. fall and dangerous times; neverthelelie he had a be. riegod guive, which was the fernant of John Fitze edmunds of Cloue, a good subject, and this guide threw everie comer and Carting hole in those

places. The capteine being come towards the ford, the fenelchall had espied him alone, his companie bes ingleattered behind, and verie fiercelie pursued transchal him, and crossed him as he was to rive over the was enthing ter, but yet he recovered the food and was palled or enthings one of the recovered the food and was palled or ucr. The Iriffman who was his guive, when he fatu the capteine thus alone, and fo narrowlie diffrested, be thired for himselfe and fled buto a broken caffell children fait by, there to faue himfelfe. The capteine being diame thus oner the water, Henrie Boile, riding alone about a bowes that before the rest of his companie. 30 then he was in the midle of the ford, his horte found died and call him dolune; and being afraid that the fenefchals men would have folowed him and have killed him, cried out to the capteine to come and to faue his life; tho not respecting the danger be him. felfe was in, came buto him, and recovered both him and his horse. And then Holle covering with all half to leave up, did it with such half and behemen. cie, that he quite ouer leapt the bootle, and fell into a mire fast by, and so his horder an awaie, and was taken by the cnimic. The capteine neuerthelelle flatoffill, and bid abide for the comming of the refidue of his companie, of the foure that which as pet were not come forth, and for his man Jenkin, who had about two hundred pounds in monete about him, and fat upon his hooffe in the meane while, has uing his fraffe in one hand, and his piffoll charged in the other hand. The fenelchall, tho had to fiercelie followed him opon four, when he saw him to frand and tarrie as it were for his comming, notwith standing he was counted a man (as he was indeed) the counts: of great service, and having also a new supplie of twelve hossemen and sundate that come buto him; pet neither he nor anie one of them, being twentie to one, ourst to give the onlet open him, but onelie railed and bled hard freeches but o him, butill his men behind had recovered and were come unto him, anothen without anie further harme bepar,

It happened that not long after, there was a parlæ apointed betivene the load governos and the revels; at which the fenelchall was prefent, and food much opon his reputation. Capteine Kaleigh being present began to charge him of his cowardnesse before the earle of Demond, that he being twentie of his live, to him alone, durft not to incounter with him. Therebuto he gave no answer. But one of his mon franding by, faid; that his maisser was that date a comaro; but he would never be fo forgetfull as gaine, if the like feruice were to be done, and in ma. nie great terms eralted his maister the seneschall for his valiantnelle and feruice. The carle of D20 mond hearing those great speches, twice the matter

in hand, and offred buto the fenelchall, that if he and The chalenge fir John of Desmond there present, and there or source made by the others, the best they could those, would appoint to mond to the met him; capteine Kaleigh, and luch foure others fencichail. as they would bring with them, they would come to the fame place, and patte over the great river buto them, and would there five for the, foure for foure, or fir for fir, fight and trie the matter betweene them; but no answer was then given: wher bpon the witte knight was afterwards fent buto him with this dia. lenge, but the rebels refused it . Potlong after this, there were freedes made, that the earle of Demond was to depart from this long and wearie feruice into England, capteine Zouch Moulo in his place be the generall. Betweene the remouing of the one, and the placing of the other, fir William Horgan, capteine Kaleigh, and capteine Piers had a com million to be governozs of that part of Pounifer, Capteine Mathere they frent all that fummer, and late for the millioner in most part at Lismoze, and in the countrie and Mounter, woods thereabouts, in continuall fernices byon the enimies from time to time, as occasion and opostu nitie ferned. And when the lummer was spent, capteine Ka-

leigh returned with all his band onto Cooke, being

in number eight hoaffemen and foure feore fwinten.

And as he pasted through the countrie, it was aduertiled to bim , that Daufo Barrie an archtraito; was at Cloue with a great trope of fundie hun: Capteine Bas dzeds of men. Wherebpon he thought god to palle leigh followeth that waie through the towne of Cloue, minding to bron Barrie,

trie the valor of Dauid Barrie, if by anie meanes be might meet with him . And enen at the verie towns end he found Barrie and all his companie, and with a luftie courage gave the onlet byon him. But Barrie refused it, and fled. And then this cap. teine palling from thense, in his tomeie he espied in a plaine neere adioining to a woods lide, a compas nie of formen by themselnes, bpon whome with Capteine Ro fir horffemen he gave the charge : but thefe being leigh in bancut off from the wood wherebuts they were flieng, ger to be but and haning not fueca noin to believe a relieve them. icd. and having not fuccos now to helpe & relieve them. felues, they turned backe, a contoining themfelues togither to withstand this force and onset made bus on them, in which they behaved themselves verie valiantlie, and of the hoofes they killed five, of which capteine Kaleigh his house was one, and he him felfe in great danger, and like to have beene flaine, ifhis truffie feruant Aicholas Wright a Poskihire man borne had not bin. For he perceiuing that his Che good fermailiers horfic was galled and fricken with a dart, microf Micho and plunged so much, that to his sæming he was ias wright, past serutce; the said Picholas willed and called to an Irifhman there, those name was Patrike fagaw, that he hould loke to his capteine, and either to refeue him, 03 to give charge opon the enimie . Wherevoon the faid Fagaw rescued his capteine, the fato Picholas Wright forthwith gave the onlet upon fir of the entinies and flue one of them. And therewith came one James Kitzrichard an Frish gentleman with his kerne to the refeue of the cape teine, but his kerne was flaine, and himfelfe in dans ger . For Wiright not loking on them followed the

enimie verie egerlie, and recompensed the lotte of

one with the flaughter of others. Which capteins

Kaleigh perceining crievout to bis man,faieng;

Mright, if thou be a man, tharge aboue hand & laue

the gentlman. Tho at his mainers commandment

preffed into the middle of the enimies, and flue one of them, and to faued the gentleman : and, in which

fkirmiff his bootle leg was cut bnoer him. Diverte

formen were daine of the enimies, and two were

taken priloners, thome they carried with them to

Coake.

Q, iii,

The load Roch is had in fuspicion, and ta fent for

At his lieng in Coske there were fundzie pieecs of feruices done by him, all which do berie well deserve to be for ever registred. And amongst all o. thers this one point of his scrutce deserneth both commendation and perpetuall remembrance. The load Roch was growen into a suspiction that he was not found of his lotaltie. Wherevpon capteine Ka leigh by commandement was to fetch him and his ladie to Cooke buto the generall. This thing was not so patailie determined, but that the seneschall and 10 Dauf Barrie had knowledge thereof, and mind. ing perelie to take the capteine at fome abuantage, foep had affembled a great companie of themselves to the number of feuen ozeight hundzed men to baue met with him either comming or going. The capteine percetuing and forethinking how dange rous his enterpaire was against so noble a man in that countrie as the lood Roch was, tho was verie well beloued, commanded boon a fudden all his men one and other, both boottemen and foimen, 20 which in the thole were not about foure score and ten persons, to be in a readinelle bpon the paine of beath betweene ten and eleuen of the clocke of the fame night. At which time enerie man being in a readinelle, he toke his fornete and marched toward the lord Roches house called Ballie in Parth, with is about twentie miles out of Cooks, and came this Capteine Ka: ther somethat earlie in the morning. At his come with look Ko: ming he went southwith to the castell gate.

ches house.

Capteine iRa=

leigh being re=

The townsmen when they faw their loads house and castell thus suddenlie belet, they doubting the word, did arme about fine hundred of themselues . Where byon capteine Kaleigh placed and bellowed his men in battell raie in the towne it felfe, & mar. thed agains to the castell gate, with certeins of his officers and gentlemen of his band, as by name Atchaell Butler, James Fulford, Picholas Witte, Arthur Barlow, Benrie Swane, Winking Buith; and they knocked agains at the gate. And after a thile there came the or foure of the faid look Roches 40 never have cleaped. The look Roch being brought gentlemen, toemanded the cause of their comming, buto whome the capteine answered, that he was come to speake with my lord : with was offered he Hould, so that he would bring in with him but two or thee of his gentlemen, thich the capteine crited into the was contented with , yet in the end (but with much callell getteth abm) be came in with all thefe few persons before in all his men. named. When the capteine was once come within the castell, and had entred into some speches with the lozo Roch, be so handled the matter by deutles 50 ham, among whose companie there sell a dangerous and meanes, that by little and little, and by some and some, he had gotten in within the fron doze oz gate of the courtlodge all his men. And then having the advantage, he commanded his men to frand and gard the late gate, that no man thould palle in o; out: molikewise charged everie man to come into the hall with his piece well prepared, with two bullets. The losd Roch when he faw this, he was suddenlie amazed & Aricken at the hart with feare: but offembling the fame, he let a good face opon the matter, and calling for meat, requested the capteine and his forefait gentlemen to fit downe, a to kepe bim companie at dinner.

After dinner, the capteine falling into freeches with the faio load Kody, declared plainlie buto him the cause of his comming, and she wed that he and his wife were accused to be traitors, and that he had a commission (which he shewed unto them) to take and carie them along with him to Cooke: which he was to performe, and so would. The losd Koch alled. ged manie ercules for himselfe and for his wife, fateng in the end that he neither could not would go: the capteine antwered, that if they would not go with a good will, they floorlo perforce go against their

will. Che lood Roch feing that fiere toas noreme, &: vie, he yælded : and then the capteine minoting to lofe no time, willed him to command and cause all follows as successful. those of the towne, and all such as were about the bouse, to attend and be in redinesse to aid him, and to let him footh in his toznete: which he did, and berie willinglie thewed himselfe to abide and obeic the capteines commandement , faising that he would answer the matter well inough, and disharge what. forner thould be late to his charge, for he knew himfelfe to be cleare. And to be made himfelfe and big mife redie to take the formeie in hand, as the capteine bid appoint and command; and towards night they did fet forward to Cooke. But the night felicut to be verie tempelluous and foule, and therewith fo barke, that no man could fe hand or fot, nor pet bil cerne one another; and the wates also were so fowle, fo full of balks, hillocks, pits, and rocks, that the fouldiors thereby were maruelloudie troubled and incombred, some frumbled among the flours, some plunged into holes, and some by their offen fals ivere not onelie burt, but also lost their armour, and were marnellouflic spolled: and besides that, they were among and in the mivole of the enimies, who late in fundzie ambuthes, thinking verelie to haus intercepted them, and to have fet byon them; but the Darke night which was cumberfome to themselves, was a thatow to throw them from their enimics. And in the end, though with much trouble, they came to Cooke in lafetie lauing one foldier named John Abelium, who by his often falling and frumbling a mong the flones and rocks, did to burt one of his feet, that he could never reconer the fame, but did in

The capteine being come to the towne fomethat earlie in the morning, he was received in, and prefented his pationers to the generall, with no little admiration that he had escaped so dangerous a sor neic, being berelie supposed of all menthat he could to be examined, old fo well answer for himselfe, that in the end he was acquited, and taken for a true and the a god lubied, and which in time was well tried and felle. knowne. For not he hunfelfe onlie, but all his fons and followers, oto attend and performe all such fer The uices as were late upon them; and in with, the of andia his sonnes were hilled by the entmie in hir maie, good. Aies fernice.

the end confume and rot awaie.

Capteine Zouch (as is afore faid) late at the Ding and an extreme licknesse: few or none escapedit, howbett mante died therein. And in which diffresse it was advertised him, that the earle of Delmond and Dauld Barrie was allembled at Aghado with theé thous mo men; and he being verie desirous to do some service opon them, been all his full force of hollemen and formen buto Caliclmange. And then by the adulte of his capteins Achim and Call, he luddenlie made an onfet boon his enimies, before they will of anie luch thing, and flue a great comparement nie of them, and draine the erle to fuch a pulh, that he 300 in his thirt was driven to thift for himselfe, in the ther middle of his gallolugialics, and by that means he had escaped. The earle nothing liking this coole successe, taken fought a better place of fafetie, and remound him felfe to Harlow won, and passed by the waie to fail mallocke. Which when the garrifon there did under, Cand, they purfued and followed him, namelic cap teine Bourchier, capteine Doindall, capteine Dak worth, and capteine Porris, thic miles togisher by on the plains betweene Kilmallocke and the wood, and flue manie of the rebels, And capteine Dowdall tho was acquainted verie well with that woo, and in it had ferned fundate times, be would needs, and

diventer into the wood, where he met with the earle of Defmond now the freend time, and gave the onlet vpon him, billed a great number of his men, toke from them their cariages, and dioue awaie a great picie of hine, and brought them to kilmal locke to the garifon. Pære about this time the fence hall came to Liamore, and preied that countrie, and dione awaie freir cattell. Thich layers the gard fon heard, and were advertised thereof, they tilico, and followed the preis to reconce it; but they were fo incountered and fairmifped withall, that they loft the piete, and fine and finentie of their men were flaine. Dinerse fairmisyes were dailie done opon the entimie, and mante to meies made byon them to

Korlinond.

their great damages and hurts. In the moneth of August next following, in the peare of our Lord one thousand fine hundred eightie and one, the lood deputte made a tomete into Mounfler, where when he had taken an account of all their doings and fernices, he established capteine Zouch to be gouernour of all Hountier, and generall at anions armes, and their his loodhip returned through Coand govern nash binto Dublin. This now new governor, being accompanied with capteine Kaleigh and capteine Deloball, transiled from place to place to sæ all thungs in good order: but the certeine place of their resting was at Cooke, where for the most part they late in gariforn making in the meane time fundate

tomoles, as occasion of feruice did require. And they being in Cocke, nowes was brought unto the go. nernourthat there was a great quarell fallen out as Dar bellining David Barrie and the fenefchall, and that make to they were mortalientinies, and at a deadlie foo; and they late both in Dunfrinnen fibe, not far from the blacke water. The earle of Delmond and John his brother late in Patribe Condans countrie, being on the further five of the lato water, who were berie forthis quarell, and would have come bu to them, but the waters were fo great, they could not yet they fent their mellengers to and fro among them for some pacification, but it was to no effect. Capteine Dowball upon thefe newes fent out an Irifyman which he had, and the was a notable fpiall, named Richard mac James, and willed him to like out there the fenelchall was, to the end that he might make adzaught boon him . This Richard diaminghimselse to the companies of the rebels, and lieng among them in their cabins there they laie in the wood, he fell in companie, and then ens tred into a great familiaritie of one with was a mellenger from the Defmonds unto the feneschall, and hethinking nothing but that this Kichard was one of the faid companie, began to discourse unto him the balinesse which he had there to do : and told him that the next date following, fir John of h Idmof Definond die appoint to come thither, and to make Othondap apeace and au agréement betweene Barrie and the fenciciall . When as laichard mac James The alongue had heard at full all his speches, then he intreated him that he would go to Cooke with him, which in the end the fellow was contented to to dw. And in the next morning they went togither to Corke, and at their comming thither, did veclare buto captoine Delivered the whole matter, and he forthwith adver, tifed the fame to the governour: who albeit he ofd not altegither belieue that was fold, yet he agrico that it was best that some service should be done Greatman thou teine Dalman Gonelado that himfelfe and cap, teine Downall Choulo do the fame, onder the colour

they be knowne of that which they had determined.

And having prepared all things necessarie for this feruice, the fame night they left the charge of the ga-

rison buto capteine Raleigh lieutenant: and them, sclues taking their leave, as though they were bound for Limerike, they marched out at the gates, and by breake of the Daie they cams to castell Lions, the weather being verie milie and thicke, and in the castell they found but one pope man, who told them that Danid of Barrie was gone but a little befoze them onto Humacquilliam. The governour and the capteine being berie eger, and delirous to do some service, they followed the tract of the house a god prettic waie; but the capteine miltruffing that no good feruice would be done that wate, perfuaded the governour that he thould rather enter and fearth the woos, which were fall by, where as he thought some god service would be done, whose adulte the governour followed: and they had ridden but a little wate, but they faw two horstemen come riving toward them, but as some as they had seene the fato governour and capteine, they returned backe againe.

Ahen the capteine told him that there was a bog in the wood, and his adulte and counfell was, that force of his that thould be fent to frand betweene the bog and the woo; with being done, they followed those two men so sport, that they were driven to for fake their hostes, and to run on fot towards the bog. But the lofe that being in a readineffe, did put them backe againe boon the horffemen , tho gave the onfet boon them; and the one of them, with was Sir John of fir John of Defmond they foze hurted with a horffer Defmond kilmans faffe, that he fpake berie fem woods affer. led, and his And the other, whose name was James Fitziohn boon ag of Strongeculite, they toke : and both they carried by the hale. with them to Cooke. Sir Johns head was fent to Dublin, but his bodie was hanged by by the heles bpon a gibbet, and fet bpon the north gate of Corke. And James Fitziohn was drawne, hanged, quartered. And thus have you the third head of the benemous Hydra cut off, who had his full reward and merit, if not to to god for fo villanous & bloudie a traitoz: icho respecting neither the honoz of God, the obedience to his prince, the credit of his owne houle, the faith to his friend, nor the frate of the commons wealth, was wholie imbrued in blond and villanie; and in blond he died, and had his reward by Gods

fult judgement. Potlong after this, it was agreed that a draught Choulo be made opon Daulo Barrie, for the preis tibich he and Bozen mac Swene had made in Care 50 breie, and passed with the same by Bentrie, where late a garrifon under the leading of capteine Appel lete : but he being deceased, the same was committed to captein Fenton, thole lieutenant named Richard Cant, minding to croffe the preie, fell into the fight with Barrie and his companie: but he was flaine and all his companie, there being but one man the danmilager left aline, who by fwift, neffe of his fote escaped. The foresaid Amelleie was a verie proper man , a gentleman borne , and of a good house, and brought op in learning; he could write verie well, and also deliner his speeches verie orderlie and eloquentlie. When he grew to some ripe yeares, be fell acquainted with some lose companions, the perfuaded him to accompanie them to the feas, promiting him the fun and the mone, and all the wealth in the world. And he being fone intifed and perfuaded, was contented, and went to the feas, and became as bad as the baddelf; whereof great troubles infined, and he at length was diff uen to leave the feas, and to wander a long time on the feacoafts in the province of Pounfier : there by occasion he fell to come to acquaintance of the earle of Delmond, with whome he found fuch fauor, that no Englifman could do moze with him than

Dows that they were to make a fourncie buto Limerike, and to they caused it to be salo: for in no wise would and capteine

fpoile and en=

ter into Bar

ries campe

and kill his

mien,

Dowball

for him was quailed and forgotten, he fell to be acquainted with the good Penrie Dauels, thome he found rather a father than a friend buto him: and then his behautour was such, that he grew to be in god favour with all Englishmen, and in the end put in truft to do lundgie feruices in Pounffer, and was become and made a capteine, in which office he difcharged himselfe verie hone Alie and faithfullie. The The gonernoz goucernoz continuing ffill in one and the fame mind, 10 to do fome feruice bpon Barrie, tho then late in Dunfrennin, he togither with capteine Dowball marched to Barries campe, and carlie in the mosning (they being bulwhed for) entred into the campe and there made a great flaughter bpon Barries men,but Barrie bimfelfe was gone mid fied . After this time, the fato Barrie considered his distressed case, and how continualise he was pursued and followed by the governour and the English garifons. those force he saw that he could by no means auoid, 2 but that at one time or other they would take him at some advantage. He maketh humble petition to the for appotention governour that he might be bnoer his protection,

he could. Afterwards, when the narrow fearthing

and to live thenseforth in some dutifull and restfull order; which he in the end did obteine.

AThe L. De= putic calleth fundric bands

in Mounfter.

Marrie fueth

ron of Lerna breaketh into onen rebellion The cause of do impute it to the hard beas ting of the gonarowlic wat= ched him that he had, and fo intercepted him from his provision, that left to cat. Fitzmozis fernant to Cahis maifter.

The lood deputie, thinking that by the death of John of Desmond, and the stlence of the earle his brother, who what was become of him no man could tell, but supposed that he was fled beyond the seas, 02 that he was dead, and that all things were well and 30 in quiet in all Mounster; he thought good to ease hir mateffies darge, and lo caffed fundate bands and discharged sundrie garisons, leaving for the service of Pountier in the thole but 400 fatmen \$50 horses men, of which, 200 were under incleaning of the gov uernoz, one hundled under capteine Dowdall, and one hundred binder Sir George Bourcher; and the first horsemen were bnoer capteine Achin, who late in garrison at Adare in Berrie. When all things (I faie) feemed to be at reft and in peace, and all things 40 well, behold a new firre (and bulmked for) is now Fitzmozis bas raifed; for fitzmozis baron of Lerna, who had ble therto distembled the matter, and pretended to have biene a dutifull subtea, when he saw the weaknesse of the Englishmen, thow that the garrisons were this his bica- discharged, & therefore the felv men lest were scarle king out, some able well to faue and keepe themselves, much less to burt others : he breaketh out into open rebellion, and foineth with him his wicked, traitozous, and uernoz, who to perfured fonne. This baron of Lerna his first and 50 cellors were fernants to the barons of Carew, and he alwais tok of Dozon, and lozds of Lerna, and had the chiefe from him what rule and government onder him of all his countrie in Mounifer, which was verie great and large : his eldeli fonne he kept in the court of England . And this Fitzmozis, who by the authozitie binder his mai he had nothing fer was growen into great credit in the countrie, and franding in hope to have their friendship and aflistance in all his businesse, watched his time, and killed the lood Carew his maister, at a table which 60 Lerna billeth pet remaineth in the house, and entred into all his baronic of Lerna & his other possessions in Bounffer, even as the like was owne by the Bauenaghs in Dozon in Leinster . And the beire of Carew in England, who had great and large pollections in Denon and in fundrie thires elfeubere in England, made the leffe and little account of his lands in Freland, and so by little and little they lost all their lands in Freland.

This new baron of Lerna, the first thing that he toke in hand, was to cleanle and to rio his owne countrie from all Englishmen and their garrisons: and in the end, taking capteine Achin at an aduan. tage, flue him, and recovered the ward of Adare. Af-

fer that, he went to the ward kept in the eastell of Theband Lesconile, in which were but eight Englishmen, and Leman Aelconile, in which were our eight angumentum - enough the castell being verie hard to be gained, he view that the castell being verie hard to be gained, he view that the castelline companie Confidence of castelline accompanie the cause vering seems grate close & tealie a companie companie contratagem. He laid verie close & tealie a companie contrata of his men in an old house fast by the castell, a then talkethe he practiced with an old woman, which was wonte, quanta inte uerie morning to bring a great balket of coles or turffe into the ward, that as some as the was he tivene the two gates of the castell, the thould let fall hir balket and crie out: which the did. How when the was come to the castell, and had after hir accusto. mas come to the called to the ward, one of them came bloom and bolled the otter from doze, and then he did of the called to the forme in . Although the called the otter from the called th pen the inner doze for hir to come in . When the Letonik was come betweene the two dozes, the let fall hir great balket of coles and cried out . The companie forthwithlieng in the fatoold house came, and the ward being not able to draw onto them the ofter fron doze, noz to that fast the inner doze, the enimie entred, twhe the castell, killed all the ward, and cast them over the wals. The good fucceste of this strata. gem caused him to practife & to put in the other like deuties for the regaining of the castell(as I remem. ber of Aonagh. For he supposing that hungrie solds. A stratage ors would be contented to accept anie courtefie, he at about procured a poing harlot, who was form what finointfaire, to go to the castell, prefending some inforte to have beene done to hir, and to humble hirfelfe to the capteins denotion, being supposed, that he by these meanes would fall into the Ithing and fantaffeng of hir, and so would reteine hir . And by these meanes, the by hir cunning handling of the matter, accorde ing buto the plot before contriued betweene fit; mozis and hir, the thould at one time or other find the occasion or opportunitie to betrate the castell. The capteine received hir into the castell, and not for getting the late former practife at Lesconile.canfed him to be the more warie and circumfped, and to loke buto himselfe. Where bon he so handled the matter with this harlot, that he in the end found out all the device, and forthwith he carried hir up unto the top of the castell and cast hir over the wals, where with the fall the was cruthed and died. Hitzmoris being disamointed of his purpose, departed from thente, and ranged ouer all the countries of Tipos rarie, Dimond, and Waterford, there were no garrifons to relift him, and there placed his parts.

The gouernoz, tho late at Cooke, being aonertifed of these outrages, called his companie togither, which (as is before fait, was not aboue foure hum died persons) and other reported (but untrulie) to be about foure thousand : vet minding not to suffer an infurie, marched with fuch companie as he had into The grant Clanmosis, which is the faid Fitzmosis countrie, marchelian and distant from Cooke about these dates tournets. Claimings The baron by his cipials being advertised of their romagna comming, for loke his callell at Adare, and defaced with five his cattell at Lerna, and dreto his gods, and all his moris. forces into the wood of Lesconile. When the governor was come to Adere, he found the towne burnt, and the few Englishmen (which were in the abbeic) greatlie diffressed. From thense he went to Lesco nile, which is ten miles further, where he discoursed the baron and all his companie, which then late in a plaine bottome in the fato woo, having then in his companie of gallowglaffes, kerne, thot, and bothe men, about feuen hundzed men.

The governor taking adule what was belt to be done, because that place was full of fatheffe, and no pallage for anie horlemen, but all rested boon the Capital feruice of the formen; they divided their companie. Don And capteine Dowdall being veric descous to ad, tienture the feruice open him, he had fir foote fot and gunch men appointed and delivered buto him, and the reli. ham their

to the wood, and followed buttil he came into the plains where Fitzmozis was; who having a great companie, and the capteine but (as it were) a handfull to his, he oficioed his whole companie into foure parts, thinking to have inclosed the capteine, and to have his will byon them. The capteine perceived it, and forth with brake boon one of the companies, and hab luch a hand bpon them, that he flue a number of them . Thich when Fitzmozis falo, like a valiant man turned his backe and fled a waie into the mounteins of Sloughlougher, and left all his gods behind; which the capteine toke, and also all the cattell there, and brought the fame to the gonernos. From thenle they marched to the castell of Blan, of which Dliver Stethanson has the ward and keping : and there newes was brought onto him, that the lord, deputie had fent unto him two bands of formen, of which one hundred were fir Denrie Wallops , and the other capteine Porris. Therebpon he trauelled 20 unto Limerike, and left the idole charge of Clanmozis, and of Berrie byto capteine Dowdall . And the fair capteine being put to weet that the baron was incamped at Glanflift with two hundred and fortie gallowglades, two hundred kerne, foure core thot, and thirtie horffemen, and he himfelfe having then but the lieutenant Wingfield in his companie, made a fallie opon them, and killed with the fword, hadinand and draue into the river above seven score of them, and recovered a preie of eight hundred kine, fine 3 bundzed hozffes and mares, befibes a great number of thepe and gotes ; and in the taking of the baron. be found froze of monie and plate, and malling gar. ments . And from hence he marched with his cattell, and incamped belides Alough, niere binto the earle of Clancar his house, and from thense to Castelle mange, and fo to Adare, and furnithed as he went euerie ward and garison with store of vittels, and with the gods he rewarded his fouldiors. From this time, the baron fitzmozis having loft all his pronfe 4 fion a froze, was never able to recover himfelfe, net. ther to credit nozto wealth, noz yet to hold op his head, but was for faken of all his freends and follow. ers: and being alhamed of himfelfe, and of his bad

to go,02 there to læke for fucco2 and helpe. At length being wearie of himfelfe, and of his diffressed miseries, bethinketh upon the earle of Dimond, thome notwithstanding that without 50 cause he had verie much intured, having most outragioullie preied his countries, burned his villages, and killed his people : pet he maketh his recourfe buto his lozofhip, acknowledgeth his fault, confet. feth his follies; and being mott forte for the fame, des fireth his loodthip to pardon and remit him, and most bumblie requested him to have bnoer him a protece from the on. This honozable man, not with francing the great infuries done buto him, and he of a great courage and flomach, and of a noble mind, and loth to put by lo great inturies, pet(as it is attributed to the lion, Parcere profratis) when he had thewed the great grafes of the faid fitzmozis, he forgat all his owne wrongs, and granted him his request. Capteine Downall, leaving the governors fouldiors and companie at Adare, binder the leading of capteine Smith, he marcheth towards Cooke, where he refled molaie in garrison. Pow when all these broils were ended, and verelie supposed that all things had beene at rest, and the thole province of Mounster at peace; behold the earle of Desmond, tho was thought to be either dead or fled, beginneth to appeare, and to thew himselfe; and having affembled a great companie, came to Adare, where the garrilon issued out

and distoiall trecheries, walked and wandled abload

as a followne man, not knowing that to do, whither

bpon him : betwene icom the fight was bot, and @ manie Laine on both lides . Among thom, Smith lergeant of the band, and Worgan the licutenant were both flaine : but vet the Englith fouldiors recoursed the abbeie . About this time one Thomas. Birne lieutenant to the notable archtraito: Fitzgi rald, being wearie of the wicked actions with his therto he had followed among the rebels, fent his mellenger to capteine George Carew, requelling A draught him to deale with the losd ocputie for his pardon, and for so manie of his companie as would toine with and accompanie bim in a pace of feruice to be done : which he promiled to recompense with the pice of his capteins bead, which he would in a bag present to his lordship, as also would kill so manie of his companie as would not confent with him therebute.

When this denile was readie to be practiled, the clearke of the band, tho was one of the confederats, executed to perte trecheroullie ofo discover the same buto fits ocath so mas girald, tho immediatite toke and hanged his lieu neas confpis tenant; the fergeaut of his band (tho was an Eng. 1th against liftman) and fo manie of the foulding as there as lithman) and to mante of the fouldiors as were of that confederacie . Pot long after, fitzgiralo bethinking bponthe extreame milerics, which in this rebellion be had indured, and the small hope which he had to prevaile in thefe his bad and traitorous act. fitzgirald ons, but chieflie being afraid of his owne life, least practicth the beach of which at one time or other he thould be flaine by his foul mac bugh, biogs : he fent a mellenger to the then lood tuffices, requiring his parbon, and which he would redeme with the head of his best frend and fellow in armes Theon mac Bugh, the verie gall of all the wars and rebellion in Leinffer.

This was not to covertile done, but that Theon fitzgirato is mac bugh has knowledge of the practife, and he hanged for his forthwith intreated fitzgirale in the like manner as he before has some with the lieutenant, and fo hanged him bp. The load deputie after long late for his renocation, received hir maiellies letters for the tothe fwords faure, and then he fent for capteine Zouch gouernoz returneth into of Pounter to come to Dubline: and in the end of August 1582, after that he had ferued full two peres he delivered by the Award but o the archbilhop of Dus bline then lord chancellor, and to fir Denrie Wallop then treasuroz at armes, and toke hipping; having collog and fir with him capteine Zouch, who was after flaine by one of his most familiar acquaintance, and fundate lop are lord other gentlemen. The faid lood Greie was a man inflices. of great nobilitie, and of as bonourable and ancient descent, one that feareth God in true religion, and dutifull to bir maiestie in all obedience. And albeit be had deferued well of that Brith nation, and had fowed the goo feeds of notable feruices, as well for his martiall feruices, as for his civill government; pet he reped (as his predecellors before him)but bar. nell and cockle. For they had among them not one. lie conspired his death, for which some paid derelie; but made also sundzie complaints against him , to 60 which he answered to his commendation and acquitall, and to their reproch for their ingratitude.

Thefe tivo loads fulfices being fallen into a bao ken time, the warres being not ended, the people not quieted, and the gouernement not ffaied noz fetled: pet they both foining their wifedoms, feruices, and god wils, were to bleffed therein , that by them that Imp was reduced to some perfection and quietnette. For not long after they had taken the fword in hand botto: Sanders the popes nuncio and legat, who came from that holie le of Rome, the fea of all wickednelle, with James Fitzmozis in Julie in the peare of our Lord one thouland fine hundred feuen. tie and nine, to beare arms in this land against hir maiestie, after that he had wandered by and downe

-Fitzairald

The load England.

The load cha-Benrie Wals

Cx baron

ahs biter

el ann for a

liteth to the

The death of berg.

tive yeares togisher with the earle and his brethren if John, in woos who bogs, and had truch with them a most millerable win wretched life, and had boshe partaker of their most cruell bloudspeds outrages, muethers, and robberies, a life god and to god for a ttaito; and a rebell. De fell licke of an Irilh ague and of the bloudte fir, and late in the wood of Clent. nekille, which is a wood full of allers, withtes, belers, thomes, and through which is no pallage; where part lie of his ficknesse, but thefelie for famine and want 10 he vieb. Quen in this flithie place, that molt initerable wetch and traited was looged and died, bequeat thing his trealous, treadjertes, and billolalities a gathff his Conereigne mill toffe and lable hir maieffis with the pope referring the punithment to the Loto himfelfe, thois a fwift and full tuoge opon all traff tors and disobedient persons, and his bodie (as some Tale was decoured by of wolves, but (as some do thinke) that to much as was left was buried at Clancarne, not fares off from the place there be

The two loves tuffices being entred into this bio ken governement, Dio what they could to keepe the fame in peace; and unvertanding the wilfull dispofition of Delmond, they did ble all the means and wates they could to pacifie him; but to farre was he imbried and polloned with the beriom of trealon and rebellion, that no reason, no outie, not ante other re. freit could perfuade him to be a lotall and dutifull Aubient. Therefore he continued Bill in his old accultomed spotting and walting the countries, and trusting to no boule not castell, did theowo himselfe in woods and bogs, and in the winter following he kepthis Chilimalie in the woo of Bilquieg nære to Kilmallocke. And about the fourth of Januarie then following, one John Wielth a baliant and a god fouldier, was refolued to make a draught byon the faid earle, and he made acquainted therewith capteine Dowdall, capteine Bangor, and Beorge Mozington provolt marthall of Mountler, all thich 40 loodhip, that the earle of Defmond was incamped late their in garrifon in hilmallocke, and according to the order betweene them then agreed boon, thep marchen in the night time to the place and wood where the earle laie .

But being come thifter , they were to palle ouer a great river, before they could come to enter into the wood of Bilquieg, a by reason of the great raines then falling, it was impossible for man or horse to palle over the fame, which thing John Wellh did before miltruft. Wherefore the night before, be went thither verie closelie, with such few persons as he had chosen for the purpose : and there he caused a number of flakes and hurdels to be made of halfon, allers, and withis roos, which he caused to be drawne oner the river by one, whom he had there of purpose thich could from verie well. And this fellow when he had fastened some of the hurdels to a træ in the further five of the water, and then by a rope drew o. uer the relidue one after another, did so fasten and tie one buto another, and to cunninglie handled the matter, that when the capteins came, they passed or ner the river perie well without danger or perill. And so from thense the said Wellh did guide and being them by the breake of the Daie onto the earles cabin: but the woo was to full of thickets, and fo miris, that they were faine to go a speares length wide from the cabin to come onto it. The earle head ringa great noile, and inspecting some ertracedina. rie and a greater companie to be in place moze than his owne, and doubting the worlf, ran out of his bed in his thirt, and ran into the river fall by his cabin, and there his himselfe close under a banke hard up to his thin, by which meanes he escaped and his wife with him. The fouldiers made biligent fearth for him

both by learthing of the river and of the wood, but could not fire him; wherebyon they did put to the frozd to manie as they found there, and carried a mate the grobs with them, and to returned to life mallocke. aine

At this time the fenelchall lecretile with all the force wild be could make, came unto the council that was force minty where here the early of the fame to time, who man Tehere opoir the alarum was talled, and forthwith the young Caluerleigh being lieutenant to rapteme Pongan, and man in Caluerleigh being lieutenant to rapteme Pongan, and man in Caluerleigh being lieutenant to rapteme Pongan and and a caluer lieutenant to rapteme Pongan and and a caluer lieutenant lieutenant to rapteme Pongan and a caluer lieutenant lieut having all his foldlostogither, of which he had find tie that, went buto that end of the towne where the ferreschall scaled the wals, a there he made a sconfe, 02 a little builtodille, and by that meanes lauer the towne, and braine the festellball from his purpole, and killed about fifte of his men : and to being difamointed of his purpole he veparted awaie. In the end of this moneth of Januarie the earle of Di mond arrived from out of England to Materfoid Cheente with a recolleptie of foure hundred men, thomche Dimondan with a new apprear route guildes aren, agains go action was binibed and committed but the feuerall leadings who was of the George Bourger, in Adilliam Stanleie, cap general a teine Edward Berkleie'; and capteine Roberts. Mountain And being no Blood generall by his materies appotintient ouer all Mounter, and having obteined an augmentation of two pence by the date for ener rie foldiors wages, he affembleth all the foldiors and enerie capteine which had ante charge, and toke order with everte of them for fuch fernices as were to be done, furnitheth them with vittels, muniti ons, monie, and all things necellarie and meet for them, requesting everie one of them to thew them felnes like god and valiant foldiors, in the purfuing of the rebels, and banquilbing of the enimics : and fuch grace and love be found among the foldiors, The bank that he was no moze destrous than they most alab the captures and willing to performe the fame. Such a good of the certed fection enerte one did beare to this honorable man. Opmond. At this time advertisement was given buto his

in the fast neste of Warlo wood with a great number of rakehels a rebels. Wis loodlyip muffered all his companies, and minding to do fome feruice boon the lato rebels, marcheth towards the laid fast nelle of Barlo wood. And being come thither, he dint Theintop beth his companies into foure parts, and they enter neral from red into foure severall places of the wood at one in reth han fant: and by that meanes they scowed the wood throughout, in killing as manie as they take, but the relioue fled into the mounteins. The rebels be ing thus narrotolie followed and purfued, they no Definite ner after met togither in the like companies, not infakmid allembled themselves in such great numbers : but his followed the most part of them, which were the chiefest follow, and treats, ers and greatest freends buto Delmond, as fitz moris of Lerna before named, the feneschall, the tord Barrie, Condon, Donnell mac Linought, fun

brie others, some and some came awaie, and lought for protection. And albeit their manifold and infinit outrages, murthers, bloudtheds and spoiles, had deferued a thousand deaths: pet his loodhip confibering their repentance, forcows, and humble fub millions, and respecting moze hir maiesties godlie disposition to mercie than their deferts, did (for the most part) grant onto everie of them their requests. The foldiors after this piece of feruice were difperfed abroad into their feuerall garrilons. And albeit the greater parts of the revels were some by swood, and forme by protection abated, and much decreased,

pet none of them late altogither tole, but did follow the feruice as time and occasion offered. For the earle himselfe, shough he were thus bufeathered of his greatest helps, yet be was one & the same man, a most ranke traitor and rebell: and therefore boon

The earle cf=

capeth berre

A denile how

great river.

to palle ouer a

The earle of

Defmond bee

peth his Christmas in

made boon the

earle by John

the wood,

A diaught

weith.

bim dailie were diaughte and purlates made and neuer left, butill in the end he came buta confution.

In the moneth of August, in the pearest Chill one thouland fine hundred eightie and thee it was aquertifed to the garrifons in kilmallocke and Cafiell, that the eric of Delmondinas come againe to harbozough himfelfe in Harlo wood, and had aboue thampt the froze gallowglasses, besides kerne a great number, bpon whom captein Downall bauing goo chials, made a forncie thither; and being entred in 10 to the woo berie earlie glaie close all the fozenone. for these gallowglaster had bin to dared from time totime, that now like a fost of deere they late boon their hapings; and fo fearful they were, that they would not tarrie in ania one place anie long time, but where they did die Ge-their meat , theise ther would remove, and eat it in another place, and from thenle go buto another place to lie . In the nights they would watch, in the forenones they mould be ppon the hilles and mounteins, to before the court trie, and in the afternone they would liepen The capteing breaking time with them, made faie in the wood accordinglie, and in the afternone be lear. ned by his espials, that they were returned from the mounteins, and were entred into their cabins. there some of them were allepe, and some of them occupied in drelling of a horde for to eat it for other vittels were scant. The capteine suddenlie entred boon them, and toke them at such advantage, that they were all, for the most part, put to the fword: of 3 which, fitte and twentie were taken in their cabins . After the dispatch of these gallowglasses, which are counted the best men of watre among the Arithzie: therestone of the Irish rebels were so dismaid, that a man might without ante great danyer palle hzoughout Mounster.

About a monethafter this, in September, in the peare one thousand fine hundred foure score thee, it hapned that certeine of the losd Roches men the some billion bout certains businesse, and met with the earle of Defmond, having in his companie two or thee bossemen and a priest. The kerns which attended the faid load Roches men, invironed a compatted them about but the earle and his men being well horfed, cleaved, onelie the priest they take, by reason of his bad horfe, and him the lord Roch fent the nert date buto the load governour, and being eramined, he confessed in what great distresse and miserie the erle was, and that for feare he lurked in corners, would not be fene, And further, that he had his onelie relefe and was fostered by Gozon mac Swene, a milistrics tere and was convered by Coton that Subtrict a my Google capteine of the gailowglaffes, and who was then but der protection. And by thefe meanes, the erle (tho had not beene heard of fince he was garred out of Harlo woo) is now discovered. Wherebyon the los generall commanded a barke to be forthwith Imilion ap vittelled, and to be dispatched into Dingle a Cush: and forthwith commanded capteine Dowdail to rethe Dingle. paire thither, and there to lie in garifon; which he did 60 forthwith performe. The earle of Defmond when he heard how that he was discovered, and how that bittels and a garifon were fent to Dingle a Cuft to diambles the working of his wo; he was affered that he mountain thould be furelie purfued by capteine Powdall, who of all other capteines and fir Beorge Bourchier ofo from time to time gall and most earnessie pursue him. Wherefore now as for his last belpe, by the belie and frienothip of Gozon mac Swene, t Moile Dozough mac Sinene his brother, he gatheretha new companic, and maketh himselfe as strong as he can, and getteth himfelfe into Defmond, and there Candeth boon his gard. Gozon mac Swene in the Additions, meanetime entreth into Carberie, and taketh a

great piece of kines which he drond foithbuild into Defmond toward the earle, but the tomete was to long, that he late there of the earle that night about the or foure miles.

Ebemen of the countrie, tho had thus loft their gods, thie of them with their fwoids and targets followed the tract a factoff, minding to have Crollen awaie their owne kine if by ante means they could, and if opportunitie would to ferue; for by force or by intreatie they knew it to be impossible for them to recover ante thing at all. The forefato Gozon when be had looged himicife for all night, it was his pleas fare to walke abrode in the ficlos; and fulpecting no barme, went alone, bauing onelie one herne with him (and both without iveapon) about terr of the the feare off from his touging: About with place it hap medifesozelato three men had hidden and couched themselves in a bully and taking the occasion offer red, they went also betweene him and his longing, Gozon mac and fell thou him and his kerne, t killed them both: and as some as the y had cut off their heads, they this. ted for themfelnes. Borons companie, finding their mailter lacking went abrove to læke him, and in the end found him and his man without heads. If ena dead opon the ground; which call them into fuch a maze, as thep will not what to thinke or to do net ther could they imagine not deutle how this thould come to palle: for garilon there was none in those parts, and thep knew of no person thereabouts thome they could suspen. But this is the inst subger ment of God, who in his fulfice loketh opon the perfured and wicked, and in mercie beholdeth his ferciants: For if this man had lived, it was feared that by his means the earle would have increased a new force, and have bighted the lord governour and all the garifons to greater troubles. The erle being admertiled of the lolle of this his friend; his cheefe and onelic fraie, was in a great agonie, and maruellouf lie dismaid; and feing no other remedie, he prepalut. Noch ing in Dowall neere to Arusham; were riding as 40 resh the best for himselfe, and taking the advantage of the time, before the garilon thould be placed at the Dingle, he made a draught into Berrie nere Traf. The erle coinleigh, minding to take a preie from fuch as had for mandeth preie faken him and had received their protections. There kerrie. fore in the evening he fent two horsemen with a certeine kerne over the Arand of Traleigh buto a castell there, & commanded them to take their prete from thenle, which they dio, and brought the fame as mate with them.

Among those kine thus driven awate, a pore woman of that countrie loft all those few that the had, and being diffreffed of that which was the cheefe, and in a maner the onelie relecte of hir and hir children and bouthold; and not knowing how the could by a nie meanes recouer them: the bethought hir felfe opon a brother which the had, divelling on the other live of the mounteine, in a calfell named Drome, which was one of the Mozettos; and to him the runneth in all the half the could, and declareth hir effate and cale, praising him to helpe hir, and that he would follow the tract for the recoverie of hir kine. Who then he was advertised that there were but two hordemen safety kerne which had drouen the preie awaie, he to pleasure his litter toke the other of his brethren, and followed the tract, till he came to Ca felmange, which castell was in the waie. Anothen he came thither, he went to the castell, and desired the constable (whose name was Cheston, and not long before lieutenant to capteine Berkeleie) that he inould spare him some that and a few of his kerne to beloe him to follow the preie which was driven that wate. The confrable and the foldiors were verte glad to pleasure him, and so he had seven that and a dos, sen of kerne which dwelled in an out house fast bn-

Dwene is kil-

Che Def:

ver the castell, to they went altogither to Eraleigh. they being in number thie and twentie persons; one of thefe was an Arith man borne, named kollie, but ferued alwaies under Englishmen, and could speake berie god Englich. This man, on thep canie to Traleigh, they appointed & made him their leader of capteine, and Pozetto because he was borne in those parties, and belt knew the countrie, the p appointed to be their guide : and from thenle they followed the fract ontill they came to the live of a mounteine, " there there was a glan, and in it a little grove of wood : and the night being come upon them, there they fait and reffed themselves for that night. And in the barke night one of them had elpied through the trees after not farre off, whereboon they desw themselves close together, and caused one of them. felues closelis and fecretie to draw towards the fire and to discouer that companie was there, and how manie was of them; which man did fo. And then be returned backe buto them, he told them that there 2 was an old bad house, and about five or fir persons therein: thereppon they all determined and agreed to repaire to that place to know the whole matter. spozetto was the guive to bring them to the house, and Bollie did fet his companie in order and god a rate, as was most for their fernice, if need should fo require. And when they were come to the houle, they found in it but onelie one old man, for the relioue mere cone. Then kollie drew his fword and frake the old man, with which blow he had almost ent of 30 sward. one of his arms; and then he Grake him againe, and gave him a great blow on the five of his head; where with the fato old man cried out, beliring them to faue his life, for he was earle of Defmond, and then Bollie faied his hands : but the erle bled fo fast, that he wared verie faint, and could not travell anie further : therebpon the fato kollie bid and willed him to prepare himfelfe to die; and then he frake off the earls bead.

The earte of head fent into England and

Swas tuiled,

The earle of

ken in an old

and Claine.

M combat hes twene two D=

spoiled and rifled the house, and take what them lifed : and then they all departed and went to Castel. mange, and carried the earles head with them, but left the bodie behind and whether the fame were der noured by the toolues or buried by his kerne, it is not certemlie knowne. As some as they came to Castelmange they fent the said earles bead buto the losd generall, who foothwith fent the fame into England for a prefent to hir maieftie; which forth. with was put boon a pole, and let on London bridge. Withen this his death was noticed and knowne there out bon Lon- was no more scrusee to be done; for enerte revell bonbridge. cast awaie his weapon, and sought all the wates cast awaie his weapon, and lought all the waies they could to humble them felues and to become god lubiects: laving one John Bourke, who food bp on his protection, and yet neverthelelle he and his John Bourke companie went to Adare, there to have taken a having a protection, made a preie. But as he palled by the callell, a bote therein bischarged his peece boon the faid Bourke, & Arake him in the head, whereof he died. The common people, tho had felt the great (mart of this troublefome time, refolled and were glad of the death of the erle. being in a god hope that the long troubles thould have an end, and they to be the more at reft. During thele continuall troubles in Mounster, the two lord inffices which late at Dublin were much eafed from all martiall affaires elsewhere, and were troubled but with the clamozings, exclamations, and beabling of the Irith people, not worth the remembring: faving that a certeine combat was fought and tried before them in the castell of Dublin , betweene two Doonhours, berie nære colons & kinle men: the one was named Teig mac Buill Patrike Deonhour ameliant; the other was named Con

mac Comake Deonhour befendant. Due of thefe amealed and charged the other for fundie treafons in the late webellion, and which could have no other trial but by combat, which was granted onto them. Whereboon, according to the laines and orders of England for a combat to be tried, all things were prepared the date, time, and place appointed and according to the fame, the lord fulfices, the indiges, and the councelloss came and fat in the place appointed for the fame, everte man in his begræ and calling, And then the court was called, and the appellant of the main plaintife was brought in before the face of the court, the main being Grippes into his thirt, having onlie his fwom and target (which were the weapons appointed) and then be had bone his renerence and butte to the ioed tuffices and to the court, he was brought to a Role fet in the one of the ends within the lifts, and there fat. After him was the defendant brought in, in the like maner and other and with the like wear pons : and then he had done his outle and reue. rence to the lood tultices and to the court, he was brought to bis chaire places in the other end of the lifts. Then were their actions and pleadings open lie read and then the ameliant was demanded the ther be would averre his Demand or not - into then be had affirmed that he would, the partie defendant was likewiseasked whether he would consesse the action, or frame to the triall of the fame , the dia and fiver as did the other, that he would anerre it by the

Apon this their fenerall antwers, they were fer nerallie called the one after the other, everie of them taking a copposall off that their quarell was true, and that they would full the the same both with from the blod. Thus they being from are brought backe againe everte of them to their fenerall places as before. And then then by the found of a trumpet a figne was given buto them when they hould enter into the fight; they arole out of their leats, and mot The relique of the companie in this meane time 40 ech one the other in the middle within the lifts, and there with the weapons alligned buto them, they fought: in which fight the appellant bid prevaile, and be not onlie did difarme the defendant, but allo with the fmord of the fato defendant old cut off his head, and byon the point of the fame flood did prefent it to the losd fulfices, and to with the victorie of his & nimie be was acquitted. Thus much I thought god to fate formithat of much of the maner of a combat, which together with manie circumstances thereby to belonging is now for want of vie almost cleans forgotten, and pet berie necessarie to be knowne. And as for this combat it was to valiantlie bone, that a great manie did with that it had rather fallen opon the thole fer of the Doonbours, than byon these two gentlemen.

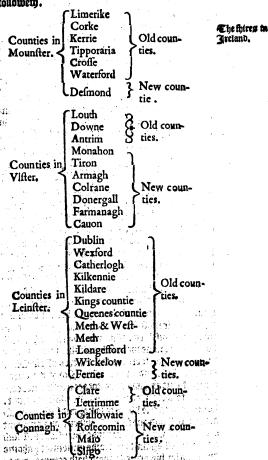
The vicount of Baltinglas, being advertised of The was fmall griefe into him, and he also verie wearte of glass with his trotting and wandering on for amonal boos with modern and reasons with the state of the state o woos, and defert places (being altogither diffref fed, and in great milerie, and now destitute of all his friends and acquaintances, and not able to hold bead ante longer against bir matesties force) bid imbarke himfelfe for Spaine, in hope to have some Editions telefe and succes, and to procure some ato from the imbarka king of Spaine; and by that meanes to be of some himself the state of the state o abilitie to renew his force and rebellion . But he Spank found in the end berie small comfort. And there fore of a verie melancholie greefe & forrow of mind, as it is thought, he died, being in verie extreame ponertie and need. Pot long after this, the two load inffices, who had ruled and governed the lam in these troublesome and broken times in great will dome, care, a circumfpection, when they had brought

the whole land to a peaceable & quiet gouernment, and delinered the same from all open or knowne rebelient; they cathed and dilcharged all the garrifons in Pouniter , oneliet wo hundred fouldrogs ercepted: they kept it in good quietnesse, butill the arrivall of fit John Perot knight, who was fent over to be lood deputie, and landed at Dublin about the middle of June, one thouland five hundred fourescore and foure, the fir and twentith years of hir maissies reigne unto whome they delivered the sward: who ro being entered into his office, begun such a course, hat of his good beginnings a great hope was conceined of the like to infine. For he was a right wore thie feruitoz in that land, then be was lozd prefident in Mountter : and by ichome James Sitizmozis was luboued, and the whole proutnce maruelloullie well reformed: whole notable and most noble acts as they do well deferue, to when the fame thall come to his full measure, they thall be registred to his perpetuall fame and immortall honor . And yet in the 20 meane time, it thall not be offenfine to remember fome special points of his late fernice, which do deferue to be remembred : as also for the incouraging of this noble man to continue the good course which be hath begun ; which do hallon and give a hope that he will Addere colophonem, and bring that land to a full and perfect government & regiment; which Giraldus Cambrenfis would not warrant could be done much before dome Caie.

Pot long after the arrivall of this man, the Scots 20 affer their accustomed maner, for a bien benn or welcome to his loodhip, they began a revellion, and are by in armes readie for the warre. His load thip having notice and knowledge thereof, maketh himselse southwith in a readinesse to meete with them, and to frop them of their purpole : and there in he lo ordered and handled the matter, that the Scots were dainen to leke peace, to crave pardon, to labouit themselves, and to sweare allegiance faith, and obedience to hir maiellie . Which when 40 they had obteined, then they toke the lands where. in they divelled, of hir highnesse, peelding a yeare lie rent, which before they had not beene accustomed no, want to doe. And by these meanes, if there be any truth in them, the frate of that countrie franceth

the better affured. Then when he was from this feruice returned to Dublin , his speciall care, fludie, and indenoz was to devile and fludie bow to reduce and reforme the thele realme and the government, according to the 3 laws of England . Talbere bpon he mould and bio berie offen affemble the abole councell of fo mas nie of them as were there, for their admife herein; whose names are these. The archbishop of Dublin los chancellos, the earle of Demond losd treasures, the primat of Armagh, the bilhop of Apeth, the bilhop of kilmore, fir John Poris loropresident of Pour fler, fir Penrie Wallop treasuro; at armes, fin Po holas Bagnoli knight marthall, Robert Baroner thiefe inflice of the bench, fir Robert Willowknight 60 diefe inflice of the common pless, fir. Lineas Willon knight chiefe baton, fic Picholas White knight ma fler of the rols, fir Richard Wingham knight chiefe commissioner in Connagh; fit Henrie Cowleie knight, fir Coward Waterhouse knight, fir Thou mas le Strange knight , Coward, Brabelvie, Gefi fceie Kenton fecrefarie, Ar Warham Sentleger e lir Malentine Browne knights; but biscontinued? By the good addite; helpe, and councell of thefe wife and princent councelloss, beauti thought it belt to bring the thole land thro there grounds, thereby delaws of England might have a deough courfe and pallage. Therefore, what lie Henrie Stonets before had done in a few counties, that he perfore

med in the thole realme, and brought the fame into fuch & so manie severall counties, as was thought belt and most fit for that purpole. To enerie of which new counties he appointed and affigned fenerall thiriffes, and all fuch inferiozofficers as were most requilit, and to the fame incident and apperteining. All and enerie thich thires bitherto not registred, not published in chanicle, togither with such as tofore were knowne. I thought it god to let downs by their fenerall names, and in their proninces as followeth.



When he had performed this, and established the fame by act of partement, then hir matelites writs English laws mid procede had afree pallage, and were current through free through out the thole land, and hir materie knowne land, to be louereigne ladie and queene of the fame . Then the Ariffrie bulittle and little gaue ouer their Bies hon lates and their Arith blage, and became obe vient buto the English laws; buto thich they refere red themselmen to be tried, and to have all their quarels to be decided and determined : whereof at thefe prefente is ortant a vevie notable prefident e example betweene two of the most principall and thicke personages in the province of Willer . The one is he , the nameth hintelfe Duele , and the other is the earle of Liron, the beire to the great Con Duele: Ebefe two and their ancestors, and all other noble men in that province, when so ever anie viscozder enimitie vid fall out among them, they had no peacemaker but the food, and by mars and bloudhed was the faute vectoed. Penerthes lette, these two noble men leaning to pursue their Once and the quarets, as in times pall with the floors of in holfile earle of Ciron maner, do refer themselves to the triall of the lates, the each ore and each one of them furth the other at the common the c lator, and in the diancerie in hir mateffies court

Sir Richard

Bingham his

victorie byon

the Scots.

at Dublin, and there as putifull fubicus do abide the trial of their cause. A thing so much the moze to be considered, as the parties be of that nabilitie and foutnette; and a thing to rare, as heretofore not heard not knowne. Which course if it have so havie a progresse and successe, as it hath a good env terance and beginning; no doubt, but that partite by the laws, and partite by the fword, an untuerfall obedience thall through that land be effablished, the common focietie thall be preferued, the whole realme 10 thall flozish and prosper, hir matefile thall be obeied, the revenues thall be increased; and in the end, peace thall be byon Ifraell. And as this example giveth fome manifest good hope thereof, to the same is confirmed and increased by the happie vidorie of late in Connagh; there a number of Scots, hauing mads an invalion, were met and incountered withall, by the right worthie fir Richard Bingham knight, chiefe commissioner of that province, and by him they were vanquilbed touertheowne, to the num 20 ber of fifteene hundred persons; so that verie few or none escaped the sword, to returne home with the news of their fucceste: but were either killed oz

Thus much bifberto generallie concerning the government of that land of Ireland, fince the beath of king Penrie the eight, butill thele prefents. In the course of which time, manie more notable things bave beine done, worthie to be registred in the chronicles of perpetuall fame and memorie. For 30 the atteining to the knowledge whereof, though Iohn Hooker the waiter hereof have beine a diligent trapeller and a fearcher for the fame; yet he wanted that goo successe, as both the historie it felfe requireth, and he himfelfe witheth. And pet the mot part of all the actions in that age conditted molt in continuall warres, rebellions, and holfilitie, either against their most facred kings and quænes, or ar mongst themselnes . But whatsoever tofore hath beene done, none were lo tragicall, impious, and 40 bunaturall, as were the last warres of the Giral dines of Delmond in Pountier For of the Giral dines of Hildare, who were not acquainted, no; confenting to thele wicked actions, nothing is meant. Thereinto who to litteth to loke, and well to contider , he thall find and fee most evident and apparant examples of Gods luffice & tudgement, against luch as dw revell against the Lozds annointed; whome the Lord by his expresse word hath commanded to be honozed and obeted in all humblenede and butte: 50 because they are his vicars, subtrictites, and biceife rents byon the earth, to defend the good; will the birnish the enill; and who so relisted them, dwrelle his opoinances, and thall receive bate forgement, as molt manifellie it both appeare it it is in francis Delmonds tebellion of All ship of its Countries at Downe particularlie as in courle if few out it with be berie tedious: but much more transcritable and quarels to be because the standard of linfold

And therefore leaving the large discourte, it thail fuffice to that and conclude this hillowie; with the briefe recitall of the most special points, so mone ech man to confider the mightie band, of Gob a gainst traitors and rebels; and his locating mercie and kindfielle opon the dutifull and obestent. Inch therefore James Pitzmozis, the first ringleader in this pageant, and who most bunaturallie has flocked in firangers and forcemers to innade the land, for es Nablifying the antichristian religion, and the depriuing of hir majestie from hie imperial crowns of the realme of Ireland: this man (I fair) was be the poloco the first fruits of this rebellion. For in his idolatrous pilgrimage to the holie crofte, and his traitozous courneis to practile with all the rebels

and inhabitants in Connagh and Aller Soine with him, he did commit a robberte; and being pur fued for the fame, he was flaine by a gentleman, and one of his owne kinimen Theobald Burke, and bis head equarters let upon the gates of the towns of Kilmallocke.

Then James of Delmond brother to the earle, ba, uing done a robberie bpon fir Cozman mac Teige, Image ting done a rodderte opost it continue dette, months toas likefule taken and carjed to Cozke, there he amonths toas dialone, banged, and quartered; and his bead go, bea and quarters fet boon the gates and wals of the ci. quanta tie of Cooke, After him, fir John of Delmond, one o ther brother to the faid earle, who was a speciall bir in thampion of the pope, from whom he had received dam, of manie bleffings, buls, and Agnos dei, which flould books keepe and preferne him from all harme : yet for all broken this his holie cote armour, he was met withall by capteine Zouch and capteine Deludall, and by them he received his tult reward of a bloudie traito, and a freenokiller; being killed and then caried dead to Corke, where his bodie was hanged by the beles, and his head lent to Dublin, and there let boon the top of the castle. And in the end, the earle himselfe Chimi was also taken, and with the swood the head was die Defined nived from the bodie: the one was lent to London, dame and there let opon London by loge; and his bodie with table certeine whether it were buried as denoured by the lithmak wild beatts. And thus a noble race and ancient far bunding milie, descended from out of the loines of princes, is now for treasons and rebellions biterlie ertingul thed and overtheowne; onelie one fonne of the faib earles is left, and pet priloner in the Colver of Lon-Don. The two Daoes, Allen & Sanders, who were the Illand holie fathers legats and nuncios, and in their folith honor fantalies decamed that they had the Holie gholt at them commandement, and yet most errant traitors a with the gains the losos annointed: the one of them listing the sites by his flowed against bir facred maiestie, buter the popes hanner at Mountler, one thouland flue bur Died thie fcoze and nineterie, was flaine and killed: the other, after that he had followed the heles of the Delmonts almost four peares, wandering to and from the woods a bogs, dico most milerable m the wood of Cleneles, in fuch difeates as famine and penurie ble to bring. The Romans and Spanlates, Julius, and the strangers third, were fent from the pope and dain, king Philip, with all their conforts and companies, berte feto left of them to returne bome, and to carte news of their fucceste; but were all put to the sweet. And as for the great companies of fouldiors, gal lowglattes, kerne, the common people, who follow evilis rebellion, the numbers of them are infinit, invite blodds the earth branke op, and whole cares festhe foules of the aire and the rawning bealts of the televolocolifume and benonce. After this follow the The lecture of Lining and Such as thom the fively costing vio not belirote, the fame vio confume, ame eat out; verte few or none remaining aline, faving such as divelled brottlesign townes, and fuch as were fled bires into Digland: interest the store in the townes wais verterat thent, and they in difficult, albeit no thing like in evinparison to them who lived at large. Frathely were not mello vinen to eat holles, bogs and erab carlons, tint alfo ofo denoure the carcales of dead men, takereof there be fundite eramples: namelie one in the countle of Cooke, where when a unilefactor from expecuted to death, and his book left India opon the gallous protteine pore people fectetie gibrals came doise win bolune, and order thim. Like wife in the date of Contere weke, of faint Parie weke, the place thich: was firth fealoued with this rebelli fools weather, and all the men being drowned, were no should there eather there eather there

The Chronicles of Ireland.

ebecommon people, tho had a long time lived on limpets, openads, and fuch thelfith as they could and, and which were now spent; as some as they saw thele dead bodies, they toke them by, and most gree. ville of cat and benouse them : and not long after, death and famine of deat and confirme them . The land it felfe, which before those wars was populous, well inhabited, and rich in all the god bleffings of Coo, being plentious of corne, full of cattell, well fored with fifth and fundrie other god commodities, 1 is now become wall and barren, pælding no fruits, the pallures no cattell, the fields no come, the aire no birds, the leas (though full of fith) yet to them yello ing nothing. Finallie, euerie wate the curfle of God was fo great, and the land to barren both of man and beat, that who locuer did trauell from the one end buto the other of all Pounffer, euen from Materford to the head of Smereweke, which is a bout fir scoze miles , he thould not met ante man, moman, 02 chilo, faning in townes and cities; no2 20 vet la ante beaft, but the verie wolues, the fores, and other like rauening beaffs : manie of them laie bead being familhed, and the refidue gone ellewhere. Aheaute, but a tuft tubgement of God boon luch a Charoicall and Aifnecked people, who by no perfualions, no counfels, and no realons, would be reclamed and reduced to ferue Bod in true religion, and to obeic their most lawfull prince in dutifull o bedience; but made choile of a wicked tool, the god Magim to honoz, and of that wicked antichzist of 3 Rome to obeie, onto the otter querthow of them. felues and of their posteritie . This is the gooneste that commeth from that great citie boon the feuen bils, and that mightie Babylon, the mother of all wickedness a abhominations opon the earth. These be the fruits which come from that holie father, mais fer pope, the sonne of fathan, and the man of sinne, por and the entimic but othe croffe of Christ, whose blood hirffineffe will neuer be quenched, but in the blod of the faints, and the fernants of God; and thofe ra. 40 wening guts be neuer fatilitied, but with the death of lad as do ferne the Lord in all godlines, who will not be dannke in the cup of his fornications : as it both apere by the infinit & most hourible mastacres, and blodie perfecutions, which he dailie erercifeth throughout all christian lands. Which bicause he can not performe also within the realmes of England (Ireland, what practices bath he made by inchant.

ments, lozceries, withcraffs, & trefons to beream bir maiestic of hir life. What benifes hath he vico to raile op hir owne lubicus to rebellions and commo. tions, to suplant bir of hir rotall estate and govern. ment. What practiles bath he vico with forcen prins ces and potentats, to leke occasions of breaches of peace and railings of warres & And how craftilis hath he suborned his buholie & traitorous Jesuits. bnder colour of bolines, to range from place to place through hir materites realmes, and to move and persuade hir people from outifull obedience buto hir highnelle, and to benie hir supreme authoritie and gouernment . Finallie, how both he from time to time like a ravening wolfe fæke the benouring of bir, and of all hir good fubicats, which live in the feare of Bod, and in the religion effablished opon his ho. lie word and gospell . Thereof bath insued the losse of infinit thousands of people, as therof manie av. parant examples are let downe and recorded in the histories of England; but of them all, none more lamentable than is this billorie of Freland, and efpeciallie this tragedie of Pountier . In which it douth aweare, how that for the maintenance of the popes quarels, the earth bath or make op the bloud, the fouls of the aire have preced, and the beafts of the field have denoured the carcales of infinit multitudes & numbers of people. Which if everie man would well loke into and confider, the bugodite thall fe the great indgements of God, and his fevere inflice against all such as shall othonoz his holie name; and against such as thall rebell and relist against his annointed: that thereby they may repent, amend their lines, and be connected buto the Lord, both in true religion towards him, and in all dutifull obedience to his annointed. And the god and godlie hall fe, and thereby confider the great god mercies theired boon them, in that he bath and continuallie both preferue and keepe them from out of the faires of the lion in all fafetie, that they thould bailie moze and more grow from grace to grace, and live in all bolinelle and vertue towards him, and perlift in all dutifull obedience buto bir maiestie our souercigne ladie and queene; whose dates the Lord God conti nue and prolong to reigne oner be to his god will and pleasure: and so shall se hir peo.

is and protong to tright out to be by gr will and pleafure: and to thall we hir people fix god dates, live in fecurititie, and the peace of Firaell thall be byon bs.

Thus farre the chronicles of Ireland, continued by Iohn Hooker alias Vowell, Gent.

